





BEN  
JONSON





*Jonsoni typus, ecce, qui furoris, Desuncta Pater Eruditionis,  
 Antistes sacer, Enthet, Camenis, Et Scenæ veteris novator audax.  
 Vindex ingenij recens Sepulti, Nec sœlix minus, aut minus politus  
 Antiquæ reparator vnus artis, Cui solus similis, Fiquisq; in vet.  
 Q' could there be an art found out that might  
 Produce his shape soe lively as to write. Ab. Holl.*

*Are to be sold in Poves head alley at the white horse by Geo. Humble.*

Robert Vaughan's portrait of Jonson



BEN  
J O N S O N

*Edited by* C. H. HERFORD  
*and* PERCY SIMPSON

VOLUME III

*A Tale of a Tub*  
*The Case is Altered*  
*Every Man in His Humour*  
*Every Man out of His Humour*

O X F O R D  
At the Clarendon Press  
1927



*Printed in England*  
*At the* OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
*By John Johnson*  
*Printer to the University*



## P R E F A C E

THE present volume is a first instalment of the text, which we hope to complete in four more volumes. A critical introduction to the text as a whole and a commentary will be given in the last three volumes.

The frontispiece, taken from a rare print in the Hope Collection, is reproduced by permission of the Visitors of the Ashmolean Museum.

In editing *The Case is Altered* we gratefully record our obligation to the late Duke of Devonshire for permission to collate the Kemble copy, formerly at Chatsworth.

Our debt to Dr. W. W. Greg is very heavy. The original conclusion of *Every Man out of his Humour* is missing from the only copy of the First Quarto as yet traced in England. Dr. Greg placed at our disposal the rotographs used for the Malone Society's reprint of the play, and gave permission to use the Society's text. He also communicated to us privately the solution of a difficult problem in *The Case is Altered*: he has given a convincing explanation (quoted on pp. 95-6) of the two states of the second title-page of the Quarto, showing that Jonson's name was added to it, and not, as is generally supposed, deleted.



Some corrections of our earlier volumes and some additional notes are printed at the end of this volume. For a number of these we are indebted to Dr. W. W. Greg, Mr. W. J. Lawrence, Professor H. B. Charlton, Dr. R. F. Patterson, and Mr. T. Harbottle.

For help in the work of collation we are indebted to Mrs. Simpson, and the readers and staff of the Clarendon Press deserve our warm thanks for their skill and patience, especially in coping with the complicated critical apparatus of the last play.

P. S.

Oriel College, Oxford.

12 February 1927.



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
THE TEXT: Introductory Notes . . . . .	ix
A TALE OF A TUB . . . . .	I
THE CASE IS ALTERED . . . . .	93
EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR: The Original Version of 1598, from the Quarto of 1601 . . . . .	191
EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR: The Revised Version from the Folio of 1616 . . . . .	291
EVERY MAN OUT OF HIS HUMOUR . . . . .	405
Appendix X. 1. The Original Conclusion in the Quartos . . . . .	602
2. The Revised Conclusion in the Quartos . . . . .	603
Corrections to Volumes I and II . . . . .	605
Additional Notes to Volumes I and II . . . . .	607







# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS AND FACSIMILES

## VOLUME III

### ROBERT VAUGHAN'S PORTRAIT OF JONSON *Frontispiece*

This engraving is undated, and three states of the plate are recorded. It was first issued as a separate print. (1) The original state has the underline '*Are to be sould in Popes head alley at the white horse by Geo: Humble*'. A beautiful impression, here reproduced, has been inserted in Henry Holland's *Basilwlogia. A Booke of Kings* (1618), no. 150 in the Hope Collection at Oxford, a copy made up with many extra prints by its former owner, T. W. Jackson. The date of the print can be fixed approximately. The earliest recorded engravings of Robert Vaughan are in a book entitled *The Pourtraictures of Nine Moderne Worthies*, which was entered on the Stationers' Register to Henry Holland on March 30, 1622. George Humble, bookseller and print-seller, traded at the sign of the White Horse in Pope's Head Alley from 1610 to 1627; in 1627 he changed his address to Pope's Head Palace. The poetaster Abraham Holland, who composed the verses below the portrait, died on February 18, 1626. The engraving was probably issued early in Charles I's reign, and it was certainly not later than 1627. (2) Humble is last heard of in 1632: at a date which we have not traced the engraving was reissued by the print-seller William Peake, who had a shop on Snow Hill near Holborn Conduit. The underline was altered to '*Are to be Sould by William Peake*'. The collector Thomas Grenville inserted one of these prints in his large-paper copy of the Jonson First Folio (1616), now in the British Museum. His note on the copy is preserved in it, and he states: 'I have added to my Copy the head by Vaughan.' (3) The print finally appears as a frontispiece to the small quarto collection, *Ben: Jonson's Execration against Vulcan. With divers Epigrams*, published by John Benson early in 1640, and again as the frontispiece to the first volume of the 1640 Folio. In both these editions the underline



---

## x    *List of Illustrations and Facsimiles*

---

has been erased. In the copies examined better impressions of the plate are found in the *Execration* than in the Folio.

An idealized redrawing of this portrait was engraved by William Elder for a frontispiece to the 1692 Folio of Jonson's *Works*. In this the verses are anonymous. The sixth and seventh lines are mispunctuated in all the issues: there should be a comma after 'audax' and a full stop after 'politus'.

A TALE OF A TUB: the title-page in the 1640 Folio .    *page 7*

### THE CASE IS ALTERED, 1609

The earlier title-page . . . . .	}	<i>between pages 102, 103</i>
The later title-page . . . . .	}	

There are two states of the later title-page: the first is anonymous; the second, which is here reproduced, has the author's name inserted, 'Written by BEN IONSON', but the insertion is badly centred and gives a less-balanced page.

### EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR:

The title-page in the Quarto, 1601 . . . . .	.	<i>page 195</i>
The title-page in the Folio, 1616 . . . . .	.	<i>page 297</i>
The title-page in the Folio, 1640 . . . . .	.	<i>page 299</i>

### EVERY MAN OUT OF HIS HUMOUR:

The title-page in the First Quarto	}	
The title-page in the Second Quarto	}	
The title-page in the Third Quarto	}	
The title-page of the 1616 Folio, with ornamental border . . . . .	}	<i>between pages 418, 419</i>
The plain title-page in the 1616 Folio . . . . .	.	<i>page 419</i>
The title-page in the 1640 Folio . . . . .	.	<i>page 420</i>



## THE TEXT : INTRODUCTORY NOTES

THE text of this edition is conservative and ignores unnecessary variants. The early texts are generally sound ; Jonson wrote a clear hand, and he edited much of his work. All this leaves little scope to the conjecturalist, and the misreadings of an editor have no further significance than to show that he was unfit for his task. To substitute ' affected Courtier ' for ' affecting Courtier ' in the character of Briske prefixed to *Every Man out of his Humour* is either sheer carelessness in copying or ignorance of Elizabethan English, and nothing is gained by noticing it in a critical edition. On the other hand, the modernizings of the 1692 Folio, which sometimes reflect changing seventeenth-century usage, have an historical value, and variants of spelling and punctuation in the Quartos and Folio often give a clue to Jonson's own practice. Any reading which appears to have this justification will be preserved.

The readings of Peter Whalley, who made the first serious attempt to edit Jonson in 1756, and of William Gifford, whose elaborate edition in 1816 did much for the poet's reputation, are sometimes judicious and often interesting : a selection of these will be given.

No problem arises in editing the first two plays in this volume. They depend on a single text. *A Tale of a Tub* first appeared in the 1640 Folio : a few passages, perhaps marginal additions made by Jonson in the manuscript, are confused, and there are a number of misprints, but the text as a whole is clear. *The Case is Altered* was first printed in a bad Quarto in 1609. Here an editor has to correct many misprints and to adjust the verse, but the pioneer work was done by Whalley and Gifford, and their corrections are usually sound. The present text is more conservative than Gifford's, but accepts most of his readjustments.

The two Humour plays, on the other hand, bring us face to face with two authoritative texts issued in Quarto and in Folio, and with the interesting problem of revision by the author. The original text of *Every Man in his Humour*



was printed only in the Quarto of 1601. A few corrections can be made in it from the later Folio text, but they are trivial or obvious, such as the correction of 'friends' to 'fiends' in III. iv. 6. Errors in punctuation and verseline are frequent, but the text is substantially sound. The revised Folio version of 1616, in which the play was rewritten,<sup>1</sup> is very carefully printed. The most noteworthy error is the false rhyming of 'fame' and 'come' in V. v. 80-1, and this could be easily cured even if the 1601 Quarto and the 1640 Folio did not read 'some' and 'come'.

In *Every Man out of his Humour* Jonson did not rewrite, he revised his early version. He worked over the Quarto text, submitted it to a close scrutiny, and retouched it in detail. Occasionally he makes a point a little clearer for the actor, but usually he strengthens or improves the phrasing. The underlying spirit of the changes is not so much the attitude of a practical playwright as a distant approach to Pope's standard of correctness.

We regard the 1616 Folio as the final authority for all the works which it contains—the plays up to *Catiline*, the *Epigrams* and the *Forest*, and the masques up to *The Golden Age Restored*. In the textual introduction to *Every Man out of his Humour* we give our reasons for this high estimate of the Folio. We find in it clear traces of Jonson's own proof-correcting, and in the critical introduction that will precede the commentary we shall complete the evidence by a survey of all the plays in this memorable volume, the first collected edition of the works of an Elizabethan playwright.

The 1640 Folio was published three years after Jonson's death, and its complicated history does not concern us at this stage, for the first volume is a reprint of its predecessor, with occasional corrections which may be Jonson's. The second volume is the sole authority for all the later plays except *The New Inn*, for the later masques beginning with *The Masque of Christmas*, the *Underwoods*, and the prose works. The dates of the contents range from 1631, when *Bartholomew Fair*, *The Devil is an Ass*, and *The Staple*

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix V in vol. i, pp. 358-70.



of *News* were first published, to 1641, the date in the imprint of *The Sad Shepherd* and *The Discoveries*.<sup>1</sup>

It remains to explain the symbols and abbreviations used in the critical apparatus and such technical points as the scene arrangements.

*A Tale of a Tub*

*F* = the Folio of 1640, the sole authority for the text.

*F*<sub>3</sub> = the Folio of 1692.

*The Case is Altered*

*Q* = the Quarto of 1609, the sole authority for the text.

*Every Man in his Humour*

*Q* = the Quarto of 1601, the sole authority for the original version of the play acted in 1598.

*F*<sub>1</sub> = the Folio of 1616, in which the revised version first appeared.

*F*<sub>2</sub> = the Folio of 1640, a reprint of the text of 1616.

*F*<sub>f</sub> = readings common to the Folios of 1616 and 1640.

*F*<sub>3</sub> = the Folio of 1692.

*Every Man out of his Humour*

*Q*<sub>1</sub> = the original Quarto of 1600, published by William Holme.

*Q*<sub>2</sub> = a reissue of this Quarto by William Holme in 1600, set up from the first Quarto.

*Q*<sub>3</sub> = the third Quarto, published by Nicholas Ling, set up from the second Quarto, and dated 1600.

*Q*<sub>q</sub> = readings in which all three Quartos agree.

*F*<sub>1</sub> = the Folio of 1616, set up from the first Quarto.

*F*<sub>2</sub> = the Folio of 1640.

<sup>1</sup> The Folio of 1640 differs from its predecessor by using 'j' and 'v' for 'i' and 'u'. But by a peculiarity not uncommon when this modern usage began, it keeps the capital 'I' and 'V' on title-pages and for proper names. Thus, in *A Tale of a Tub* it prints 'In Ianuary' (I. i. 83), 'Iohn Clay' (I. iv. 30), but 'Justice Bramble' (I. i. 93).



*Ff* = readings common to the Folios of 1616 and 1640.

*F3* = the Folio of 1692.

### Throughout the volume

*W* = Whalley's edition of 1756.

*G* = Gifford's edition of 1816.

*om.* = an earlier reading omitted from a later text.

*not in Q* (or *Qq*) = a new reading first found in the Folio text.

### PRINTER'S AND AUTHOR'S CORRECTIONS

These are indicated by the formula 'corr. Q' or 'corr. F'. Thus, in *The Case is Altered*, I. v. 30, the printer set up '*Maximillian of Vicenza*'; he corrected it to '*Maximilian of Vicenza*'. The corrected reading is in the text, and the note in the critical apparatus is '*Maximilian of Vicenza* corr. Q. *Maximillian of Vicenza* Q originally'. As an example of an author's correction we may take *Every Man out of his Humour*, IV. viii. 110: the 1616 Folio at first reproduced a reading found in all the Quartos, 'My selfe shall *manfrede* it for them'; Jonson corrected this to 'My selfe shall vndertake for them', and this is also the reading in the Folio of 1640. The note in the critical apparatus is, 'vndertake corr. *F1*, *F2*: *manfrede* it *Qq*, *F1* originally'.

### STAGE DIRECTIONS

In the Folio of 1616 Jonson pruned severely the lavish stage directions given in the Quartos. He liked the look of a clean page in which the text stood out clear. In the Quartos exits and short stage directions are printed at the end of a speech wherever the space allows. Longer stage directions, such as the entrance of several characters, or a detailed notice such as '*Enter Fallace running, at another doore, and claps it too*' in *Every Man out of his Humour*, IV. ii. 80, are centred in the text and take up a line. The brief notes appended to a speech are indicated by the formula '*add Qq*'; the fuller stage directions by '*Qq in*



text after . . . ' Thus, in *Every Man out of his Humour*, IV. vi. 140, the First Quarto prints 'Exeunt.' in a line by itself after the speech; the Second and Third Quartos print 'Exit.' at the end of the last line of the speech. The critical note is 'After 140 Exeunt. Q1: Qq 2, 3 add Exit. to 140'.

#### SCENE-NUMBERING AND SCENE-LOCATION

In the Folio of 1616 Jonson adopted the system of scene-division which he found in the early texts of Plautus and Terence. The entrance of a new character marks a new scene, and the names of all the characters taking part in it are given in the heading. To take an extreme example: in Gifford's text the third act of *Sejanus* has only two scenes; in the Folio there are six. In the two Roman plays, *Sejanus* and *Catiline*, no scene-numberings are given; only the acts are numbered. But Jonson numbers the scenes in his other plays.

The habit of definitely locating the scene is a modern pedantry. In the revised *Every Man in his Humour* Jonson appended to the list of characters the laconic notice 'THE SCENE LONDON'. In *Every Man out of his Humour* he dispensed even with this, but in Elizabethan fashion he incorporated in the text any necessary references when the place of action had to be indicated: 'the Scene is the country still, remember' (I. iii. 198); 'we must desire you to presuppose the stage, the middle isle in *Paules*; and that, the west end of it' (II. vi. 183-4); 'Conceiue him but to be enter'd the Mitre, and 'tis enough' (V. iii. 92-3).

Gifford's modern renumbering of the scenes and his elaborate locations are cited in the critical apparatus.







## A TALE OF A TUB

---







## THE TEXT

Two entries in Herbert's Office Book relate to the performance of this play in 1633 :

Re for allowinge of The Tale of the Tubb, Vitru Hoop's parte wholly strucke out, and the motion of the tubb, by commande from my lorde chamberlin; exceptions being taken against it by Inigo Jones, surveyor of the kings workes, as a personal injury unto him. May 7, 1633,—2*l.* o. o.

The Tale of the Tub was acted on tusday night at Court, the 14 Janua. 1633, by the Queenes players, and not likte.

Malone, *Variorum Shakspeare*, 1821, iii, pp. 232, 236.

There is possibly an allusion to this play in the gibe which Chapman penned in his last illness upon the work of his old friend and colleague. After alluding to Ben's fire and the writings lost in it, he continues :

Some pore thinge wright new; a Riche Caskett Ben  
All of riche Jems t'adore most learned men  
or a Reclaime of most facete supposes  
To teach full-habited men to blowe their noses  
make the king merrie.

Ashmole MS. 38, p. 17.

*A Tale of a Tub*, in the form in which it has come down to us, consists therefore of (1) the original play, written about 1596 or 1597, clear traces of which survive in the extant text, (2) the 1633 reissue of this discarded work, in which Jonson inserted his satire on Inigo Jones and—in all probability—recast the original prose passages in verse form, (3) the final touches of revision forced upon him by the Censor. As much as he could save of Vitruvius Hoop was clumsily attached to In-and-In Medlay; and it is possible that the flat and colourless epitome of the play, which now constitutes the 'motion', replaced something more pungent of which Inigo may have had reason to complain.<sup>1</sup>

The sole authority for the text is the Folio of 1640-1, in

<sup>1</sup> See vol. i, pp. 275-307.



which *A Tale of a Tub* is printed on pages 65-113,<sup>1</sup> signatures I-P<sup>4</sup>, Q<sup>2</sup>, of the later group of plays beginning with *The Magnetic Lady*. The following copies have been collated for the present reprint. two copies in the British Museum with press-marks C. 39. k. 9, C. 28. m. 12; the Douce copy in the Bodleian with press-mark Douce I. 303; a copy in the Library of All Souls College, Oxford, and two copies in the possession of the editor. Two copies belonging to Professor W. Bang were collated by Dr. Hans Scherer for his edition of the play in *Materialien zur Kunde des alteren Englischen Dramas*, vol. xxxix, 1913. Dr. Florence M. Snell edited the play for a Yale thesis in 1915 from the Yale Library copy: Mr. George van Santvoord has kindly checked the doubtful readings of this edition.

While the sheets of the Folio were passing through the press a number of corrections were made in the text. To show the nature of these corrections, which are marred occasionally by the blundering of the printer, a full list is appended for *A Tale of a Tub*.

Sig. I 2	Il. 19-21	IONE IOYCE, MADGE PARNEL, KATE,	IONE, IOYCE, MADGE, PARNEL, KATE.
I 3	I i 6	keepe,	kcepe
	I. i 11	errand,	errand
	I i 12	Squire,	Squire !
	I i 20	spirit her sonne	spuithier, sonne <sup>2</sup>
	I i 28	would	would,
	I i 29	<i>Tripoly</i> .	<i>Tripoly</i> ;
	I. i. 31	morning ;	morning,
	I. i. 33	y-styl'd	y-styl'd,
I 4 <sup>v</sup>	I. ii. 32	As I may zay, Mr <i>Tobias Turfe</i> ;	As I may zay. Mr <i>Tobias Turfe</i> ,
	I. iii. 20	uppi-nions	uppinions
	I. iii. 29	married :	married ?
K 3 <sup>v</sup>	I. vii. 29	me :	me !
L	II. ii. 75	Hine!	Hine.
L 4 <sup>v</sup>	II v. 38	was.— Well,	was. Well,
	II. v. 41	from me ?	from me.
	II. vi. 6	Sir, speake.	Sir ? speake ? <sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pages 70-79 are duplicated.

<sup>2</sup> A mis correction, inserting the comma at the wrong point and disturbing the type.

<sup>3</sup> A mis correction: 'speake.' was correct.



	II. vi. 15	you must obey.	You must obey <sup>1</sup>
M 4	III. v. 58	for my sonne <sup>1</sup>	for my sonne.
	III. v. 62	sonne	sonne
O <sup>v</sup>	IV. II. 49	weekes,	weekes
	IV. II. 51	this bold bright blade,	this, bold bright blade?
	IV. II. 52	shred thee,	shred thee
	IV. II. 59	heare,	heare;
	IV. II. 65	not I,	not I,
O 4	IV. vi. 16	yet,	yet
P <sup>v</sup>	V. II. 26	I man <i>Hilts</i>	my man <i>Hilts</i>
	V. II. 52	Ladies Mothers	Ladie Mothers
P 4	V. vii. 31	old Lanterne-paper	old Lanterne-paper
Q 2	V. x. 81	enter!	enter. <sup>1</sup>
			<i>FINIS. is added to the</i> <i>Epilogue.</i>

Three errors or inconsistencies in the use of names remain uncorrected: in II. i. 38 and 56 'Sc.' and 'Ite.' are prefixed to speeches, and in V. x. 95 'Giles' is found in place of 'Miles'. 'Sc.' may mark a stage cancel of a lost speech of Scriben, and 'Ite.' be the name of a character in the first draft, overlooked by the editor and the printer, just as 'Old.' in 2 *Henry IV*, I. ii. 138, is a clue to the cancelled name of Oldcastle, the original Falstaff.

The dialect of *A Tale of a Tub* is a curious study. Aubrey in his notes on Jonson (Aubrey MS. 8. 54, of the Bodleian) has this statement: 'He tooke a Catalogue from M<sup>r</sup> Lacy (the Player) of the Yorkshire Dialect—'twas his Hint for Clownery to his Comœdy called,—The Tale of a Tub. This I had from M<sup>r</sup> Lacy.' Lacy was a Yorkshireman and one of the King's players; Aubrey repeats the statement in a short notice of his in the same manuscript, fol. 20. But this is evidently a confusion of the present play with *The Sad Shepherd*, which has some northern forms.

Gill's *Logonomia Anglica*, 1621 (second edition), has a perfunctory discussion of dialect in chapter vi. The account of southern dialect is as follows:

*Australes usurpant ü, pro i, ut hü, pro hī ille: v, pro f, vt, vil, pro fil impleo: to vech pro fech affero: & contra f, pro v. vt fneger, pro vinger acetum; ficar, pro vicar*

<sup>1</sup> A miscorrection: there should be no stop.



*vicarius. Habent* & o. *pro a. ut ronk, pro rank rancidus, dut luxurians, adiect*; *substantivum etiam significat ordines in acie, aut alios. Pro s. substituent z. ut zing pro sing cano*: & *Ich, pro J ego*: *cham, pro J am sum*: *chil, pro J wil volo*: *chi vor yi, pro J warant you, certum dē. in ai etiam post diphthongi dialysin, a, odiosè producant*: *vt, to pai solvo, dai ulli*

The substitution of *v* and *z* for *f* and *s* was no doubt regularly observed by the actors. A quaint passage in Samuel Rowlands's *The Letting of Humours Blood in the Head-vaine*, 1600 (Satire iv), comments on two contemporary actors:

What meanes *Singer* then?

And *Pope* the Clowne, to speake so Boorish, when  
They counterfaite the Clownes vpon the Stage?

But oftener than not the printer keeps the normal spelling, or he prints it along with the dialect form: see 'vive feet' (i. iii. 19), 'Feet, vrom . . . (ib. 20), 'vull of favour' (iii. v. 45), or 'search' (iii. i. 22) and 'zearch'd' (ib. 23). These inconsistencies have not been interfered with in the reprint: to have adjusted them would have cumbered the critical apparatus with a mass of trivial corrections and obscured important variants.

'Che' and 'Cham' are used sparingly, and 'Che vore 'hun' is found in ii. ii. 70. 'Him' most frequently appears as 'un' or 'hun'. The old prefix of the past participle is kept in 'y-styl'd' (i. i. 33), 'yvound' (iii. i. 26). Confusions of the prefix appear in 'praforme' (i. i. 75, ii. 25), 'parzent' (i. iv. 18, 53), 'purcepts' (iii. i. 41), 'perportions' (iv. Scene interloping 46), 'subperiors' (ii. ii. 51), 'survere' (ib. 53), 'upstantiall' (ii. i. 20), 'disgriev'd' (iv. i. 33), 'revise' for 'advise' (ii. ii. 44, v. vii. 28), 'ra'tempt' (iii. i. 80), 'Returney' (iv. i. 58); 'satisfied' appears as 'sussified' (ii. i. 59, iii. viii. 38), and 'suspected' and 'suspicion' as 'respected' (iii. i. 17), 'dispected' (ib. 21) and 'conspition' (ib. 30); and the clipped form 'dority' occurs once (i. iii. 24), though Turfe uses 'authority' elsewhere (i. iv. 55, ii. ii. 38).



---

---

A T A L E  
OF  
A T U B.

---

A C O M E D Y composed

By

BEN: JOHNSON.

---

Catul.—*Inficeto ft inficetior rurs.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed M.DC. XL.







## *The Persons that act.*

CHAN: HVGH,	<i>Vicar of Pancrace, and</i>	
	<i>Captaine Thums. . .</i>	
SQVIRE TVB,	<i>Of Totten-Court, or Squire</i>	
	TRIPLY.	
BASKET HILTS,	<i>His man, and Governour.</i>	
JVST: PREAMBLE,	<i>Of Maribone, alias</i>	
	BRAMBLE.	
MILES METAPHOR,	<i>His Clarke.</i>	5
LADY TVB,	<i>Of Totten, the Squires</i>	
	<i>Mother.</i>	
POL-MARTEN,	<i>Her Huisher.</i>	
DIDO WISPE,	<i>Her Woman.</i>	
TOBIE TVRFE,	<i>High Constable of Kentish</i>	
	Towne.	
DA: SIBIL TVRFE,	<i>His Wife.</i>	10
Mrs. AWDREY TVRFE,	<i>Their Daughter the Bride.</i>	
IOHN CLAY,	{ <i>Of Kilborne, Tile-maker, the</i>	
		<i>appointed Bride-groome.</i>
IN-AND-IN MEDLAY,	<i>Of Islington, Cooper and</i>	
	<i>Headborough.</i>	
RASI: CLENCH,	<i>Of Hamsted, Farrier, and</i>	
	<i>petty Constable.</i>	
TO-PAN,	<i>Tinker, or Mettal-man of</i>	
	Belsise. Thurdborough.	15
D'OGGE: SCRIBEN,	<i>Of Chalcot, the great Writer.</i>	
BALL PVPPY,	<i>The high Constables man.</i>	
FATHER ROSIN,	<i>The Minstrell, and His</i>	
	2 Boyes.	
IONE, IOYCE,	{ <i>Maids of the Bridall.</i>	
MADGE, PARNEL,		20
GRISELL, KATE.		
BLACK IACK,	<i>The Lady Tubs Butler.</i>	
	2 Groomes.	

## *The Scene, Finsbury-hundred.*

1 CHAN:] CHAN F: CHAM F3. 8 DIDO . . . woman. *Added in smaller type to l. 7, as if inserted after the page was set up* 10 TVRFE,] TVRFE F 12 Kilborne,] Kilborne F 13 IN-AND-IN MEDLAY,] IN-AND-IN MEDLAY. F 16 Chalcot,] Chalcot F 19 IONE, corr. F: IONE F originally 20 MADGE, corr. F: MADGE F originally 21 KATE corr. F: KATE F originally



## P R O L O G V E.

*N*O State-affaires, nor any politique Club,  
 Pretend wee in our Tale, here, of a Tub.  
 But acts of Clownes and Constables, to day  
 Stuffe out the Scenes of our ridiculous Play.  
 5 A Coopers wit, or some such busie Sparke,  
 Illumining the high Constable, and his Clarke,  
 And all the Neighbour-hood, from old Records,  
 Of antick Proverbs, drawne from Whitson-Lord's,  
 And their Authorities, at Wakes and Ales,  
 10 With countrey precedents, and old Wives Tales;  
 Wee bring you now, to shew what different things  
 The Cotes of Clownes, are from the Courts of Kings.



# A T A L E

OF

## A T U B.

---

### ACT I. SCENE I.

*Sir Hugh. Tub. Hilts.*

*Hug.* **N**OW o' my faith, old Bishop *Valentine*,  
 You' ha' brought us nipping weather :

*Februere*

Doth cut and sheare ; your day, and diocese  
 Are very cold. All your Parishioners ;  
 As well your Layicks, as your Quiristers, 5  
 Had need to keepe to their warme Fether-beds,  
 If they be sped of loves : this is no season,  
 To seeke new Makes in ; though Sir *Hugh* of *Pancrace*,  
 Be hither come to *Totten*, on intelligence,  
 To the young Lord o' the Mannor, Squire *Tripoly*, 10  
 On such an errand as a Mistris is.  
 What, Squire ! I say ? *Tub*, I should call him too :  
 Sir *Peter Tub* was his father, a Salt-peeter-man ;  
 Who left his Mother, Lady *Tub* of *Totten-*  
*Court*, here, to revell, and keepe open house in ; 15  
 With the young Squire her sonne, and's Governour *Basket-*  
*Hilts*, both by sword, and dagger : *Domine*,  
*Armiger Tub*, Squire *Tripoly*, *Expergiscere*.  
 I dare not call aloud, lest she should heare me ;  
 And thinke I conjur'd up the spirit, her sonne, 20

---

1. i. Scene 1.—Totten Court. Before Lady Tub's House, G 6 keepe  
 corr. F: keepe, F originally 11 errand corr F errand, F originally  
 12 Squire! corr. F: Squire, F originally Tub,] Tub F 20 spirit,  
 her] spirither, F in an attempt to correct to spirit, her



*At the  
Windor  
He comes  
downe in  
his night  
Gowne.*

In Priests-lack-latine : O shee is jealous

Of all man-kind for him. *Tub.* Chanon, is't you ?

*Hug.* The Vicar of *Pancrace*, Squire *Tub* ! wa'hoh !

*Tub.* I come, I stoop unto the call ; Sir *Hugh* !

*Hug.* He knowes my lure is from his Love : faire *Awdrey*,  
Th'high Constables Daughter of *Kentish* Towne, here, Mr.

*Tobias Turfe.* *Tub.* What newes of him ? *Hug.* He has  
wak'd me,

An houre before I would, Sir. And my duty,

To the young worship of *Totten-Court*, Squire *Tripoly* ;

30 Who hath my heart, as I have his : your Mrs.

Is to be made away from you, this morning,

Saint *Valentines* day : there are a knot of Clownes,

The Counsell of *Finsbury*, so they are y-styl'd,

Met at her Fathers ; all the wise o' th'hundred ;

35 Old *Rasi*' *Clench* of *Hamsted*, petty Constable ;

*In-and-In* *Medlay*, Cooper of *Islington*,

And Headborough ; with lowd *To-Pan* the Tinker,

Or Mettall-man of *Belsise*, the Third-borough :

And *D'ogenes Scriben*, the great Writer of *Chalcot*.

40 *Tub.* And why all these ? *Hug.* Sir to conclude in  
Counsell,

A Husband, or a Make for Mrs. *Awdrey* ;

Whom they have nam'd, and prick'd downe, *Clay* of  
*Kilborne*,

A tough young fellow, and a Tile-maker.

*Tub.* And what must he doe ? *Hugh.* Cover her, they  
say :

45 And keepe her warme Sir : Mrs. *Awdrey Turfe*

Last night did draw him for her *Valentine* ;

Which chance, it hath so taken her Father, and Mother,

(Because themselves drew so, on *Valentine's* Eve

Was thirty yeare) as they will have her married

50 To day by any means ; they have sent a Messenger

1. i. 22 is't] 1'st F, F<sub>3</sub> 26 here, F<sub>3</sub> : here F 28 would, corr. F : would  
F originally 29 *Tripoly* ; corr F : *Tripoly*. F originally 31 morn-  
ing, corr. F : morning ; F originally 33 y-styl'd, corr. F : y-styl'd  
F originally 35 *Rasi*' W : *Basi*' F, F<sub>3</sub> 45 *Turfe*] *Turfe*, F, F<sub>3</sub>



To *Kilborne*, post, for *Clay*; which when I knew,  
I posted with the like to worshipfull *Tripoly*,  
The Squire of *Totten*: and my advise to crosse it.

*Tub.* What is't Sir *Hugh*? *Hugh.* Where is your  
Governour *Hilts*?

*Basquet* must doe it. *Tub.* *Basquet* shall be call'd : 55

*Hilts*, can you see to rise? *Hil.* Cham not blind Sir  
With too much light. *Tub.* Open your tother eye,  
And view if it be day. *Hil.* Che can spy that  
At's little a hole, as another, through a Milstone.

*Tub.* Hee will ha' the last word, though he talke Bilke 60  
for't.

*Hugh.* Bilke? what's that? *Tub.* Why nothing, a word  
signifying

Nothing; and borrow'd here to expresse nothing.

*Hugh.* A fine device! *Tub.* Yes, till we heare a finer.  
What's your device now, Chanon *Hugh*? *Hugh.* In  
private.

Lend it your care; I will not trust the ayre with it; 65

Or scarce my Shirt; my Cassock sha' not know it;  
If I thought it did, Ile burne it. *Tub.* That's the way,  
You ha' thought to get a new one, *Hugh*: Is't worth it?

Let's heare it first. *Hugh.* Then hearken, and receive it. *They*  
This 'tis Sir, doe you relish it? *Tub.* If *Hilts* *whisper.*  
Be close enough to carry it; there's all. *Hilts*  
*enters,*  
*and*  
*walkes by,*  
*making*  
*himselfe*  
*ready.*

*Hil.* It i' no sand? nor Butter-milke? If't be,  
Ich' am no zive, or watring pot, to draw  
Knots i' your 'casions. If you trust me, zo :  
If not, praforme it your zelves. 'Cham no mans wife,  
But resolute *Hilts*: you'll vind me i' the Buttry. 75

*Tub.* A testie Clowne: but a tender Clowne, as wooll:  
And melting as the Weather in a Thaw:

Hee'll weepe you, like all *Aprill*: But he'ull roare you  
Like middle *March* afore: He will be as mellow, 80  
And tipsie too, as *October*: And as grave,  
And bound up like a frost (with the new yeare)

i. i. 77 testie Clowne: but] testy, but G



In *January* ; as rigid, as he is rusticke.

*Hug.* You know his nature, and describe it well ;

85 Ile leave him to your fashioning. *Tub.* Stay, Sir *Hugh* ;

Take a good Angell with you, for your Guide :

And let this guard you home-ward, as the blessing,

To our devise. *Hug.* I thanke you Squires-worship,

*The  
Squire  
goes off.*

Most humbly (for the next, for this I am sure of.)

O for a Quire of these voices, now,

To chime in a mans pocket, and cry chinke !

One does not chirpe : it makes no harmony.

Grave Justice *Bramble*, next must contribute ;

His charity must offer at this wedding :

95 Ile bid more to the Bason, and the Bride-ale ;

Although but one can beare away the Bride

I smile to thinke how like a Lottery

These Weddings are. *Clay* hath her in possession ;

The Squire he hopes to circumvent the *Tile-Kill* :

100 And now, if Justice *Bramble* doe come off,

'Tis two to one but *Tub* may loose his botome.

## ACT I. SCENE II.

*Clench. Medlay. Scriben. Pan. Puppy.*

*Cle.* Why, 'tis thirty yeare, eene as this day now :

*Zin Valentines* day, of all dayes cursin'd, looke you ;

And the zame day o' the moneth, as this *Zin Valentine*,

Or I am vovly deceiv'd. *Med.* That our High Constable,

5 Mr. *Tobias Turfe*, and his Dame were married.

I thinke you are right. But what was that *Zin Valentine* ?

Did you ever know 'un, Good-man *Clench* ? *Cle.* *Zin Valentine*,

Hee was a deadly *Zin*, and dwelt at *High-gate*,

As I have heard, but 't was avore my time :

10 Hee was a Cooper too, as you are, *Medlay*,

i i. 86 with] with F    i. ii. Scene II.—Kentish Town. A Room in  
Turfe's House G    7 'un G ; 'um F    10 are, F3 : are. F



An In-an'-In : A woundy, brag young vellow :

As th' port went o' hun, then, and i' those dayes.

*Scri.* Did he not write his name, *Sim Valentine* ?

Vor I have met no *Sin* in *Finsbury* bookes ;

And yet I have writ 'hem sixe or seven times over. 15

*Pan.* O, you mun looke for the nine deadly *Sims*,

I' the Church bookes, *D'oge* ; not the'high Constables ;

Nor i' the Counties : Zure, that same *Zin Valentine*,

Hee was a stately *Zin* : an' hee were a *Zin*,

And kept brave house. *Cle.* At the Cock and Hen, in 20

*High-gate.*

You ha' 'fresh'd my rememory well in't ! neighbour *Pan* :

He had a place, in last King *Harrie*'s time,

Of sorting all the young couples ; joyning 'hem ;

And putting 'hem together ; which is, yet,

Praform'd, as on his day—*Zin Valentine* ; 25

As being the *Zin* o' the shire, or the whole Countie :

I am old Rivet still, and beare a braine,

The *Clench*, the Varrier, and true Leach of *Hamsted*.

*Pan.* You are a shrewd antiquity, neighbour *Clench* !

And a great Guide to all the Parishes ! 30

The very Bel-wether of the Hundred, here,

As I may zay. Mr. *Tobias Turfe*,

High Constable, would not misse you, for a score on us,

When he doe 'scourse of the great Charty to us.

*Pup.* What's that, a Horse ? Can 'scourse nought but 35  
a Horse ?

I neere read o' hun, and that in *Smith-veld* Chartie :

I' the old *Fabians* Chronicles : nor I thinke

In any new. He may be a Giant there,

For ought I know. *Scri.* You should doe well to study

Records, Fellow *Ball*, both Law and Poetry. 40

*Pup.* Why, all's but writing, and reading, is it *Scriben* ?

1. ii. 11 An' In-an In *F*, *F*<sub>3</sub> 16 O,] O' *F* *Sims*] *Sins* *G* 17 *D'oge* *F*<sub>3</sub> :  
*Doge* *F* 20 brave *F*<sub>3</sub> : 'brave *F* 32 zay, corr. *F* : zay, *F* originally  
*Turfe*, corr. *F* : *Turfe* ; *F* originally 33 a Score *F*<sub>3</sub> : a' score *F* :  
*Query*, a score on's 36 And that in *Smithveld*. Charty' I ne'er read  
o' hun, *G* (a probable rearrangement) 39 For ought *F*<sub>3</sub> : For I ought *F*



An't be any more, it's meere cheating zure.

Vlat-cheating: all your Law, and Poets too.

*Pan.* Mr. High Constable comes. *Pup.* Ile zay't avore  
'hun.

### ACT I. SCENE III.

*Turfe. Clench. Medlay. Scriben. Puppy. Pan.*

*Tur.* What's that, makes you'all so merry, and lowd,  
Sirs, ha?

I could ha' heard you to my privie walke.

*Cle.* A Contervarsie, 'twixt your two learn'd men here:

*Annibal Puppy* sayes, that Law and Poetry

5 Are both flat cheating; All's but writing and reading,  
He sayes, be't verse or prose. *Tur.* I thinke in conziencie,  
He do' zay true? Who is't doe thwart 'un, ha?

*Med.* Why my friend *Scriben*, and't please your worship.

*Tur.* Who *D'oge*? my *D'ogenes*? a great Writer, marry!

10 Hee'll vace mee down, mee my selfe sometimes,

That verse goes upon veete, as you and I doe:

But I can gi' 'un the hearing; zit me downe;

And laugh at 'un; and to my selfe conclude,

The greatest Clarkes, are not the wisest men

15 Ever. Here they're both! What Sirs, disputin,

And holdin Arguments of verse, and prose?

And no greene thing afore the Door, that shewes,

Or speakes a wedding? *Scr.* Those were verses now,

Your worship spake, and run upon vive feet.

20 *Tur.* Feet, vrom my mouth, *D'oge*? Leave your 'zurd  
uppinions:

And get me in some boughes. *Scr.* Let 'hem ha' leaves first.

There's nothing greene but Bayes, and Rosemary.

*Pup.* And they're too good for strewings, your Maids say.

*Tur.* You take up 'dority still, to vouch against me.

25 All the twelve smocks i' the house, zur, are your Authors.

1. iii 8 and't] an it G

19 feet F: veet F<sub>3</sub>

uppi-nions F originally

15 disputing F<sub>3</sub>

20 Feet F: Veet F<sub>3</sub>

16 holding F<sub>3</sub>

uppinions corr. F:



Get some fresh hay then, to lay under foot :

Some Holly and Ivie, to make vine the posts :

Is't not Sonne *Valentines* day ? and Mrs. *Awdrey*,

<Puppy  
goes out.>

Your young Dame to be married ? I wonder *Clay*

Should be so tedious : Hee's to play *Sonne Valentine* !

30

And the Clowne sluggard's not come fro' *Kilborne* yet ?

*Med.* Do you call your Son i' Law Clowne, and't please  
your worship ?

*Tur.* Yes, and vor worship too ; my neighbour *Medlay*.

A *Midlesex* Clowne ; and one of *Finsbury* :

They were the first Colon's o' the kingdome here :

35

The Primitory Colon's ; my *D'ogenes* sayes.

Where's *D'ogenes*, my Writer, now ? What were those

You told me, *D'ogenes*, were the first Colon's

O' the Countrey ? that the *Romans* brought in here ?

*Scr.* The *Coloni*. Sir, *Colonus* is an Inhabitant :

40

A Clowne originall : as you'd zay a Farmer,

A Tiller o' th' Earth, ere sin' the *Romans* planted

Their Colonie first, which was in *Midlesex*.

*Tur.* Why so, I thanke you heartily, good *D'ogenes*,

You ha' zertified me. I had rather be

45

An ancient Colon, (as they zay) a Clowne of *Midlesex* :

A good rich Farmer, or high Constable.

I'd play hun 'gaine a Knight, or a good Squire ;

Or Gentleman of any other Countie

I' the Kindome. *Pan.* Out-cept *Kent*, for there they landed

All Gentlemen, and came in w'ith the Conquerour,

51

Mad *Iulius Cæsar* ; who built *Dover*-Castle :

My Ancestor *To-Pan*, beat the first Kettle-drum,

Avore 'hun, here vrom *Dover* on the March :

Which peice of monumentall copper hangs

55

Up, scourd, at *Hammer-smith* yet ; for there they came

Over the *Thames*, at a low water marke ;

i. iii. 29 married ? corr. F : married : F originally 37 Writer, F3 :  
Writer F 40 Colon] Colony F3 41-5 Verse as in G : wrongly  
divided in F A Clowne .. Earth, | Ere sin' ... first, | Which ... Midlesex. |  
*Tur.* ... zertified me. | I had ... Midlesex : 56 Up] Vp F there]  
the re (?) F



Vore either *London*, I, or *Kingston Bridge*—

I doubt were kursind. *Tur.* Zee, who is here: *John Clay*!

60 *Zonne Valentine*, and *Bride-groome*! ha' you zee-ne-  
Your *Valentine-Bride* yet, sin' you came? *John Clay*?

## ACT I. SCENE IV.

*Clay.* <*Puppy.*> To them.

*Cla.* No wusse. Che lighted, I, but now i' the yard.  
*Puppy* ha' scarce unswadled my legges yet.

*Tur.* What? wispes o' your wedding day, *zonne*? This  
is right

Originous *Clay*: and *Clay* o' *Kilborne* too!

5 I would ha' had booties o' this day, zure, *zonne John*.

*Cla.* I did it to save charges: we mun dance,  
O' this day, zure: and who can dance in boots?  
No, I got on my best straw-colour'd stockins,  
And swaddeld 'hem over to zave charges; I.

10 *Tur.* And his new shamois Doublet too with points;  
I like that yet: and his long sawsedge-hose,  
Like the Commander of foure smoaking Tilc-kils,  
Which he is Captaine of; Captaine of *Kilborne*:  
*Clay* with his hat turn'd up, o' the leere side, too:

15 As if he would leape my Daughter yet ere night,  
And spring a new *Turfe* to the old house:

<Enter the  
Mards  
of the  
Bridall.> *Looke*, and the wenchies ha' nôt vound un out;

And doe parzent un, with a van of *Rosemary*,  
And *Bayes*; to vill a *Bow-pot*, trim the head

20 Of my best vore-horse: wee shall all ha' *Bride-laces*,  
Or points, I zee; my Daughter will be valiant;  
And prove a very *Mary Ambry* i' the busines.

*Cle.* They zaid, your worship had sur'd her to *Squire Tub*  
Of *Totten-Court* here; all the hundred rings on't.

25 *Tur.* *A Tale of a Tub*, Sir; a mcere tale of a *Tub*.

1. iv. 7 O' F<sub>3</sub>: O F 8 -colour'd] -coloured F 22 *Ambry W*: *Ambry*  
F, F<sub>3</sub>



Lend it no eare I pray you : The Squire *Tub*  
 Is a fine man, but he is too fine a man,  
 And has a Lady *Tub* too to his Mother :  
 Ile deale with none o' these vine silken *Tubs*.  
*John Clay*, and Cloath-breech for my money, and Daughter. 30  
 Here comes another old Boy too, vor his colours  
 Will stroake downe my wives udder of purses, empty *Enter*  
 Of all her milke money, this Winter Quarter ; *Father*  
 Old Father *Rosin*, the chiefe Minstrell here : *Rosin*  
 Chiefe Minstrell too of *High-gate* : she has hir'd him 35  
 And all, his two Boyes for a day and a halfe,  
 And now they come for Ribbanding, and Rosemary ;  
 Give 'hem enough Girles, gi' 'hem enough, and take it  
 Out in his tunes anon. *Cle.* I'll ha' *Tom Tiler*,  
 For our *John Clay*'s sake, and the Tile kills, zure. 40  
*Med.* And I the jolly Joyner, for mine owne sake.  
*Pan.* Ile ha' the joviall *Tinker* for *To-Pans* sake.  
*Tur.* Wee'll all be jovy this day, vor sonne *Valentine*,  
 My sweet sonne *John*'s sake. *Scri.* There's another  
 reading now :  
 My Mr. reades it *Sonne*, and not *Sinne Valentine*. 45  
*Pup.* Nor *Zim* : And hee is i' the right : He is high  
 Constable.  
 And who should reade above un, or avore 'hun ?  
*Tur.* Sonne *John* shall bid us welcome all, this day :  
 Wee'll zerve under his colours : Leade the troop *John*,  
 And *Puppy*, see the Bels ring: Presse all noises 50  
 Of *Finsbury*, in our name ; *D'ogenes Scriben*  
 Shall draw a score of warrants vor the busines.  
 Do's any wight parzent hir Majesties person,  
 This Hundred, 'bove the high Constable ? *All.* No, no.  
*Tur.* Use our Authority then, to the utmost on't. 55

1 iv. 32 s. d. *Rosin* ] *Rosin*, and his two Boys. G 35 *High-gate*] *High*  
*gate* F 42 *To-Pans* F3 : *To Pans* F 43 *Valentine*,] *Valentine*.  
 F, F3 50 *Puppy*, F3 : *Puppy* ; F 53 parzent] perzent F3  
 55 Use] Vse F



## ACT I. SCENE V.

*Hugh. Preamble.**Metaphor.*

&lt; To them.&gt;

*Hugh.* So, you are sure Sir to prevent 'hem all ;  
 And throw a block i' the Bride-groomes way, *Iohn Clay*,  
 That he will hardly leape ore. *Pre.* I conceive you,  
*Sir Hugh* ; as if your Rhetoricke would say,  
 5 Whereas the Father of her is a *Turfe*,  
 A very superficies of the earth ;  
 Hee aimes no higher, then to match in *Clay* ;  
 And there hath pitch'd his rest. *Hug.* Right Justice  
*Bramble* :

You ha' the winding wit, compassing all.

10 *Pre.* Subtile *Sir Hugh*, you now are i' the wrong,  
 And erre with the whole Neighbour-hood, I must tell you ;  
 For you mistake my name. Justice *Preamble*  
 I write my selfe ; which with the ignorant Clownes, here,  
 (Because of my profession of the Law,  
 15 And place o' the peace) is taken to be *Bramble*.  
 But all my warrants *Sir*, doe run *Preamble* :  
*Richard Preamble.* *Hugh.* *Sir* I thanke you for't.  
 That your good worship, would not let me run  
 Longer in error, but would take me up thus—

20 *Pre.* You are my learned, and canonick neighbour :  
 I would not have you stray ; but the incorrigible  
 Knot-headed beast, the Clownes, or Constables,  
 Still let them graze ; eat Sallads ; chew the Cud :  
 All the Towne-musicke will not move a log.

25 *Hug.* The Beetle and Wedges will, where you will have  
 'hem.

*Pre.* True, true *Sir Hugh*, here comes *Miles Metaphore*,  
 My Clarke : Hee is the man shall carry it, Chanon,  
 By my instructions. *Hug.* Hee will do't *ad unguem*,  
*Miles Metaphore* : Hee is a pretty fellow. c

I. v. Scene III.—Maribone. A Room in Justice Preamble's House. G  
*Hugh* . . . *Metaphor* one line in F 13 here, F3 : here F



*Pre.* I love not to keepe shadowes, or halfe-wits, 30  
To foile a busines. *Metaphore* ! you ha' seene  
A King ride forth in state. *Met.* Sir that I have :  
King *Edward* our late Leige, and soveraigne Lord :  
And have set downe the pompe. *Pre.* Therefore I ask'd  
you.

Ha' you observ'd the Messengers o' the Chamber ? 35  
What habits they were in ? *Met.* Yes ; Minor Coats.  
Unto the Guard, a Dragon, and a Grey-hound,  
For the supporters of the Armes. *Pre.* Well mark'd ;  
You know not any of 'hem ? *Met.* Here's one dwels  
In *Maribone*. *Pre.* Ha' you acquaintance with him, 40  
To borrow his coat an houre ? *Hug.* Or but his badge,  
'Twill serve : A little thing he weares on his brest.

*Pre.* His coat, I say, is of more authority :  
Borrow his coat for an houre. I doe love  
To doe all things compleately, Chanon *Hugh* ; 45  
Borrow his coat, *Miles Metaphore*, or nothing.

*Met.* The Taberd of his office, I will call it,  
Or the Coat-Armour of his place : and so  
Insinuate with him by that Trope—. *Pre.* I know 51  
Your powers of Rhetorick, *Metaphore*. Fetch him off  
In a fine figure for his coat I say. *Metaph.*  
*goes out.*

*Hug.* Ile take my leave Sir of your worship too :  
Bycause I may expect the issue anone.

*Pre.* Stay my diviner Counsell, take your fee ;  
Wee that take fees, allow 'hem to our Counsell ; 55  
And our prime learned Counsell, double fees :  
There are a brace of Angels to support you  
I' your foot-walke this frost, for feare of falling ;  
Or spraying of a point of Matrimony,  
When you come at it. *Hug.* I' your worships service ; 60  
That the exploit is done, and you possest  
Of Mrs. *Awdrey Turfe*— *Pre.* I like your project. *Preamble*  
*goes out.*

I. v. 37 Unto] Vnto F 40 him, F3 : him ? F 49-51 Verse as  
in G : wrongly divided in F Insinuate . . Trope—. | Pre . . Metaphore |  
Fetch . . 59 spraying] Query, spraying 60 it.] it, W



*Hug.* And I, of this effect of two to one ;  
 It worketh in my pocket, 'gainst the Squire,  
 65 And his halfe bottome here, of halfe a peice :  
 Which was not worth the stepping ore the stile for ;  
 His Mother has quite marr'd him · *Lady Tub*,  
 She's such a vessell of *fæces* : all dry'd earth !  
*Terra damnata*, not a drop of salt !  
 70 Or *Peeter* in her ! All her Nitre is gone.

## ACT I. SCENE VI.

*Lady Tub. Pol-Marten.*

*Lad.* Is the Nag ready *Marten* ? call the Squire.  
 5 This frosty morning wee will take the aire,  
 About the fields : for I doe meane to be  
 Some-bodies *Valentine*, i' my Velvet Gowne,  
 5 This morning, though it be but a beggar-man.  
 Why stand you still, and doe not call my sonne ?

*Pol.* Madam, if he had couched with the Lambe,  
 He had no doubt beene stirring with the Larke :  
 But he sat up at Play, and watch'd the Cock,  
 10 Till his first warning chid him off to rest.  
 Late Watchers are no early Wakers, Madam ;  
 But if your Ladiship will have him call'd—

*Lad.* Will have him call'd ? Wherefore did I, Sir, bid  
 him

Be call'd, you Weazell, Vermin of an Huisher ?

15 You will returne your wit to your first stile  
 Of *Marten Polcat*, by these stinking tricks,  
 If you doe use 'hem : I shall no more call you  
*Pol-marten*, by the title of a Gentleman,

*Pol-  
marten  
goes out.*

If you goe on thus— *Pol.* I am gone. *Lad.* Be quick then,  
 I' your come off : and make amends you Stote !  
 Was ever such a Full-mart for an Huisher,  
 To a great worshipfull Lady, as my selfe ;  
 Who, when I heard his name first, *Martin Polcat*,  
 A stinking name, and not to be pronounc'd\*

i. vi. Scene iv—Totten-Court. Before Lady Tub's House. G



Without a reverence, in any Ladies presence ; 25  
 My very heart eene earn'd, seeing the Fellow  
 Young, pretty and handsome ; being then I say,  
 A Basket-Carrier, and a man condemn'd  
 To the Salt-peeter workes ; made it my suit  
 To Mr. *Peeter Tub*, that I might change it ; 30  
 And call him as I doe now, by *Pol-marten*,  
 To have it sound like a Gentleman in an Office,  
 And made him mine owne Fore-man, daily waiter,  
 And he to serve me thus ! Ingratitude !  
 Beyond the Coursenes yet of any Clownage, 35  
 Shewen to a Lady ! what now, is he stirring ?  
*Pol.* Stirring betimes out of his bed, and ready.  
*Lad.* And comes he then ? *Pol.* No Madam, he is gone.  
*Lad.* Gone ? whither ? aske the Porter : Where's he  
 gone ?  
*Pol.* I met the Porter, and have ask'd him for him ; 40  
 He says he let him forth an houre agoe.  
*Lad.* An houre agoe ! what busines could he have,  
 So early ? where is his man, grave *Basket Hilts* ?  
 His Guide, and Governour ? *Pol.* Gone with his Master.  
*Lad.* Is he gone too ? O that same surly knave, 45  
 Is his right hand : and leads my sonne amisse.  
 He has carried him to some drinking match, or other :  
*Pol-marten*, I will call you so againe ;  
 I'am friends with you now. Goe get your horse, and ride  
 To all the Townes about here, where his haunts are ; 50  
 And crosse the fields to meet, and bring me word ;  
 He cannot be gone farre, being a foot.  
 Be curious to inquire him : and bid *Wispe*  
 My woman come, and waite on me. The love  
 Wee Mothers beare our Sonnes, we ha' bought with paine, 55  
 Makes us oft view them, with too carefull eyes,  
 And over-looke 'hem with a jealous feare,  
 Out-fitting Mothers.

i. vi 25-6 Without a reverence.] *A marginal note in F, which prints*  
*In any Ladies . . . the Fellow as one line. Text from W : In any lady's*  
*presence without a reverence G 55 bought] brought W*



## ACT I. SCENE VII.

*Lady Tub. Wispe.**Lad.* How now *Wispe*? Ha' you

A Valentine yet: I'm taking th' aire to choose one.

*Wis.* Fate send your Ladiship a fit one then.*Lad.* What kind of one is that? *Wis.* A proper man,5 To please your Ladiship. *Lad.* Out o' that vanity,

That takes the foolish eye: Any poore creature,

Whose want may need my almes, or courtesie;

I rather wish; so Bishop *Valentine*,

Left us example to doe deeds of Charity;

10 To feed the hungry; cloath the naked; visit

The weake, and sicke; to entertaine the poore;

And give the dead a Christian Funerall;

These were the workes of piety he did practise,

And bad us imitate; not looke for Lovers,

15 Or handsome Images to please our senses.

I pray thee *Wispe*, deale freely with me now:

Wee are alone, and may be merry a little:

Tho' art none o' the Court-glories; nor the wonders

For wit, or beauty i' the Citie: tell me,

20 What man would satisfie thy present phansie?

Had thy ambition leave to choose a Valentine,

Within the Queenes Dominion, so a subject.

*Wis.* Yo' ha' gi' me a large scope, Madam, I confesse,

And I will deale with your Ladiship sincerely:

25 I'll utter my whole heart to you. I would have him,

The bravest, richest, and the properest man

A Taylor could make up; or all the Poets,

With the Perfumers: I would have him such,

As not another woman, but should spite me!

30 Three Citie Ladies should run mad for him:

And Countri-Madams infinite. *Lad.* You'd spare me,i. vii. 10 naked;] naked, *F*, *F3*    29 me! *corr. F*: me: *l'* originally



And let me hold my wits? *Wis.* I should with you—  
 For the young Squire, my Masters sake : dispense  
 A little ; but it should be very little.  
 Then all the Court-wives I'd ha' jealous of me ; 35  
 As all their husbands jealous of them :  
 And not a Lawyers Pusse of any quality,  
 But lick herlips, for a snatch in the Terme time. *Lad.* Come,  
 Let's walke : wee'll heare the rest, as we goe on :  
 You are this morning in a good veine, *Dido* : 40  
 Would I could be as merry. My sonnes absence  
 Troubles me not a little : though I seeke  
 These wayes to put it off ; which will not helpe :  
 Care that is entred, once into the brest,  
 Will have the whole possession, ere it rest. 45

ACT II. SCENE I.

*Turfe. Clay. Medlay. Clench. To-Pan. Scriben. Puppy.*

⟨To them

*D. Turfe. Awdrey. Maids.⟩*

*Tur.* **Z**onne *Clay*, cheare up, the better leg avore :  
 This is a veat is once done, and no more.

*Cle.* And then 'tis done vor ever, as they say.

*Med.* Right ! vor a man ha' his houre, and a dog his day.

*Tur.* True neighbour *Medlay*, yo' are still *In-and-In*. 5

*Med.* I would be Mr. Constable, if 'ch could win.

*Pan.* I zay, *Iohn Clay*, keepe still on his old gate :  
 Wedding, and hanging, both goe at a rate.

*Tur.* Well said *To-Pan* : you ha' still the hap to hit  
 The naile o' the head at a close : I thinke there never 10  
 Marriage was manag'd with a more avisement,  
 Then was this mariage, though I say't, that should not ;  
 Especially 'gain' mine owne flesh, and blood ;  
 My wedded Wife. Indeed my Wife would ha' had

1 vii. 36 jealous] jealous too *W. Query*, jealous II. i. Scene 1.—  
 The fields near Pancras. G 6 'ch] 'ch' *F* 10 never] ne ver *F*



- 15 All the young Batchelers and Maids, forsooth,  
 O' the xixe Parishes hereabout : But I  
 Cry'd none, sweet *Sybil*. none of that gear, I :  
 It would lick salt, I told her, by her leave.  
 No, three, or voure our wise, choise honest neighbours :
- 20 Upstantiall persons : men that ha' borne office :  
 And mine owne Family, would bee inough  
 To eate our dinner. What ? Deare meate's a theife :  
 I know it by the Butchers, and the Mercat-volke ;  
 Hum drum I cry. No halfe-Oxe in a Pie :
- 25 A man that's bid to Bride-ale, if hee ha' cake,  
 And drinke enough, hee need not veare his stake.  
*Cle.* Tis right : he has spoke as true as a Gun ; beleeve it.  
*Tur.* Come *Sybil*, come : Did not I tell you o' this ?  
 This pride, and muster of women would marre all ?
- 30 Sixe women to one Daughter, and a Mother !  
 The Queene (God save her) ha' no more her selfe.  
*D. Tur.* Why, if you keepe so many, Mr. *Turfe*,  
 Why, should not all present our service to her ?  
*Tur.* Your service ? good ! I thinke you'll write to her  
 shortly,
- 35 Your very loving and obedient Mother.  
 [*Tur.*] Come, send your Maids off, I will have 'hem sent  
 Home againe wife : I love no traines o' *Kent*,  
 Or Christendome, as they say. *Sc.* Wee will not back,  
 And leave our Dame. *Mad.* Why should her worship lack
- 40 Her taile of Maids, more then you doe of men ?  
*Tur.* What, mutinin *Madge* ? *Io.* Zend back your  
 C'lons agen.  
 And wee will vollow. *All.* Else wee'll guard our Dame.  
*Tur.* I ha' zet the nest of waspes all on a flame.  
*D. Tur.* Come, you are such another Mr. *Turfe* :
- 45 A Clod you should be call'd, of a high Constable :  
 To let no musicke goe afore your child,  
 To Church, to cheare her heart up this cold morning.



*Tur.* You are for Father *Rosin*, and his consort  
 Of fidling Boyes, the great *Feates*, and the lesse :.  
 Bycause you have entertain'd 'hem all from *High-gate*. 50  
 To shew your pompe, you'd ha' your Daughter, and Maids  
 Dance ore the fields like *Faies*, to Church, this frost ?  
 Ile ha' no rondels, I, i' the Queenes pathes ;  
 Let 'un scrape the Gut at home, where they ha' fill'd it  
 At after-noone. *D. Turfe.* Ile ha' 'hem play at dinner. 55  
*Ite.* She is i' th' right, Sir ; vor your wedding dinner  
 Is starv'd without the Musicke. *Med.* If the Pies  
 Come not in piping hot, you ha' lost that Proverbe.  
*Tur.* I yield to truth : wife are you sussified ?  
*Pan.* A right good man ! when he knowes right, he 60  
 loves it.  
*Scri.* And he will know't, and shew't too by his place  
 Of being high Constable, if no where else.

ACT II. SCENE II.

To them.

*Hilts bearded, booted and spur'd.*

*Hil.* Well over-taken, *Gentlemen* ! I pray you,  
 Which is the Queenes High Constable among you ?  
*Pup.* The tallest man : who should be else, doe you  
 thinke ?  
*Hil.* It is no matter what I thinke, young Clowne :  
 Your answer savours of the Cart. *Pup.* How ? Cart ? 5  
 And Clowne ? Doe you know whose teame you speake to ?  
*Hil.* No : nor I care not : Whose Jade may you be ?  
*Pup.* Jade ? Cart ? and Clowne ? O for a lash of whip-  
 cord !  
 Three-knotted coard ! *Hil.* Doe you mutter ? Sir, snorle  
 this way ;  
 That I may heare, and answer what you say, 10  
 With my schoole-dagger, 'bout your Costard Sir.  
 Looke to't, young growse : Ile lay it on, and sure ;  
 11 1 52 *Faies*] *Fairies* *F3* Church, *F3* : Church *F* 54 where]  
*Query*, when 56 *Ite.*] *Clench* W 11. ii. 6. And] and *F*



Take't off who's wull. *Cle.* Nay, pray you Gentleman——.

*Hil.* Goe too : I will not bate him an ace on't.

15 *What?* Rowle-powle? Maple-face? All fellows?

*Pup.* Doe you heare friend, I wou'd wish you, vor your good,

Tie up your brended Bitch there, your dun rustie

Pannyer-hilt poinard : and not vexe the youth

With shewing the teeth of it. Wee now are going

20 To Church, in way of matrimony, some on us :

Tha' rung all in a'ready. If it had not,

All the horne beasts are grazing i' this close,

Sould not ha' pull' me hence, till this Ash-plant

Had rung noone o' your pate, Mr. Broome-beard.

25 *Hil.* That would I faine zee, quoth the blind *George*

Of *Holloway* : Come Sir. *Awd.* O their naked weapons !

*Pan.* For the passion of man, hold Gentleman, and *Puppy*.

*Cla.* Murder, O Murder ! *Awd.* O my Father, and Mother !

*D. Tur.* Husband, what doe you meane? *Sonne Clay* for Gods sake—

30 *Tur.* I charge you in the Queenes name, keepe the peace.

*Hil.* Tell me o' no Queene, or *Keysar* : I must have

A legge, or a hanch of him, ere I goe. *Med.* But zir,

You must obey the Queenes high Officers.

*Hil.* Why must I, Good-man *Must*? *Med.* You must, an' you wull.

35 *Tur.* Gentleman, I'am here-for fault, high Constable—

*Hil.* Are you zo? what then? *Tur.* I pray you Sir put up

Your weapons ; doe, at my request : For him,

On my authority, he shall lie by the heeles,

*Verbatim continente*, an' I live.

40 *D. Tur.* Out on him for a knave, what a dead fright

He has put me into? Come *Awdrey*, doe not shake.

*Awd.* But is not *Puppy* hurt? nor the tother man?

*Cla.* No Bun ; but had not I cri'd Murder, I wusse—

*Pup.* Sweet Good-man *Clench*, I pray you revise my Mr.



I may not zit i' the stocks, till the wedding be past. 45

Dame, Mrs. *Awdrey* : I shall breake the Bride-cake else.

*Cle.* Zomething must be, to save authority, *Puppy*.

*D. Tur.* Husband— *Cle.* And Gossip— *Awd.* Father—

*Tur.* 'Treat mee not.

It is i' vaine. If he lye not by the heeles,

Ile lie there for 'hun. Ile teach the Hine, 50

To carry a tongue in his head, to his superiors.

*Hil.* This 's a wise Constable ! where keepes he schoole ?

*Cle.* In *Kentish Towne*, a very survere man.

*Hil.* But as survere as he is ; Let me Sir tell him,

He sha' not lay his man by the heeles for this. 55

This was my quarrell : And by his office leave,

If't carry 'hun for this, it shall carry double ;

Vor he shall carry me too. *Tur.* Breath of man !

Hee is my chattell, mine owne hired goods :

An' if you doe abet 'un in this matter, 60

Ile clap you both by the heeles, ankle to ankle.

*Hilt.* You'll clap a dog of waxe as soone, old *Blurt* ?

Come, spare not me, Sir ; I am no mans wife :

I care not, I, Sir, not three skips of a Lowse for you,

And you were ten tall Constables, not I. 65

*Tur.* Nay, pray you Sir, be not angry ; but content :

My man shall make you, what amends you'll aske 'hun.

*Hil.* Let 'hun mend his manners then, and know his  
betters :

It's all I aske 'hun : and 'twill be his owne ;

And's Masters too, another day. Che vore 'hun. 70

*Med.* As right as a Club, still. Zure this angry man

Speakes very neere the marke, when he is pleas'd.

*Pup.* I thanke you Sir, an' I meet you at *Kentish Towne*,

I ha' the courtesie o' <the> hundred for you.

*Hil.* Gramercy, good high Constables Hine. But hear you ? 75

Mass: Constable, I have other manner o' matter,

To bring you about, then this. And so it is,

11. ii. 45 past.] past, *F*3: past *F* 46 Dame, *F*3: Dame. *F* 51 sub-  
perious] Superiours *F*3 74 the *G* 75 Hine. corr. *F*: Hine! *F* originally



I doe belong to one o' the Queenes Captaines ;  
 A Gent'man o' the Field, one Captaine *Thum's* :  
 80 I know not, whether you know 'hun, or no : It may be  
 You doe, and't may be you doe not againe.

*Tur.* No, I assure you on my Constable-ship,  
 I doe not know 'hun. *Hil.* (Nor I neither i' faith.)  
 It skils not much ; my Captaine, and my selfe,  
 85 Having occasion to come riding by, here,  
 This morning, at the corner of Saint *Iohn's* wood,  
 Some mile o' this Towne, <we> were set upon  
 By a sort of countrey fellowes : that not onely  
 Beat us, but rob'd us, most sufficiently ;  
 90 And bound us to our behaviour, hand and foot ;  
 And so they left us. Now, *Don Constable*,  
 I am to charge you in her Majesties name,  
 As you will answer it at your apperill,  
 That forth-with you raise Hue and Cry i' the Hundred,  
 95 For all such persons as you can dispect,  
 By the length and bredth, o' your office : vor I tell you,  
 The losse is of some valuc, therefore looke to't.

*Tur.* As Fortune mend me, now, or any office  
 Of a thousand pound, if I know what to zay,  
 100 Would I were dead ; or vaire hang'd up at *Tiburne*,  
 If I doe know what course to take ; or how  
 To turne my selfe ; just at this time too, now,  
 My Daughter is to be married : Ile but goe  
 To *Pancridge* Church, hard by; and returne instantly,  
 105 And all my Neighbour-hood shall goe about it.

*Hil.* Tut, *Pancridge* me no *Pancridge*, if you let it  
 Slip, you will answer it, and your Cap be of wooll ;  
 Therefore take heed, you'll feele the smart else, Constable.

*Tur.* Nay, good Sir stay. Neighbours ! what thinke you  
 o' this ?  
 110 *D. Tur.* Faith, Man—. <*Tur.*> Odd pretious woman,  
 hold your tongue ;



And mind your pigs o' the spit at home, you must  
Have Ore in every thing. Pray you Sir, what kind  
Of fellows were they? *Hil.* Theev's kind, I ha' told you.

*Tur.* I meane, what kind of men? *Hil.* Men of our make.

*Tur.* Nay, but with patience, Sir, we that are Officers 115  
Must 'quire the speciall markes, and all the tokens  
Of the despected parties, or perhaps—else,  
Be nere the nere of our purpose in 'prehending 'hem.  
Can you tell, what 'parrell any of them wore?

*Hil.* Troth no: there were so many o' hun, all like 120  
So one another: Now I remember me,  
There was one busie fellow, was their Leader;  
A blunt squat swad, but lower then your selfe,  
He' had on a Lether Doublet, with long points.  
And a paire of pin'd-up breech's, like pudding bags: 125  
With yellow stockings, and his hat turn'd up  
With a silver Clasp, on his leere side. *D. Tur.* By these  
Markes it should be *Iohn Clay*, now blesse the man!

*Tur.* Peace, and be nought: I thinke the woman be  
phrensick.

*Hil.* *Iohn Clay*? what's he, good Mistris? *Awd.* He 130  
that shall be

My husband— *Hil.* How! your husband, pretty one?

*Awd.* Yes, I shall anone be married: That's he.

*Tur.* Passion o' me, undone! *Pup.* Blesse Masters sonnel

*Hil.* O you are well 'prehended: know you me Sir?

*Clay.* No's my record: I æver zaw you avore. 135

*Hil.* You did not? where were your eyes then? out at  
washing?

*Tur.* What should a man zay? who should he trust  
In these dayes? Harke you *Iohn Clay*, if you have  
Done any such thing, tell troth, and shame the Divell.

*Cle.* Vaith doe: my Gossip *Turfe* zaies well to you *Iohn.* 140

*Med.* Speake man, but doe not convesse, nor be avraid.

*Pan.* A man is a man, and a beast's a beast, looke to't.

*D. Tur.* I' the name of men, or beasts! what doe you  
doe?



- Hare the poore fellow out on his five wits,  
 145 And seven senses? Doe not weepe *Iohn Clay*.  
 I sweare the poore wretch is as guilty from it,  
 As the Child was, was borne this very morning.  
*Cla.* No, as I am a kyrsin soule, would I were hang'd  
 If ever I—alasse I! would I were out  
 150 Of my life, so I would I were, and in againe—  
*Pup.* Nay, Mrs. *Awdrey* will say nay to that.  
 No In-and-out? an' you were out o' your life,  
 How should she doe for a husband? who should fall  
 Aboord o' her then? (*Ball?* He's a *Puppy?*)  
 155 No; *Hanniball* has no breeding: well! I say little;  
 But hitherto all goes well, pray it prove no better.)  
*Awd.* Come Father; I would wee were married: I am a cold.  
*Hil.* Well, Mr. Constable, this your fine Groome here,  
 Bride-groome, or what Groome else, soere he be,  
 160 I charge him with the felonie; and charge you  
 To carry him back forthwith to *Paddington*,  
 Unto my Captaine, who staies my returne there:  
 I am to goe to the next Justice of peace,  
 To get a warrant to raise *Huy* and *Cry*,  
 165 And bring him, and his fellowes all afore 'hun.  
 Fare you well Sir, and looke to 'hun I charge you,  
 As yo'll answer it. Take heed; the busines  
 If you deferre, may prejudiciall you  
 170 *Hilts goes out.* More then you thinke-for, zay I told you so.  
*Tur.* Here's a Bride-ale indeed! Ah zonne *Iohn*, zonne  
*Clay*!  
 171 I little thought you would ha' prov'd a peece  
 Of such false mettall. *Cla.* Father, will you beleeve me?  
 Would I might never stirre i' my new shoes,  
 If ever I would doe so voule a fact.  
 175 *Tur.* Well Neighbours, I doe charge you to assist me  
 With 'hun to *Paddington*. Be he a true man, so:  
 The better for 'hun. I will doe mine office,

ii. ii. 152 No] No, F      154 then?] then, F      154-6 *Aside not*  
*marked in F*      162 Unto] Vnto F      169 s. d. out.] out F



An' he were my owne begotten a thousand times.

*D. Tur.* Why, doe you heare man? Husband? Mr. 179

*Turfe!*

What shall my Daughter doe? *Puppy*, stay here.

*Awd.* Mother, Ile goe with you, and with my Father.

*She fol-  
lows her  
husb. and  
neigh-  
bours.*

ACT II. SCENE III.

*Puppy. Awdrey.*

<To them.>

*Hilts.*

*Pup.* Nay, stay sweet Mrs. *Awdrey*: here are none

But one friend (as they zay) desires to speake

A word, or two, cold with you: How doe you veele

Your selfe this frosty morning? *Awd.* What ha' you

To doe to aske, I pray you? I am a cold.

5

*Pup.* It seemes you are hot, good Mrs. *Awdrey*.

*Awd.* You lie; I am as cold as Ice is: Feele else.

*Pup.* Nay, you ha' could my courage: I am past it,

I ha' done feeling with you. *Awd.* Done with me?

I doe defie you. So I doe, to say

10

You ha' done with me: you are a sawcy *Puppy*.

*Pup.* O you mistake! I meant not as you meane.

*Awd.* Meant you not knavery, *Puppy*? <*Pup.*> No:  
not I.

*Clay* meant you all the knavery, it seemes,

Who rather, then he would be married to you,

15

Chose to be wedded to the Gallowes first.

*Awd.* I thought he was a dissembler; he would prove

A slippery Merchant i' the frost. Hee might

Have married one first, and have beene hang'd after,

If hee had had a mind to't. But you men,

20

Fie on you. *Pup.* Mrs. *Awdrey*, can you vind,

I' your heart to fancie *Puppy*? me poore *Ball*?

*Awd.* You are dispos'd to jeere one, Mr. *Hanniball*.

11 iii (Heading) *Puppy*. *Hilts* one line in F 13 knavery,  
*Puppy*? *Pup.* No:] Knavery? *Puppy*. No, F3 22 I' F3: I F



*Enter  
Hilts.*

Pitty o' me ! the angry man with the beard !

*Hil.* Put on thy hat, I looke for no despect.

26 Where's thy Master ? *Pup.* Marry, he is gone

With the picture of despaire, to *Paddington*.

*Hil.* Pr'y thee run after 'hun, and tell 'hun he shall

Find out my Captaine, lodg'd at the red-*Lyon*

30 In *Paddington* ; that's the Inne. Let 'un aske

Vor Captaine *Thum's* ; And take that for thy paines :

He may seeke long enough elsc. Hie thee againe.

*Pup.* Yes, Sir you'll looke to Mrs. Bride the while ?

*Hil.* That I will : prethee haste. *Awd.* What *Puppy* ?  
< *Puppy*  
*goes out* > *Puppy* ?

35 *Hil.* Sweet Mrs. Bride, Hee'll come againe presently.

Here was no subtil device to get a wench.

This Chanon has a brave pate of his owne !

A shaven pate ! And a right monger, y' vaith !

This was his plot ! I follow Captaine *Thum's* ?

40 Wee rob'd in Saint *Iohn's* wood ? I' my tother hose !

I laugh, to thinke what a fine fooles finger they have

O' this wise Constable, in pricking out

This Captaine *Thum's* to his neighbours : you shall see

The Tile-man too set fire on his owne *Kill*,

45 And leap into it, to save himselfe from hanging.

You talke of a Bride-ale, here was a Bride-ale broke,

I' the nick. Well : I must yet dispatch this Bride,

To mine owne master, the young Squire, and then

My taske is done. Gen'woman ! I 'have in sort

50 Done you some wrong, but now Ile doe you what right

I can : It's true, you are a proper woman ;

But to be cast away on such a Clowne-pipe

As *Clay* ; me thinkes, your friends are not so wise

As nature might have made 'hem ; well, goe too :

55 There's better fortune comming toward you,

An' you doe not deject it. Take a voole's

Counsell, and doe not stand i' your owne light.

It may prove better then you thinke for : 'Looke you.



*Awd.* Alas Sir, what is't you would ha' me doe ?  
 I'd faine doe all for the best, if I knew how. 60  
*Hil.* Forsake not a good turne, when 'tis offered you ;  
 Faire Mistris *Awdrey*, that's your name, I take it.  
*Awd.* No Mistris, Sir, my name is *Awdrey*.  
*Hil.* Well, so it is, there is a bold young Squire,  
 The blood of *Totten*, *Tub*, and *Tripoly*—. 65  
*Awd.* Squire *Tub*, you meane ? I know him : he knowes  
 me too.  
*Hil.* He is in love with you : and more, he's mad for you.  
*Awd.* I, so he told me : in his wits, I thinke.  
 But hee's too fine for me ; and has a Lady  
*Tub* to his Mother. Here he comes himselfe ! 70

ACT II. SCENE IV.

*Tub. Hilts. Awdrey.*

*Tub.* O you are a trusty Governour ! *Hil.* What ailes  
 you ?  
 You doe not know when yo' are well, I thinke :  
 You'd ha' the Calfe with the white face, Sir, would you ?  
 I have her for you here ; what would you more ?  
*Tub.* Quietnes, *Hilts*, and heare no more of it. 5  
*Hil.* No more of it, quoth you ? I doe not care,  
 If some on us had not heard so much of't,  
 I tell you true ; A man must carry, and vetch,  
 Like *Bungy's* dog for you. *Tub.* What's he ? *Hil.* A  
 Spaniel.  
 And scarce be spit i' the mouth for't. A good Dog 10  
 Deserves, Sir, a good bone, of a free Master :  
 But, an' your turnes be serv'd, the divell a bit  
 You care for a man after, ere a Lard of you.  
 Like will to like, y-faith, quoth the scab'd Squire  
 To th' mangy Knight, when both met in a dish 15  
 Of butter'd fish. One bad, there's nere a good ;  
 And not a barrell better Hering among you.



*Tub.* Nay *Hilts* ! I pray thee grow not fram-pull now.  
Turne not the bad Cow, after thy good soape.

- 20 Our plot hath hitherto tane good effect :  
And should it now be troubled, or stop'd up,  
'Twould prove the utter ruine of my hopes.  
I pray thee haste to *Pancridge*, to the Chanon :  
And gi' him notice of our good successe ;  
25 Will him that all things be in readinesse.  
Faire *Awdrey*, and my selfe, will crosse the fields,  
The nearest path. Good *Hilts*, make thou some haste,  
And meet us on the way. Come gentle *Awdrey*.

- Hil.* Vaith, would I had a few more geances on't :  
30 An' you say the word, send me to *Iericho*.  
Out-cept a man were a Post-horse, I ha' not knowne  
The like on't ; yet, an' he had kind words,  
'Twould never irke 'hun. But a man may breake  
His heart out i' these dayes, and get a flap  
35 With a fox-taile, when he has done. And there is all.

*Tub.* Nay, say not so *Hilts* : hold thee ; there are  
Crownes—

- My love bestowes on thee, for thy reward.  
If Gold will please thee, all my land shall drop  
In bounty thus, to recompence thy merit.  
40 *Hil.* Tut, keepe your land, and your gold too Sir : I  
Seeke neither-nother of 'hun. Learne to get  
More : you will know to spend that zum you have  
Early enough : you are assur'd of me.  
I love you too too well, to live o' the spoyle :  
45 For your owne sake, were there no worse then I.  
All is not Gold that glisters : Ile to *Pancridge*.

- Tub.* See, how his love doth melt him into Teares !  
An honest faithfull servant is a Jewell.  
Now th' adventurous Squire hath time, and leisure,  
50 To aske his *Awdrey* how she do's, and heare  
A gratefull answer from her. Shee not speakes :

σ. iv. 32 had] had had G 41 neither-nother] neither—nother F, F3  
45 were there] were there F: would there were W 49 adven-  
turous] adventurous F3



Hath the proud Tiran, Frost, usurp'd the seate  
 Of former beauty in my Loves faire cheek ;  
 Staining the roseat tincture of her blood,  
 With the dull die of blew-congealing cold ? 55  
 No, sure the weather dares not so presume  
 To hurt an object of her brightnesse. Yet,  
 The more I view her, shee but lookes so, so.  
 Ha ? gi' me leave to search this mysterie !  
 O now I have it : Bride, I know your griefe ; 60  
 The last nights cold, hath bred in you such horror  
 Of the assigned Bride-groomes constitution,  
 The *Kilborne* Clay-pit ; that frost-bitten marle ;  
 That lump in courage ; melting cake of Ice ;  
 That the conceit thereof hath almost kill'd thee. 65  
 But I must doe thee good wench, and refresh thee.

*Awd.* You are a merry man, Squire *Tub*, of *Totten* !

I have heard much o' your words, but not o' your deeds.

*Tub.* Thou sayest true, sweet ; I' ha' beene too slack in  
 deeds.

*Awd.* Yet, I was never so straight-lac'd to you, Squire. 70

*Tub.* Why, did you ever love me, gentle *Awdrey* ?

*Awd.* Love you ? I cannot tell : I must hate no body,  
 My Father sayes. *Tub.* Yes, *Clay*, and *Kilburne* ; *Awdrey*,  
 You must hate them. *Awd.* It shall be for your sake then.

*Tub.* And for my sake, shall yield you that gratuitie. 75

*Awd.* Soft, and faire, Squire, there goe two word's to  
 a bargaine. : *He offers to kisse her.*

*Tub.* What are those *Awdrey* ? *Awd.* Nay, I cannot  
 tell. *She puts him back.*

My Mother said, zure, if you married me,  
 You'd make me a Lady the first weeke : and put me  
 In, I know not what, the very day. *Tub.* What was it ? 80  
 Speake gentle *Awdrey*, thou shalt have it yet.

*Awd.* A velvet dressing for my head, it is,  
 They say will make one brave : I will not know  
*Besse Moale*, nor *Margery Turne-up* : I will looke



85 Another way upon 'hem, and be proud.

*Tub.* Troth I could wish my wench a better wit ;  
But what she wanteth there, her face supplies.  
There is a pointed lustre in her eye  
Hath shot quite through me, and hath hit my heart :  
90 And thence it is, I first receiv'd the wound,  
That rankles now, which only shee can cure.  
Faine would I worke my selfe, from this conceit ;  
But, being flesh, I cannot. I must love her,  
The naked truth is . and I will goe on,  
95 Were it for nothing, but to crosse my Rivall's.  
Come *Awdrey* : I am now resolv'd to ha' thee.

## ACT II. SCENE V.

*Preamble. Metaphore. Tub. Awdrey.*

*Pre.* Nay, doe it quickly, *Miles* ; why shak'st thou man ?  
Speake but his name . Ile second thee my selfe.

*Met.* What is his name ? *Pre.* Squire *Tripoly* or *Tub*.  
Any thing— *Met.* Squire *Tub*, I doe arrest you  
5 I' the Queenes Majesties name, and all the Councels.

*Tub.* Arrest me, Varlet ? *Pre.* Keepe the peace I  
charge you.

*Tub.* Are you there, Justice *Bramble* ? where's your  
warrant ?

*Pre.* The warrant is directed here to me,  
From the whole table ; wherefore I would pray you  
10 Be patient Squire, and make good the peace.

*Tub.* Well, at your pleasure, Iustice. I am wrong'd :  
Sirrah, what are you have arrested me ?

*Pre.* He is a Purs'yvant at Armes, Squire *Tub*.

*Met.* I am a Purs'yvant, see, by my Coat else.

15 *Tub.* Well Purs'yvant, goe with me : Ile give you baile.

*Pre.* Sir he may take no baile. It is a warrant,  
In speciaall from the Councell, and commands  
Your personall appearance. Sir, your weapōn



I must require : And then deliver you  
A Prisoner to this officer. Squire *Tub*, 20  
I pray you to conceive of me no other,  
Then as your friend, and neighbour. Let my person  
Be sever'd from my office in the fact,  
And I am cleare. Here Purs'yvant, receive him  
Into your hands ; And use him like a Gentleman. 25

*Tub*. I thanke you Sir : But whither must I goe now ?

*Pre*. Nay, that must not be told you, till you come  
Unto the place assign'd by his instructions.  
Ile be the Maidens Convoy to her father,  
For this time, Squire. *Tub*. I thanke you Mr. *Bramble*. 30  
I doubt, or feare, you will make her the ballance  
To weigh your Justice in. Pray yee doe me right,  
And lead not her, at least out of the way.

Justice is blind, and having a blind Guide,  
She may be apt to slip aside. *Pre*. Ile see to her. 35

*Tub*. I see my wooing will not thrive. Arrested !  
As I had set my rest up, for a wife ?  
And being so faire for it, as I was. Well, fortune,  
Thou art a blind Bawd, and a Beggar too,  
To crosse me thus ; and let my onely Rivall, 40  
To get her from me. That's the spight of spights.  
But most I muse at, is, that I, being none  
O' th' Court, am sent for thither by the Councell !  
My heart is not so light, as 't was i' the morning.

## ACT II. SCENE VI.

*Hilts. Tub. Metaphor.*

*Hil*. You meane to make a Hoiden, or a Hare  
O' me, t' hunt Counter thus, and make these doubles :  
And you meane no such thing, as you send about ?  
Where's your sweet-heart now, I marle ? *Tub*. Oh *Hilts* !

*Hil*. I know you of old ! nere halt afore a Cripple. 5

II. v 20 officer,] officer, F · Officer, F3 *Tub*,] *Tub*. F, F3 28 Unto]  
Vnto F 38 was. Well corr. F : was.— Well F originally 41 me.  
corr. F : me ? F originally II. vi 2 O' F3 : O F make F3 : makes F



Will you have a Cawdle ? where's your griefe, Sir ? speake.

*Met.* Doe you heare friend ? Doe you serve this Gentleman ?

*Hil.* How then, Sir ? what if I doe ? peradventure yea : Peraventure nay, what's that to you Sir ? Say.

10 *Met.* Nay, pray you Sir, I meant no harme in truth :

But this good Gentleman is arrested. *Hil.* How ?

Say me that againe. *Tub.* Nay *Basket*, never storme ;

I am arrested here, upon command

From the Queenes Councell ; and I must obey !

15 *Met.* You say Sir very true, you must obey.

An honest Gentleman, in faith ! *Hil.* He must ?

*Tub.* But that which most tormenteth me, is this,

That Justice *Bramble* hath got hence my *Awdrey*.

*Hil.* How ? how ? stand by a little, sirrah, you

20 With the badge o' your brest. Let's know Sir what you are ?

*Met.* I am Sir (pray you doe not looke so terribly)

A Purs'yvant. *Hil.* A Purs'yvant ? your name Sir ?

*Met.* My name Sir— *Hil.* What is't ? speake ? *Met.*

*Miles Metaphor ;*

And Justice *Preambles* Clarke. *Tub.* What sayes he ?

*Hil.* Pray you,

25 Let us alone. You are a Purs'yvant ?

*Met.* No faith, Sir, would that I might never stirre from you,

I' is made a Purs'yvant against my will.

*Hil.* Ha ! and who made you one ? tell true, or my will

Shall make you nothing, instantly. *Met.* Put up

30 Your frightfull Blade ; and your dead-doing looke,

And I shall tell you all. *Hil.* Speake then the truth,

And the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.

*Met.* My Master, Justice *Bramble*, hearing your Master,

The Squire *Tub*, was comming on this way,

35 With Mrs. *Awdrey*, the high Constables Daughter ;

II. vi. 6 Sir ? speake ] Sir, speake. *F* originally : Sir ? speake ? *corr.*  
*F.* 15 obey ! *corr.* *F* : obey. *F* originally



Made me a Purs'yvant : and gave me warrant  
To arrest him, so that hee might get the Lady,  
With whom he is gone to *Pancridge*, to the Vicar,  
Not to her Fathers. This was the device,  
Which I beseeke you, doe not tell my Master. 40

*Tub*. O wonderfull ! well *Basket*, let him rise :  
And for my free escape, forge some excuse.  
Ile post to *Paddington*, t' acquaint old *Turfe*,  
With the whole busines, and so stop the mariage.

*Hil*. Well, blesse thee : I doe wish thee grace, to keepe 45  
Thy Masters secrets, better, or be hang'd.

*Met*. I thanke you, for your gentle admonition.  
Pray you, let me call you God-father hereafter.  
And as your God-sonne *Metaphore* I promise,  
To keepe my Masters privities, seald up 50  
I' the vallies o' my trust, lock'd close for ever,  
Or let me be truss'd up at *Tiburne* shortly.

*Hil*. Thine owne wish, save, or choake thee ; Come away.

### ACT III. SCENE I.

*Turfe. Clench. Medlay. To-Pan. Scriben. Clay.*

*Tur*. **P**Assion of me, was ever man thus cross'd ?  
All things run *Arsie-Varsie* ; upside downe.  
High Constable ! Now by our Lady o' *Walsingham*,  
I had rather be mark'd out *Tom Scavenger* :  
And with a shovell make cleane the high wayes, 5  
Then have this office of a Constable,  
And a high Constable ! The higher charge  
It brings more trouble, more vexation with it.  
Neighbours, good neighbours, 'vize me what to doe :  
How wee shall beare us in this *Huy and Cry*. 10  
We cannot find the Captaine ; no such man  
Lodg'd at the *Lion*, nor came thither hurt.

II. vi. 40 beseeck] beseech F3 III. i. Scene 1.—Kentish Town G 3  
*Walsingham*, F3: *Walsingham*. F



The morning wee ha' spent in privie search ;  
 And by that meanes the Bride-ale is differr'd ;  
 15 The Bride, shee's left alone in *Puppie's* charge ;  
 The Bride-groome goes under a paire of sureties ;  
 And held of all as a respected person.  
 How should we bussle forward ? Gi' some counsell,  
 How to bestirre our stumps i' these crosse wayes.  
 20 *Cle.* Faith Gossip *Turfe*, you have, you say, Remission,  
 To comprehend all such, as are dispected :  
 Now, would I make another privie search  
 Through this Towne, and then you have zearch'd two  
 towns.

*Med.* Masters, take heed, let's not vind too many :  
 25 One's enough to stay the Hang-mans stomach.  
 There is *Iohn Clay*, who is yvound already ;  
 A proper man : A Tile-man by his trade :  
 A man as one would zay, moulded in clay :  
 As spruce as any neighbours child among you :  
 30 And he (you zee) is taken on conspition,  
 And two, or three (they zay) what call you 'hem ?  
 Zuch as the Justices of *Coram nobis*  
 Grant— (I forget their names, you ha' many on 'hem,  
 Mr. High Constable they come to you.)  
 35 I ha' it at my tongues end—Cunni-borroughes,  
 To bring him straight avore the zessions house.  
*Tur.* O you meane warrens, neighbour, doe you not ?  
*Med.* I, I, thick same ! you know 'un well enough.  
*Tur.* Too well, too well ; wou'd I had never knowne 'hem.  
 40 Wee good Vree-holders cannot live in quiet,  
 But every houre new purcepts, *Huy's* and *Cry's*,  
 Put us to requisitions night and day :  
 What shud a man zay, shud we leave the zearch ?  
 I am in danger, to reburse as much  
 45 As he was rob'd on ; I, and pay his hurts.  
 If I should vollow it, all the good cheare



That was provided for the wedding dinner ;  
 Is spoil'd, and lost. Oh there are two vat pigs,  
 A zinding by the vier : Now by Saint *Tony*,  
 Too good to eate, but on a wedding day ; 50  
 And then, a Goose will bid you all, Come cut me.  
*Zun Clay*, *zun Clay* (for I must call thee so)  
 Be of good comfort ; take my Muckinder ;  
 And dry thine eyes. If thou beest true, and honest ;  
 And if thou find'st thy conscience cleare vrom it 55  
 Pluck up a good heart, wee'll doe well enough.  
 If not, confesse a truths name. But in faith  
 I durst be sworne upon all holy bookes,  
*Iohn Clay* would nere commit a Robberie  
 On his owne head. *Cla.* No ; Truth is my rightfull Judge : 60  
 I have kept my hands, here hence, fro' evill speaking,  
 Lying, and slandering ; and my tongue from stealing.  
 He doe not live this day can say, *Iohn Clay*  
 I ha' zeene thee, but in the way of honesty.

*Pan.* Faith neighbour *Medlay*, I durst be his burrough, 65  
 He would not looke a true man in the vace.

*Cla.* I take the towne to concord, where I dwell,  
 All *Kilburne* be my wnesse ; If I were not  
 Begot in bashfulnesse, brought up in shamefac'tnesse :  
 Let 'un bring a dog, but to my vace, that can 70  
 Zay, I ha' beat 'hun, and without a vault ;  
 Or but a cat, will sweare upon a booke,  
 I have as much as zet a vier her taile ;  
 And Ile give him, or her a crowne for 'mends.  
 But to give out, and zay, I have rob'd a Captaine ! 75  
 Receive me at the latter day, if I  
 Ere thought of any such matter ; or could mind it—.

*Med.* No *Iohn*, you are come of too good personage ;  
 I thinke my Gossip *Clench*, and Mr. *Turfe*  
 Both thinke, you would ra'tempt no such voule matter. 80

*Tur.* But how unhappily it comes to passe !

III. i. 47 provided F<sub>3</sub> : provided ; F dinner F, F<sub>3</sub> 49 *Tony* G :  
*Tony* F, F<sub>3</sub> 80 ra'tempt] *Query*, n'atempt



Just on the wedding day ! I cry me mercy :  
 I hâd almost forgot the *Huy* and *Cry* :  
 Good neighbour *Pan*, you are the Third-burrow,  
 85 And *D'ogenes Scriben*, you my learned Writer,  
 Make out a new purcept—Lord, for thy goodnesse,  
 I had forgot my Daughter, all this while ;  
 The idle knave hath brought no newes from her.  
 Here comes the sneaking *Puppy* ; What's the newes ?  
 90 My heart ! my heart ! I feare all is not well,  
 Some thing's mishap'd, that he is come without her.

## ACT III. SCENE II.

To them.

*Puppy. Da: Turfe.*

*Pup.* Oh, where's my Master ? my Master ? my Master ?

*D. Tur.* Thy Master ? what would'st with thy Master, man ?

There's thy Mr. *Tur.* What 's the matter *Puppy* ?

*Pup.* Oh Master ! oh Dame ! oh Dame ! oh Master !

5 *D. Tur.* What sai'st thou to thy Master, or thy Dame ?

*Pup.* Oh *Iohn Clay* ! *Iohn Clay* ! *Iohn Clay* ! *Tur.* What of *Iohn Clay* ?

*Med.* Luck grant he bring not newes he shall be hang'd.

*Cle.* The world forfend, I hope, it is not so well.

*Cla.* Oh Lord ! oh me ! what shall I doe ? poore *Iohn* !

10 *Pup.* Oh *Iohn Clay* ! *Iohn Clay* ! *Iohn Clay* ! *Cla.* Alas, That ever I was borne ! I will not stay by't,

<Clay goes out.> For all the Tiles in *Kilburne*. *D. Tur.* What of *Clay* ?

Speake *Puppy*, what of him ? *Pup.* He hath lost, he hath lost.

*Tur.* For luck sake speake, *Puppy*, what hath he lost ?

15 *Pup.* Oh *Awdrey*, *Awdrey*, *Awdrey* ! *D. Tur.* What of my daughter *Awdrey* ?



*Pup.* I tell you *Awdrey*—doe you understand me?

*Awdrey*, sweet Master! *Awdrey*, my dear Dame—

*Tur.* Where is she? what's become of her, I pray thee?

*Pup.* Oh the serving-man! the serving-man! the serving-man!

*Tur.* What talk'st thou of the serving-man? where's 20

*Awdrey*?

*Pup.* Gone with the serving-man, gone with the serving-man.

*D. Tur.* Good *Puppy*, whither is she gone with him?

*Pup.* I cannot tell, he bad me bring you word,

The Captaine lay at the *Lion*, and before

I came againe, *Awdrey* was gone with the serving-man; 25

I tell you, *Awdrey*'s run away with the serving-man.

*Tur.* 'Od 'socks! my woman, what shall we doe now?

*D. Tur.* Now, so you helpe not, man, I know not, I.

*Tur.* This was your pompe of Maids. I told you on't.

Sixe Maids to vollow you, and not leave one 30

To wait upo' your Daughter: I zaid, Pride

Would be paid one day, her old vi'pence, wife.

*Med.* What of *Iohn Clay*, *Ball Puppy*? *Pup.* He hath lost—

*Med.* His life for velonie? *Pup.* No, his wife by villanie.

*Tur.* Now, villaines both! oh that same *Huy* and *Cry*! 35

Oh neighbours! oh that cursed serving-man!

O maids! O wife! But *Iohn Clay*, where's he?

How! fled for veare, zay yee? will he slip us now?

Wee that are sureties, must require 'hun out.

How shall wee doe to find the serving-man? 40

Cocks bodikins! wee must not lose *Iohn Clay*:

*Awdrey*, my daughter *Awdrey* too! let us zend

To all the townes, and zeeke her; but alas,

The *Huy* and *Cry*, that must be look'd unto.

*Clay's  
first mist.*



## ACT III. SCENE III.

To them.

*Tub.*

*Tub.* What, in a passion *Turfe*?    *Tur.* I good Squire  
*Tub.*

Were never honest Varmers thus perplext.

*Tub.* *Turfe*, I am privie to thy deepe unrest :  
 The ground of which, springs from an idle plot,  
 5 Cast by a Suitor, to your daughter *Awdrey*—  
 And thus much, *Turfe*, let me advertise you ;  
 Your daughter *Awdrey*, met I on the way,  
 With Justice *Bramble* in her company :  
 Who meanes to marry her at *Pancridge* Church.  
 10 And there is Chanon *Hugh*, to meet them ready :  
 Which to prevent, you must not trust delay ;  
 But winged speed must crosse their sle intent :  
 Then hic thee, *Turfe*, haste to forbid the Banes.

*Tur.* Hath Justice *Bramble* got my daughter *Awdrey*?  
 15 A little while, shall he enjoy her, zure.  
 But O the *Huy* and *Cry* ! that hinders me :  
 I must pursue that, or neglect my journey :  
 Ile ene leave all : and with the patient Asse,  
 The over-laden Asse, throw off my burden,  
 20 And cast mine office ; pluck in my large cares  
 Betimes, lest some dis-judge 'hem to be hornes :  
 I'll leave to beat it on the broken hoofe,  
 And ease my pasternes. Ile no more High Constables.

*Tub.* I cannot choose, but smile, to see thee troubled  
 25 With such a bald, halfe-hatched circumstance !  
 The Captaine was not rob'd, as is reported ;  
 That trick the Justice craftily deviz'd,  
 To breake the mariage with the Tile-man *Clay*.  
 The *Huy*, and *Cry*, was meerely counterfeit :  
 30 The rather may you judge it to be such,  
 Because the Bride-groome, was describ'd to be



One of the theeves, first i' the velonie.  
Which, how farre 'tis from him, your selves may guesse :  
'Twas Justice *Bramble's* vetch, to get the wench.

*Tur.* And is this true Squire *Tub* ? *Tub.* Beleeve me 35

*Turfe,*

As I am a Squire : or lesse, a Gentleman.

*Tur.* I take my office back : and my authority,  
Upon your worships words. Neighbours, I am  
High Constable againe : where's my zonne *Clay* ?  
He shall be zonne, yet, wife, your meat by leasure : 40  
Draw back the spits. *D. Tur.* That's done already man.

*Tur.* Ile breake this mariage off : and afterward,  
She shall be given to her first betroth'd.  
Looke to the meate, wife : looke well to the rost.

*Tub.* Ile follow him aloofe, to see the event. 45

*Pup.* Dame, Mistris, though I doe not turne the spit ;  
I hope yet the Pigs-head. *D. Tur.* Come up, Jack-sauce :  
It shall be serv'd in to you. *Pup.* No, no service,  
But a reward for service. *D. Tur.* I still tooke you  
For an unmannerly *Puppy* : will you come, 50  
And vetch more wood to the vier, Mr. *Ball* ?

*Pup.* I woud to the vier ? I shall pisse it out first :  
You thinke to make me ene your oxe, or asse ;  
Or any thing. Though I cannot right my selfe  
On you ; Ile sure revenge me on your meat. 55

### ACT III. SCENE IV.

*La: Tub. Pol-Marten. Wispe.*

<To them.>

*Puppy.*

*Pol.* Madam, to *Kentish Towne*, wee are got at length ;  
But, by the way wee cannot meet the Squire :  
Nor by inquiry can we heare of him.  
Here is *Turfe's* house, the father of the Maid.

III. iii. 38 Upon Vpon F III. iv. Scene II.—The Same [i. e.  
Kentish Town] before *Turfe's* House. G *La: Tub.* . . . *Puppy* one line  
in F



5 *Lad.* *Pol-Marten*, see, the streets are strow'd with herbes,  
 And here hath beene a wedding, *Wispe*, it seemes !  
 Pray heaven, this Bridall be not for my sonne !  
*Good Marten*, knock : knock quickly : Aske for *Turfe*.  
 My thoughts misgive me, I am in such a doubt——

10 *Pol.* Who keepe the house here? *Pup.* Why the  
 doore, and wals

Doe keepe the house. *Pol.* I aske then, who's within ?

*Pup.* Not you that are without. *Pol.* Looke forth, and  
 speake

Into the street, here. Come before my Lady.

*Pup.* Before my Lady ? Lord have mercy upon me :

15 If I doe come before her, shee will see

The hand-som'st man in all the Towne, pardee !

Now stand I vore her, what zaith velvet she ?

*Lad.* Sirrah, whose man are you ? *Pup.* Madam, my  
 Masters.

*Lad.* And who's thy Master ? *Pup.* What you tread  
 on, Madam.

20 *Lad.* I tread on an old Turfe. *Pup.* That *Turfe's* my  
 Master.

*Lad.* A merry fellow ! what's thy name ? *Pup.* *Ball*  
*Puppy*

They call me at home : abroad, *Hanniball Puppy*.

*Lad.* Come hither, I must kisse thec, Valentine *Puppy*.

*Wispe* ! ha' you got you a Valentine ? *Wis.* None,  
 Madam ;

25 He's the first stranger that I saw. *Lad.* To me  
 Hee is so, and such. Let's share him equally.

*Pup.* Helpe, helpe good Dame. A reskue, and in time.

In stead of Bils, with Colstaves come ; in stead of Speares,  
 with Spits ;

Your slices serve for slicing swords, to save me, and my wits :

30 A Lady, and her woman here, their Huisher eke by side,  
 (But he stands mute) have plotted how your *Puppy* to  
 divide.



ACT III. SCENE V.

To them.

*D. Turfe. Maids.*

*D. Turfe.* How now? what noise is this with you, *Ball Puppy*?

*Pup.* Oh Dame! And fellowes o' the Kitchin! Arme, Arme, for my safety; if you love your *Ball*: Here is a strange thing, call'd a Lady, a Mad-dame: And a device of hers, yclept her woman; Have plotted on me, in the Kings high-way, To steale me from my selfe, and cut me in halfe, To make one *Valentine* to serve 'hem both; This for my right-side, that my left-hand love.

*D. Tur.* So sawcy, *Puppy*? to use no more reverence Unto my Lady, and her velvet Gowne?

*Lad.* *Turfe's* wife, rebuke him not: Your man doth please me

With his conceit. Hold: there are ten old nobles, To make thee merrier yet, halfe-*Valentine*.

*Pup.* I thanke you right-side: could my left as much, 'Twould make me a man of marke: young *Hanniball*!

*Lad.* *Dido* shall make that good; or I will for her. Here *Dido Wispe*, there's for your *Hanniball*: He is your Countrey-man, as well as *Valentine*.

*Wis.* Here Mr. *Hanniball*: my Ladies bounty For her poore woman, *Wispe*. *Pup.* Brave *Carthage* Queene!

And such was *Dido*: I will ever be Champion to her, who *Iuno* is to thee.

*D. Tur.* Your Ladiship is very welcome here. Please you, good Madam, to goe nere the house.

*Lad.* *Turfe's* wife, I come thus farre to seeke thy husband, Having some busines to impart unto him.

Is he at home? *D. Tur.* O no, and't shall please you:

III. v. 9 love] loves F3    11 Unto] Vnto F    17 Dido] Dido, F, F3



He is posted hence to *Pancridge* with a witnesse.

- 30 Young Justice *Bramble* has kept leuell coyle  
Here in our Quarters, stole away our Daughter,  
And Mr. *Turfe's* run after, as he can,  
To stop the marriage, if it will be stop'd.

*Pol.* Madam, these tydings are not much amisse !

- 35 For if the Justice have the Maid in keepe,  
You need not feare the mariage of your sonne.

*Lad.* That somewhat caseth my suspitious brest.  
Tell me, *Turfe's* wife, when was my sonne with *Awdrey* ?  
How long is't, since you saw him at your house ?

- 40 *Pup.* Dame, let me take this rump out of your mouth.

*D. Tur.* What meane you by that Sir ? *Pup.* Rump,  
and taile's all one.

But I would use a reverence for my Lady :

I would not zay surreverence, the tale

Out o' your mouth, but rather take the rumpe.

- 45 *D. Tur.* A well bred youth ! and vull of favour you are.

*Pup.* What might they zay, when I were gone, if I

Not weigh'd my wordz ? This *Puppy* is a voole !

Great *Hannibal's* an Asse ; he had no breeding :

No Lady gay, you shall not zay,

- 50 That your *Val. Puppy*, was so unlucky,

In speech to faile, as t' name a taile,

Be as be may be, 'vore a faire Lady.

*Lad.* Leave jesting, tell us, when you saw our sonne.

*Pup.* Marry, it is two houres agoe. *Lad.* Sin' you saw  
him ?

- 55 *Pup.* You might have seene him too, if you had look'd up.

For it shind, as bright as day. *Lad.* <I> meane my sonne.

*Pup.* Your sunne, and our sunne are they not all one ?

*Lad.* Foole, thou mistak'st ; I ask'd thee, for my sonne.

*Pup.* I had thought there had beene no more sunnes, then  
one.

- 60 I know not what you Ladies have, or may have.

*Pol.* Did'st thou nere heare, my Lady ha'd a sonne ?



*Pup.* She may have twenty ; but for a sonne, unlesse,  
She meane precisely, Squire *Tub*, her zonne,  
He was here now ; and brought my Mr. word  
That Justice *Bramble* had got Mrs. *Awdrey*. 65  
But whither he be gone, here's none can tell.

*Lad. Marten*, I wonder at this strange discourse :  
The foole it seemes tels true ; my sonne the Squire  
Was doubtlesse here this morning. For the match,  
He smother what I thinke, and staying here, 70  
Attend the sequell of this strange beginning.  
*Turfe's* wife ; my people, and I will trouble thee :  
Untill we heare some tidings of thy husband.  
The rather, for my partie *Valentine*.

### ACT III. SCENE VI.

*Turfe. Awdrey. Clench. Medlay.*

*Pan. Scriben.*

*Tur.* Well, I have carried it, and will triumph  
Over this Justice, as becomes a Constable ;  
And a high Constable : next our Saint *George*,  
Who rescued the Kings Daughter, I will ride ;  
Above Prince *Arthur*. *Cle.* Or our *Shore-ditch* Duke. 5

*Med.* Or *Pancridge* Earle. *Pan.* Or *Bevis*, or Sir *Guy*,  
Who were high Constables both. *Cle.* One of *South-*  
*hampton*—.

*Med.* The tother of *Warwick*-Castle. *Tur.* You shall  
worke it

Into a storie for me, neighbour *Medlay*,  
Over my Chimney. *Scri.* I can give you Sir, 10  
A *Roman* storie of a petty-Constable,  
That had a Daughter, that was call'd *Virginia*,  
Like Mrs. *Awdrey*, and as young as she ;  
And how her Father bare him in the busines,

• III. v. 62 sonne corr. F : soune. F originally 71 beginning, F3 :  
beginning, F 73 Untill Vntill F III. vi. Scene III.—Pancras. G  
(Heading) Medlay F3 : Med-lay F 6 Pan. F3 : Pan : F Guy,  
F3 : Guy. F



15 'Gainst Justice *Appius*, a *Decemvir* in *Rome*,  
 And Justice of Assise. *Tur.* That, that good *D'ogenes* !  
 A learned man is a *Chronikell* ! *Scr.* I can tell you  
 A thousand, of great *Pompei'*, *Cæsar*, *Trajan*,  
 All the high Constables there. *Tur.* That was their place :  
 20 They were no more. *Scr. Dictator*, and high Constable  
 Were both the same. *Med.* High Constable was more,  
 tho' !

He laid *Dick: Tator* by the heeles. *Pan. Dick: Toter* !  
 H' was one o' the Waights o' the Citic : I ha' read o' hun :  
 He was a fellow would be drunke, debauch'd—

25 And he did zet un i' the stocks indeed :  
 His name <was> *Vadian*, and a cunning *Toter*.  
*Awd.* Was ever silly Maid thus posted off ?  
 That should have had three husbands in one day ;  
 Yet (by bad fortune) am possest of none ?

30 I went to Church to have beene wed to *Clay* ;  
 Then Squire *Tub* he seiz'd me on the way,  
 And thought to ha' had me : but he mist his aime ;  
 And Justice *Bramble* (nearest of the three)  
 Was well nigh married to me ; when by chance,  
 35 In rush'd my Father, and broke off that dance.

*Tur.* I, Girle, there's nere a Justice on 'hem all,  
 Shall teach the Constable to guard his owne :  
 Let's back to *Kentish-Towne*, and there make merry ;  
 These newes will be glad tidings to my wife :  
 40 Thou shalt have *Clay*, my wench. That word shall stand.  
 Hee's found by this time, sure, or else hee's drown'd :  
 The wedding dinner will be spoil'd : make haste.

*Awd.* Husbands, they say, grow thick ; but thin are  
 sowne.

I care not who it be, so I have on.

45 *Tur.* I? zay you zo? Perhaps you shall ha' none, for  
 that.

*Awd.* Now out <up>on me ! what shall I doe then ?

*Med.* Sleepe Mistris *Awdrey*, dreame on proper men.



ACT III. SCENE VII.

*Hugh. Preamble.*

*Metaphore.*

<To them.>

*Hugh.* O bone Deus ! have you seene the like ?  
Here was, *Hodge* hold thine eare, faire, whilst I strike.  
Body o' me, how came this geare about ?

*Pre.* I know not, Chanon, but it fals out crosse.  
Nor can I make conjecture by the circumstance 5  
Of these events ; it was impossible,  
Being so close, and politickly carried,  
To come so quickly to the eares of *Turfe*.  
O Priest, had but thy slow delivery  
Beene nimble, and thy lazie *Latine* tongue 10  
But run the formes ore, with that swift dispatch,  
As had beene requisite, all had beene well !

*Hug.* What should have beene, that never lov'd the  
Friar ;

But thus you see th'old *Adage* verified,  
*Multa cadunt inter*—you can ghesse the rest. 15  
Many things fall betweene the cup, and lip :  
And though they touch, you are not sure to drinke.  
You lack'd good fortune, wee had done our parts :  
Give a man fortune, throw him i' the Sea.  
The properer man, the worse luck : Stay a time ; 20  
*Tempus edax*—In time the stately Oxe, &c.  
Good counsels lightly never come too late.

*Pre.* You Sir will run your counsels out of breath.

*Hug.* Spurre a free horse, hee'll run himselfe to death.  
*Sancti Evangelistæ* ! Here comes *Miles* ! 25

*Pre.* What newes man, with our new made Purs'yvant ?

*Met.* A Pursuyvant ? would I were, or more pursie,  
And had more store of money ; or lesse pursie,  
And had more store of breath : you call me Pursyvant !  
But, I could never vant of any purse 30

III. vii. Scene iv.—Another part of the same [i. e. *Pancras*]. G  
*Hugh* . . . *Metaphore* one line in F 10 tongue] tongue, F, F3



I had, sin' yo' were my God-fathers, and God-mothers,  
And ga' me that nick-name. *Pre.* What now's the  
matter ?

*Met.* Nay, 'tis no matter. I ha' beene simply beaten.

*Hugh.* What is become o' the Squire, and thy Prisoner ?

35 *Met.* The lines of blood, run streaming from my head,  
Can speake what rule the Squire hath kept with me.

*Pre.* I pray thee *Miles* relate the manner, how ?

*Met.* Be't knowne unto you, by these presents, then,  
That I *Miles Metaphore*, your worships Clarke :

40 Have ene beene beaten, to an Allegory,  
By multitude of hands. Had they beene but  
Some five or sixe, I' had whip'd 'hem all, like tops  
In *Lent*, and hurl'd 'hem into *Hoblers-hole* ;  
Or the next ditch : I had crack'd all their costards,

45 As nimbly as a Squirrell will crack nuts :  
And flourish'd like to *Hercules*, the Porter,  
Among the Pages. But, when they came on  
Like Bees about a Hive, Crowes about carrion,  
Flies about sweet meats ; nay, like water-men

50 About a Fare : then was poore *Metaphore*  
Glad to give up the honour of the day,  
To quit his charge to them, and run away  
To save his life, onely to tell this newes.

*Hug.* How indirectly all things have falne out !

55 I cannot choose but wonder what they were  
Reskued your rivall from the keepe of *Miles* :  
But most of all I cannot well digest,  
The manner how our purpose came to *Turfe*.

*Pre.* *Miles*, I will see that all thy hurts be drest.

60 As for the Squires escape, it matters not :  
Wee have by this meanes disappointed him ;  
And that was all the maine I aimed at.  
But Chanon *Hugh*, now muster up thy wits,  
And call thy thoughts into the Consistory.

III. vii. 32 What *F*<sub>3</sub> : What, *F* 35 run *W* : ran *F* 46 flourish'd] flourished *F* Porter, *F*<sub>3</sub> : Porter *F*



Search all the secret corners of thy cap, 65  
To find another quaint devised drift,  
To disappoint her marriage with this *Clay*;  
Doe that, and Ile reward thee jovially.

*Hug.* Well said *Magister* Justice. If I fit you not  
With such a new, and well-laid stratagem, 70  
As never yet your eares did heare a finer,  
Call me, with Lilly, *Bos*, *Fur*, *Sus*, *atq; Sacerdos*.

*Pre.* I heare, there's comfort in thy words yet, Chanon.  
Ile trust thy regulars, and say no more.

*Met.* Ile follow too. And if the dapper Priest 75  
Be but as cunning, point in his devise,  
As I was in my lie : my Master *Preamble*  
Will stalke, as led by the nose with these new promises,  
And fatted with supposes of fine hopes.

### ACT III. SCENE VIII.

*Turfe.* *D. Turfe.* *L. Tub.* *Pol-mart<en>.* *Awd<rey>.*  
*Pup<py>.*

*Tur.* Well Madam, I may thanke the Squire your sonne :  
For, but for him, I had beene over-reach'd.

*D. Tur.* Now heavens blessing light upon his heart :  
Wee are beholden to him, indeed, Madam.

*Lad.* But can you not resolve me where he is ? 5  
Nor about what his purposes were bent ?

*Tur.* Madam, they no whit were concerning me :  
And therefore was I lesse inquisitive.

*Lad.* Faire maid, in faith, speake truth, and not dis-  
semble :

Do's hee not often come, and visit you ? 10

*Awd.* His worship now, and then, please you, takes paines  
To see my Father, and Mother : But for me,  
I know my selfe too meane for his high thoughts  
To stoop at, more then asking a light question,

III. viii. Scene v.—Kentish Town. Before Turfe's House. G 4  
indeed, *F3* : indeed *F*



15 To make him merry, or to passe his time.

*Lad.* A sober Maid ! call for my woman *Marten*.

*Pol.* The maids, and her halfe-*Valentine* have pli'd her  
With court'sie of the Bride-Cake, and the Bowle,  
As she is laid awhile. *Lad.* O let her rest !

20 We will crosse ore to *Can[ter]bury*, in the interim ;  
And so make home. Farewell good *Turfe*, and thy wife.  
I wish your daughter joy. *Tur.* Thanks to your Ladiship,  
Where is *Iohn Clay* now ? have you seene him yet ?

*D. Tur.* No, he has hid himselfe out of the way,

25 For feare o' the *Huy* and *Cry*. *Tur.* What, walkes that  
shadow

Avore 'un still ? *Puppy* goe seeke 'un out,  
Search all the corners that he haunts unto,  
And call 'un forth. Wee'll once more to the Church,  
And try our vortunes. Luck, sonne *Valentine* :

30 Where are the wise-men all of *Finsbury* ?

*Pup.* Where wise-men should be ; at the Ale, and  
Bride-cake.

I would this couple had their destinie,  
Or to be hang'd, or married out o' the way :

*Enter the  
neigh-  
bours to  
Turfe.* Man cannot get the mount'nance of an Egge-shell,  
To stay his stomach. Vaith, vor mine owne part,  
I have zup'd up so much broth, as would have cover'd  
A legge o' Beefe, ore head and eares, i' the porredge pot :  
And yet I cannot sussifie wild nature.

Would they were once dispatch'd, we might to dinner.

40 I am with child of a huge stomach, and long ;  
Till by some honest Midwife-peice of Beefe,  
I be deliver'd of it : I must goe now,  
And hunt out for this *Kilburne Calfe*, *Iohn Clay* :  
Whom where to find, I know not, nor which way.



ACT III. SCENE IX.

To them.

Chanon *Hugh*, like Captaine *Thumbs*.

*Hug.* (Thus as a begger in a Kings disguise,  
Or an old Crosse well sided with a May-pole,  
Comes Chanon *Hugh*, accoutred as you see  
Disguis'd *Soldado* like : marke his devise :  
The Chanon, is that Captaine *Thum's*, was rob'd : 5  
These bloody scars upon my face are wounds ;  
This scarfe upon mine arme shewes my late hurts :  
And thus am I to gull the Constable.

Now have among you, for a man at armes :)  
Friends by your leave, which of you is one *Turfe* ? 10

*Tur.* Sir, I am *Turfe*, if you would speake with me.

*Hug.* With thee *Turfe*, if thou beest High Constable.

*Tur.* I am both *Turfe*, Sir, and High Constable.

*Hug.* Then *Turfe*, or *Scurfe*, high, or low Constable :  
Know, I was once a Captaine at Saint *Quintins*, 15  
And passing crosse the wayes over the countrey,  
This morning betwixt this and *Hamsted-Heath*,  
Was by a crue of Clownes rob'd, bob'd, and hurt.  
No sooner had I got my wounds bound up,  
But with much paine, I went to the next Justice, 20  
One Mr. *Bramble* here, at *Maribone* :

And here a warrant is, which he hath directed  
For you one *Turfe* ; if your name be *Tobie Turfe* ;  
Who have let fall (they say) the *Huy*, and *Cry* :  
And you shall answer it afore the Justice. 25

*Tur.* Heaven, and Hell, Dogges, Divels, what is this ?  
Neighbours, was ever Constable thus cross'd ?  
What shall we doe ? *Med.* Faith, all goe hang our selves :  
I know no other way to scape the Law.

*Pup.* Newes, newes, O newes— *Tur.* What, hast thou 30  
found out *Clay* ?



*Pup.* No Sir, the newes is that I cannot find him.

*Hug.* Why doe you dally, you dam'd russet coat,  
You Peasant, nay you Clowne, you Constable ;  
See that you bring forth the suspected partie,  
35 Or by mine honour (which I won in field)  
Ile make you pay for it, afore the Justice.

*Tur.* Fie, fie ; O wife, I'am now in a fine pickle.  
He that was most suspected is not found ;  
And which now makes me thinke, he did the deed,  
40 He thus absents him, and dares not be seene.

Captaine, my innocence will plead for me.  
Wife, I must goe, needs, whom the Divell drives :  
Pray for me wife, and daughter ; pray for me.

*Hug.* Ile lead the way · (Thus is the match put off,  
45 And if my plot succeed, as I have laid it,  
My Captaine-ship shall cost him many a crowne.)

*They goe out.* *D. Tur.* So, wee have brought our egges to a faire Market.  
Out on that villaine *Clay* : would he doe a robbery ?  
Ile nere trust smooth'fac'd Tile-man for his sake.

*They goe out.* *Awd.* Mother, the still Sow eates up all the draffe.

*Pup.* Thus is my Master, *Toby Turfe*, the patterne  
Of all the painefull a'ventures, now in print.  
I never could hope better of this match :  
This Bride-ale : For the night before to day,  
55 (Which is within mans memory, I take it)  
At the report of it, an Oxe did speake ;  
Who dy'd soone after : A Cow lost her Calfe :  
The Belwether was flead for't : A fat Hog  
Was sing'd, and wash'd, and shaven all over ; to  
60 Looke ugly 'gainst this day : The Ducks they quak'd ;  
The Hens too cackled : at the noise whereof,  
A Drake was seene to dance a headlesse round :  
The Goose was cut i' the head, to heare it too :  
Brave *Chant-it-cleare*, his noble heart was done ;  
65 His combe was cut : And two or three o' his wives,  
Or fairest Concubines, had their necks broke,



Ere they would zee this day : To marke the verven  
Heart of a beast, the very Pig, the Pig,  
This very mornin, as hee was a roasting,  
Cry'd out his eyes, and made a show as hee would 70  
Ha' bit in two the spit, as he would say ;  
There shall no rost-meat be this dismall day.  
And zure, I thinke, if I had not got his tongue  
Betweene my teeth, and eate it, he had spoke it.  
Well, I will in, and cry too ; never leave 75  
Crying, untill our maids may drive a Buck  
With my salt teares at the next washing day.

ACT IV. SCENE I.

*Preamble. Hugh. Turfe. Metaphor.*

*Pre.* **K**Eepe out those fellowes ; Ile ha' none come in,  
But the High Constable, the man of peace,  
And the Queenes Captaine, the brave man of warre.  
Now neighbour *Turfe*, the cause why you are call'd,  
Before me by my warrant, but unspecified, 5  
Is this ; and pray you marke it thoroughly !  
Here is a Gentleman, and as it seemes,  
Both of good birth, faire speech, and peaceable,  
Who was this morning rob'd here in the wood :  
You for your part a man of good report, 10  
Of credit, landed, and of faire demeanes,  
And by authority, high Constable ;  
Are notwithstanding touch'd in this complaint,  
Of being carelesse in the *Huy* and *Cry*.  
I cannot choose but grieve a Soldiers losse : 15  
And I am sory too for your neglect,  
Being my neighbour ; this is all I object.

*Hug.* This is not all ; I can alledge far more,  
And almost urge him for an accessorie.  
Good Mr. Justice gi' me leave to speake, 20

III. ix. 69 roasting,] roasting, F<sub>3</sub> : roasting F 73 if] If F IV. i  
Maribone. A Room in Justice Preamble's House. G



For I am Plaintife. Let not neighbour-hood  
Make him secure, or stand on priviledge.

*Pre.* Sir, I dare use no partiality :

Object then what you please, so it be truth.

25 *Hug.* This more : and which is more, then he can answer,  
Beside his letting fall the *Huy*, and *Cry*,  
He doth protect the man, charg'd with the felonie,  
And keepes him hid I heare, within his house,  
Because he is affied unto his Daughter.

30 *Tur.* I doe defie 'hun, so shall shee doe too.  
I pray your worships favour, le' me have hearing.  
I doe convesse, 'twas told me such a velonie,  
And't not disgriev'd me a little when 'twas told me,  
Vor I was going to Church, to marry *Awdrey* :  
35 And who should marry her, but this very *Clay*,  
Who was charg'd to be the chiefe theife o' hun all.  
Now I (the halter stick me, if I tell  
Your worships any leazins) did fore-thinke 'un  
The truest man, till he waz run away.

40 I thought, I had had 'un as zure as in a zaw-pit,  
Or i' mine Oven. Nay, i' the Towne-pound.  
I was zo sure o' hun : I'd ha' gi'n my life for 'un,  
Till he did start. But now, I zee 'un guilty,  
Az var as I can looke at 'un. Would you ha' more ?

45 *Hug.* Yes, I will have Sir what the Law will give me.  
You gave your word to see him safe, forth comming ;  
I challenge that : But, that is forfeited ;  
Beside, your carelesnesse in the pursuit,  
Argues your slacknesse, and neglect of dutie,  
50 Which ought be punish'd with severity.

*Pre.* He speakes but reason *Turfe.* Bring forth the man,  
And you are quit : But otherwise, your word  
Binds you to make amends for all his losse,  
And thinke your selfe befriended, if he take it  
55 Without a farder suit, or going to law.

iv. 1. 26 *Cry*, *F3* : *Cry F*  
Leazins] *F3* : leazins *F*

37 tell *F3* : tell, *F*  
42 zo *G* : za *F*, *F3*

38 leazins)]



Come to a composition with him, *Turfe* .

The Law is costly, and will draw on charge.

*Tur.* Yes, I doe know, I vurst mun vee a Returney,  
And then make legges to my great man o' Law,  
To be o' my counsell, and take trouble-vees, 60  
And yet zay nothing vor me, but devise  
All district meanes, to ransackle me o' my money.  
A Pest'lence prick the throats o' hun. I doe know hun  
As well az I waz i' their bellies, and brought up there.  
What would you ha' me doe ? what would you aske of me ? 65

*Hug.* I aske the restitution of my money ;  
And will not bate one penny o' the summe :  
Foure score, and five pound I aske, besides,  
Amendment for my hurts ; my paine, and suffering  
Are losse enough for me, Sir, to sit downe with ; 70  
Ile put it to your worship ; what you award me,  
Ile take ; and gi' him a generall release.

*Pre.* And what say you now, neighbour *Turfe* ? *Tur.*

I put it

Ene to your worships bitterment, hab, nab.

I shall have a chance o'the dice for't, I hope, let 'hem ene 75  
run : And—

*Pre.* Faith then Ile pray you, 'cause he is my neighbour,  
To take a hundred pound, and give him day.

*Hug.* Saint *Valentines* day, I will, this very day,  
Before Sunne set : my bond is forfeit else.

*Tur.* Where will you ha'it paid ? *Hug.* Faith, I am a 80  
stranger

Here i' the countrey : Know you Chanon *Hugh*,  
The Vicar of *Pancrace* ? *Tur.* Yes, wee—who not him ?

*Hug.* Ile make him my Attorney to receive it,  
And give you a discharge. *Tur.* Whom shall I send for't ?

*Pre.* Why, if you please, send *Metaphore* my Clarke. 85  
And *Turfe*, I much commend thy willingnesse ;  
It's argument of thy integrity.

iv. i. 68 I] And I G 82 wee—who not] wee who not F : who knows  
not W



- Tur.* But, my integrity shall be my zelfe still :  
 Goôd Mr, *Metaphore*, give my wife this key ;  
 90 And doe but whisper it into her hand :  
 (She knowes it well inow) bid her, by that  
 Deliver you the two zeal'd bags o' silver,  
 That lie i' the corner o' the cup-bord, stands  
 At my bed-side, they'are viftie pound a peece ;  
 95 And bring 'hem to your Master. *Met.* If I prove not  
 As just a Carrier as my friend *Tom Long* was,  
 Then call me his curtall, change my name of *Miles*,  
 To *Guile's*, *Wile's*, *Pile's*, *Bile's*, or the foulest name  
 You can devise, to crambe with, for ale.  
 100 *Hug.* Come hither *Miles*, bring by that token, too,  
 Faire *Awdrey* ; say her father sent for her :  
 Say *Clay* is found, and waits at *Pancrace* Church,  
 Where I attend to marry them in haste  
 For (by this meanes) *Miles* I may say't to thee,  
 105 Thy Master must to *Awdrey* married be.  
 But not a word but num : goe get thee gone ;  
 Be warie of thy charge, and keepe it close.  
*Met.* O super-dainty Chanon ! Vicar in cóney,  
 Make no delay, *Miles*, but away.  
 110 And bring the wench, and money.  
*Hug.* Now Sir, I see you meant but honestly ;  
 And, but that busines cals me hence away,  
 I would not leave you, till the sunne were lower.  
 But Mr. Justice, one word, Sir, with you.  
 115 By the same token, is your Mistris sent for  
 By *Metaphore* your Clarke, as from her Father.  
 Who when she comes, Ile marry her to you,  
 Vnwithting to this *Turfe*, who shall attend  
 Me at the parsonage. This was my plot :  
 120 Which I must now make good ; turne Chanon, againe,  
 In my square cap. I humbly take my leave.  
*Pre.* Adieu, good Captaine. Trust me, neighbour *Turfe*,  
 He seemes to be a sober Gentleman :



But this distresse hath somewhat stir'd his patience.  
And men, you know, in such extremities, 125  
Apt not themselves to points of courtesie ;  
I' am glad you ha' made this end. *Tur.* You :  
friend :

I thanke your Justice-worship ; pray you be  
Prezent anone, at tendring o' the money,  
And zee me have a discharge : Vor I ha' no craft 130  
I' your Law quibblins. *Pre.* Ile secure you, neighbour.

### The *Scene* interloping.

*Medlay. Clench. Pan. Scriben.*

*Med.* Indeed, there is a woundy luck in names, Sirs,  
And a maine mysteric, an' a man knew where  
To vind it. My God-sires name, Ile tell you,  
Was *In-and-In Shittle*, and a Weaver he was,  
And it did fit his craft : for so his Shittle 5  
Went in, and in, still . this way, and then that way.  
And he nam'd me, *In-and-In Medlay* : which serves  
A Joyners craft, bycause that wee doc lay  
Things in and in, in our worke. But, I am truly  
*Architectonicus professor*, rather : 10  
That is (as one would zay) an Architect.

*Cle.* As I am a Varrier, and a Visicarie :  
Horse-smith of *Hamsted*, and the whole Towne Leach—.

*Med.* Yes, you ha' done woundy cures, Gossip *Clench*.

*Cle.* An' I can zee the stale once, through a Urine-hole, 15  
Ile give a shrew'd ghesse, be it man, or beast.  
I cur'd an Ale-wife once, that had the staggers  
Worse then five horses, without rowelling.  
My God-phere was a *Rabian*, or a *Iew*,  
(You can tell *D'oge* !) They call'd un Doctor *Rasi*. 20

*Scr.* One *Rasis* was a great *Arabick* Doctor.

*Cle.* Hec was King *Harry's* Doctor, and my God-phere.

*Pan.* Mine was a merry *Greeke*, *To-Pan*, of *Twyford* :

The *Scene* interloping] *Scene* 11.—The Country near Maribone. G  
15 Urine] Vrine F



A joviall Tinker, and a stopper of holes ;  
 25 Who left me mettall-man of *Belsise*, his heire.

*Med.* But what was yours *D'oge* ?    *Scr.* Vaith, I cannot  
 tell

If mine were kyrsind, or no. But, zure hee had  
 A kyrsin name, that he left me, *Diogenes*.

A mighty learned man, but pest'lence poore.

30 Vor, h' had no house, save an old *Tub*, to dwell in,  
 (I vind that in records) and still he turn'd it  
 I' the winds teeth, as't blew on his back-side,  
 And there they would lie rowting one at other,

A weeke, sometimes.    *Med.* Thence came *A Tale of a Tub* ;

35 And the virst *Tale of a Tub*, old *D'ogenes Tub*.

*Scr.* That was avore Sir *Peter Tub*, or his Lady.

*Pan.* I, or the Squire their sonne, *Tripoli Tub*.

*Cle.* The Squire is a fine Gentleman !    *Med.* He is more :

A Gentleman and a halfe ; almost a Knight ;

40 Within zix inches : That's his true measure.

*Cle.* Zure, you can gage 'hun.    *Med.* To a streake, or  
 lesse :

I know his d'ameters, and circumference :

A Knight is sixe diameters ; and a Squire

Is vive, and zomewhat more : I know't by compasse,

45 And skale of man. I have upo' my rule here,

The just perportions of a Knight, a Squire ;

With a tame Justice, or an Officer, rampant,

Upo' the bench, from the high Constable

Downe to the Head-borough, or Tithing-man ;

50 Or meanest Minister o' the peace, God save 'un.

*Pan.* Why, you can tell us by the Squire, Neighbour,  
 Whence he is call'd a Constable, and whaffore.

*Med.* No, that's a booke-case : *Scriben* can doe that.

That's writing and reading, and records.    *Scr.* Two words,

55 *Cyning* and *Staple*, make a Constable :

As wee'd say, A hold, or stay for the King.

*Cle.* All Constables are truly *Iohn's* for the King,



What ere their names are ; be they *Tony*, or *Roger*.

*Med.* And all are sworne, as vingars o' one hand,  
To hold together 'gainst the breach o' the peace ; 60  
The High Constable is the Thumbe, as one would zay,  
The hold-fast o' the rest. *Pan.* Pray luck he speed  
Well i' the busines, betweene Captaine *Thums*,  
And him. *Med.* Ile warrant 'un for a groat :  
I have his measures here in Rithmetique. 65  
How he should beare un selfe in all the lines  
Of's place, and office : Let's zeeke 'un out.

ACT IIII. SCENE II.

*Tub Hilts.*

<To them.>

*Metaphor.*

*Tub.* *Hilts*, how do'st thou like o' this our good dayes worke ?

*Hil.* As good ene nere a whit, as nere the better.

*Tub.* Shall we to *Pancridge*, or to *Kentish-Towne*, *Hilts* ?

*Hil.* Let *Kentish-Towne*, or *Pancridge* come to us,  
If either will : I will goe home againe. 5

*Tub.* Faith *Basket*, our successe hath beene but bad,  
And nothing prospers, that wee undertake ;  
For we can neither meet with *Clay*, nor *Awdrey*,  
The Chanon *Hugh*, nor *Turfe* the Constable :  
We are like men that wander in strange woods, 10  
And loose our selves in search 'of them wee seeke.

*Hil.* This was because wee rose on the wrong side :  
But as I am now here, just in the mid-way,  
Ile zet my sword on the pommell, and that line  
The point valles too, wee'll take : whether it be 15  
To *Kentish-Towne*, the Church, or home againe.

*Tub.* Stay, stay thy hand : here's Justice *Brambles* Enter  
Clarke, Metaphor.

rv. ii. Scene III.—The Country near Kentish Town. G *Tub...*  
*Metaphor* one line in F 4 *Hil.* F3: *Hil.* F



The unlucky Hare hath crost us all this day.  
 Ile stand aside whilst thou pump'st out of him  
 20 His busines, *Hilts* ; and how hee's now employ'd.

*Hil.* Let mee alone, Ile use him in his kind.

*Met.* Oh for a Pad-horse, Pack-horse, or a Post-horse,  
 To beare me on his neck, his back, or his croupe !  
 I am as weary with running, as a Mil-horse  
 25 That hath led the Mill once, twice, thrice about,  
 After the breath hath beene out of his body.  
 I could get up upon a pannier, a pannell,  
 Or, to say truth, a very Pack-sadle,  
 Till all my honey were turn'd into gall,  
 30 And I could sit in the seat no longer :

Oh <for> the legs of a lackey now, or a foot-man,  
 Who is the Surbater of a Clarke currant,  
 And the confounder of his treslesse dormant.  
 But who have we here, just in the nick ?

35 *Hil.* I am neither nick, nor in the nick : therefore  
 You lie Sir *Metaphor*. *Met.* Lye ? how ? *Hil.* Lye so Sir.

*Met.* I lye not yet i' my throat. *Hil.* Thou ly'st o' the  
 ground.

*He strikes  
up his  
heels.*

Do'st thou know me ? *Met.* Yes, I did know you too late.

*Hil.* What is my name then ? *Met.* Basket. *Hil.* Basket ?  
 what ?

40 *Met.* Basket, the Great— *Hil.* The Great ? what ? *Met.*  
 Lubber—

I should say Lover, of the Squire his Master.

*Hil.* Great is my patience, to forbear thee thus,  
 Thou Scrape-hill Skoundrell, and thou skum of man ;  
 Uncivill, orange-tawny-coated Clarke :  
 45 Thou cam'st but halfe a thing into the world,  
 And wast made up of patches, parings, shreds :  
 Thou, that when last thou wert put out of service,  
 Travaild'st to *Hamsted* Heath, on a *Ash-we'nsday*,  
 Where thou didst stand sixe weekes the *Iack* of *Lent*,

rv. ii. 20 employ'd] employed *F* 29 Gall, *F*3 : gall ; *F* 30 longer :  
*F*3 : longer, *F* 31 for *G* 43 scrape-hill *G* : Scrape-hill, *F*, *F*3  
 44 Uncivill] Vncivill *F* 49 weekes *corr. F* : weekes, *F* originally



For boyes to hoorle, three throwes a penny, at thee, 50  
 To make thee a purse : Seest thou this, bold bright blade ?  
 This sword shall shred thee as small unto the grave,  
 As minc'd meat for a pie. Ile set thee in earth  
 All save thy head, and thy right arme at liberty,  
 To keepe thy hat off, while I question thee, 55  
 What ? why ? and whether thou wert going now  
 With a face, ready to breake out with busines ?  
 And tell me truly, lest I dash't in peeces.

*Met.* Then *Basket* put thy smiter up, and heare ;  
 I dare not tell the truth to a drawne sword. 60

*Hil.* 'Tis sheath'd, stand up, speake without feare, or wit.

*Met.* I know not what they meane ; but Constable *Turfe*  
 Sends here his key ; for monies in his cubbard,  
 Which he must pay the Captaine, that was rob'd  
 This morning. Smell you nothing ? *Hil.* No, not I ; 65  
 Thy breeches yet are honest. *Met.* As my mouth.

Doe you not smell a rat ? I tell you truth,  
 I thinke all's knavery : For the Chanon whisper'd  
 Me in the eare, when *Turfe* had gi'n me his key,  
 By the same token to bring Mrs. *Awdrey*, 70  
 As sent for thither ; and to say *Iohn Clay*  
 Is found, which is indeed to get the wench  
 Forth for my Master, who is to be married,  
 When she comes there : The Chanon has his rules  
 Ready, and all there to dispatch the matter. 75

*Tub.* Now on my life, this is the Chanon's plot !  
*Miles*, I have heard all thy discourse to *Basket*.  
 Wilt thou be true, and Ile reward thee well,  
 To make me happy, in my Mistris *Awdrey* ?

*Met.* Your worship shall dispose of *Metaphore*, 80  
 Through all his parts, ene from the sole o' the head,  
 To the crowne o' the foot, to manage of your service.

*Tub.* Then doe thy message to the Mistris *Turfe*,

iv. ii. 51 this, *corr. F* : this *F originally* blade ? *corr. F* : blade, *F originally*  
 52 thee *corr. F* : thee, *F originally* 59 heare ; *corr. F* :  
 heare, *F originally* 63 cubbard,] Cubbard, *F3* : cubbard *F* 65 I ;  
*corr F* I, *F originally*



- Tell her thy token, bring thy money hither,  
 85 And likewise take young *Awdrey* to thy charge :  
 Which done, here, *Metaphore*, wee will attend,  
 And intercept thee. And for thy reward,  
 You two shall share the money ; I the Maid :  
 If any take offence, Ile make all good.
- 90 *Met.* But shall I have halfe the money Sir, in faith ?  
*Tub.* I on my Squire-ship, shalt thou : and my land.  
*Met.* Then, if I make not, Sir, the cleanhest scuse  
 To get her hither, and be then as carefull  
 To keepe her for you, as't were for my selfe :  
 95 Downe o' your knees, and pray that honest *Miles*  
 May breake his neck ere he get ore two stiles.

## ACT IV. SCENE III.

*Tub.* *Hilts.*

- Tub.* Make haste then : we will wait here thy returne.  
 This luck unlook'd for, hath reviv'd my hopes,  
 Which were opprest with a darke melancholly.  
 In happy time, we linger'd on the way,  
 5 To meet these summons of a better sound,  
 Which are the essence of my soules content.
- Hil.* This heartlesse fellow ; shame to serving-men ;  
 Staine of all livories ; what feare makes him doe !  
 How sordid, wretched, and unworthy things ;  
 10 Betray his Masters secrets, ope the closet  
 Of his devises, force the foolish Justice,  
 Make way for your Love, plotting of his owne :  
 Like him that digs a trap, to catch another,  
 And falls into't himselfe ! *Tub.* So wou'd I have it.
- 15 And hope 'twill prove a jest to twit the Justice with.  
*Hil.* But that this poore white-liver'd Rogue should do't ?  
 And meerely out of feare ? *Tub.* And hope of money, *Hilts.*  
 A valiant man will nible at that bait.  
*Hil.* Who, but a foole, will refuse money proffer'd ?  
 20 *Tub.* And sent by so good chance. Pray heaven he speed.



*Hil.* If he come empty-handed, let him count  
To goe back empty-headed ; Ile not leave him  
So much of braine in's pate, with pepper and vinegar,  
To be serv'd in for sawce, to a Calves head.

*Tub.* Thou serv'st him rightly, *Hilts.* *Hil.* Ile seale az 25  
much

With my hand, as I dare say now with my tongue ;  
But if you get the Lasse from *Dargison*,  
What will you doe with her ? *Tub.* Wee'll thinke o' that  
When once wee have her in possession, Governour.

# ACT IV. SCENE IV.

*Puppy.* *Metaphore.* *Awdrey.*

*Pup.* You see wee trust you, Mr. *Metaphore*,  
With Mrs. *Awdrey* : pray you use her well,  
As a Gentle-woman should be us'd. For my part,  
I doe incline a little to the serving-man ;  
Wee have been of a coat—I had one like yours : 5  
Till it did play me such a sleevelesse errand,  
As I had nothing where to put mine armes in,  
And then I threw it off. Pray you goe before her,  
Serving-man-like : and see that your nose drop not.  
As for example : you shall see me : marke, 10  
How I goe afore her. So doe you : sweet *Miles*.  
She for her owne part, is a woman cares not  
What man can doe unto her, in the way  
Of honesty, and good manners. So farewell  
Faire Mrs. *Awdrey* : Farewell Mr. *Miles*. 15  
I ha' brought you thus farre, onward o' your way :  
I must goe back now to make cleane the roomes,  
Where my good Lady has beene. Pray you commend mee  
To Bride-groome *Clay* ; and bid him beare up stiffe.

*Met.* Thanke you good *Hanniball Puppy* ; I shall fit 20

iv. iii. 21 empty-handed *F3* : empty-headed *F* iv. iv. Another  
part of the same [i. e. the Country near Kentish Town]. *G* 11 *Miles*.]  
*Miles, F*



The leg of your commands, with the straight buskins  
Of dispat̄ch presently. *Pup.* Farewell fine *Metaphore.*

*Met.* Come gentle Mistris, will you please to walke ?

*Awd.* I love not to be led : I'd goe alone.

25 *Met.* Let not the mouse of my good meaning, Lady,  
Be snap'd up in the trap of your suspition,  
To loose the taile there, either of her truth,  
Or swallow'd by the Cat of misconstruction.

*Awd.* You are too finicall for me ; speake plaine Sir.

## ACT IV. SCENE V.

*Tub.* *Awdrey.* *Hilts.* *Metaphore.*

<To them.>

*Lady.* *Pol-marten.*

*Tub.* Welcome againe my *Awdrey* : welcome Love :  
You shall with me ; in faith deny me not.  
I cannot brook the second hazzard Mistris.

*Awd.* Forbeare Squire *Tub*, as mine owne mother sayes,  
5 I am not for your mowing. Youle be flowne  
Ere I be fledge. *Hil.* Hast thou the money *Miles* ?

*Met.* Here are two bags, there's fiftie pound in each.

*Tub.* Nay *Awdrey*, I possesse you for this time :  
Sirs ; Take that coyne betweene you, and divide it.  
10 My pretty sweeting give me now the leave  
To challenge love, and marriage at your hands.

*Awd.* Now, out upon you, are you not asham'd ?  
What will my Lady say ? In faith I thinke  
She was at our house : And I thinke shee ask'd for you :  
15 And I thinke she hit me i' th' teeth with you,  
I thanke her Ladiship, and I thinke she meanes  
Not to goe hence, till she has found you. How say you ?

*Tub.* Was then my Lady Mother at your house ?  
Let's have a word aside. *Awd.* Yes, twenty words.

20 *Lad.* 'Tis strange, a motion, but I know not what,  
Comes in my mind, to leave the way to *Totten*,

iv. v. 17, 18 How say you ? *Tub.* *Tub.* How say you ? *W*



And turne to *Kentish-Towne*, againe, my journey :  
 And see my sonne *Pol-marten* with his *Awdrey* :  
 Erewhile we left her at her fathers house :  
 And hath he thence remov'd her in such haste ! 25  
 What shall I doe ? shall I speake faire, or chide ?

*Pol.* Madam, your worthy sonne, with dutious care,  
 Can governe his affections : Rather then  
 Breake off their conference some other way,  
 Pretending ignorance of what you know. 30

*Tub.* And this <is> all, faire *Awdrey* : I am thine.

*Lad.* Mine you were once, though scarcely now your own.

*Hil.* 'Shld my Lady ! my Lady ! *Met.* Is this my Lady  
 bright ?

*Tub.* Madam, you tooke me now a little tardie.

*Lad.* At prayers, I thinke you were : what, so devout 35  
 Of late, that you will shrive you to all Confessors  
 You meet by chance ? Come, goe with me, good Squire,  
 And leave your linnen : I have now a busines,  
 And of importance, to impart unto you.

*Tub.* Madam, I pray you, spare me but an houre ; 40  
 Please you to walke before, I follow you.

*Lad.* It must be now, my busines lies this way.

*Tub.* Will not an houre hence, Madam, excuse me ?

*Lad.* Squire, these excuses argue more your guilt.  
 You have some new device now, to project, 45  
 Which the poore Tile-man scarce will thanke you for.  
 What ? will you goe ? *Tub.* I ha' tane a charge upon me,  
 To see this Maid conducted to her Father,  
 Who, with the Chanon *Hugh*, staies her at *Panrace*,  
 To see her married to the same *Iohn Clay*. 50

*Lad.* Tis very well ; but Squire take you no care.  
 Ile send *Pol-marten* with her, for that office :  
 You shall along with me ; it is decreed.

*Tub.* I have a little busines, with a friend Madam.

*Lad.* That friend shall stay for you, or you for him. 55

rv. v. 22 againe,] againe *F*, *F*3 28 then] than *F*3 29 con-  
 ference] Conference, *F*3 31 is] be *W*



*Pol-marten* ; Take the Maiden to your care ;  
Commend me to her Father. *Tub*. I will follow you.

*Lad*. Tut, tell not me of following. *Tub*. Ile but speake  
A word. *Lad*. No whispering : you forget your selfe,  
60 And make your love too palpable : A Squire ?  
And thinke so meanelly ? fall upon a Cow-shard ?  
You know my mind. Come, Ile to *Turfe's* house,  
And see for *Dido*, and our *Valentine*.

*Pol-marten*, looke to your charge ; Ile looke to mine.

*Pol*. (I smile to thinke after so many proffers  
This Maid hath had, she now should fall to me :  
That I should have her in my custody :

Twere but a mad trick to make the essay,  
And jumpe a match with her immediately :  
70 She's faire, and handsome : and shee's rich enough :  
Both time, and place minister faire occasion :  
Have at it then :) Faire Lady, can you love ?

*Awd*. No Sir, what's that ? *Pol*. A toy, which women  
use.

*Awd*. If't be a toy, it's good to play withall.

75 *Pol*. Wee will not stand discoursing o' the toy :  
The way is short, please you to prov't Mistris ?

*Awd*. If you doe meane to stand so long upon it ;  
I pray you let me give it a short cut, Sir.

*Pol*. It's thus, faire Maid : Are you dispos'd to marry ?

80 *Awd*. You are dispos'd to aske. *Pol*. Are you to grant ?

*Awd*. Nay, now I see you are dispos'd indeed.

*Pol*. (I see the wench wants but a little wit ;  
And that defect her wealth may well supply :)  
In plaine termes, tell me, Will you have me *Awdrey* ?

85 *Awd*. In as plaine termes, I tell you who would ha' me.  
*Iohn Clay* would ha' me, but he hath too hard hands ;  
I like not him : besides, hee is a thiefe.

And Justice *Bramble*, he would faine ha' catch'd me :  
But the young Squire, hee, rather then his life,  
90 Would ha' me yet ; and make me a Lady, hee sayes,



And be my Knight ; to doe me true Knights service,  
 Before his Lady Mother. Can you make me  
 A Lady, would I ha' you ? *Pol.* I can gi' you  
 A silken Gowne, and a rich Petticoat :  
 And a french Hood. (All fooles love to be brave : 95  
 I find her humour, and I will pursue it.)

ACT III. SCENE VI.

*Lady. D. Turfe. Squire Tub. Hilts.*

<To them >

*Puppy. Clay.*

*Lad.* And as I told thee, shee was intercepted  
 By the Squire here, my sonne : and this bold Ruffin  
 His man, who safely would have carried her  
 Unto her Father ; and the Chanon *Hugh* ;  
 But for more care of the security, 5  
 My Huisher hath her now, in his grave charge.

*D. Tur.* Now on my faith, and holy-dom, we are  
 Beholden to your worship. She's a Girle,  
 A foolish Girle, and soone may tempted be :  
 But if this day passe well once ore her head, 10  
 Ile wish her trust to her selfe. For I have beene  
 A very mother to her, though I say it.

*Tub.* Madam, 'tis late, and *Pancridge* is i' your way :  
 I thinke your Ladiship forgets your selfe.

*Lad.* Your mind runs much on *Pancridge*. Well, young 15  
 Squire,

The black Oxe never trod yet o' your foot :  
 These idle Phant'sies will forsake you one day.  
 Come Mrs. *Turfe*, will you goe take a walke  
 Over the fields to *Pancridge*, to your husband ?

*D. Tur.* Madam, I had beene there an houre agoe : 20  
 But that I waited on my man *Ball Puppy*.  
 What *Ball* I say ? I thinke the idle slouch  
 Be falne asleepe i' the barne, he stayes so long.

iv. v 95-6 *Aside not marked in F*    iv. vi. Scene v.—Kentish Town.  
 G 4 Unto] Vnto F    16 yet corr. F: yet, F originally    o' F3: O F



- Pup.* *Sattin*, i' the name of velvet-*Sattin*, Dame !  
 25 The Divell ! O the Divell is in the barne :  
 Helpe, helpe, a legion—Spirit Legion,  
 Is in the barne ! in every straw a Divell.  
 <D.> *Tur.* Why do'st thou bawle so *Puppy* ? Speake,  
 what ailes thee ?  
*Pup.* My name's *Ball Puppy*, I ha' seene the Divell  
 30 Among the straw : O for a Crosse ! a Collop  
 Of Friar *Bacon*, or a conjuring stick  
 Of Doctor *Faustus* ! Spirits are in the barne.  
*Tub.* How ! Spirits in the barne ? *Basket*, goe see.  
*Hil.* Sir, an' you were my Master ten times over,  
 35 And Squire to boot ; I know, and you shall pardon me :  
 Send me 'mong Divells ? I zee you love me not :  
 Hell be at their game : Ile not trouble them.  
*Tub.* Goe see ; I warrant thee there's no such matter.  
*Hil.* An' they were Giants, 't were another matter.  
 40 But Divells ! No, if I be torne in peeces,  
 What is your warrant worth ? Ile see the Feind  
 Set fire o' the barne, ere I come there.  
*D. Tur.* Now all Zaints blesse us, and if he be there,  
 He is an ugly spright, I warrant. *Pup.* As ever  
 45 Held flesh-hookc, Dame, or handled fire-forke rather :  
 They have put me in a sweet pickle, Dame :  
 But that my Lady-*Valentine* smels of muske,  
 I should be asham'd to presse into this presence.  
*Lad. Basket*, I pray thce see what is the miracle !  
 50 *Tub.* Come, goe with me : Ile lead. Why stand'st thou  
 man ?  
*Hil.* Cocks pretious Master, you are not mad indeed ?  
 You will not goe to hell before your time ?  
*Tub.* Why art thou thus afraid ? *Hil.* No, not afraid :  
 But by your leave, Ile come no neare the barne.  
 55 <D.> *Tur. Puppy* ! wilt thou goe with me ? *Pup.* How ?  
 goe with you ?

iv. vi. 26 a legion—Spuit Legion *F*<sub>3</sub> : a legion—Spirit legion *F* :  
 a legion of spirits, a legion *G*



Whither, into the Barne? To whom, the Divell?  
 Or to doe what there? to be torne 'mongst 'hum?  
 Stay for my Master, the High Constable,  
 Or *In-and-In*, the Head-borough; let them goe,  
 Into the Barne with warrant; seize the Feind; 60  
 And set him in the stocks for his ill rule:

'Tis not for me that am but flesh and blood,  
 To medle with 'un. Vor I cannot, nor I wu' not.

*Lad.* I pray thee *Tripoly*, looke, what is the matter?

*Tub.* That shall I Madam. *Hil.* Heaven protect my 65  
 Master.

I tremble every joynt till he be back.

*Pup.* Now, now, even now they are tearing him in peeces:  
 Now are they tossing of his legs, and armes,  
 Like Loggets at a Peare-tree: Ile to the hole,  
 Peepe in, and looke whether he lives or dies. 70

*Hil.* I would not be i' my Masters coat for thousands.

*Pup.* Then pluck it off, and turne thy selfe away.  
 O the Divell! the Divell! the Divell! *Hil.* Where  
 man? where?

*D. Tur.* Alas that ever wee were borne. So neere too?

*Pup.* The Squire hath him in his hand, and leads him 75  
 Out by the Collar. *D. Tur.* O this is *Iohn Clay*.

*Lad.* *Iohn Clay* at *Pancrace*, is there to be married.

*Tub.* This was the spirit reveld i' the Barne.

*Pup.* The Divell hee was: was this he was crawling  
 Among the Wheat-straw? Had it beene the Barley, 80  
 I should ha' tane him for the Divell in drinke;  
 The Spirit of the Bride-ale: But poore *Iohn*,  
 Tame *Iohn* of *Clay*, that sticks about the bung-hole—

*Hil.* If this be all your Divell, I would take  
 In hand to conjure him: But hell take me 85  
 If ere I come in a right Divels walke,

If I can keepe me out on't. *Tub.* Well meant *Hilts*.

*Lad.* But how came *Clay* thus hid here i' the straw,  
 When newcs was brought, to you all, hee was at *Pancridge*;



90 And you beleev'd it? *D. Tur.* Justice *Brambles* man  
Told me so, Madam: And by that same token,  
And other things, he had away my Daughter,  
And two seal'd bags of money. *Lad.* Where's the  
Squire?

Is hee gone hence? *Tub.* H' was here Madam, but now.

95 *Clay.* Is the *Huy* and *Cry* past by? *Pup.* I, I, *Iohn*  
*Clay.*

*Clay.* And am I out of danger to be hang'd?

*Pup.* Hang'd *Iohn*? yes sure; unlesse, as with the  
Proverbe,

You meane to make the choice of your own gallows.

*Clay.* Nay, then all's well, hearing your newes *Ball Puppy*,  
100 You ha' brought from *Paddington*, I ene stole home here,  
And thought to hide me, in the Barne ere since.

*Pup.* O wonderfull! and newes was brought us here,  
You were at *Pancridge*, ready to be married.

*Clay.* No faith, I nere was furdur then the Barne.

105 *D. Tur.* Haste *Puppy*. Call forth Mistris *Dido Wispe*,  
My Ladies Gentle-woman, to her Lady;  
And call your selfe forth, and a couple of maids,  
To waite upon me: we are all undone!

My Lady is undone! her fine young sonne,  
110 The Squire is got away. *Lad.* Haste, haste, good  
*Valentine*.

*D. Tur.* And you *Iohn Clay*; you are undone too! All!  
My husband is undone, by a true key,  
But a false token: And my selfe's undone,  
By parting with my Daughter, who'll be married  
115 To some body, that she should not, if wee haste not.



ACT V. SCENE I.

*Tub. Pol-marten.*

*Tub.* I Pray thee good *Pol-marten*, shew thy diligence,  
And faith in both : Get her, but so disguis'd,  
The Chanon may not know her, and leave me  
To plot the rest : I will expect thee here.

*Pol.* You shall Squire. Ile performe it with all care, 5  
If all my Ladies Ward-robe will disguise her.

Come Mistris *Awdrey*. *Awd.* Is the Squire gone ?

*Pol.* Hee'll meet us by and by, where he appointed :  
You shall be brave anone, as none shall know you.

ACT V. SCENE II.

*Clench. Medlay. Pan. Scriben.*

To them.

*Tub. Hilts.*

*Cle.* I wonder, where the Queenes High Constable is !  
I veare, they ha' made 'hun away. *Med.* No zure ; The  
Justice

Dare not conzent to that. Hee'll zee'un forth comming.

*Pan.* He must, vor wee can all take corpulent oath,  
Wee zaw 'un goe in there. *Scr.* I, upon record ! 5  
The Clock dropt twelve at *Maribone*. *Med.* You are  
right, *D'oge* !

Zet downe to a minute, now 'tis a'most vowre.

*Cle.* Here comes Squire *Tub*. *Scr.* And's Governour,  
Mr. *Basket*

*Hilts*, doe you know 'hun, a valiant wise vellow !  
Az tall a man on his hands, as goes on veet. 10  
Blesse you Mass' *Basket*. *Hil.* Thanke you good *D'oge*.

*Tub.* Who's that ?

v. i. The Fields near Kentish Town. G v. ii. Scene II.—Kentish  
Town. G (Heading) *Tub.* *Tub* F : *Tub*, F3 8 *Basket* F3 :  
*Basket*. F 11 Who's F3 : who's F



*Hil.* D'oge Scriben, the great Writer Sir of *Chalcot*.

*Tub.* And, who the rest? *Hil.* The wisest heads o' the hundred.

*Medlay* the *Ioyner*, Head-borough of *Islington*,

15 *Pan* of *Belsize*, and *Clench* the Leach of *Hamsted*.

The High Constables Counsell, here of *Finsbury*.

*Tub.* Prezent me to 'hem, *Hilts*, Squire *Tub* of *Totten*.

*Hil.* Wise men of *Finsbury*: make place for a Squire,  
I bring to your acquaintance, *Tub* of *Totten*.

20 Squire *Tub*, my Master, loves all men of vertue.

And longs (az one would zay) till he be one on you.

*Cle.* His worship's wel'cun to our company:

Would 't were wiser for 'hun. *Pan.* Here be some on us,  
Are call'd the witty men, over a hundred;

25 *Scr.* And zome a thousand, when the Muster day comes.

*Tub.* I long (as my man *Hilts* said, and my Governour)  
To be adopt in your society.

Can any man make a Masque here i' this company?

*Pan.* A Masque, what's that? *Scr.* A mumming, or  
a shew.

30 With vizards, and fine clothes. *Cle.* A disguise, neighbour,  
Is the true word: There stands the man, can do't Sir.

*Medlay* the Joyner, *In-and-In* of *Islington*,

The onely man at a disguise in *Midlesex*.

*Tub.* But who shall write it? *Hil.* *Scriben*, the great  
Writer.

35 *Scr.* Hee'll do't alone Sir, He will joyne with no man,

Though he be a Joyner: in designe he cals it,

He must be sole Inventer: *In-and-In*

Drawes with no other in's project, hee'll tell you,

It cannot else be feazeable, or conduce:

40 Those are his ruling words? Pleaze you to heare 'hun?

*Tub.* Yes Mr. *In-and-In*, I have heard of you;

*Med.* I can doe nothing, I. *Cle.* Hee can doe all Sir.

v. ii. 26 my man *corr.* F: I man F originally 29 shew.] Shew, F3  
35 man.] man: F, F3 36 Joyner.] Joyner, F, F3 it, F3: it. F  
37 *In-and-In* F3: *In-and-In* F



*Med.* They'll tell you so. *Tub.* I'd have a toy presented,

*A Tale of a Tub*, a storie of my selfe,  
You can expresse a Tub. *Med.* If it conduce 45  
To the designe, what ere is feazeable :  
I can expresse a Wash-house (if need be)  
With a whole pedigree of Tubs. *Tub.* No, one  
Will be enough to note our name, and family :  
Squire *Tub* of *Totten*, and to shew my adventures 50  
This very day. I'd have it in *Tubs*-Hall,  
At *Totten-Court*, my Ladie Mothers house,  
My house indeed, for I am heire to it.

*Med.* If I might see the place, and had survey'd it,  
I could say more : For all Invention, Sir, 55  
Comes by degrees, and on the view of nature ;  
A world of things, concurre to the designe,  
Which make it feazible, if Art conduce.

*Tub.* You say well, witty Mr. *In-and-In*.  
How long ha' you studied *Engine* ? *Med.* Since I first 60  
Joyn'd, or did in-lay in wit, some vorty yeare.

*Tub.* A pretty time ! *Basket*, goe you and waite  
On Master *In-and-In* to *Totten-Court*,  
And all the other wise Masters ; shew 'hem the Hall :  
And taste the language of the buttery to 'hem ; 65  
Let 'hem see all the Tubs about the house,  
That can raise matter, till I come—which shall be  
Within an houre at least. *Cle.* It will be glorious,  
If *In-and-In* will undertake it, Sir :  
He has a monstrous medlay wit o' his owne. 70

*Tub.* Spare for no cost, either in boords, or hoops,  
To architect your Tub : Ha' you nere a Cooper  
At *London* call'd *Vitruvius* ? send for him ;  
Or old *Iohn Haywood*, call him to you, to helpe.

*Scr.* He scornes the motion, trust to him alone. 75

v. ii. 47 if *F3* : If *F* 52 Ladie *corr.* *F* : Ladies *F* originally 61  
Joyn'd] Ioyn'd *F* 68 houre] houre, *F3* 70 owne] ow ne *F*



## ACT V. SCENE III.

*Lady* <Tub>. *Tub*. *D. Tur*<fe>. *Clay*. *Puppy*. *Wispe*.  
 <To them>

*Preamble*. *Turfe*.

- Lad*. O, here's the Squire! you slip'd us finely sonne!  
 These manners to your Mother, will commend you;  
 But in an other age, not this: well *Tripoly*,  
 Your Father, good Sir *Peter* (rest his bones)  
 5 Would not ha' done this: where's my Huisher *Martin*?  
 And your faire Mrs. *Awdrey*? *Tub*. I not see 'hem,  
 No creature, but the foure wise Masters here,  
 Of *Finsbury* Hundred, came to cry their Constable,  
 Who they doe say is lost. *D. Tur*. My husband lost?  
 10 And my fond Daughter lost, I feare mee too.  
 Where is your Gentleman, Madam? Poore *Iohn Clay*,  
 Thou hast lost thy *Awdrey*. *Clay*. I ha' lost my wits,  
 My little wits, good Mother; I am distracted.  
*Pup*. And I have lost my Mistris *Dido Wispe*,  
 15 Who frownes upon her *Puppy*, *Hanniball*.  
 Losse! losse on every side! a publike losse!  
 Losse o' my Master! losse of his Daughter! losse  
 Of Favour, Friends, my Mistris! losse of all!  
*Pre*. What Cry is this? *Tur*. My man speakes of some  
 losse.  
 20 *Pup*. My Master is found: Good luck, and't be thy will,  
 Light on us all. *D. Tur*. O husband, are you alive?  
 They said you were lost. *Tur*. Where's Justice *Brambles*  
*Clarke*?  
 Had he the money that I sent for? *D. Tur*. Yes,  
 Two houres agoe; two fifty pounds in silver,  
 25 And *Awdrey* too. *Tur*. Why *Awdrey*? who sent for her?  
*D. Tur*. You Master *Turfe*, the fellow said. *Tur*. Hee  
 lyed.  
 I am cozen'd, rob'd, undone: your man's a Thiefe,



And run away with my Daughter, Mr. *Bramble*,  
And with my money. *Lad.* Neighbour *Turfe* have  
patience,

I can assure you that your Daughter is safe, 30  
But for the monies I know nothing of.

*Tur.* My money is my Daughter ; and my Daughter  
She is my money, Madam. *Pre.* I doe wonder  
Your Ladiship comes to know any thing  
In these affaires. *Lad.* Yes, Justice *Preamble* 35  
I met the maiden i' the fields by chance,  
I' the Squires company my sonne : How hee  
Lighted upon her, himselfe best can tell.

*Tub.* I intercepted her, as comming hither,  
To her Father, who sent for her, by *Miles Metaphore*, 40  
Justice *Preambles* Clarke. And had your Ladiship  
Not hindred it, I had paid fine Mr. Justice  
For his young warrant, and new Purs'yvant,  
He serv'd it by this morning. *Pre.* Know you that Sir ?

*Lad.* You told me, Squire, a quite other tale, 45  
But I beleev'd you not, which made me send  
*Awdrey* another way, by my *Pol-marten* :  
And take my journey back to *Kentish-Towne*,  
Where we found *Iohn Clay* hidden i' the barne,  
To scape the *Huy* and *Cry* ; and here he is. 50

*Tur.* *Iohn Clay* age'n ! nay, then—set Cock a hoope :  
I ha' lost no Daughter, nor no money, Justice.  
*Iohn Clay* shall pay. Ile looke to you now *Iohn*.  
Vaith out it must, as good at night, as morning.  
I am ene as vull as a Pipers bag with joy, 55  
Or a great Gun upon carnation day !  
I could weepe Lions teares to see you *Iohn*.  
'Tis but two viftie pounds I ha' ventur'd for you :  
But now I ha' you, you shall pay whole hundred.  
Run from your Burroughs, sonne : faith ene be hang'd. 60  
An' you once earth your selfe, *Iohn*, i' the barne,



I ha' no Daughter vor you : Who did verret 'hun ?

*D. Tur.* My Ladies sonne, the Squire here, vetch'd 'hun out.

*Puppy* had put us all in such a vright,

65 We thought the Devill was i' the barne ; and no body

Durst venture o' hun. *Tur.* I am now resolv'd,

Who shall ha' my Daughter. *D. Tur.* Who ? *Tur.* He best deserves her.

Here comes the Vicar. Chanon *Hugh*, we ha' vound

*John Clay* agen ! the matter's all come round.

## ACT V. SCENE IV.

To them.

*Chanon Hugh.*

*Hugh.* Is *Metaphore* return'd yet ? *Pre.* All is turn'd Herc to confusion : we ha' lost our plot ;

I feare my man is run away with the money,

And *Clay* is found, in whom old *Turfe* is sure

5 To save his stake. *Hug.* What shall wee doe then Justice ?

*Pre.* The Bride was met i' the young Squires hands.

*Hug.* And what's become of her ? *Pre.* None here can tell.

*Tub.* Was not my Mothers man, *Pol-marten*, with you ? And a strange Gentlewoman in his company,

10 Of late here, Chanon ? *Hug.* Yes, and I dispatch'd 'hem.

*Tub.* Dispatch'd 'hem ! how doe you meane ? *Hug.* Why married 'hem.

As they desir'd ; But now. *Tub.* And doe you know

What you ha' done, Sir *Hugh* ? *Hug.* No harme, I hope.

*Tub.* You have ended all the Quarrell. *Awdrey* is married.

15 *Lad.* Married ! to whom ? *Tur.* My Daughter *Awdrey* married,



And she not know of it! *D. Tur.* Nor her Father, or Mother!

*Lad.* Whom hath she married? *Tub.* Your *Pol-marten*, Madam.

A Groome was never dreamt of. *Tur.* Is he a man?

*Lad.* That he is *Turfe*, and a Gentleman, I ha' made him.

*D. Tur.* Nay, an' he be a Gentleman, let her shift. 20

*Hug.* She was so brave, I knew her not, I swear; And yet I married her by her owne name.

But she was so disguis'd, so Lady-like;

I thinke she did not know her selfe the while!

I married 'hem as a meere paire of strangers: 25

And they gave out themselves for such. *Lad.* I wish 'hem Much joy, as they have given me hearts ease.

*Tub.* Then Madam, Ile intreat you now remit Your jealousie of me; and please to take All this good company home with you, to supper: 30 Wee'll have a merry night of it, and laugh.

*Lad.* A right good motion, Squire; which I yeeld to: And thanke them to accept it. Neighbour *Turfe*, Ile have you merry, and your wife: And you, Sir *Hugh*, be pardon'd this your happy error, 35 By Justice *Preamble*, your friend and patron.

*Pre.* If the young Squire can pardon it, I doe.

## ACT V. SCENE V.

*Puppy. Dido. Hugh.*

tarry behind.

*Pup.* Stay my deare *Dido*, and good Vicar *Hugh*, We have a busines with you: In short, this. If you dare knit another paire of strangers, *Dido* of *Carthage*, and her Countrey-man, Stout *Hanniball* stands to't. I have ask'd consent, 5 And she hath granted. *Hug.* But saith *Dido* so?

v. iv. 35 error,] error. *F*: Error. *F*3 v. v. 2 this.] this *F*: this, *F*3



*Did.* From what *Ball-Hanny* hath said, I dare not goe.

*Hug.* Come in then, Ile dispatch you. A good supper  
Would not be lost, good company, good discourse ;  
10 But above all where wit hath any source.

## ACT V. SCENE VI.

*Pol-marten. Awdrey. Tub. Lady <Tub>.*

<To them >

*Preamble. Turfe. D. Turfe. Clay.*

*Pol.* After the hoping of your pardon, Madam,  
For many faults committed. Here my wife,  
And I doe stand, expecting your mild doome.

*Lad.* I wish thee joy *Pol-marten* ; and thy wife :  
5 As much, Mrs. *Pol-marten*. Thou hast trick'd her  
Up very fine, me thinkes. *Pol.* For that I made  
Bold with your Ladships Wardrobe, but have trespass'd  
Within the limits of your leave—I hope.

*Lad.* I give her what she weares. I know all women  
10 Love to be fine. Thou hast deserv'd it of me :  
I am extreemely pleas'd with thy good fortune.  
Welcome good Justice *Preamble* ; And *Turfe*,  
Looke merrily on your Daughter : She has married  
A Gentleman. *Tur.* So me thinkes. I dare not touch her,  
15 She is so fine : yet I will say, God blesse her.

*D. Tur.* And I too, my fine Daughter. I could love her  
Now, twice as well, as if *Clay* had her.

*Tub.* Come, come, my Mother is pleas'd. I pardon all,  
*Pol-marten* in, and waite upon my Lady.  
20 Welcome good Ghests : see supper be serv'd in,  
With all the plenty of the house, and worship.  
I must conferre with Mr. *In-and-In*,  
About some alterations in my Masque ;

v v. 10 all] all, F<sub>3</sub> v. vi. Scene III —Totten-Court. Before the  
House. G (Heading) *Pol-marten* . . . *Preamble* one line in F i *Pol.*  
F<sub>3</sub> : *Lad.* F 4 wife :] Wife F<sub>3</sub> 6 Up] Vp F that] that, F<sub>3</sub>  
14 her, F<sub>3</sub> : her F



Send *Hilts* out to me : Bid him bring the Councell  
Of *Finsbury* hither. Ile have such a night 25  
Shall make the name of *Totten-Court* immortall :  
And be recorded to posterity.

ACT V. SCENE VII.

*Tub. Medlay. Clench. Pan. Scriben. Hilts.*

*Tub.* O Mr. *In-and-In*, what ha' you done ?

*Med.* Survey'd the place Sir, and design'd the ground,  
Or stand-still of the worke : And this it is.  
First, I have fixed in the earth, a *Tub* ;  
And an old *Tub*, like a Salt-Peeter *Tub*, 5  
Preluding by your Fathers name Sir *Peeter*,  
And the antiquity of your house, and family,  
Originall from Salt-Peeter. *Tub.* Good yfaith,  
You ha' shewne reading, and antiquity here, Sir.

*Med.* I have a little knowledge in designe, 10  
Which I can varie Sir to *Infinito*.

*Tub. Ad Infinitum* Sir you meane. *Med.* I doe.  
I stand not on my Latine, Ile invent,  
But I must be alone then, joyn'd with no man.  
This we doe call the Stand-still of our worke. 15

*Tub.* Who are those wee, you now joyn'd to your selfe ?

*Med.* I meane my selfe still, in the plurall number,  
And out of this wee raise our *Tale of a Tub*.

*Tub.* No, Mr. *In-and-In*, my *Tale of a Tub*.  
By your leave, I am *Tub*, the Tale's of me, 20  
And my adventures ! I am Squire *Tub*,  
*Subjectum Fabulæ.* *Med.* But I the Author.

*Tub.* The Worke-man Sir ! the Artificer ! I grant you.  
So *Skelton-Lawreat* ; was of *Elinour Rummung* :  
But she the subject of the Rout, and Tunning. 25

*Cle.* He has put you to it, Neighbour *In-and-In*.

*Pan.* Doe not dispute with him, he still will win,

v. vii. 3 stand-still] stand still F      16 wee,] wee ? F      selfe ?]  
selfe. F      24 *Rummung* W : *Bummung* F, F3      27 wiu,] win. F



That paises for all. *Scr.* Are you revis'd o' that ?

A man may have wit, and yet put off his hat.

30 *Med.* Now, Sir this Tub, I will have capt with paper :  
A fine oild Lanterne-paper, that we use.

*Pan.* Yes every Barber, every Cutler has it.

*Med.* Which in it doth containe the light to the busines.  
And shall with the very vapour of the Candle,  
35 Drive all the motions of our matter about :

As we present 'hem. For example, first  
The worshipfull Lady *Tub*. *Tub.* Right worshipfull,  
I pray you, I am worshipfull my selfe.

*Med.* Your Squire-ships Mother, passeth by (her Huisher,  
40 Mr. *Pol-marten* bareheaded before her)

In her velvet Gowne. *Tub.* But how shall the Spectators,  
As it might be, I, or *Hilts*, know 'tis my Mother ?  
Or that *Pol-marten* there that walkes before her ?

*Med.* O wee doe nothing, if we cleare not that.

45 *Cle.* You ha' seene none of his workes Sir ? *Pan.* All  
the postures

Of the train'd bands o' the Countrey. *Scr.* All their  
colours.

*Pan.* And all their Capitaines. *Cle.* All the Cries o' the  
Citie :

And all the trades i' their habits. *Scr.* He has his whistle  
Of command : Seat of authority !

50 And virge to'interpret, tip'd with silver ! Sir,  
You know not him. *Tub.* Well, I will leave all to him.

*Med.* Give me the briefe o' your subject. Leave the  
whole

State of the thing to me. *Hil.* Supper is ready, Sir.

My Lady cals for you. *Tub.* Ile send it you in writing.

55 *Med.* Sir, I will render feazible, and facile,  
What you expect. *Tub.* *Hilts*, be't your care,  
To see the Wise of *Finsbury* made welcome :

v. vii. 31 oild *corr.* *F.*: old *F.* originally  
Spectators ? *F* 43 *Pol-marten* there] *Pol-martin*, there, *F*<sub>3</sub> her ?]  
her. *F*, *F*<sub>3</sub> 48, 49 He has | His whistle of G 50 silver !] silver, *F* :  
Silver, *F*<sub>3</sub> Sir, *F*<sub>3</sub> : Sir *F*



Let 'hem want nothing. Iz old *Rosin* sent for? *The Squire goes out.*  
*Hil.* Hee's come within. *Scri.* Lord! what a world of busines  
 The Squire dispatches! *Med.* Hee is a learned man: 60  
 I thinke there are but vew o' the Innes o' Court,  
 Or the Innes o' Chancery like him. *Cle.* Care to fit 'un *The rest follow.*  
 then.

ACT V. SCENE VIII.

*Iack. Hilts.*

*Iac.* Yonder's another wedding, Master *Basket*,  
 Brought in by Vicar *Hugh.* *Hil.* What are they, *Iack*?  
*Iac.* The High Constables Man, *Ball Hanny*; and Mrs.  
*Wispes*,  
 Our Ladies woman. *Hil.* And are the Table merry?  
*Iac.* There's a young Tile-maker makes all laugh; 5  
 He will not eate his meat, but cryes at th' boord,  
 He shall be hang'd. *Hil.* He has lost his wench already:  
 As good be hang'd. *Iac.* Was she that is *Pol-marten*,  
 Our fellowes Mistris, wench to that sneake-*Iohn*?  
*Hil.* I faith, *Black Iack*, he should have beene her Bride- 10  
 groome:  
 But I must goe to waite o' my wise Masters.  
*Iack*, you shall waite on me, and see the Maske anone:  
 I am halfe Lord Chamberlin, i' my Masters absence.  
*Iac.* Shall wee have a Masque? Who makes it? *Hil.*  
*In-and-In*,  
 The Maker of *Islington*: Come goe with me 15  
 To the sage sentences of *Finsbury*.

v vii. 58 (stage-dir.) out] ou t F v. viii. Scene iv.—The same  
 [i. e. Totten-Court]. A Room in the House G 2 What F3: what F  
 3 Wispes] Wispes G 14 In-and-In,] In-and-In F, F3 15 Maker]  
 Master F3



## ACT V. SCENE IX.

2 *Groomes.*

*Gro.* 1. Come, give us in the great Chaire, for my Lady ;  
And set it there : and this for Justice *Bramble*.

*Gro.* 2. This for the Squire my Master, on the right hand.

*Gro.* 1. And this for the High Constable. *Gro.* 2. This  
his wife.

5 *Gro.* 1. Then for the Bride, and Bride-groome, here,  
*Pol-marten*.

*Gro.* 2. And she *Pol-marten*, at my Ladies feet.

*Gro.* 1. Right. *Gro.* 2. And beside them Mr. *Hanniball*  
*Puppy*.

*Gro.* 1. And his shee *Puppy*, Mrs. *Wispe* that was :  
Here's all are in the note. *Gro.* 2. No, Mr. Vicar :  
10 The petty Chanon *Hugh*. *Gro.* 1. And Cast-by *Clay* :  
There they are all. *Tub*. Then cry a Hall, a Hall !  
'Tis merry in *Tottenham* Hall, when beards wag all.  
Come Father *Rozin* with your Fidle now,  
*Loud* And two tall-toters : Flourish to the Masque.  
*musicke.*

## ACT V. SCENE X.

*Lady*. Preamble before her. *Tub*. Turfe. *D.* Turfe.

*Pol-marten*. Awdrey. *Puppy*. *Wispe*. *Hugh*. *Clay*.

All take their Seats. *Hilts* waits on the by.

*Lad*. Neighbours, all welcome : Now doth *Totten-Hall*  
Shew like a Court : and hence shall first be call'd so.

Your witty short confession Mr. Vicar,  
Within hath beene the *Prologue*, and hath open'd

5 Much to my sonnes device, his *Tale of a Tub*.

*Tub*. Let my Masque shew it selfe : And *In-and-In*,

v. ix.] Scene v.—Another Room in the same, with a curtain drawn  
across it G 5 Bride-groome, here,] Bride-groome, here F : Bride-  
groom here, F3 v. x (Heading) *Lady* ] *Lady* F, F3 *Pol-marten* ]  
*Pol-marten*, F. *Pol-marten*, F3 4 Within] Within, F3



The Architect, appeare : I heare the whistle.

*Med.* Thus rise I first, in my light linnen breeches,

To run the meaning over in short speeches.

Here is a *Tub* ; A *Tub* of *Totten-Court* :

An ancient *Tub*, hath call'd you to this sport :

His Father was a Knight, the rich Sir *Peeter* ;

Who got his wealth by a *Tub*, and by Salt-Peeter :

And left all to his Lady *Tub* ; the mother

Of this bold Squire *Tub*, and to no other.

Now of this *Tub*, and's deeds, not done in ale,

Observe, and you shall see the very *Tale*.

*Hil*  
Peace.

*Medlay*  
appears  
above the  
Curtain.

15  
He  
drawes  
the  
Curtain,  
and  
discovers  
the top of  
the *Tub*.  
*Hil.* Ha'  
Peace.  
Loud Mu-  
sick.

*The first Motion.*

*Med.* Here Chanon *Hugh*, first brings to *Totten-Hall*

The high Constables councill, tels the Squire all ;

Which, though discover'd (give the Divell his due :) 20

The wise of *Finsbury* doe still pursue.

Then with the Justice, doth he counterplot,

And his Clarke *Metaphore*, to cut that knot :

Whilst Lady *Tub*, in her sad velvet Gowne,

Missing her sonne, doth seeke him up and downe. 25

*Tub.* With her *Pol-marten* bare before her. *Med.* Yes,

I have exprest it here in figure, and Mis-

tris *Wisper* her woman, holding up her traine.

*Tub.* I' the next page, report your second straine.

*Hil* *Ha'*  
Peace  
Loud Mu-  
sick.

*The second Motion.*

*Med.* Here the high Constable, and Sages walke

To Church, the Dame, the Daughter, Bride-maids

talke,

Of wedding busines ; till a fellow in comes,

Relates the robbery of one Captaine *Thum's* :

Chargeth the Bride-groome with it : Troubles all,

30



35 And gets the Bride ; who in the hands doth fall  
 Of the bold Squire, but thence soone is tane  
 By the sly Justice, and his Clarke profane  
 In shape of Pursuyvant ; which he not long  
 Holds, but betrayes all with his trembling tongue :  
 40 As truth will breake out, and shew, &c.

*Tub.* O thou hast made him kneele there in a corner,  
 I see now : there is simple honour for you *Hilts* !

*Hil.* Did I not make him to confesse all to you ?

*Tub.* True ; *In-and-In* hath done you right, you see.  
 45 Thy third I pray thee, witty *In-and-In*.

*Cle.* The Squire commends 'un. He doth like all well.

*Pan.* Hee cannot choose. This is geare made to sell.

*Hil.* Ha'  
 peace  
 Loud  
 musick.

### *The third Motion.*

*Med.* The carefull Constable, here drooping comes,  
 In his deluded search, of Captain *Thum's*.  
 50 *Puppy* brings word, his Daughter's run away  
 With the tall Serving-man. He frights Groome *Clay*,  
 Out of his wits. Returneth then the Squire,  
 Mocks all their paines, and gives Fame out a Lyar :  
 For falsely charging *Clay*, when 'twas the plot,  
 55 Of subtile *Bramble*, who had *Awdrey* got,  
 Into his hand, by this winding device.  
 The Father makes a reskue in a trice :  
 And with his Daughter, like Saint *George* on foot,  
 Comes home triumphing, to his deare Hart root,  
 60 And tell's the Lady *Tub*, whom he meets there,  
 Of her sonnes courtesies, the Batchelor.  
 Whose words had made 'hem fall the *Huy* and *Cry*.  
 When Captaine *Thum's* comming to aske him, why  
 He had so done ? he cannot yeeld him cause :  
 65 But so he runs his neck into the Lawes.

v. x 47-8 s. d. musick.] musick *F* 56 this] his *F* 3 59 root,]  
 root. *F*, *F* 3 64 he cannot] He cannot *F*, *F* 3



*The fourth Motion.*

*Hil. Ha'*  
peace  
Loud Mu-  
sick.

*Med.* The Lawes, who have a noose to crack his neck,  
As Iustice *Bramble* tels him, who doth peck  
A hundreth pound out of his purse, that comes  
Like his teeth from him, unto Captaine *Thum's*.  
*Thum's* is the Vicar in a false disguise : 70  
And employes *Metaphore*, to fetch this prize.  
Who tels the secret unto *Basket-Hilts*,  
For feare of beating. This the Squire quilts  
Within his Cap ; and bids him but purloine  
The wench for him : they two shall share the coine. 75  
Which the sage Lady in her 'foresaid Gowne  
Breaks off, returning unto *Kentish-Towne*,  
To seeke her *Wispe* ; taking the Squire along,  
Who finds *Clay Iohn*, as hidden in straw throng.

*Hil.* O, how am I beholden to the Inventer, 80  
That would not, on record against me enter  
My slacknesse here, to enter in the barne,  
Well *In-and-In*, I see thou canst discerne !

*Tub.* On with your last, and come to a Conclusion.

*The fift Motion.*

*Hil. Ha'*  
peace.  
Loud Mu-  
sicke.

*Med.* The last is knowne, and needs but small infusion 85  
Into your memories, by leaving in  
These Figures as you sit. I, *In-and-In*,  
Present you with the show : First of a Lady  
*Tub*, and her sonne, of whom this Masque here,  
made I.  
Then Bride-groome *Pol*, and Mistris *Pol* the Bride : 90  
With the sub-couple, who sit them beside.  
*Tub.* That onely verse, I alter'd for the better, *ἐνφονία*  
*gratiâ*.

v. x. 81 enter] enter ! *F originally : miscorrected to enter.* 92 *ἐνφονία*  
[Grammar requires *ἐνφονίας*



*Med.* Then Justice *Bramble*, with Sir *Hugh* the Chanon :  
 And the Bride's Parents, which I will not stan'on,  
 95 Or the lost *Clay*, with the recovered *Giles* :  
 Who thus unto his Master, him 'conciles,  
 On the Squires word, to pay old *Turse* his Club,  
 And so doth end our *Tale*, here, of a *Tub*.

*The end.*

## EPILOGUE

*Squire TVB.*

**T**His *Tale* of mee, the *Tub* of *Totten-Court*,  
 A Poet, first invented for your sport.  
 Wherein the fortune of most empty *Tubs*  
 Rowling in love, are shewne ; and with what rubs,  
 5 W'are commonly encountred : when the wit  
 Of the whole Hundred so opposeth it.  
 Our petty Chanon's forked plot in chiefe,  
 Slie Iustice arts, with the High Constables briefe,  
 And brag Commands ; my Lady Mothers care ;  
 10 And her Pol-martens fortune ; with the rare  
 Fate of poore Iohn, thus tumbled in the Caske ;  
 Got In-and-In, to gi't you in a Masque :  
 That you be pleas'd, who come to see a Play,  
 With those that heare, and marke not what wee say.  
 15 Wherein the Poets fortune is, I feare,  
 Still to be early up, but nere the neare.

FINIS.

v x 95 *Giles* ] Miles, W Epilogue 5 when] When F, F3 8 briefe]  
 Briefe F : Brief F3 17 FINIS added in some copus



---

THE CASE IS ALTERED

---



## THE TEXT

THE play was twice entered on the Stationers' Register in 1609 :

Henry Walleys Richard Bonion vide ad 20 Julij 1609	26 <sup>to</sup> Januarij Entred for their Copyc vnder thandes of master Segar deputy to Sir George Bucke and of thwardens a booke called, The case is altered <span style="float: right;">vj<sup>d</sup></span>
Arber, <i>Transcript</i> III, 400.	

Henry Walley Richard Bonyon Bartholomew Sutton.	20 Julij Entred for their copie by direction of master Waterson warden. a booke called the case is altered whiche was Entred for H. Walley and Richard Bonyon the 26 of January Last. <span style="float: right;">vj<sup>d</sup></span>
Ibid., 416.	

Bonian and Walley were in partnership from 1608 to 1610. They published *Troilus and Cressida* and *The Masque of Queens* early in 1609 (the latter was entered on the Register on February 22), and *The Faithful Shepherdess* either in 1609 or 1610.

Sutton went into partnership with Barrenger in 1609. On March 3 they published Barnaby Rich's *Short Survey of the Realm of Ireland*. *The Case is Altered* was the second book published by the partners.

The play was issued in quarto with two distinct title-pages :

(1) Ben: Ionson, His Case is Altered. As it hath beene sundry times Acted by the Children of the Blacke-friers. [Device.] At London Printed for Bartholomew Sutton, dwelling in Paules Church-yard neere the great north doore of S. Paules Church. 1609.

(2) A Pleasant Comedy, called : The Case is Alterd. As it hath beene sundry times acted by the children of the Black-friers. Written by Ben. Ionson. [Device.] London, Printed for Bartholomew Sutton, and William Barrenger, and are to be sold at the great North-doore of Saint Paules Church. 1609.

Collation : A-K in fours, with the title on A and the text beginning at A2.



The first title-page is in the British Museum copy with press-mark 644. b. 54; the second is the commoner form and corresponds with the running title *A pleasant Comedy, called The Case is Alterd*. The other Museum Copy originally contained both titles, but the earlier has been stolen from it in recent years.

The Kemble copy, formerly in Chatsworth Library, presents a striking variant of the second title-page; it omits the words 'Written by Ben. Ionson,' though in all other respects there is exact correspondence; e.g. in the turned 'r' of 'sundry' and in the broken lines above and below the printer's device. What is the history of this change of title?

Early in 1609 Jonson had published with Bonian and Walley *The Masque of Queens*; the text of this masque, encumbered with a series of scholarly notes, shows an accuracy which could have been ensured only by Jonson's presence at the printing-house when the work was being set up in type. Bonian and Walley no doubt hoped to publish something more of Jonson's, but *The Case is Altered* is the only work which they managed to secure, and even this Sutton took over from them. The printing of this is so vile that it is certain that Jonson did not see it through the press.

In our critical introduction to the play<sup>1</sup> we noted the absence of Jonson's name from the second title-page in the Kemble copy, and we assumed that Jonson had intervened to force this omission upon the printer. Dr. W. W. Greg has sent us a very valuable correction. The words 'Written by Ben. Ionson' were added, not deleted. The spacing of the page is more regular without the author's name, and this particular line is badly centred. The original title 'Ben: Ionson, his Case is Alterd' was cancelled because Barrenger, who is not mentioned in the entries in the Stationers' Register, had taken a share in the venture and his name had to appear in the imprint. In the cancel a more normal wording of the title was



adopted, but the printer, having removed Ben's name from the beginning, forgot to put it in at the end. After a few copies had been struck off—only one is recorded—the error was discovered in the printing-office, and the name was unskillfully inserted.

The printer has not been traced. The device of a fleur-de-lis set in a frame, with the motto 'In Domino confido', appears in a variety of forms recorded in Dr. R. B. McKerrow's *Printers' & Publishers' Devices*, nos. 263 to 272. The pattern here employed is no. 269, with the broad bud of the flower actually touching the leaf on the left and with the F of 'CONFIDO' so badly cut that it looks like a T. John Wolfe had used the device, but it is not known into whose hands it passed after his death in 1601. Dr. McKerrow traces it again in *The Tragedy of Thierry and Theodoret*, printed by T. Walkley in 1621.

*The Case is Altered* is a rare example of a Jonson text which may be described as thoroughly bad. The following copies have been collated for the text of the present edition :

British Museum copy, with press-mark 644. b. 54, wanting sig. K (= A in the list below).

British Museum copy, T. 492 (9), wanting all leaves after sig. H 4 (= 3).

Bodleian Copy, Malone 225 (= C).

Dyce copy with inlaid title-page (= D).

Dyce copy with T. Jolley's book-plate (= E).

Dyce copy loosely bound with MS. verses at end, badly cropped and with torn title-page (= F).

The Kemble copy, formerly at Chatsworth, now in the Henry E. Huntington Library (= G).

The sheets of the Quarto were much corrected in passing through the press. The following is a list of the corrections :

Sig. A 4 <sup>v</sup>	i. v. 11	dost C, D, F	doo's A, B, E, G
B.	i. v. 30	Maximilian of Vicenza D.	Maximilian of Vicenza the rest.
	i. v. 36	valient, D.	valient. the rest.
	i v. 40	well D.	Well the rest.



Sig. B	I. v. 40 s. d.	<i>Inmper</i> D.	<i>Iuniper</i> the rest
	I. v. 43	<i>Capricio</i> D.	<i>Capriccio</i> the rest.
	I. vi. 3	<i>Angelo</i> . D.	<i>Angelo</i> , the rest.
	I. vi. 4	him <i>om.</i> D.	( <i>Inserted in the rest.</i> )
		means. D	meanes, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. vi. 13	science D.	sence <i>the rest.</i>
	I. vi. 16	weakes D	weaknes <i>the rest.</i>
	I. vi. 17	concepted D.	conceited <i>the rest.</i>
	I. vi. 18 s. d.	<i>Angelo</i> D.	<i>Angelo</i> the rest.
	I. vi. 71	No ? A	No. <i>the rest.</i>
B 2 <sup>v</sup>	I. vi. 90	<i>Angello</i> D.	<i>Angelo</i> the rest.
	I. vii heading	Sebast, D.	Sebast the rest.
	I. vii. 4 s. d.	<i>Martino</i> D.	<i>Martino</i> the rest.
	I. vii. 6	nought D.	nought, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. vii. 17	crost D.	crost, <i>the rest.</i>
B 3	I. vii. 25	<i>your</i> D	<i>his</i> the rest.
B 4 <sup>v</sup>	I. ix. 33	prauer D	deprauer <i>the rest.</i>
	I. ix. 37	presently . D	presently <i>the rest.</i>
	I. ix. 40	Maddame D	Maddame, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. ix. 56	my D	mine <i>the rest</i>
	I. ix. 57	sound D, G	sound, <i>the rest</i>
C <sup>v</sup>	I. ix. 98	ranged A, E	rang'd <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 4	<i>Pau</i> A, E, and (?) F	<i>Pau</i> the rest.
		well, A, C, E	well. <i>the rest</i>
	I. x. 15	returned A, E	return'd <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 16	heauily A, E	heauily, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 17	want nothing A, E	want nothing. <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 18	all A, E	all : <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 19	sweet A, E	sweet, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 25	soule, B, C, D, F	soule. A, E
	I. x. 26	Rseue hi A, E	Receiue him <i>the rest.</i>
		loue A, E	loue, <i>the rest.</i>
		deffects, A, E	deffects <i>the rest.</i>
C 2	I. x. 27	a bsence A, E	absence <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 30	you, A, E	you. <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 31	Faith A, E	Faith <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 36	meane A, E	meane <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 37	good A, E	good, <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 45	<i>Satrapas</i> . A, E	<i>Satrapas</i> the rest.
	I. x. 47	no A, E	not <i>the rest.</i>
	I. x. 48	go : A, E	go. <i>the rest.</i>
C 3	II. i. 66	Tho G	The <i>the rest.</i>
C 4	II. ii. 49	I om A, E	( <i>Inserted in the rest.</i> )
C 4	II. ii. 53	Though A, E	Thought <i>the rest.</i>
D <sup>v</sup>	II. iv. 46	cerimon y B, C, E	cerimony <i>the rest.</i>
	II. iv. 58	Iealous. A, D, F, G	Iealous : B, C, E.



Sig	D 2 <sup>v</sup>	II. vi. 19	it- A, D, F	it- the rest.
E 4		III. v 27	wi thin, B, C, D, E : w 1 thin F	within A
F		IV. 1. 67	Chamount, B, C, D, E, F, G	Chamount A
F 3		IV. iii 31	signior A	signior. the rest.
		IV. iii. 42	abroad, A	abroad. the rest
		IV. iii 43	Mounsieur : A	Mounsieur the rest.
F 4 <sup>v</sup>		IV. v. 41	Onion A	Onion, the rest.
		IV. v. 45	para-  hrase A	para-  phrase the rest
G		IV. v. 50	heauy C, D	heauy, the rest
		IV. v. 53	speakefor C, D will C, D being ratitude A, B, E, F, G	speake for the rest wil the rest be ingratitude C, D.
		IV. v 54	ould C, D all, C, D	old the rest. all. the rest.
		IV. v. 58	circumference C, D	circumference, the rest
		IV. vi heading	Rachel, C, D	Rachel. the rest.
		IV. vi. 1	thee, A, C, D	thee ; the rest.
		IV. vi. 4	ye'are C, D	y'are the rest.
		IV. vi. 5	e lection A, B, E, F, G	election, C, D
G <sup>v</sup>		IV. vi. 19	I that C, D	I, that the rest
		IV. vi. 20	practise, C, D	practise. the rest.
		IV. vi. 23	leau C, D	leau the rest.
		IV. vi. 29	n ow C, D	now the rest.
G 2 <sup>v</sup>		IV. viii. 10	kinsman A, B	kinsman, the rest.
		IV. viii 17	dur, tno-  D: dur, tno   C	durt, no   the rest.
		IV. viii. 39	firsbush : C	firsbush. the rest.
		IV. viii. 40	teare, C, D m y G haire C, D reloulue C, D	teare the rest. my the rest. haire, the rest. reloulue the rest.
G 3		IV. viii. 57	ground, C, D	ground. the rest.
		IV. viii 70	sences ; C, G	sences, the rest.
G 3 <sup>v</sup>		IV. viii. 78	wit h C, D	with the rest
G 4		IV. ix 41	gupgeon C, D	gudgeon the rest.
G 4 <sup>v</sup>		IV. x. 15	Coun <sub>1</sub> C, D	Count the rest.
		IV. x. 17	spaeke C, D	speake the rest.
		IV. x. 18	sim ple B	simple the rest.
		IV. x. 26	prtext C, D	pretext the rest.
		IV. x. 27	ccanno C, D	canno the rest.
		IV. x. 28	Lord, C, D	Lord. the rest
		IV. x. 39	lotah C, D	loath the rest.
		IV. x 42	willy ou C, D.	will you the rest.



Sig. G 4 <sup>v</sup>	iv. xi 1	substance : C D.	substance, <i>the rest.</i>
		<i>Chamont</i> , C, D.	<i>Chamont</i> : <i>the rest</i>
	iv. xi. 4	secreet C, D.	secret <i>the rest.</i>
H 2	iv. xi. 79	giuet rue G.	gue true <i>the rest.</i>
H 3 <sup>v</sup>	v. vi. 7	rapier C, D.	rapier <i>the rest.</i>

In the critical apparatus of the text these corrections are indicated thus : 'doo's *corr. Q* : dost, *Q* originally.' But it is necessary to tabulate them here lest they should be lost sight of in the mass of minor corrections required to adjust the wrong punctuation, the jumbled sentences, and the dislocated verse in which the Quarto abounds. Even after his efforts to revise, the printer left in the text 'Capriccio' (i. v. 43) and 'reluolue' (iv. viii. 40). Perhaps his commonest error is to interchange two stops in the same sentence : thus at iv. xi. 1 he printed originally

Come on false substance · shadow to *Chamont*,  
Had you none else to worke vpon but me, . . .

Seeing his error, he corrected the first line to

Come on false substance, shadow to *Chamont* :

but he seldom adjusted errors of this kind. Minor proofs of his incompetence, such as turned letters and the use of wrong founts, are frequent ; these are ignored in this edition except where the original printer himself corrected them. So are inconsistencies in the catchwords ; only the errors of these are noted.

Mr. W. C. Hazlitt wrongly stated, both in his *Manual for the Collector and Amateur of Old English Plays* and in his *Bibliographical Collections, Second Series*, p. 320, that *The Case is Altered* was reprinted in the Folio of 1692. Mr. H. C. Hart (*The Works of Ben Jonson*, I, p. xxviii) even added that the reprint was careless. The play was not reprinted till 1756, when Whalley included it in his edition. He modernized the text and made a few perfunctory corrections. Gifford was the first to attempt a critical recension. Accusing Whalley of negligence and of 'even adding to the blunders of the original'—a charge wholly unjustified—



he concluded complacently, 'In revenge, I have given a double portion of attention to it'. Gifford's most marked improvement of the text was to distribute the verse correctly: in this he has been followed by all later editors; the passages are indicated in the critical apparatus of the present text by the formula 'Prose in Q'. In addition he carried through the numbering of acts and scenes, localized the latter, inserted stage directions freely, and tinkered the false French of Pacue. He interfered with the text far less than might be expected from his ominous statement that he had paid special attention to it. He expands colloquial forms like 'let's', 'hem', 'ha'; he generally substitutes 'O lord' and 'Odso' for 'O God' and 'Godso'; but it is only occasionally that he alters a word, e. g. in v. i. 7 'woeing trickes' appears as 'coying tricks', and in iv. iii. 45 he inserts a 'voila' to touch up the French.

The play has been four times reprinted in recent years—separately as an acting copy for the students of the University of Chicago, who performed this comedy on May 17, 1902, and also by Mr. H. C. Hart, who lived to complete only two volumes of his projected edition for Methuen's *Standard Library*, and by Professor F. Schelling, who has edited the plays for the *Everyman Library*. All three editions are based on the Quarto, but frequently accept Gifford's corrections. In 1917 Dr. W. E. Selin issued a careful reprint of the Quarto from the copy in the collection of Mr. W. A. White, of New York ('Yale Studies in English', no. lvi). With this text he collated the Bodleian and British Museum copies, and the Kemble copy, then at Chatsworth; he records many of the printer's variants. The present edition is a revised text, as conservative as it is possible to make it. It is a reissue of the Quarto with just that minimum of correction which is required to give effect to the printer's good intentions; unfortunately, from the condition of the text, the minimum looks persistently like a maximum. *The Case is Altered* is thus in glaring contrast to all Jonson's other works except *The English Grammar*



published after his death in the Folio of 1640, the technical form of which baffled the printer.

The Quarto marks the acts and scenes inaccurately as far as the opening of the fourth act. Sometimes it prefixes a list of the characters taking part in the scene : this is the method in the manuscripts of Plautus and Terence, and Jonson adopted it in the plays which he himself sent to press. But the Quarto also heads scenes in the usual way (e. g. i. vi) ; sometimes it follows up the enumeration of characters by marking entrances and exits afterwards (e. g. i. i, where '*Iuniper, Onion, Antony Baladino*' probably come from Jonson's own manuscript, while the stage direction at ll. 2, 3, '*Enter Onion in hast*', is a play-house annotation) ; sometimes the printer makes nonsense by prefixing '*Enter*' to the list of characters (e. g. i. v, '*Enter Iuniper, Antonio, Sebastian, Vincentio, Balthasar and Christophero*', where Juniper, Antonio, and Valentine, who is ignored, are on the stage already ; Sebastian, Martino, Vincentio, and Balthasar actually enter ; and Christophero enters later at l. 8).

Jonson's own method was to mark a new scene in nearly every case where a new character enters. The Quarto shows sufficient traces of this method to suggest that it was in the manuscript, but it has been disturbed, perhaps by stage requirements. Thus, in Act i, if scenes iv and v are to be retained, as marked in the Quarto, they must be preceded by ii and iii, which are not marked. It has been decided to adopt this system in the reprint and so bring *The Case is Altered* into harmony with Jonson's other plays.

In one important point the Quarto has been wrongly altered by most modern editions. The fourth act is correctly marked. Gifford carried on the third act to the end of iv. ii. But Maximilian's return opens a new phase of the plot and is an excellent starting-point for the new act. Modern editors seem disposed to shrink from a short act as an anomaly ; hence even in *Hamlet* they are content to start the fourth act 'at a time when', as Johnson puts it,



'there is more continuity of action than in almost any other of the scènes'.

Mr. Crawford noted<sup>1</sup> that the following lines from this play were quoted in *Bel-vedère or the Garden of the Muses*, compiled by A. M. and published in 1600, nine years before the play was printed :

On page 128 '*Of Couetousnes, Auarice*'.

Gold, that makes all men false, is true it selfe. (= II. i. 31)  
The more we spare, the more we hope to haue. (= II. i. 66)  
To haue gold, and to haue it safe, is all. (= III. v. 28).

On page 67 '*Of Nobilitie*'.

*He is not noble, but most basely bred,  
That ransacks tombes, and doth deface the dead.* (= II. i. 45-6).

A. M. adapted his quotations freely, to make them even five-feet lines.

<sup>1</sup> *Notes and Queries*, 10th Series, xi, pp 41-2







# BEN: IONSON.

*HIS*

CASE IS ALTERD.

As it hath beene fundry times Acted by the  
Children of the Blacke-fricrs.

---



---

*AT LONDON*  
Printed for *Bartholomew Sutton*, dwelling in *Paules*  
*Church-yard* neere the great north doore of *S.*  
*Paules Church.* 1609.



# A Pleasant Comedy,

CALLED:

The Case is Altered.

As it hath beene sundry times acted by the  
children of the Black-friers.

Written by BEN. IONSON.

---



---

LONDON,

Printed for *Bartholomew Sutton*, and *William Barrenger*,  
and are to be sold at the great North-doore  
of Saint Paules Church. 1609.







# 〈The Persons of the Play.

COVNT FERNEZE.	
LORD PAVLO FERNEZE, <i>his son.</i>	
AVRELIA	} <i>his daughters.</i>
PHŒNIXELLA	
CAMILLO FERNEZE, <i>supposed Gasper.</i>	5
MAXIMILIAN, <i>general of the Milanese.</i>	
CHAMONT, <i>a soldier of France, friend to Gasper.</i>	
ANGELO, <i>friend to Paulo.</i>	
FRANCISCO COLONNIA.	
IAQVES DE PRIE, <i>supposed a beggar (MELVN, 10</i> <i>steward to Chamont's father).</i>	
RACHEL DE PRIE, <i>supposed his daughter (ISABEL,</i> <i>sister to Chamont).</i>	
ANTONIO BALLADINO, <i>pageant poet to the City of</i> <i>Milan.</i>	
PETER ONION, <i>groom of the hall to Count Ferneze.</i>	
IVNIPER, <i>a cobbler.</i>	
CHRISTOPHERO, <i>steward to Count Ferneze.</i>	15
SEBASTIAN	} <i>his seruants.</i>
MARTINO	
VINCENTIO	
BALTHASAR	
VALENTINE, <i>seruant to Colonnia.</i>	20
NVNCIO.	
PACVE, <i>page to Gasper.</i>	
FINIO, <i>page to Camillo.</i>	
<i>Page to Paulo.</i>	
<i>Sewer.</i>	25
<i>Seruimgmen.</i>	
<i>Soldiers.</i>	

## THE SCENE MILAN.〉

A list of characters was first given by Whalley  
Colonia W: Colomia, Colomea, or Coloma in Q

9 COLONNIA G:







A pleasant Comedy called, the  
*Case is Alterd.*

Actus primi, Scæna prima.

*Sound : after a flourish, Iuniper a Cobler is discouered,  
 sitting at worke in his shoppe and singing.*

*Iuniper, Onion, [Antony Baladino].*

**Y**OV wofull wights giue eare a while,  
*And marke the tenor of my stile, Enter Onion*  
*Which shall such trembling hearts vnfold in hast.*  
*As seldome hath to fore bene told.*  
*Such chances rare and dolefull newes Oni. Fellow Iuniper 5*  
*peace a Gods name.*  
*As may attempt your wits to muse. Oni. Gods so, heere*  
*man. A pox a God on you.*  
*And cause such trickling teares to passe,*  
*Except your hearts be flint or brasse : Oni. Iuniper, Iuniper. 10*  
*To heare the newes which I shall tell,*  
*That in Castella once befell.*

*Sbloud, where didst thou learne to corrupt a man in the  
 midst of a verse, ha ?*

*Onion. Gods lid man, seruice is ready to go vp man, you 15*  
*must slip on your coate and come in, we lacke waiters*  
*pittyfully.*

*Iunip. A pittifull hearing, for now must I of a merry*  
*Cobler become <a> mourning creature.*

*Onion. Well youle come. 20*

*Iunip. Presto. Go to, a word to the wise, away, flie,*  
*vanish : Exit Onion.*

*Lye there the weedes that I disdaine to weare.*

1. i. stage dir. *Sound : . . . flourish,* Sound ? . . . flourish : Q Antony]  
 Antony Q 5 Fellow] fellow Q 6 peace] Peace Q 19 a G  
 21 flie,] flie ? Q 22 Stage dir. at 19 in Q



## 〈Scæne 2.〉

*Enter Antonio Balladino.**Anto.* God saue you Maister *Iuniper*.*Iuni.* What Signior Antonio Balladino, welcome sweet Ingle.*Anto.* And how do you sir?

5 *Iuni.* Faith you see, put to my shifts here as poore retainers be oftentimes. Sirrah *Antony* ther's one of my fellowes mightely enamored of thee, and I faith you slaue, now you're come I'll bring you together, it's *Peter Onion*, the groome of the hal, do you know him?

10 *Anto.* No not yet, I assure you.

*Iuni.* O he is one as right of thy humour as may be, a plaine simple Rascal, a true dunce, marry he hath bene a notable vilaine in his time: he is in loue, sirrah, with a wench, & I haue preferd thee to him, thou shalt make  
 15 him some prety *Paradox* or some *Aligory*, how does my coate sit? well?

*Anto.* I very well.*Enter Onion.**Oni.* Na(y) Gods so, fellow *Iuniper*, come away.

*Iun.* Art thou there mad slaue, I come with a powder.  
 20 Sirrah fellow *Onion*, I must haue you peruse this Gentleman well, and doe him good offices of respect and kindnesse, as instance shall be giuen. *〈Exit.〉*

*Anto.* Nay good maister *Onion* what do you meane, I pray you sir, you are to respectiue in good faith.

25 *Onion.* I would not you should thinke so sir, for though I haue no learning, yet I honour a scholer in any ground of the earth sir. Shall I request your name sir?

*Anto.* My name is Antonio Balladino.

*Oni.* Balladino? you are not Pageant Poet to the City  
 30 of Millaine sir, are you?

i. ii.] *Enter Antonio Balladino.* G 6 oftentimes. Sirrah] oftentimes, sirrah Q 8 you're] your Q it's] i'ts Q 9 him?] him Q 13 a notable] anotable Q 14 a wench] awench Q 16 well?] well. Q 19 powder] powder? Q 20 Sirrah begins a new line in Q Onion.] Onion. Q 22 *Exit.* G 24 sir,] sir Q respectiue] respectue Q 27 earth sir.] earth sir, Q Shall begins a new line in Q 29 Oni.] Oni, Q 30 you?] you. Q



*Anto.* I supply the place sir : when a worse cannot be had sir.

*Oni.* I crie you mercy sir, I loue you the better for that sir, by Iesu you must pardon me, I knew you not, but I'd pray to be better acquainted with you sir, I haue seene 35 of your works.

*Anto.* I am at your seruice good Maister *Onion*, but concerning this maiden that you loue sir? what is she?

*Onion.* O did my fellow *Iuniſper* tell you? marry sir, she is as one may say, but a poore mans child indeede, and 40 for mine owne part I am no Gentleman borne I must confesse, but *my mind to me a kingdome is* truly.

*Anto.* Truly a very good saying.

*Onion.* 'Tis somewhat stale, but that's no matter.

*Anto.* O 'tis the better, such things euer are like bread, 45 which the staler it is, the more holesome.

*Onion.* This is but a hungry comparison in my iudgement.

*Anto.* Why, I'll tell you, *M. Onion*, I do vse as much stale stuffe, though I say it my selfe, as any man does in that kind I am sure. Did you see the last *Pageant*, I set forth? 50

*Onion.* No faith sir, but there goes a huge report on't.

*Anto.* Why, you shal be one of my *Mæcen-asses*, I'll giue you one of the bookes, O you'll like it admirably.

*Oni.* Nay that 's certaine, I'll get my fellow *Iuniſper* to read it. 55

*Anto.* Reade it sir, I'll reade it to you.

*Onion.* Tut then I shall not chuse but like it.

*Anto.* Why looke you sir, I write so plaine, and keepe that old *Decorum*, that you must of necessitie like it; mary you shall haue some now (as for example, in plaies) 60 that will haue euery day new trickes, and write you nothing but humours: indeede this pleases the Gentlemen: but the common sort they care not for't, they know not what to make on't, they looke for good matter, they, and are not edified with such toyes. 65

1. ii. 31 a worse] a worse Q      34 I'd] I'd Q      38 she ?] she, Q  
42 truly om G      44 'Tis] T'is Q      45 'tis] t'is Q



*Onion.* You are in the right, I'll not give a halfe peny to see a thousand on 'hem. I was at one the last Tearme, but & euer I see a more roguish thing, I am a peece of cheese, & no *onion*, nothing but kings & princes in it, the foole  
70 came not out a iot.

*Anto.* True sir, they would haue me make such plaies, but as I tell hem, and they'll giue me twenty pound a play, I'll not raise my vaine.

*Onion.* No, it were a vaine thing, and you should sir.

75 *Anto.* Tut giue me the penny, giue me the peny, I care not for the Gentlemen I, let me haue a good ground, no matter for the pen, the plot shall carry it.

*Onion.* Indeed that's right, you are in print already for the best plotter.

80 *Anto.* I, I might as well ha bene put in for a dumb shew too.

*Oni.* I marry sir, I marle you were not, stand aside sir a while : <Exit Antonio.>

### <Scæne 3.>

*Enter an armd Sewer : some halfe-dozen in mourning  
coates following, and passe by with seruice.*

*Enter Valentine.*

*Onion.* How now friend, what are you there? be vncovered. Would you speake with any man here?

*Valen.* I, or else I must ha' returnd you no answer.

*Oni.* Friend, you are somewhat to peremptory, let's  
5 craue your absençe : nay neuer scorne it, I am a little your better in this place.

*Valen.* I do acknowledge it.

*Onion.* Do you acknowledge it? nay then you shall go forth, Ile teach you how <you> shall acknowledge it another  
10 time; go to, void, I must haue the hall purg'd, no setting vp of a rest here, packe, begone.

1. ii. 83 *Exit Antonio.* G  
2 vncovered ] vncovered, Q  
with 6 in Q 9 you W

1. iii. (Heading) following, ] following Q  
Would begins a new line in Q 7 ranged



*Valen.* I pray you sir is not your name *Onion*?

*Oni.* Your friend as you may vse him, and *M. Onion*, say on.

*Valen.* *M. Onion* with a murraine, come come put off 15  
this Lyons hide, your eares haue discouered you, why  
*Peter*! do not I know you *Peter*?

*Onion.* Gods so, *Valentine*!

*Valen.* O can you take knowledge of me now sir?

*Oni.* Good Lord, sirra, how thou art altred with thy 20  
trauell?

*Valen.* Nothing so much as thou art with thine office,  
but sirra *Onion*, is the *Count Fernese* at home?

[Exit Anthony.]

*Oni.* I Bully, he is aboue; and the Lord *Paulo Fernese*,  
his son, and Maddam *Aurelia*, & maddam *Phœnixella*, his 25  
daughters, But O *Valentine*?

*Valen.* How now man, how dost thou?

*Oni.* Faith sad, heauy, as a man of my coate ought to be.

*Valen.* Why man, thou wert merry inough euen now.

*Oni.* True, but thou knowest 30

*All creatures here soiorning, vpon this wretched earth,  
Sometimes haue a fit of mourning, as well as a fit of mirth.*  
O *Valentine*, mine old Lady is dead, man.

*Valen.* Dead!

*Oni.* I faith. 35

*Valen.* When dyed she?

*Onion.* Mary, to morrow shall be three months, she was  
seene going to heauen they say, about some fve weekes  
agone! how now? trickling teares, ha?

*Valen.* Faith thou hast made me weepe with this newes. 40

*Onion.* Why I have done but the parte of an *Onion*, you  
must pardon me.



## Scène 4.

*Enter the Sewer, passe by with service againe, the serving-men take knowledge of Valentine as they goe. Iuniper salutes him.*

*Iuni.* What *Valentine*? fellow *Onion*, take my dish I prithee. You rogue sirrah, tell me, how thou dost, sweet *Ingle*. *Exit Oni.*

*Valen.* Faith, *Iuniper*, the better to see thee thus frolicke.

5 *Iuni.* Nay, slid I am no changling, I am *Iuniper* still, I keepe the pristinate ha, you mad *Hieroglyphick*, when shal we swagger?

*Valen.* *Hieroglyphick*, what meanest thou by that?

*Iuni.* Meane? Gods so, ist not a good word man? what?  
10 stand vpon meaning with your freinds? Puh, *Absonde*.

*Valen.* Why, but stay, stay, how long has this sprightly humor haunted thee?

*Iuni.* Foe humour, a foolish naturall gift we haue in the *Æquinocctiall*.

15 *Valen.* Naturall, slid it may be supernaturall, this?

*Iuni.* *Valentine*, I prithee ruminde thy selfe welcome. What *fortuna de la Guerra*?

(*Valen.* O how pittifully are these words forc't. As though they were pump't out on's belly.)

20 → *Iuni.* Sirrah *Ingle*, I thinke thou hast seene all the strange countries in Christendome since thou wentst?

*Valen.* I haue seene some *Iuniper*.

*Iuni.* You haue seene *Constantinople*?

*Valen.* I, that I haue.

25 *Iuni.* And *Ierusalem*, and the *Indies*, and *Goodwine Sands*, and the tower of *Babylon*, and *Venice* and all.

1. iv. Scène 4.] Scène 2 Q Stage dir. Sewer] sewer Q 1 *Valen-*  
*inne*] *Valentine* Q 2 prithee You] prithee you Q 3 Stage dir. inserted  
 in Q after still in l. 5 5 still,] still. Q 6 I keepe a new lne in Q  
 pristinate W: pristmate Q 7 swagger?] swagger. Q. 8 that?] that  
 Q 10 freinds? Puh] freinds. Puh Q 17 *Guerra*?] *Guerra*. Q  
 18-19, 27-28 *Asides* not marked in Q: Jonson's use of brackets for this  
 purpose has been adopted in the text 18 As begins a new line in Q



*Valen.* I all ; (no marle and he haue a nimble tong, if he practise to vault thus from one side of the world to another.)

*Iuni.* O it's a most heauenly thing to trauel, & see countries, especially at sea, and a man had a pattent not to be sicke.

*Valen.* O sea sicke Iest, and full of the scuruie.

### Scène 5.

*Enter [Iuniper, Antonio,] Sebastian, Martino, Vincentio, Balthasar [and Christophero].*

*Seba.* *Valentine* ? welcome I faith, how dost sirra ?

*Mart.* How do you good *Valentine* ?

*Vincen.* Troth, *Valentine*, I am glad to see you.

*Balth.* Welcome sweet rogue.

*Sebast.* Before God he neuer lookt better in his life. 5

*Balth.* And how ist man ? what, *Alla Coragio.*

*Valen.* Neuer better gentlemen I faith.

*Iuni.* S'will here comes the steward.

⟨*Enter Christophero.*⟩

*Christ.* Why how now fellowes, all here ? and nobody to waight aboue now they are ready to rise ? looke vp one 10 or two. *Signior Francesco Colonnias* man how doo's your good maister ? *Exeunt Iuniper, Martino, Vincentio.*

*Valen.* In health sir, he will be here anon.

*Christo.* Is he come home, then ?

*Valen.* I sir, he is not past sixe miles hence, he sent me 15 before to learne if *Count Ferneze* were here and returne him word.

*Christo.* Yes, my Lord is here ; and you may tel your maister he shal come very happily to take his leaue of Lord *Paulo Ferneze* : who is now instantly to depart with other 20 noble gentlemen, vpon speciall seruice.

1. v. Scène 5] Scène 3 Q 1 faith,] faith Q 2 *Valentine* ?]  
*Valentine.* Q 6 *Alla*] *Allo* G 8 *Enter Christophero.* G 9 fellowes,]  
fellowes Q 11 two.] two Q *Colonnias* G : *Colomia's* Q : *Colonia's*  
W doo's corr. Q : dost Q originally 12 maister ?] maister Q 13,  
15 sir,] sir Q



*Valen.* I will tell him sir.

*Christo.* I pray you doe, fellowes make him drinke.

⟨*Exit.*⟩

*Valen.* Sirs, what seruice ist they are imployed in?

25 *Sebast.* Why against the *French*, they meane to haue  
a fling at *Millaine* againe they say.

*Valen.* Who leades our forces, can you tell?

*Sebast.* Marry that do's Signior *Maximilian*; he is aboue,  
now.

30 *Valen.* Who, *Maximilian* of *Vicenza*?

*Balt.* I he; do you know him?

*Valen.* Know him? O yes he's an excellent braue  
soldier.

*Balt.* I so they say, but one of the most vaine glorious  
35 men in *Europe*.

*Valen.* He is indeed, marry exceeding valient.

*Sebast.* And that is rare.

*Balt.* What?

*Sebast.* Why to see a vaine glorious man valient.

40 *Valen.* Well he is so I assure you. *Enter Iuniper.*

*Iuni.* What no further yet, come on you precious rascall,  
sir *Valentine*, Ile giue you a health I faith; for the heauens  
you mad *Capriccio*, hold hooke and line. ⟨*Exeunt.*⟩

## Scène 6.

*Enter Lord Paulo Ferneze, his boy following him.*

*Pau.* Boy.

*Boy.* My Lord.

*Pau.* Sirrah go vp to Signior *Angelo*,  
And pray him (if he can) deuise some meanes,

1. v. 25 *French*,] *French* Q 28 *Maximilian* ;] *Maximilian* ? Q  
30 *Maximilian* of *Vicenza* corr. Q: *Maximilian* of *Vicenza* Q originally  
31 he ;] he ? Q 34 vaine glorious] vaine glorious Q 36 valient.  
corr. Q: valient, Q originally 38 What ?] What Q 40 Well corr.  
Q. well Q originally Stage dir. *Iuniper* corr. Q: *Inniper* Q originally  
43 *Capriccio*] *Capriccio* corr Q: *Capriccio* Q originally: *Capriccio* W  
*Exeunt* G 1. vi. Scène 6] Scène 4 Q: SCENE II. A Room in Count  
Ferneze's House G 3 *Angelo*, W. *Angelo*, corr. Q: *Angelo*.  
Q originally 4 him om. originally in Q meanes, corr. Q: means.  
Q originally



To leaue my father, and come speake with me. • 5

Boy. I will my Lord. \* <Exit.>

Pau. Well, heauen be auspicious in the euent ;  
For I do this against my *Genius*,  
And yet my thoughts cannot propose a reason,  
Why I should feare, or faint thus in my hopes, 10  
Of one so much endeered to my loue.

Some sparke it is, kindled within the soule :  
Whose light yet breaks not to the outward sence,  
That propagates this tymorous suspect ;  
His actions neuer carried any face 15

Of change, or weaknes : then I iniury him,  
In being thus cold conceited of his faith,  
O here he comes. *Enter Angelo <with the boy.>*

Ang. How now sweet Lord, whats the matter ?

Pau. Good faith his presence makes me halfe ashamd 20  
Of my straid thoughts. Boy, bestow your selfe. *Exit Boy.*  
Where is my father, Signior *Angelo* ?

Ang. Marry in the galery, where your Lordship left him.

Pau. Thats well. Then *Angelo* I will be briefe,  
Since time forbids the vse of circumstance. 25  
How well you are receiu'd in my affection,  
Let it appeare by this one instance, onely,  
That now I will deliuer to your trust,  
The deereest secrets, treasurd in my bosome.  
Deare *Angelo*, you are not euery man, 30  
But one, whome my election hath design'd,  
As the true proper obiect of my soule .  
I vrge not this t'insinuate my desert,  
Or supple your tri'd temper, with soft phrases ;

1. vi. 6 Boy] Boy Q Stage dir. supplied by G 7 Well, heauen] Well  
heauen, Q 13 sence corr Q : scence Q originally 16 weaknes corr.  
Q : weakes Q originally him,] him ? Q 17 conceited corr Q : con-  
cepted Q originally 18 stage dir. Enter Angelo] Re-enter Page with  
Angelo G Angelo corr Q : Angelo originally 20 ashamd] ashamd.  
Q 21 Boy, bestow] Boy. Bestow Q 22 Angelo ?] Angelo ? W :  
Angelo. Q 24 Angelo] Angelo W : Angelo Q briefe,] briefe. Q  
25 circumstance,] circumstance, Q 26 receiu'd] receiued Q 27  
onely,] onely Q 29 bosome,] bosome, Q 30 Angelo, you] Angelo,  
you W : Angelo. You Q



35 True frendship lothes such oylly complement :  
 But from th'aboundance of that loue, that flowes  
 Through all my spirits, is my speech enforc'd.

*Ang.* Before your Lordship do proceed too far,  
 Let me be bould to intimate thus much ;  
 40 That what so ere your wisdom hath t'expose,  
 Be it the waightiest and most rich affaire,  
 That euer was included in your breast,  
 My faith shall poise it, if not—

*Pau.* O no more,  
 Those words haue rapt me with their sweet affects,  
 45 So freely breath'd, and so responsible  
 To that which I endeuour'd to extract,  
 Arguing a happy mixture of our soules.

*Ange.* Why were there no such *sympathy* sweete Lord,  
 Yet the impresse of those ample fauours,  
 50 I haue deriu'd from your vnmatched spirit,  
 Would bind my faith to all obseruances.

*Pau.* How ! fauours *Angelo*, ô speake not of them,  
 They are meere paintings, and import no merit.  
 Lookes my loue well ? thereon my hopes are plac't :  
 55 Faith, that is bought with fauours, cannot last. *Enters Boy.*  
*Boy.* My Lord.

*Pau.* How now ?  
*Boy.* You are sought for all about the house, within,  
 The *Count* your father cals for you.  
 60 *Pau.* God, what crosse euent do meet my purposes ?  
 Now will he violently fret and grieve  
 That I am absent. Boy, say I come presently : *Exit Boy.*  
 Sweet *Angelo*, I cannot now insist  
 Vpon particulars, I must serue the time.

65 The maine of all this is, I am in loue.  
*Ange.* Why starts your Lordship ?

*Pau.* I thought I heard

i. vi. 44 affects] effects Q 45 responsible] 1 responsible, Q 46 en-  
 deuour'd] endeauoured Q 48 Lord.] Lord ? Q 52, 63 *Angelo*] *An-*  
*gelo W* : *Angello Q* 53 merit.] merit Q 64 time.] time Q 66-70  
*Prose in Q*



My father comming hitherward, list, ha ?

*Ange.* I heare not any thing,

It was but your imagination sure.

70

*Pau.* No.

*Ange.* No, I assure your Lordship.

*Pau.* I would worke safely.

*Ange.* Why, has he no knowledge of it then ?

*Pau.* O no, no creature yet pertakes it but your selfe 75

In a third person, and beleue me friend,  
The world containes not now another spirit,  
To whom I would reueile it. Harke, harke,

*Seruant*s { *Signior Paulo* } *within.*  
                  { *Lord Ferneze.* }

80

*Ange.* A pox vpon those brazen throated slaues,  
What are they mad, trow ?

*Pau.* Alas, blame not them,

Their seruices are (clock-like) to be set,  
Backward and forward, at their Lords command.

You know my father's wayward, and his humour 85

Must not receiue a check, for then all obiects,

Feede both his griefe and his impatience,

And those affections in him, are like powder,

Apt to enflame with euery little sparke,

And blow vp reason, therefore *Angelo*, peace. 90

within. { *Count.* Why this is rare, is he not in the garden ?

                  { *Christ.* I know not my Lord.

                  { *Count.* See, call him !

*Pau.* He is comming this way, let's withdraw a little,

*Exeunt.*

within. { *Seruant*s. *Signior Paulo*, *Lord Ferneze*, *Lord* 95  
                  { *Paulo.*

i. vi. 71 No corr. Q. No ? Q originally 80 *Seruant*s] *Seruant*s. Q  
84 command.] command, Q 90 *Angelo* corr. Q: *Angello* Q originally  
93 hum !] him ? Q



## Scène 7.

*Enter Count Ferneze, Maximilian, Aurelia, Phoenixella,  
Sebast<ian,> Balthasar.*

*Count.* Where should he be, trow? did you looke in the  
armory?

*Sebast.* No my Lord.

*Count.* No, why there? ô who would keepe such drones?

*Exeunt Sebast. and Baltha.*

How now, ha ye found him? *Enter Martino.*

*Mart.*

No my Lord.

*Count.*

No my Lord,

5 I shall haue shortly all my family

Speake nought, but no my Lord. Where is *Christophero*?

*Enter Christophero.*

Looke how he stands, you sleepy knaue, *Exit Martino.*

What is he not in the Garden?

*Christo.*

No my good Lord.

*Count.* Your good Lord, ô how this smels of fennell.

*Enter Sebast. Baltha.*

10 You have bene in the garden it appeares, well, well.

*Balth.* We cannot find him my Lord.

*Sebast.* He is not in the armory.

*Count.* He is not, he is no where, is he?

*Maxi.* Count *Ferneze*.

15 *Count.* Signior.

*Maxi.* Preserue your patience honorable *Count*.

*Count.* Patience? a Saint would loose his patience to be  
crost,

As I am with a sort of motly braines,

See, see, how like a nest of Rookes they stand, *Enter Onion.*

20 Gaping on one another! Now *Diligence*,

What news bring you?

*Oni.* Ant please your honour.

i. vii. Scène 7] Scène 5 Q Sebast. corr Q: Sebast, Q originally 4  
Stage dir. Martino corr. Q. Martino Q originally 4-5 Count's speech two  
lines in Q, divided after family 6 nought, corr. Q: nought Q originally  
Lord. Where] Lord, where Q Christophero?] Christophero, Q 17 crost,  
corr. Q.: crost Q originally 20 Now] now Q 21 Ranged with 20 in Q



Count. Tut, tut, leaue pleasing of my honour *Diligence*,  
You double with me, come.

Oni. How : does he find fault with *Please his Honour* ? 25  
S'wounds it has begun a seruimgmans speech, euer since  
I belongd to the blew order : I know not how it may shew,  
now I am in blacke, but - - -

Count. Whats that, you mutter sir ? will you proceed ?

Oni. Ant like your good Lordship. 30

Count. Yet more, Gods precious.

Oni. What, do not this like him neither ?

Count. What say you sir knaue ?

Oni. Mary I say your Lordship were best to set me to  
schoole againe, to learne how to deliuer a message. 35

Count. What do you take exception at me then ?

Oni. Exception ? I take no exceptions, but by Gods so  
your humours - - -

Count. Go to, you are a Raskall, hold your tongue.

Oni. Your Lordships poore seruant, I. 40

Count. Tempt not my patience.

Oni. Why I hope I am no spirit, am I ?

Maxi. My Lord, command your Steward to correct the  
slaue.

Oni. Correct him ? S'bloud come you and correct him 45  
and you have a minde to it. Correct him, that's a good  
iest I faith, the Steward and you both, come and correct him.

Count. Nay see, away with him, pull his cloth ouer his  
eares.

Oni. Cloth ? tell me of your cloth, here's your cloth, nay 50  
and I mourne a minute longer, I am the rottenest *Onion*  
that euer spake with a tongue. *They thrust him out.*

Maxi. What call <you> your hind's <name> count  
*Ferneze* ?

Count. His name is *Onion* Signior. 55

1. vii. 23-4 *Prose in Q* 24 me *W* : we *Q* 25 *his* corr. *Q* : *your*  
*Q* originally *Honour* ?] *Honour*. *Q* 36 then ?] then. *Q* 36 excep-  
tion] exceptions *Q* 37 Exception ?] Exceptions<sup>1</sup> *G* 39 to,] to *Q*  
45 him ?] him, *Q* 46 it. Correct] it, correct *Q* 53 you *W* hind's]  
hind *W* name *G* 55 Signior.] Signior, *Q*



*Maxi.* I thought him some such sawcy companion.

*Count.* Signior Maximillian.

*Maxi.* Sweet Lord.

*Count.* Let me intreat you, you would not regard

60 Any contempt flowing from such a spirit,

So rude, so barbarous.

*Maxi.* Most noble *Count*

Vnder your fauour - - -

*Count* Why Ile tell you Signior,

Heele bandy with me word for word, nay more,

Put me to silence, strike me perfect dumb ;

65 And so amaze me, that oft[en]times I know not,

Whether to check or cherish his presumption :

Therefore good Signior.

*Maxi.* Sweet Lord satisfie your selfe, I am not now to  
learn how to manage my affections, I haue obseru'd, and  
70 know the difference betweene a base wretch and a true  
man, I can distinguish them ; the property of the wretch  
is, he would hurt and cannot, of the man, he can hurt, and  
will not. 〈*Aurelia smiles.*〉

*Count.* Go to, my merry daughter, ô these lookes,  
75 Agree well with your habit, do they not ?

### 〈Scène 8.〉

*Enter Iuniper.*

*Iunip.* Tut, let me alone. By your fauour, this is the  
Gentleman I thinke. Sir, you appeare to be an honorable  
Gentleman, I vnderstand, and could wish (for mine owne  
part) that things were conden't otherwise then they are :  
5 but (the world knowes) a foolish fellow, somewhat procliue,  
and hasty, he did it in a preiudicate humour ; mary now  
vpon better computation, he wanes ; he melts ; his poore  
eyes are in a cold sweat. Right noble *Signior*, you can have

i. vii. 61-2 Most . . . fauour . . . one lne in Q. 71 them ;] them, Q  
73 Stage dir supplied by G i. viii. Stage dir. added to vii. 75 in Q.  
*Enter Iuniper in his cobbler's dress.* G 2 thinke.] thinke, Q



but compunction, I loue the man, tender your compassion.

*Maxi.* Doth any man here vnderstand this fellow? 10

*Iunip.* O God sir, I may say *frustra* to the comprehension of your intellection.

*Maxi.* Before the Lord, he speakes all riddle, I thinke. I must haue a comment ere I can conceiue him.

*Count.* Why he sues to haue his fellow *Onion* pardon'd, 15 And you must grant it Signior.

*Maxi.* O with all my soule my Lord, is that his motion?

*Iunip.* I sir, and we shall retort these kind fauours with all allacrity of spirit, we can sir, as may be most expedient, as well for the quality as the cause, till when in spight of 20 this complement: I rest a poore Cobler, seruant to my honorable Lord here your friend, and *Iuniper*. *Exit.*

*Maxi.* How, *Iuniper*?

*Count.* I Signior.

*Maxi.* He is a sweete youth, his tongue has a happy 25 turne when he sleepes.

*Count.* I, for then it rests.

<Scæne 9.>

*Enter Paulo Ferneze, Francisco Colonnea, Angelo, Valentine.*

O Sir you're welcome,

Why God be thanked you are found at last:

Signior *Colonna* truly you are welcome,

I am glad to see you sir so well return'd.

*Fran.* I gladly thanke your honour, yet indeed 5

I am sory for such cause of heauinesse,

As hath possest your Lordship in my absence.

*Count.* O *Francisco*, you knew her what she was!

*Fran.* She was a wise and honorable Lady.

*Count.* I was she not! well, weepe not she is gone. 10

1 viii 13-14 Two lines in Q, divided at thinke 22 here] here, Q  
friend,] friend Q 23 How,] How Q 27 Begins 1x. 1. in Q rests,]  
rests, Q 1 1x Stage dir. Colonnea] Colonnea Q: Colonia W:  
Colonna G 1 you're] your Q 3 Colonna G: Coloma Q: Colonia  
W 4 return'd] returned Q 8 Francisco,] Francisco' Q 10 well,]  
well Q



- His souldiers gaue, when they attaine the wall,  
 Yet tingles in mine eare, me thinkes I see  
 75 With what amazed lookes, distracted thoughts,  
 And minds confus'd, we, that were citizens,  
 Confronted one another : euery street  
 Was filld with bitter selfe tormenting cries,  
 And happy was that foote, that first could presse  
 80 The flowry champaigne, bordering on *Verona*.  
 Heere I (imploy'd about my dear wiues safety,  
 Whose soule is now in peace) lost my *Camillo*.  
 Who sure was murdered by the barbarous Souldiers,  
 Or else I should haue heard—my heart is great.  
 85 *Sorrow is faint ; and passion makes me sweat.*

*Max.* Grieve not sweet *Count*, comfort your spir*(i)*ts :  
 you haue a sonne a noble gentleman, he stands in the face  
 of honour . For his safety, let that be no question. I am  
 maister of my fortune, and he shall share with me. Fare-  
 90 well my honorable Lord. Ladies once more adiew : for your  
 selfe maddam, you are a most rare creature, I tell you so,  
 be not proud of it, I loue you : come Lord *Paulo* to horse.

*Pau.* Adieu good Signior *Francesco* : farewell sister.

*Sound a tucket, and as they passe euery one seuerally depart, Maximilian, Paulo Ferneze, and Angelo remaine.*

*Ang.* How shall we rid him hence ?

- 95 *Pau.* Why well inough : sweet Signior *Maximilian*,  
 I haue some small occasion to stay :  
 If it may please you but take horse afore,  
 Ile ouer take you, ere your troopes be rang'd.

— *Max.* Your motion doth tast well : Lord *Ferneze* I go.

*Exit Max.*

i. ix 73 gaue, when] gaue' when Q 74 eare] ears W 79 presse]  
 presse, Q 81 safety,] safety) Q 85 faint ;] faint ? Q 86  
*Max.] Max Q Count.] Count . Q spirits ] spirits, Q 88 safety,]*  
*safety Q 90 once more adiew :] onc emore adiew, Q 91 maddam,]*  
*maddam Q 93 sister] sisters G After 93 SCENE III. The street*  
*before Jaques de Prie's house | Enter Paulo Ferneze ; and Angelo,*  
*followed by Maximilian. G 94 hence ?] hence. Q After 94 c.w.*  
*Pan. Q 95 inough:] inough ? Q 97 afore,] afore Q 98 rang'd*  
*corr. Q : ranged Q originally 99 doth W : hath Q*



〈Scæne 10.〉

*Pau.* Now if my loue, faire *Rachel*, were so happy,  
But to looke forth. See fortune doth me grace,

*Enter Rachel.*

Before I can demaund. How now 〈my〉 loue ?  
Where is your father ?

*Rach.* Gone abroad my Lord.

*Pau.* Thats well.

*Rach.* I but I feare heele presently returne. 5  
Are you now going my most honor'd Lord ?

*Pau.* I my sweet *Rachel*.

(*Ang.* Before God, she is a sweet wench.)

*Pau.* *Rachel* I hope I shall not need to vrge,  
The sacred purity of our affects, 10  
As if it hung in triall or suspence :  
Since in our hearts, and by our mutuall vowes,  
It is confirmd and seald in sight of heauen.  
Nay doe not weepe, why starte you ? feare not, Loue,  
Your father cannot be return'd so soone, 15  
I prithee doe not looke so heauily,  
Thou shalt want nothing.

*Rach.* No ? is your presence nothing ?  
I shall want that, and wanting that, want all :  
For that is all to me.

*Pau.* Content thee sweet,  
I haue made choise here of a constant friend, 20  
This gentleman ; one, 〈on〉 whose zealous loue  
I doe repose more, then on all the world,

1. x. 1 loue,] loue Q 2 grace,] grace. Q Stage dir. centred in Q  
3 demaund,] demaund ? Q loue ?] loue. Q 4 Lord,] Lord : Q Pau.  
corr. Q : Pau : Q originally well. corr. Q : well, Q originally 5 re-  
turne,] returne, Q 6 honor'd] honored Q 8 Aside not marked in Q  
10 affects W. effects Q 14 Loue,] Loue Q 15 return'd corr.  
Q : returned Q originally 16 heauily, corr. Q : heauily Q originally  
17 want nothing. corr. Q : want nothing Q originally No ?] No Q  
18 all : corr. Q : all Q originally 19 sweet, corr. Q : sweet Q ori-  
ginally 20 made] Made Q friend,] friend Q 21 gentleman ;]  
gentleman ? Q one, on G : one Q : on W



Thy beauteous selfe excepted : and to him,  
 Haue I committed my deere care of thee,  
 25 As to my genius, or my other soule.  
 Receiue him gentle loue, and what defects  
 My absence proues, his presence shall supply.  
 The time is enuious of our longer stay.  
 Farewell deere *Rachel*.

*Rach.* Most deere Lord, adew,  
 30 Heauen and honour crowne your deeds, and you.

*Exit Rachel.*

*Pau.* Faith tell me *Angelo*, how dost thou like her ?

*Ang.* Troth well my Lord, but shall I speake my mind ?

*Pau.* I prithee doe.

*Ang.* She is deriud too meanelly to be wife  
 35 To such a noble person, in my iudgement.

*Pau.* Nay then thy iudgement is to meane, I see :  
 Didst thou neare read in difference of good,  
 Tis more to shine in vertue then in bloud ? *Enter Iaques.*

*Ang.* Come you are so sententious my Lord.

40 *Pau.* Here comes her father. How dost thou good  
*Iaques* ?

*Ang.* God saue thee *Iaques*.

*Iaq.* What should this meane ? *Rachel* open the dore.

*Exit Iaques.*

*Ang.* Sbloud how the poore slaue lookes, as though  
 He had bene haunted by the spirit *Lar*,  
 45 Or seene the ghost of some great *Satrapas*  
 In an vnsauory sheet.

*Pau.* I muse he spake not, belike he was amazd  
 Comming so suddenly and vnprepard ? Well lets go. \*

*Exeunt.*

1. x 25 soule corr. Q: soule, Q originally 26 Receiue him . . .  
 loue, . . . defects corr. Q: Rscieue hi . . . loue . . . defects, Q originally  
 27 absence corr Q: a bsence Q originally 29 *Rach.* *Rach:* Q 30  
*Stage dir. centred in Q* 31 Faith corr. Q: Faith Q originally *Angelo,*  
*Angelo W: Angelo Q* 32 mind ?] mind. Q 36 meane corr. Q:  
 meane Q originally 37 good, corr. Q: good Q originally 38  
 bloud ?] bloud. Q 43 lookes] looks aghast G 45 *Satrapas* corr.  
 Q: *Satrapas.* Q originally 47 not corr. Q: no Q originally 48  
 go. corr. Q: go: Q originally



Actus secundi Scæna prima.

*Enter Iaques solus.*

So now inough my heart, beat now no more ;  
 At least for this afright. What a could sweat  
 Flow'd on my browes, and ouer all my bosome !  
 Had I not reason ? to behold my dore  
 Beset with vnthriffts, and my selfe abroad ? 5  
 Why *Iaques* ? was there nothing in the house  
 Worth a continuall eye, a vigelent thought,  
 Whose head should neuer nod, nor eyes once wincke ?  
 Looke on my coate, my thoughts ; worne quite thred bare,  
 That time could neuer couer with a nappe, 10  
 And by it learne, neuer with nappes of sleepe,  
 To smother your conceipts of that you keepe.  
 But yet, I maruell, why these gallant youths  
 Spoke me so faire, and I esteemd a beggar ?  
 The end of flattery, is gaine, or lechery : 15  
 If they seeke gaine of me, they thinke me rich,  
 But that they do not : For their other obiect :  
 Tis in my handsome daughter, if it be.  
 And by your leaue, her handsomnesse may tell them  
 My beggery counterfeits, and, that her neatnesse, 20  
 Flowes from some store of wealth, that breakes my coffers,  
 With this same engine, loue to mine owne breed.  
 But this is answered : *Beggars will keepe fine,*  
*Their daughters, being faire, though themselues pine.*  
 Well then, it is for her, I, 'tis sure for her, 25  
 And I make her so briske for some of them,  
 That I might liue alone once with my gold.  
 O 'tis a sweet companion ! kind and true !  
 A man may trust it when his father cheats him ;  
 Brother, or friend, or wife ! ô wondrous pelfe, 30  
 „ *That which makes all men false, is true it selfe.*

II i. Actus . . . prima.] SCENE I. The Court-yard at the back of Iaques' House. G 1 more ;] more.; Q 2 afright. What] afright, what Q 6 there] their Q 17 For] for Q 25, 28 'tis] t'is Q 28 true !] true, Q 30 wife !] wife, Q



But now this maid, is but suppos'd my daughter :  
 For I being Steward to a Lord of France,  
 Of great estate, and wealth, call'd Lord *Chammount*,  
 35 He gone into the warres, I stole his treasure ;  
 (But heare not, any thing) I stole his treasure,  
 And this his daughter, being but two yeares old,  
 Because it lou'd me so, that it would leaue  
 The nurse her selfe, to come into mine armes,  
 40 And had I left it, it would sure haue dyed.  
 Now herein I was kinde, and had a conscience ;  
 And since her Lady mother that did dye  
 In child-bed of her, lou'd me passing well,  
 It may be nature fashiond this affection,  
 45 Both in the child and her : but hees ill bred,  
 That ransackes tombes, and doth deface the dead.  
 I'le therefore say no more : suppose the rest,  
 Here haue I chang'd my forme, my name and hers,  
 And liue obs<c>urely, to enioy more safe  
 50 My deerest treasure. But I must abroad.

*Rachel.*

*Enter Rachel.*

*Rach.* What is your pleasure sir ?

*Iaq. Rachel* I must abroad.

Lock thy selfe in, but yet take out the key,  
 55 That whosoeuer peepes in at the key-hole,  
 May yet imagine there is none at home.

*Rach.* I will sir.

*Iaq.* But harke thee *Rachel* : say a theefe should come,  
 And misse the key, he would resolue indeede  
 60 None were at home, and so breake in the rather :  
 Ope the doore *Rachel*, set it open daughter ;  
 But sit in it thy selfe : and talke alowd,  
 As if there were some more in house with thee :  
 Put out the fire, kill the chimnies hart,  
 65 That it may breath no more then a dead man.

The more we spare my child, the more we gaine. *Exeunt.*

11. i 34 call'd] called Q 43 lou'd] loued Q 50-1 abroad, Rachel Q (in one line) Stage dir in Q at 49 Enter] Enter Q 59 resolue] resoule Q 63 thee:] thee.: Q 65 man] man, Q 66 The corr. Q: Tho Q originally



Scæne 2.

*Enter Christophero, Iuniper and Onion.*

*Christ.* Why sayes my fellow *Onion*? come on.

*Oni.* All of a house sir, but no fellowes, you are my Lords Steward, but I pray you what thinke you of loue, sir?

*Christ.* Of loue *Onion*? Why it's a very honourable humor. 5

*Oni.* Nay if it be but worshipfull I care not.

*Iunip.* Go to, it's honorable, checke not at the conceit of the Gentleman.

*Oni.* But in truth sir, you shall do well to think well of loue: for it thinkes well of you, in me, I assure you. 10

*Chris.* Gramercy fellow *Onion*: I do thinke well, thou art in loue, art thou?

*Oni.* Partly sir, but I am asham'd to say wholly.

*Chris.* Well, I will further it in thee to any honest woman, or maiden, the best I can. 15

*Iunip.* Why now you come neere him sir, he doth vaile, he doth remunerate, he doth chaw the cud in the kindnesse of an honest imperfection to your worship.

*Chris.* But who is it thou louest fellow *Onion*?

*Oni.* Mary a poore mans daughter, but none of the 20 honestest, I hope.

*Chris.* Why, wouldst thou not haue her honest?

*Oni.* O no, for then I am sure she would not haue me. 'Tis *Rachel de Prie*.

*Chris.* Why, she hath the name of a very vertuous 25 mayden.

*Iunip.* So shee is sir, but the fellow talkes in quiddits, he.

*Chris.* What wouldst thou haue me do in the matter?

*Oni.* Do nothing sir, I pray you, but speake for me.

*Chris.* In what maner? 30

II. 11 Scæne 2.] SCENE II. A Room in Count Ferneze's House. G  
10 for] For Q, beginning a new line 17 He doth remunerate begins a  
new line in Q. 18 Of begins a new line in Q. 19 Chris.] Chris Q  
21 honestest] ho nestest Q 24 'Tis] T'is Q



*Oni.* My fellow *Iuniper* can tell you sir.

*Iunip.* Why as thus sir. Your worship may commend him for a fellow fit for consanguinity, and that he shaketh with desire of procreation, or so.

35 *Chris.* That were not so good, me thinkes.

*Iunip.* No sir, why so sir? what if you should say to her, corroborate thy selfe sweete soule, let me distinguish thy pappes with my fingers, diuine Mumps, pretie *Pastorella*? lookest thou so sweet and bounteous? comfort my friend  
40 here.

*Chris.* Well I perceiue you wish, I should say something may do him grace, and further his desires, and that be sure I will.

*Oni.* I thanke you sir, God saue your life, I pray God sir.

45 *Iunip.* Your worship is too good to liue long: youle contaminate me no seruice?

*Chris.* Command thou wouldest say, no good *Iuniper*.

*Iunip.* Health and wealth sir. *Exeunt Onion and Iuniper.*

*Chris.* This wench wil I sollicite for my selfe,

50 Making my Lord and maister priuy to it;

And if he second me with his consent,

I will proceede, as hauing long ere this,

Thought her a worthy choyce to make my wife. *Exit.*

### Scæne 3.

*Enter Aurelia, Phœnixella.*

**A***Vre.* Roome for a case of matrons colour'd blacke,  
How motherly my mothers death hath made vs?

I would I had some girles now to bring vp;

O I could make a wench so vertuous,

5 She should say grace to euery bit of meate,

And gape no wider then a wafers thicknesse:

And she should make French cursies, so most low,

ii. ii 37 corroborate] corroborate Q 46 seruice?] seruice. Q 49  
I corr Q: om originally 53 Thought corr Q: Though Q originally  
ii. iii Scæne 3] SCENE III. Another Room in the Same. G I colour'd]  
coloured Q



That euery touch should turne her ouer backward.

*Phæni.* Sister, these words become not your attire,  
Nor your estate : our vertuous mothers death 10  
Should print more deep effects of sorrow in vs,  
Then may be worne out in so little time.

*Aure.* Sister, <i>faith you take too much Tobacco,  
It makes you blacke within, as y'are without.  
What true-stich sister ? both your sides alike ? 15  
Be of a sleighter worke : for of my word,  
You shall be sold as deere, or rather deerer.  
Will you be bound to *customs* and to *rites* ?  
Shed profitable teares, weepe for aduantage ;  
Or else, do all things, as you are enclynd. 20  
Eate when your stomacke serues (saith the *Physitian*)  
Not at *eleuen* and *sixe*. So if your humour  
Be now affected with this heauinesse,  
Giue me the reines and spare not, as I do,  
In this my pleasurable appetite. 25  
It is *Præcisianisme* to alter that  
With austere iudgement, that is giuen by nature.  
I wept you saw too, when my mother dyed :  
For then I found it easier to do so,  
And fitter with my moode, then not to weepe. 30  
But now tis otherwise, another time  
Perhaps I shall haue such deepe thoughts of her,  
That I shall weepe a fresh, some tweluemonth hence,  
And I will weepe, if I be so dispos'd,  
And put on blacke, as grimly then, as now ; 35  
Let the minde go still with the bodies stature,  
*Iudgement is fit for Iudges, giue me nature.*

11 iii 13 i' W 17 deere,] deere Q deerer.] deerer ? Q 21 Eate]  
Eat W : Hate Q 23 heauinesse,] heauinesse. Q 24 me] it W  
25 appetite.] appetite, Q



## Scæne 4.

[Enter] Aurelia, Phœnixella, Francisco, Angelo.

*F*Ran. See Signior Angelo here are the Ladies,  
Go you and comfort one, Ile to the other.

*Ange.* Therefore I come sir, I'le to the eldest.  
God saue you Ladies, these sad moodes of yours,  
5 That make you choose these solitary walkes,  
Are hurtfull for your beauties.

*Aure.* If we had them.

*Ange.* Come, that condition might be for your hearts,  
When you protest faith, since we cannot see them.  
But this same heart of beauty, your sweet face,  
10 Is in mine eye still.

*Aure.* O you cut my heart  
With your sharpe eye.

*Ange.* Nay Lady, thats not so,  
Your heart's to hard.

*Aure.* My beauties hart ?

*Ange.* O no.  
I meane that regent of affection, *Maddam*,  
That tramples on al loue with such contempt  
15 <I>n this faire breast.

*Aur.* No more, your drift is sauour'd,  
I had rather seeme hard hearted

*Ang.* Then hard fauour'd,  
Is that your meaning, Lady ?

*Aur.* Go too sir.

Your wits are fresh I know, they need no spur.

*Ang.* And therefore you wil ride them.

*Aur.* Say I doe,  
20 They will not tire I hope ?

*Ang.* No, not with you,

Hark you sweet Lady. <They walk aside.>

11 iv. 3 I'le] I will G 9 face,] face Q 11 With] with Q 11, 12  
Nay . . . hard one line in Q 19 doe,] doe. Q 20, 21 No . . . Lady.  
one line in Q 21 Stage dir. They walk aside ] Walks aside with  
Aur. G



*Fran.* Tis much pittie Maddam,  
You should haue any reason to retaine -  
This signe of griefe, much lesse the thing disigne.  
*Phæ.* Griefes are more fit for Ladies then their pleasures.  
*Fran.* That is for such as follow nought but pleasures. 25  
But you that temper them so wel with vertues,  
Vsing your griefes so, it would prooue them pleasures.  
And you would seeme in cause of griefes & pleasures  
Equally pleasant.

*Phæ.* Sir so I do now.  
It is the excesse of either that I striue 30  
So much to shun in all my proou'd endeauours.  
Although perhaps vnto a generall eye,  
I may appeare most wedded to my griefes,  
Yet doth my mind forsake no tast of pleasure,  
I meane that happy pleasure of the soule, 35  
Deuine and sacred contemplation  
Of that eternall, and most glorious blisse,  
Proposed as the crowne vnto our soules.

*Fran.* I will be silent, yet that I may serue  
But as a *Decade* in the art of memory 40  
To put you stil in mind of your owne vertues  
(When your too serious thoughts make you too sad)  
Accept me for your seruant honor'd Lady.

*Phæn.* Those cerimonies are too common signior *Francis*,  
For your vncommon grauitie, and iudgement, 45  
And fits them onely, that are nought but cerimony.

*<Angelo and Aurelia come forward.>*

*Ang.* Come, I will not sue, stal(e)ly to be your seruant,  
But a new tearme, will you be my refuge?

*Aur.* Your refuge, why sir?

*Ange.* That I might fly to you, when all else faile me. 50

*Aur.* And you be good at flying, be my Plouer.

II. iv. 21 Maddam,] Maddam. Q 27 so,] so Q 28-9 And  
you . . . pleasant one line in Q 31 endeauours] endeauours, Q  
42 [When] When Q 43 honor'd] honored Q. *Phæu* c.w. in Q 46  
fits] fit G nought but] noughtbut Q cerimony corr Q: cerimon y  
Q originally Stage dir. *Angelo . . . forward*] Comes forward with  
*Aur.* G 47 stalely W 49 sir?] sir. Q



*Ang.* Nay take away the P.

*Aur.* Tut, then you cannot fly.

*Ang.* Ile warrant you Ile borrow *Cupids* wings.

*Aur.* Masse then I feare me youle do strange things :

55 I pray you blame me not, if I suspect you,

Your owne confession simply doth detect you.

Nay and you be so great in *Cupids* bookes,

'Twill make me lealous : you can with your lookes

(I warrant you) enflame a womans heart,

60 And at your pleasure take loues golden dart,

And wound the brest of any vertuous maide.

Would I were hence : good faith I am affraid,

You can constraine one ere they be aware,

To run mad for your loue !

*Ang.*

O this is rare.

### Scène 5.

*Aurelia, Phœnixella, Francisco, Angelo, Count.*

*C*ount. Close with my daughters gentlemen ? wel done,  
Tis like your selues . nay lusty *Angelo*,

Let not my presence make you bauke your sport,

I will not breake a minute of discourse

5 Twixt you and one of your faire Mistresses.

*Ang.* One of my mistresses ? why, thinks your Lordship  
I haue so many ?

*Count.* Many, no *Angelo*.

I do not thinke th'ast many some fourteene

I here thou hast, euen of our worthiest dames,

10 Of any note, in *Millaine*.

*Ang.* Nay good my Lord fourteene : it is not so.

*Count.* By'th [the] Masse that ist, here are their names  
to shew,

11 iv. 52 fly.] fly : Q 54 youle] you will W 56 you.] you, Q  
58 'Twill] T'will Q Iealous : corr. Q : Iealous. Q originally 62  
faith] Faith Q 64 loue !] loue ? Q rare W . rate Q 11. v  
Scène 5] Scène 6 Q *Aurelia* W : *Aurelio* Q 6 why,] why Q  
7 many ?] many Q 10 *Millaine*.] *Millaine* : Q 12 shew,] shew Q



Fourteene, or fifteene t'one. Good *Angelo*,  
You need not be ashamd of any of them,  
They are gallants all.

*Ang.* Sbloud you are such a Lord. *Exit Ang.* 15

*Count.* Nay stay sweet *Angelo*, I am dispos'd  
A little to be pleasant past my coustome,  
He's gone, he's gone? I haue disgrast him shrewdly.  
Daughters take heede of him, he's a wild youth,  
Looke what he sayes to you beleue him not, 20  
He will sweare loue to euery one he sees.

*Francisco*, giue them councell, good *Francisco*,  
I dare trust thee with both, but him with neither.

*Fran.* Your Lordship yet may trust both them with him.

*Count.* Well goe your waies, away. 25

*Ex(e)unt (Aurelia, Phœnixella, Francisco).*

## Scæne 6.

*Count.* *Christopher(o).*

*Count.* How now *Christopher(o)*, what newes with you?

*Christ.* I haue an humble suit to your good Lordship.

*Count.* A suit *Christopher(o)*? what suit I prithee?

*Christ.* I would craue pardon at your Lordships hands,  
If it seeme vaine or simple in your sight. 5

*Count.* Ile pardon all simplicity, *Christopher(o)*,  
What is thy suit?

*Christ.* Perhaps being now so old a batchelor,  
I shall seeme halfe vnwise, to bend my selfe  
In strict affection to a poore yong maide. 10

*Count.* What? is it touching loue *Christopher(o)*?  
Art thou disposd to marry, why tis well.

*Christo.* I, but your Lordship may imagine now

II. v. 13 Good *Angelo*,] *Good Angelo.* Q 15 st. d. *Ang.*] *Ang.* Q at l. 16  
16 dispos'd] disposed Q 18 He's gone,] He's gone? Q gone? I] g one,  
I Q shrewdly.] shrewdly. Q 25 Begins sc. vi in Q away.] away,  
Q II. vi. Scæne 6] Scæne 7 Q *Christophero.* W (and so in ll. 1-18):  
*Christopher*, Q 1 How] how Q What begins a new line in Q



- That I being steward of your honours house,  
 15 If I be married once, will more regard  
 The maintenance of my wife and of my charge,  
 Then the due discharge of my place and office.  
*Count.* No, no, *Christopher*, I know thee honest.  
*Christo.* Good faith my Lord, your honour may suspect it,  
 20 But——  
*Count.* Then I should wrong thee, thou hast euer been  
 Honest and true, and wilt be still I knowe.  
*Chris.* I but this marriage alters many men :  
 And you may feare, it will do me my Lord,  
 25 But ere it do so, I will vndergoe  
 Ten thousand seuerall deaths.  
*Count.* I know it man.  
 Who wouldst thou haue I prithee ?  
*Chris.* *Rachel de prie,*  
 If your good Lordship, graunt me your consent.  
*Count.* *Rachel de prie* ? what the poore beggers daughter ?  
 30 Shees a right handsome maide, how poore soeuer,  
 And thou hast my consent, with all my hart.  
*Chris.* I humbly thanke your honour. Ile now aske her  
 father.  
*Count.* Do so *Christofero*, thou shalt do well.  
*Exit <Christophero>.*  
 35 Tis strange (she being so poore) he should affect her,  
 But this is more strange that my selfe should loue her.  
 I spide her, lately, at her fathers doore,  
 And if I did not see in her sweet face  
 Gentry and noblenesse, nere trust me more :  
 40 But this perswasion, fancie wrought in me,  
 That fancie being created with her lookes,  
 For where loue is he thinke(s)-his basest object  
 Gentle and noble : I am farre in loue,  
 And shall be forc'd to wrong my honest steward,
11. vi. 14 house,] house. Q    17 office.] office : Q    19 your] yout  
 Q it,] it- corr. Q : it -- Q originally    20 But] but Q    22 wilt]  
 will Q    25 so,] so ? Q    33 *Christofero*,] *Christofero* Q    *Exit at*  
 line 32 in Q    42 thinkes] thinks W



For I must sue, and seeke her for my selfe ;  
How much my duetie to my late dead wife,  
And my owne deere renowne, so ere it swaies.  
Ile to her father straight. *Loue hates delays.* *Exit.* 45

Scæne 7.

*Enter Onion, Iuniper, Valentine, Sebastian, Balthasar,  
Martino.*

**O***Nion.* Come on Ifaith, lets to some exercise or other my  
hearts: fetch the hilts. Fellow *Iuniper*, wilt thou play?  
*Exit Martino.*

*Iun.* I cannot resolute you: tis as I am fitted with the  
ingenuity, quantity, or quality of the cudgell.

*Valen.* How dost thou bastinado the poore cudgell with 5  
tearmes?

*Iuni.* O *Ingle*, I haue the phrases man, and the *Anagrams*  
and the *Epitaphs*, fitting the mistery of the noble science.

*Oni.* Ile be hangd & he were not misbegotten of some  
fencer. 10

*Sebast.* Sirrah *Valentine*, you can resolute me now, haue  
they their maisters of defence in other countries as we haue  
here in *Italy*?

*Valen.* O Lord, I, especially they in *Vtopia*, there they  
performe their prizes and chalenges, with as great cerimony 15  
as the *Italian* or any nation else.

*Balt.* Indeed? how is the manner of it (for gods loue)  
good *Valentine*?

*Iuni.* *Ingle*, I prithee make recourse vnto vs, wee are  
thy friends and familiars: sweet *Ingle*. 20

*Valen.* Why thus sir.

*Oni.* God a mercy good *Valentine*, nay go on.

*Iuni.* *Silentium bonus socius Onionus*, good fellow *Onion*

II. vi. 47 renowne,] renowne Q swaies,] swaies, Q II. vii. Scæne 7]  
Scæne 8 Q: SCENE IV. A Hall in the Same. G 2 Fetch begins a new  
line in Q hilts. Fellow] hilts fellow Q play?] play: Q 3 you:]  
you? Q 17 Balt.] Balt Q 18 Valentine] Valentine Q 19 Ingle,]  
Ingle? Q



be not so ingenious, and turbulent: so sir? and how?  
 25 how sweete *Ingle*?

*Valen.* Marry, first they are brought to the publicke  
*Theater*:

*Iuni.* What? ha' they *Theater*<*s*> there?

*Valen.* *Theaters*? I and plaies to: both tragidy and  
 30 comedy, & set foorth with as much state as can be  
 imagined!

*Iuni.* By Gods so; a man is nobody, till he has trauelled.

*Sebast.* And how are their plaies? as ours are?  
 extemporall?

35 *Valen.* O no! all premeditated things, and some of them  
 very good I faith, my maister vsed to visite them often  
 when he was there.

*Balth.* Why how, are they in a place where any man  
 may see them?

40 *Valen.* I, in the common *Theaters*, I tell you. But the  
 sport is at a new play to obserue the sway and variety  
 of oppinion that passeth it. A man shall haue such a con-  
 fus'd mixture of iudgement, powr'd out in the throng there,  
 as ridiculous, as laughter it selfe: one saies he likes not the  
 45 writing, another likes not the plot, another not the playing.  
 And sometimes a fellow that comes not there past once in  
 fve yeare at a *Parliament* time or so, will be as deepe myr'd  
 in censuring as the best, and sweare by Gods foote he  
 would neuer stirre his foote to see a hundred such as that is.

50 *Oni.* I must trauell to see these things, I shall nere think  
 well of my selfe else.

*Iunip.* Fellow *Onion*, Ile beare thy charges and thou  
 wilt but pilgrimize it along with me, to the land of *Vtopia*.

*Sebast.* Why but me thinkes such rookes as these should  
 55 be asham'd to iudge.

*Valen.* Not a whit! the rankest stinkard of them all,  
 will take vpon him as peremptory, as if he had writ himselfe  
*in artibus magister*.

II. vii. 28 ha'] ha? Q      Theaters W      30 comedy,] comedy Q  
 31 imagined!] imagined? Q      35 no!] no? Q      38 how,] how Q  
 56 whit!] whit? Q



*Sebast.* And do they stand to a popular censure for any thing they present ? 60

*Valen.* I euer, euer, and the people generally are very acceptiue and apt to applaud any meritable worke, but there are two sorts of persons that most commonly are infectious to a whole auditory.

*Balth.* What be they ? 65

*Iunip.* I come lets know them.

*Oni.* It were good they were noted.

*Valen.* Marry ; one is the rude barbarous crue, a people that haue no braines, and yet grounded iudgements, these will hisse any thing that mounts aboue their grounded capacities. But the other are worth the obseruation, I faith.

*Omnes.* What be they ? what be they ?

*Valen.* Faith a few *Caprichious* gallants.

*Iunip.* *Caprichious* ? stay, that word's for me. 75

*Valen.* And they haue taken such a habit of dislike in all things, that they will approue nothing, be it neuer so conceited or elaborate, but sit disperst, making faces, and spitting, wagging their vpright eares, and cry filthy, filthy. Simply vttering their owne condition, and vsing their wryed countenances in stead of a vice, to turne the good aspects of all that shall sit neere them, from what they behold.

*Enter Martino with cudgels.*

*Oni.* O that's well sayd, lay them downe, come sirs, who plaies ? fellow *Iuniper*, *Sebastian*, *Balthasar* : Some body take them vp, come. 85

*Iunip.* *Ingle Valentine* ?

*Valen.* Not I sir, I professe it not.

*Iunip.* *Sebastian*.

*Sebast.* *Balthasar*.

*Balth.* Who ? I ? 90

*Oni.* Come, but one bout, Ile giue hem thee, I faith.

*Balth.* Why, heres *Martino*.

ii. vii. 60 present ?] present Q 68 Marry ;] Marry ? Q 79 eares,] eares Q 83 sirs,] sirs. Q who] Who Q, beginning a new line 84 plaies ?] plaies, Q Some begins a new line in Q



*Oni.* Foe he, alas he cannot play a whit, man.

*Iunip.* That's all one : no more could you *in statu quo*  
95 *prius.* *Martino*, play with him, euery man has his beginning  
and conduction.

*Mart.* Will you not hurt me fellow *Onion* ?

*Oni.* Hurt thee, no ? and I do, put me among pot-hearbs,  
and chop me to peeces, come on ?

100 *Iunip.* By your fauor sweet bullies giue them roome,  
back, so. *Martino*, do not looke so thin vpon the matter.

*<They play a bout.>*

*Oni.* Ha, well plaid, fall ouer to my legge now ! so, to  
your guard againe, excellent, to my head now, make home  
your blow : spare not me, make it home, good, good againe.

*<Martino breaks his head.>*

105 *Sebast.* Why how now *Peter* ?

*Valen.* Gods so, *Onion* has caught a bruise.

*Iunip.* Couragio ! be not *caprichious* ! what ?

*Oni.* *Caprichious* ? not I, I scorn to be *caprichious* for  
a scrach, *Martino* must haue another bout, come.

110 *Val. Seb. Balth.* No, no, play no more, play no more.

*Oni.* Foe, tis nothing, a philip, a deuise, fellow *Iuniper*  
prithee get mee a Plantan, I had rather play with one that  
had skil by halfe.

*Mart.* By my troth, fellow *Onion*, twas against my will.

115 *Oni.* Nay that's not so, twas against my head. But  
come, weele ha one bout more.

*Iunip.* Not a bout, not a stroke.

*Omnes.* No more, no more. *<Exit Martino.>*

*Iunip.* Why Ile giue you demonstration, how it came.

120 Thou openest the dagger to falsifie ouer with the back sword  
trick, and he interrupted, before he could fall to the close.

ii. vii. 94 *statu* W : *stata* Q *prius.*] *prius.* Q *Martino* begins a new  
line in Q 99 and] And Q, *beginning a new line* 101 so.] so, Q  
Stage dir *They . . . bout.*] *Mart. and Onion play a bout at cudgels.* G  
102 now !] now ? Q 104 Stage dir. *supplied by* G 107 Couragio !]  
Couragio ? Q *caprichious !]* *caprichious* ? Q 109 *Martino must]*  
*Martino, I must* G 115 head.] head, Q But *begins a new line in* Q  
118 Stage dir. G 119 came ] came, Q 120 Thou *begins a new line in* Q  
openest] openedst W 121 trick] frick Q he could] *Query* you could



*Oni.* No, no, I know best how it was, better then any man here, I felt his play presently : for looke you, I gathered vpon him thus, thus do you see ? for the double locke, and tooke it single on the head. 125

*Valen.* He sayes very true, he tooke it single on the head.

*Sebast.* Come lets go. *Enter Martino with a cob-web.*

*Mar.* Here fellow *Onion*, heres a cob-web.

*Oni.* How ? a cob-web *Martino*, I will haue another bout with you ! S'wounds do you first breake my head, and then giue me a plaister in scorne ? come, to it, I will haue a bout. 130

*Mart.* God's my witsnesse.

*Oni.* Tut ! your witsnesse cannot serue.

*Iunip.* S'bloud ! why what, thou art not lunatike, art thou ? and thou bee'st, auoide *Mephustophules*. Say the signe should be in *Aries* now : or it may be for all vs, where were your life ? Answer me that. 135

*Sebast.* Hee sayes well, *Onion*.

*Valen.* I indeed doo's he.

*Iunip.* Come, come, you are a foolish *Naturalist*, go, get a white [a] of an egge, and a little flax, and close the breach of the head, it is the most conducible thing that can be. 140

*Martino*, do not insinuate vpon your good fortune, but play an honest part and beare away the bucklers. *Exeunt.*

### Act 3. Scène 1.

*Enter Angelo solus.*

*ANGE.* My yong and simple friend, *Paulo Ferneze*,  
Bound me with mighty solemne coniurations,  
To be true to him, in his loue to *Rachel*,  
And to sollicite his remembrance still,  
In his enforced absence, much, I faith.  
True to my friend in cases of affection ?

II. vii. 122 was,] was Q 130 you !] you ? Q 131 come,] come Q  
134 S'bloud !] S'bloud ? Q 135 bee'st,] bee'st Q 137 that,]  
that ? Q III. 1 Scène 1.] SCENE 1. The Street before Jaques de Prie's  
House. G 3 loue] loue, Q



- ~~In womens cases ?~~ what a iest it is ?  
 How silly he is, that imagines it !  
 He is an asse that will keepe promise stricktly  
 10 In any thing that checkes his priuate pleasure ;  
 Chiefly in loue. S'bloud am not I a man ?  
 Haue I not eyes that are as free to looke ?  
 And bloud to be enflam'd as well as his ?  
 And when it is so, shall I not pursue  
 15 Mine owne loues longings, but preferre my friends ?  
 I tis a good foole, do so, hang me then.  
 Because I swore ? alas, who doo's not know,  
 That louers periuries are ridiculous ?  
 Haue at thee *Rachel* : Ile go court her sure :  
 20 For now I know her father is abroad. *Enter Iaques.*  
 S'bloud see, he is here, ô what damn'd lucke is this ?  
 This labour's lost, I must by no meanes see him.  
*Tau, dery, dery.* *Exit.*

## Scæne 2.

*Iaques, Christophero.*

- I*Aq. Mischiefe and hell, what is this man a spirit ?  
 Haunts he my houses ghost, still at my doore ?  
 He has beene at my doore, he has beene in,  
 In my deere doore : pray God my gold be safe.  
*Enter Christophero.*  
 5 Gods pittie, heres another. *Rachel*, ho *Rachel*.  
*Chris.* God saue you honest father.  
*Iaq.* *Rachel*, Gods light, come to me, *Rachel*, *Rachel* !  
*Exit.*  
*Chris.* Now in Gods name what ayles he ? this is strange !  
 He loues his daughter so, Ile lay my life,  
 10 That hee's afraid, hauing beene now abroad,  
 I come to seeke her loue vnlawfully. *Enter Iaques.*

III. i. 16 then.] then Q 17 swore ?] swore, Q 23 tau . . . dery,  
 in Q as part of the stage dir. *Exit.*] *Exit singing.* G III. ii. 1 man]  
 man ? G spirit ?] spirit, Q 2 ghost,] ghost ? Q



(*Iaq.* Tis safe, tis safe, they haue not rob'd my treasure.)

*Chris.* Let it not seeme offensiuē to you sir.

(*Iaq.* Sir, Gods my life, sir, sir, call me sir?)

*Chris.* Good father here me.

*Iaq.* You are most welcome sir, 15

(I meant almost) and would your worship speake?

Would you abase your selfe to speake to me?

*Chris.* Tis no abasing father: my intent

Is to do further honour to you sir

Then onely speake: which is to be your sonne. 20

*Iaq.* (My gold is in his nostrels, he has smelt it,  
Breake breast, breake heart, fall on the earth my entrailes,  
With this same bursting admiration!

He knowes my gold, he knowes of all my treasure,)

How do you know sir? whereby do you guesse? 25

*Chris.* At what sir? what is <i>t you meane?

*Iaq.* I aske,

An't please your Gentle worship, how you know?

I meane, how I should make your worship know

That I haue nothing—

To giue with my poore daughter? I haue nothing: 30

The very aire, bounteous to euery man,

Is scant to me, sir.

*Chris.* I do thinke good father,

You are but poore.

(*Iaq.* He thinkes so, harke, but thinke<s> so:

He thinkes not so, he knowes of all my treasure.) *Exit.*

*Chris.* Poor man he is so ouerloy'd to heare 35

His daughter may be past his hopes bestow'd,

That betwixt feare and hope (if I meane simply)

He is thus passionate.

*Enter Iaques.*

*Iaq.* Yet all is safe within, is none without?

No body breake<s> my walles? 40

III. ii, 12, 14, 16, 21-4, 33-4 *Asides not marked in Q* 14 sir?]  
sir. Q 16 almost] almost; Q 26-7 I aske . . . know? one line in Q  
26 is it G: ist Q 32-33 I do . . . poore. one line in Q 33 but  
thinkes] but thinks W 34 *Christ* c.w. in Q 35 ouerloy'd] ouerloyed Q  
36 bestow'd] bestowed Q 40 walles?] wall *Chicago Acting Edition*



*Chris.* What say you father, shall I haue your daughter ?

*Iaq.* I haue no dowry to bestow vpon her.

*Chris.* I do expect none father.

*Iaq.* That is well,

Then I beseech your worship make no question

45 Of that you wish, tis too much fauour to me.

*Chris.* Ile leaue him now to giue his passions breath,

Which being setled, I will fetch his daughter :

I shall but moue too much, to speake now to him.

*Exit Christophero.*

*Iaq.* So, hee's gone, would all were dead and gone,

50 That I might liue with my deere gold alone.

### Scæne 3.

*Iaques, Count.*

*Count.* Here is the poore old man.

(*Iaq.* Out o' my soule another, comes he hither ?)

*Count.* Be not dismaid old man, I come to cheere you.

*Iaq.* (To me my heauen,

5 Turne ribs to brasse, turne voice into a trumpet,

To rattle out the battels of my thoughts,

(One comes to hold me talke, while th'other robbes me.) *Exit.*

*Count.* He has forgot me sure : what should this meane ?

He feares authority, and my want of wife

10 Will take his daughter from him to defame her :

He that hath naught on earth but one poor daughter,

May take this extasie of care to keepe her. *Enter Iaques.*

*Iaq.* (And yet tis safe : they meane not to vse force,

But fawning cunning. I shall easily know

15 By his next question, if he thinke me rich.)

Whom see I ? my good Lord ?

*Count.*

Stand vp good father,

I call thee not <good> father for thy age,

III. iii 2, 4-7, 13-15, 20-2 *Asides not marked in Q*

14 cunning G : comming Q

age, one line in Q 15 rich.] rich, Q

17 good W

2 o' G : of Q

16-17 Stand . . .



But that I gladly wish to be thy sonne,  
In honour'd marriage with thy beauteous daughter.

*Iaq.* (O, so, so, so, so, so, this is for gold, 20  
Now it is sure, this is my daughters neatnesse,  
Makes them beleue me rich.) No, my good Lord,  
He tell you all ; how my poore haplesse daughter  
Got that attire she weares from top to toe.

*Count.* Why father, this is nothing. 25

*Iaq.* O yes, good my Lord.

*Count.* Indeed it is not.

*Iaq.* Nay sweet Lord pardon me ; do not dissemble,  
Heare your poore beads-man speake ; tis requisite  
That I (so huge a beggar) make account 30  
Of things that passe my calling : she was borne  
To enioy nothing vnderneath the sonne :  
But that, if she had more then other beggars,  
She should be enui'd : I will tell you then  
How she had all she weares, her warme shooes (God wot) 35  
A kind maide gaue her, seeing her go barefoot  
In a cold frosty morning ; God requite her ;  
Her homely stockings

*Count.* Father, He heare no more, thou mou'st too much  
With thy too curious answere for thy daughter, 40  
That doth deserue a thousand times as much.  
He be thy Sonne in law, and she shall weare  
Th'attire of Countesses.

*Iaq.* O good my Lord,  
Mocke not the poore, remembers not your Lordship,  
That pouerty is the precious gift of God, 45  
As well as riches ? tread vpon me, rather  
Then mocke my poorenes.

*Count.* Rise I say :  
When I mocke poorenes, then heauens make me poore.

*Enter Nuntius.*

iii. iii. 19 honour'd] honoured Q 28 me ;] me ? Q 32 To enioy]  
T'enioy Q 33 beggars,] beggars Q 41 much.] much, Q 45  
God,] God. Q 46 riches ?] riches, Q *Kneels.* added in G



## Scæne 4.

*Nuncio, Count.*

**N***Vn.* See heres the *Count Fernese*, I will tell him  
 The haplesse accident of his braue sonne,  
 That hee may seeke the sooner to redeeme him.  
 God saue your Lordship.

*Exit Iaques.**Count.*

You are right welcome sir.

5 *Nun.* I would I brought such newes as might deserue it.

*Count.* What, bring you me ill newes ?*Nun.*

Tis ill my Lord,

Yet such as vsuall chance of warre affoord,  
 And for which all men are prepar'd that vse it,  
 And those that vse it not, but in their friends,  
 Or in their children.

10 *Count.* Ill newes of my sonne,

My deere and onely sonne, Ile lay my soule.

Ay me accurs'd, thought of his death doth wound me,  
 And the report of it will kill me quite.

*Nun.* Tis not so ill my Lord.

15 *Count.* How then ?

*Nun.* Hee's taken prisoner, and that <i>s all.*Count.* That <i>s enough, enough.

I set my thoughts on loue, on seruile loue,

Forget my vertuous wife, feelee not the dangers,

20 The bands and wounds of mine owne flesh and bloud,

And therein am a mad man : therein plagu'd,

With the most iust affliction vnder heauen.

Is *Maximilian* taken prisoner to ?*Nun.* Nay good my Lord, he is return'd with prisoners.

25 *Count.* Ist possible, can *Maximilian*

Returne, and view my face without my sonne,

For whom he swore such care as for himselfe ?

III iv. Scæne 4] Scæne 7 Q 3 him.] him, Q 4 stage dir. *Iaques.*  
*Iaques* : Q 10 sonne.] sonne ? Q 11 soule.] soule, Q 16 is G  
 17 is G enough.] enough, Q 24 Nay] My Q : No W 25  
*Maximilian*] *Maximilian* ? Q



Nun. My Lord no care can change the euent of war.

Count. O! in what tempests do my fortunes saile,  
Still wrackt with winds more foule and contrary, 30  
Then any northe<r>n gust, or Southerne flawe,  
That euer yet inforc't the sea to gape,  
And swallow the poore Marchants traffique vp?  
First in *Vicenza*, lost I my first sonne;  
Next here in *Millaine* my most deere lou'd Lady: 35  
And now my *Paulo*, prisoner to the *French*,  
Which last being printed with my other griefes,  
Doth make so huge a volume, that my brest  
Cannot containe them. But this is my loue:  
I must make loue to *Rachel*! Heauen hath throwne 40  
This vengeance on me most deseruedly:  
Were it for nought but wronging of my steward.

Nun. My Lord since onely mony may redresse  
The worst of this misfortune, be not griעד,  
Prepare his ransome, and your noble sonne 45  
Shall greet your cheered eyes, with the more honour.

Count. I will prepare his ransome: gracious heauen  
Grant his imprisonment may be his worst,  
Honor'd and souldier-like imprisonment,  
And that he be not manacled and made 50  
A drudge to his proude foe. And here I vow,  
Neuer to dreame of seeme-les amorous toyes,  
Nor aime at <any> other ioy on earth,  
But the fruition of my onely sonne. *Ex<e>unt.*

III. IV. 31 gust W: guest Q flawe,] flawe? Q 34 *Vicenza*,]  
*Vicenza* Q 39 loue:] *The colon is doubtful in Q* 40 *Rachel*!  
Heauen] *Rachel*, heauen Q throwne] throwne, Q 44 griעד,]  
griעד Q 45 ransome,] ransome Q 49 Honor'd] Honored Q  
53 any G 54 *Exeunt*] *Exunt* Q



## Scène 5.

*Enter Jaques with his gold and a scuttle full of horse-dung.*

*Iaq.* He's gone : I knew it ; this is our hot louer !  
 I will beleue them ! I ! they may come in  
 Like simple woers, and be arrant theeues,  
 And I not know them ! tis not to be told,  
 5 What seruile villanies, men will do for gold.  
 O it began to haue a huge strong smell,  
 With lying so long together in a place ;  
 Ile giue it vent, it shall ha shift inough,  
 And if the diuell, that enuies all goodnesse,  
 10 Haue told them of my gold, and where I kept it,  
 Ile set his burning nose once more a worke,  
 To smell where I remou'd it, here it is :  
 Ile hide and couer it with this horse-dung .  
 Who will suppose that such a precious nest  
 15 Is crownd with such a dunghill excrement ?  
 In, my deere life, sleepe sweetly my deere child.  
 „ Scarce lawfully begotten, but yet gotten,  
 „ And thats enough. Rot all hands that come neere thee,  
 Except mine owne. Burne out all eyes that see thee,  
 20 Except mine owne. All thoughts of thee be poyson  
 To their enamor'd harts, except mine owne.  
 Ile take no leaue, sweet Prince, great Emperour,  
 But see thee euery minute. King of Kings,  
 Ile not be rude to thee, and turne my backe,  
 25 In going from thee, but go backward out,  
 With my face toward thee, with humble curtesies.  
 None is within. None ouerlookes my wall.  
 To haue gold, and to haue it safe, is all. *Exit.*

III v. Scène 5] SCENE II. A Court-yard, at the back of Jaques' House.  
*G* 1 *Iaq.*] *Iaq.*, *Q* 1ouer !] 1ouer, *Q* 5 gold.] gold, *Q* 7 With  
*W* : Which *Q* 13 *Digs a hole in the ground.* *G* 16 In.] In *Q*  
 18 thee.] thee *Q* 21 owne] owne, *Q* 22 Prince,] Prince *Q* 23  
 minute] minute, *Q* 25 out,] out : *Q* 26 curtesies] curtesies, *Q*  
 27 within *corr.* *Q* . w i thin and w i thin *Q* originally 28 gold,] g old *Q*



Act 4. Scæne 1.

*Enter Maximilian, with souldiers, Chamount, Camillo  
Fernese, Pacue.*

⟨*Maximilian turns to Camillo.*⟩

*Max.* Lord Chamount and your valient friend there,  
I cannot say welcome to *Millaine*: your thoughts and that  
word are not musicall, but I can say you are come to  
*Millaine*.

*Pac.* Mort diew. 5

*Cha.* Garsoone.

*Max.* Gentlemen (I would cal an Emperour so) you are  
now my prisoners, I am sorry; marry this, spit in the face  
of your fortunes, for your vsage shall be honorable.

*Cam.* Wee know it signior *Maximilian*, 10  
The fame of al your actions sounds nought else,  
But perfect honour from her swelling cheeks.

*Max.* It shall do so still I assure you, and I will giue you  
reason: there is in this last action (you know) a noble  
gentleman of our party, & a right valient, semblably 15  
prisoner to your general, as your honor'd selfe's to me;  
for whose safety, this tongue hath giuen warrant to his  
honorable father, the *Count Fernese*. You conceiue me?

*Cam.* I signior.

*Max.* Well; then I must tell you your ransomes be to 20  
redeeme him, what thinke you? your answer?

*C⟨h⟩am.* Marry with my Lord's leaue here I say signior,  
This free & ample offer you haue made,  
Agrees well with your honour, but not ours:  
For I thinke not but *Chamount* [is] aswell borne 25  
As is *Fernese*; then if I mistake not,

iv. i. Act 4] Actus 3 Q Scæne 1] SCENE III A Gallery in count Fer-  
nese's House G (continuing Act III) Stage dir souldiers,] souldiers Q  
*Camillo Fernese*] *Camilla, Fernese* Q 2 *Millaine*] *Millaine* Q 3 musicall]  
mu sicall Q 4 *Millaine*.] *Millaine*: Q 6 Garsoone] Gar soone Q  
8 sorry;] sorry, Q 14 reason:] reason, Q 15 valient,] valient; Q  
16 selfe's] selves G me;] me Q 18 me?] me. Q 19 Ranged with  
18 in Q 20 Well:] Well? Q 21 answer?] answer Q 22 Cham]  
*Cam.* Q (and all editors) here] he re Q 26 *Fernese*:] *Fernese*, Q



- He scornes to haue his worth so vnderprised,  
 That it should neede an adiunct, in exchange  
 Of any equall fortune Noble Signior,  
 30 I am a souldier, and I loue *Chamount* ;  
 Ere I would bruse his estimation,  
 With the least ruine of mine owne respect,  
 In this vild kind, these legs should rot with irons,  
 This body pine in prison, till the flesh  
 35 Dropt from my bones in flakes, like withered leaues,  
 In heart of *Autumne*, from a stubborne Oke  
*Maxi.* Mounsieur *Gasper* (I take it so is your name)  
 misprise me not, I wil trample on the hart, on the soule of  
 him that shall say, I will wrong you : what I purpose, you  
 40 cannot now know ; but you shall know, and doubt not to  
 your contentment. Lord *Chamount*, I will leaue you,  
 whilst I go in and present my selfe to the honorable *Count* ,  
 till my regression so please you, your noble feete may  
 measure this priuate, pleasant and most princely walke.  
 45 Souldiers regard them and respect them *<Exit>*  
*Pac O ver bon* excellenta gull, he tak'a my Lord  
*Chamount* for Mounsieur *Gaspra*, & Mounsieur *Gaspra* for  
 my Lord *Chamont*, ô dis be braue for mak'a me laugh'a,  
*ha, ha, ha*, ô my heart tickla.  
 50 *Cam.* I but your Lordship knowes not what hard fate  
 Might haue pursued vs, therefore howsoere  
 The changing of our names was necessary,  
 And we must now be carefull to maintaine  
 This error strongly, which our owne deuise  
 55 Hath thrust into their ignorant conceits,  
 For should we (on the taste of this good fortune)  
 Appeare our selues, 'twould both create in them  
 A kind of iealousie, and perchaunce inuert  
 Those honourable courses they intend.

iv 1. 28 exchange] exchange, Q 29 Signior.] Signior? Q 30  
*Chamount* .] *Chamount*, Q 42 *Count* .] *Count*, Q 44 walke ]  
 walke, Q 45 *Exit* G 46 *ver*] *Ver* Q 48 mak'a] make a Q  
 52 necessary.] necessary Q 54 deuise] deuise, Q 57 'twould]  
 'twould Q



*Cha.* True my deere *Gasper* : but this hangby here, 60  
Will (at one time or other) on my soule  
Discover vs : A secret in his mouth  
Is like a wild bird put into a cage,  
Whose door no sooner opens, but tis out.  
But sirra <*Pacue*>, if I may but know 65  
Thou vtterst it

*Pac.* Vttera vat Mounsieur ?

*Cha.* That he is *Gasper*, and I true *Chamont*.

*Pac.* O *pardone moy*, fore my tongue shall put out de  
secreta, shall breede *de cankra* in my mouth.

*Cha.* Speake not so loud *Pacue*. 70

*Pac.* Foe, you shall not heare foole, for all your long eare.  
Reguard Mounsieur : you be [*de*] *Chamont*, *Chamont* be  
*Gaspra*.

*Enter Count Fernese, Maximilian, Francesco,  
Aurelia, Phœnixella, Finio.*

*Cha.* Peace, here comes *Maximilian*.

*Cam.* O belike

That is the *Count Fernese*, that old man. 75

*Cha.* Are those his daughters, trow ?

*Cam.* I sure, I thinke they are.

*Cha.* Fore God the taller is a gallant Lady.

*Cam.* So are they both beleue me.

<Scæne 2.>

*Max.* True my honorable Lord, that *Chamont* was the  
father of this man.

*Count.* O that may be, for when I lost my sonne,  
This was but yong it seemes.

*Fran.* Faith had *Camillo* liu'd,  
He had beene much about his yeares, my Lord. 5

iv. i. 66 Vttera] Uttera G : Vtteria ? Q 67 *Chamont* corr. Q :  
*Chamont* Q originally 68-9 de secreta, shall] Query, read de  
secreta, de secreta shall Shall begins a new line in Q 70 *Cha.*  
Count. Q : Cam. G 71 eare] eare, Q 72 de om. G, who reads  
de fool in 71. 74-5 O . . . man one line in Q 75 That is G :  
that's Q iv. ii. 4 liu'd,] liu'd Q



*Count.* He had indeed, well, speake no more of him.

*Max.* Signior perceiue you the errour? twas no good office in vs to stretch the remembrance of so deere a losse.

*Count Fernese*, let sommer sit in your eye, looke cheerefully  
 10 sweete *Count*, will you do me the honour to confine this noble spirit within the circle of your armes?

*Count.* Honor'd *Chamont* reach me your valiant hand,  
 I could haue wisht some happier accident  
 Had made the way vnto this mutuall knowledge,  
 15 Which either of vs now must take of other,  
 But sure it is the pleasure of our fates,  
 That we should thus be wrack't on Fortunes wheele,  
 Let vs prepare with steeled patience  
 To tread on torment, and with mindes confirm'd  
 20 Welcome the worst of enuy.

*Max.* Noble Lord, tis thus I haue here (in mine honour)  
 set this gentleman free, without ransome, he is now himselfe,  
 his valour hath deseru'd it, in the eye of my iudgement.  
*Mounsieur Gasper* you are deere to me : *fortuna non mutat*  
 25 *genus*. But to the maine; if it may square with your Lordships liking, and his loue, I could desire that he were now instantly imployed to your noble Generall in the exchange of *Fernese* for your selfe, it is the businesse that requires the tender hand of a friend.

30 *Count.* I, and it would be with more speed effected,  
 If he would vndertake it.

*Max.* True my Lord. *Mounsieur Gasper*, how stand you affected to this motion?

*Cha.* My duty must attend his Lordships will.

35 *Max.* What says the Lord *Chamont*?

*Cam.* My will doth then appr[r]oue what these haue vrg'd.

*Max.* Why there is good harmony, good musicke in this :  
*Mounsieur Gasper*, you shall protract no time, onely I will  
 40 giue you a bowle of rich wine to the health of your Generall,

rv. ii. 16 sure] since G      24 *mutat* W : *mutuat* Q      25 maine ;]  
 maine, Q      36 doth then] doththen Q



another to the successe of your iourney, and a third to the loue of my sword. *Passe.*

*Exeunt all but Aurelia and Phoenixella.*

*Aure.* Why how now sister, in a motley muse?  
Go to, thers somewhat in the wind, I see.  
Faith this browne study suites not with your blacke, 45  
Your habit and your thoughts are of two colours.

*Phœn.* Good faith me thinkes that this young Lord  
*Chamont*

Fauours my mother, sister, does he not?

*Aure.* A motherly conceite, ô blind excuse,  
Blinder then Loue himselfe. Well sister, well. 50  
*Cupid* hath tane his stand in both your eyes,

*The case is altered.*

*Phœn.* And what of that?

*Aure.* Nay nothing. But a Saint,  
Another *Bridget*, one that for a face  
Would put downe *Vesta*, in whose lookes doth swim 55  
The very sweetest creame of modesty,  
You to turne tippet? fie, fie, will you giue  
A packing penny to Virginity?  
I thought you'd dwell so long in *Cypres Ile*,  
You'd worship *Maddam Venus* at the length; 60  
But come, the strongest fall, and why not you?  
Nay, do not frowne.

*Phœn.* Go, go, you foole. Adiew. *Exit.*

*Aure.* Well I may iest, or so: but *Cupid* knowes  
My taking is as bad, or worse then hers.  
*O Mounsieur Gasper!* if thou bee'st a man, 65  
Be not affraid to court me, do but speake,  
Challenge thy right and weare it: for I sweare  
Till thou arriud'st, nere came affection here. *Exit.*

iv. ii. 43 *Aure*] *Anre.* Q sister,] sister Q. 47-8 *Prose in Q*  
48 he not] henot Q 49 motherly] mothelry Q 50 Loue] loue Q  
51-2 One line in Q 53 nothing But] nothing but Q Saint,]  
Saint. Q 55 swim] swim, Q 56 modesty,] modesty. Q 58  
Virginity?] Virginity. Q 65 *Gasper!*] *Gasper?* Q



## 〈Scæne 3.〉

*Enter Pacue, Finio.*

*Fin.* Come on my sweet finicall *Pacue*, the very prime of Pages, heres an excellent place for vs to practise in, no body sees vs here, come lets to it. *Enter Onion.*

*Pac.* Contenta : Reguarde, vou le Premier.

5 *On.* Sirra *Finio* ?

*Pac.* Mort dieu le pesant.

*On.* Didst thou see *Valentine* ?

*Finio* *Valentine* ? no.

*On.* No ?

10 *Fin.* No. Sirrah *Onion*, whither goest ?

*On.* O I am vext, he that would trust any of these lying trauellers.

*Finio.* I prithee stay good *Onion*.

*Pac.* Mounsieur *Onion*, vene ca, come hidera, le vou  
15 prey. By gar me ha see two, tree, foure hundra towsand of your Cousan hang. Lend me your hand, shall prey for know you bettra.

*On.* I thanke you good signior *Parla vou*. (O that I were in an other world, in the *Ingies*, or some where, that I might  
20 haue roome to laugh.)

*Pac.* A we fort boon : stand ! you be deere now, me come, Boon iour Mounsieur. *Vnder the arme.*

*Fin.* God morrow good signior.

*Pac.* By gar, be mush glad for see you.

25 *Fin.* I returne you most kind thanks sir.

*On.* How ? how ? Sbloud this is rare !

*Pac.* Nay, shall make you say rare by and by, reguard. Mounsieur *Finio*. *The shoulder.*

IV III Scæne 3 ] ACT IV. SCENE I A Room in count Ferneze's House.  
G 1-3 *As verse in Q, divided at Of and No* 4 Premier]  
Premier Q 6 dieu] deu Q 18 vou] vou ? Q 18-20 *Aside*  
*not marked in Q* 20 laugh] laugh : Q *apparently, but the colon is*  
*doubtful* 21 we] oui G stand !] stand ? Q 21-2 stand . . .  
come, stand you dere—now me come, G (cf. 56) 22 Boon begins a new  
line in Q 24 *Pac.*] *Pac* Q be] me be G (but cf. 49) 25 *Fin*] *Fin*  
Q 26 rare !] rare ? Q 27-8 regard Mounsieur *Finio*] Reguard  
Mounsieur *Finio*, Q 28 Stage dir *The shoulder*] *The shoulder* Q



*Fin.* Signior *Pacue*.

*Pac.* Dieu vou gard Mounseieur. 30

*Fin.* God saue you sweet signior.

*Pac.* Mounseieur *Onion*? is not fort bein?

*Oni.* Beane, quoth he? would I were in debt of a pottle of beanes I could do as much.

*Fin.* Welcome signior, whats next? 35

*Pac.* O here, Voi[d] de grand admiration, as should meet perchance Mounseieur *Finio*.

*Fin.* Mounseieur *Pacue*.

*Pac.* Iesu? by Gar who thinke wee shall meete here?

*Fin.* By this hand I am not a little proud of it, sir. 40

*Oni.* This trick is onely for the [the] chamber, it cannot be cleanly done abroad.

*Pac.* Well what say you for dis den? Mounseieur.

*Fin.* Nay pray, sir.

*Pac.* Par ma foy you bein encounters! 45

*Fin.* What doe you meane sir, let your gloue alone.

*Pac.* Comen se porte la sante?

*Fin.* Faith exceeding well sir.

*Pac.* Trot, be mush ioy for heire.

*Fin.* And how ist with you sweet signior *Pacue*? 50

*Pac.* Fat comme vou voyer.

*Oni.* Yong gentlemen, spirits of bloud, if euer youle tast of a sweet peece of mutton, do *Onion* a good turne now.

*Pac.* Que que, parla Mounseir, what ist?

*Oni.* Faith teach me one of these tricks. 55

*Pac.* O me shall doe presently, stand you deere, you signior deere, my selfe is here: so fort bein, now I parle to Mounseir *Onion*, *Onion* pratla to you, you speaka to me, so, and as you parle chang the bonet, Mounseir *Onion*.

iv. iii. 29 *Pacue*] *Pache* Q 31 sweet] s weet Q signior corr Q:  
signior Q originally 32 bein?] bien? G: boon Q 33 Beane,]  
Beane? Q he?] he, Q 40 sir] sir Q 41 *Oni.*] *Oni*: Q 42  
abroad corr. Q: abroad, Q originally 43 Mounseieur. corr. Q Moun-  
seieur: Q originally 45 vou] vous voilà G encounters?] encoun-  
ters? Q 46 *Fin.*] *Fin* Q 47 Comen] Comen? Q sante?]  
sante. Q 49 *Pac.*] *Pac*, Q 50 *Pacue*?] *Pache*. Q 51 Fat]  
Fait, G 52 gentlemen,] gentlemen? Q 54 ist?] ist. Q



- 60 *Oni.* Mounsieur *Finuo.*  
*Fin.* Mounsieur *Pacue.*  
*Pac.* Pray be couera.  
*Oni.* Nay I beseech you sir.  
*Fin.* What do you meane?  
65 *Pac.* Pardon moy, shall be so.  
*Oni.* O God sir.  
*Fin.* Not I in good faith sir.  
*Pac.* By gar you must.  
*Oni.* It shall be yours  
70 *Fin.* Nay then you wrong me.  
*Oni.* Well and cuer I come to be great.  
*Pac.* You be big enough for de *Onion* already.  
*Oni.* I meane a great man.  
*Fin.* Then thou'dst be a monster.  
75 *Oni.* Well God knowes not what fortune may doe, commaund me, vse me from the soule to the crowne, and the crowne to the soule meaning not onely from the crowne of the head, and the sole of the foot, but also the foote of the mind and the crownes of the purse, I cannot stay now yong  
80 gentlemen but—time was, time is, and time shall be.

*Exeunt.**<Scæne 4.>**Enter Chamount, Camillo.*

*Cha.* Sweet *Iasper* I am sorry we must part,  
 But strong necessity enforceth it.  
 Let not the time seeme long vnto my friend,  
 Till my returne, for by our loue I sweare  
 5 (The sacred spheare wherein our soules are knit)  
 I will endeauour to affect this busines  
 With all industrious care and happy speed.

*Cam.* My Lord these circumstances would come well,  
 To one less capable of your desert

iv in 60 Mounsieur] Mounseir Q 64 meane?] meane. Q 65  
 so.] so, Q 66 Oni] Oni Q 69 Oni.] Oni: Q 70 me.] me, Q 71  
 great.] great. Q (but colon doubtful) 72 already.] already, Q iv. iv.  
 Scæne 4] SCENE II Another Room in the Same. G 4 returne,] returne Q.



Then I : in whom your merrit is confirm'd 10  
With such authentick and grounded proues.

*Cha.* Well I will vse no more. *Gasper* adiew.

*Cam.* Farewell my honor'd Lord.

*Cha.* Commend me to the Lady, my good *Gasper*.

*Cam.* I had remembred that, had not you vrgd it. 15

*Cha.* Once more adiew sweet *Gasper*.

*Cam.* My good Lord.

*Exit Camillo.*

*Cha.* Thy vertues are more precious then thy name,  
Kind gentleman I would not sell thy loue,  
For all the earthly objects that mine eyes  
Haue euer tasted. Sure thou art nobly borne, 20  
How euer fortune hath obscurd thy birth :  
For natie honour sparkles in thine eyes.  
How may I blesse the time wherein *Chamont*  
My honor'd father did surprise *Vicenza*,  
Where this my friend (known by no name) was found, 25  
Being then a child and scarce of power to speake,  
To whom my father gaue this name of *Gasper*,  
And as his owne respected him to death,  
Since when wee two haue shard our mutuall fortunes,  
With equall spirits, and but deathes rude hand, 30  
No violence shall dissolue this sacred band. *Exit.*

<Scæne 5.>

*Enter Iuniper in his shop singing : to him Onion.*

*Oni.* Fellow *Iuniper*, no more of thy songs and sonets,  
sweet *Iuniper*, no more of thy hymnes and madrigals, thou  
sing'st, but I sigh.

*Iuni.* Whats the matter *Peter* ha ? what, in an Academy  
still, still in sable, and costly black array ? ha ? 5

rv. iv. 10 merrit] merrit Q confirm'd] confirmed Q 13, 24 honor'd]  
honored Q 14 *Gasper*] *Gasper* : Q 15 that,] that Q 19  
eyes] eyes, Q 20 tasted. Sure] tasted, sure Q 22 eyes.] eyes, Q  
23 *Chamont*] *Chomont* Q (but reading doubtful) 24 *Vicenza*,] *vicenza* Q  
rv v. Scæne 5] SCENE III. G Stage dir. *Enter Iuniper*] *Iuniper* is  
discovered G 4 what,] what Q



*Oni.* Prithee rise, mount, mount sweet *Iuniper*, for I goe downe the wind, and yet I puffed: for I am vexed.

*Iuni.* Ha Bully? vexed? what intoxicate? is thy braine in a quintessence? an Idea? a metamorphosis? an  
 10 Apology? ha rogue? Come this loue feeds vpon thee, I see by thy cheekes, and drinckes healthes of vermilion teares, I see by thine eyes.

*Oni.* I confesse *Cupids* carouse, he plaies super negulum with my liquor of life.

15 *Iuni.* Tut, thou art a goose to be *Cupids* gull, go to, no more of this contemplations, & calculations, mourne not, for *Rachels* thine owne.

*Oni.* For that let the higher powers worke: but sweet *Iuniper*, I am not sad for her, and yet for her in a second  
 20 person, or if not so, yet in a third.

*Iuni.* How second person? away, away, in the crotchets already, Longitude and Latitude? what second? what person? ha?

*Oni.* *Iuniper*, Ile bewray my selfe before thee, for thy  
 25 company is sweet vnto me, but I must entreat thy helping hand in the case.

*Iuni.* Tut? no more of this surquedry; I am thine owne, ad vnguem, vpsie freeze, pell mell: come, what case? what case?

30 *Oni.* For the case it may be any mans case, aswell as mine, *Rachel* I meane, but Ile meddle with her anon; in the meane time, *Valentine* is the man hath wrongd me.

*Iuni.* How? my *Ingle* wrong thee, ist possible?

*Oni.* Your *Ingle*, hang him infidell, well and if I be not  
 35 reuengd on[e] him, let *Peter Onion* (by the infernall Gods) be turned to a leeke or a scalion! I spake to him for a ditty for this handkerchier.

*Iuni.* Why, has he not done it?

iv. v. 6 rise,] rise Q 9 quintessence c.w. in Q 10 Come] come Q  
 11-12 vermilion teares,] vermilion, teares Q 14 life.] life Q 16  
 this] this, H. C. Hart: these G not,] The comma is ill printed  
 in some copies 17 owne.] owne Q 22 already,] already Q 27  
 owne,] owne? Q 28 vnguem,] vnguem Q freeze,] freeze: Q mell:]  
 mell, Q 31 anon:] anon, Q 35 him,] him Q 36 scalion!] scalion, Q



*Oni.* Done it, not a verse by this hand.

*Iuni.* O in diebus illis, O preposterous, wel come be blith, 40  
the best inditer of them al is somtimes dul, fellow *Onion*,  
pardon mine *Ingle*: he is a man, has impe<r>fections and  
declinations, as other men haue, his muse somtimes cannot  
curuet nor prognosticat and come of, as it should; no  
matter, Ile hammer out a paraphrase for thee my selfe. 45

*Oni.* No sweet *Iuniper*, no, danger doth breed delay,  
loue makes me chollericke, I can beare no longer.

*Iuni.* Not beare what my mad Meridian slaue? not  
beare what?

*Oni.* *Cupids* burden, tis to heauy, to tollerable: and as 50  
for the handkerchire and the posie, I will not trouble thee:  
but if thou wilt goe with me into her fathers backside, old  
*Iagues* backside, and speake for me to *Rachel*, I will not be  
ingratitude, the old man is abroad and all.

*Iuni.* Art thou sure on't?

55

*Oni.* As sure as an obligation

*Iuni.* Lets away then, come we spend time in a vaine  
circumference, trade I cashire thee til to morrow, fellow  
*Onion* for thy sake I finish this workiday.

*Oni.* God a mercy, and for thy sake Ile at any time make 60  
a holiday.

*Ex<e>unt.*

iv v. 41 *Omon*, corr *Q*: *Omon* *Q* originally 43 muse *W*: masse *Q*  
44 curuet *W*: caruet *Q* should;] should, *Q* 45 para-[phrase  
corr *Q*: para-[hrase *Q* originally 46 no, danger] no danger *Q*  
48 Not beare] Not beare? *Q* 48-9 not beare] not beare? *Q* 50  
burden,] burden: *Q* heauy, corr *Q*: heauy *Q* originally tollerable:]  
tollerable, *Q* 51 posie,] posie: *Q* 53 speake for corr. *Q*: speake-  
for *Q* originally wil corr. *Q*: will *Q* originally 53-4 beingratitude  
corr. *Q*: being ratitude *Q* originally 54 old corr. *Q*: ould *Q* originally  
all. corr. *Q*: all, *Q* originally 55 on't?] on't. *Q* 58 circum-  
ference, corr *Q*: circumference *Q* originally



## 〈Scæne 6.〉

*Enter Angel[1]o, Rachel.*

*Ang.* Nay I prithec *Rachel*, I come to comfort thee;  
Be not so sad.

*Rach.* O signior *Angelo*,  
No comfort but his presence can remoue  
This sadnesse from my heart.

*Ang.* Nay then y'are fond,  
5 And want that strength of iudgement and election,  
That should be attendant on your yeares and forme.  
Will you, because your Lord is taken prisoner,  
Blubber and weepe and keepe a peeuish stirre,  
As though you would turne turtle with the newes?  
10 Come, come, be wise. Sblood say your Lord should die:  
And you goe marre your face as you begin,  
What would you doe trow? who would care for you?  
But this it is, when nature will bestow  
Her gifts on such as know not how to vse them.  
15 You shall haue some that had they but one quarter  
Of your faire beauty, they would make it shew  
A little otherwise then you do this,  
Or they would see the painter twice an hower,  
And I commend them I, that can vse art,  
20 With such iudiciall practise.

*Rach.* You talk i[c]dly,  
If this be your best comfort keepe it still,  
My sences cannot feede on such sower cates.

*Ang.* And why sweet heart?

*Rach.* Nay leaue good signior.

*Ang.* Come I haue sweeter vyands yet in store.

rv. vi. Scæne 6.] SCENE IV. The Court-yard at the back of Jaques'  
House G. Stage dir. *Rachel*. corr. Q: *Rachel*, Q originally 1 thee;  
corr. Q: thee, Q originally 3 remoue] remoue, Q 4 y'are corr.  
Q: ye'are Q originally 5 election corr. Q: e lection Q originally  
6 forme.] forme, Q 9 newes?] newes, Q 12 for you?] for you;  
Q 16 beauty,] beauty? Q them.] them, Q 19 I, that corr. Q:  
I that Q originally 20 practise. corr. Q: practise, Q originally 23  
heart?] heart. Q leaue corr. Q: leau Q originally



*Iuni.* I in any case. *Mistres Rachel.* <Within.> 25

*Ang. Rachel?*

*Rach.* Gods pittie signior *Angelo*, I here my father, away  
for Gods sake.

*Ang.* S'bloud, I am bewitcht, I thinke, this is twice now,  
I have been serued thus. *Exit.* 30

*Rach.* Pray God he meet him not.

<Scæne 7.>

*Enter Onion and Iuniper.*

*Oni.* O braue! she's yonder, O terrible! shee's gone.

*Exit Rachel.*

*Iuni.* Yea? so nimble in your *Dilemma's*, and your  
*Hiperbole's*? Hay my loue, O my loue, at the first sight?  
By the masse:

*Oni.* O how she skudded, O sweet scud, how she tripped, 5  
O delicate trip and goe.

*Iuni.* Come thou art enamored with the influence of her  
profundity, but sirrah harke a little.

*Oni.* O rare, what? what? passing Ifaith, what ist? 10  
what ist?

*Iuni.* What wilt thou say now, if *Rachel* stand now, and  
play hity tity through the keyhole, to behold the equipage  
of thy person?

*Oni.* O sweet equipage, try good *Iuniper*, tickle her,  
talke, talke, O rare! 15

*Iuni.* *Mistres Rachel* (watch then if her father come)  
*Rachel? Madona? Rachel? No.*

*Oni.* Say I am here, *Onion* or *Peter* or so.

*Iuni.* No, Ile knock, wee le not stand vpon *Horizons*, and  
tricks, but fall roundly to the matter. 20

iv. vi. 25 case. *Mistres* Q *Within. G* 26-9  
*Apparently defective verse* 29 *Ang*] *Ang: Q* bewitcht *W:*  
betwixt *Q* now corr *Q: n ow Q originally* 30 *Exit*] *Exit Q*  
iv. vii Stage dir *Enter . . . Iuniper* in *Q* at vi. 25 1 braue!] braue? *Q*  
terrible!] terrible *Q* *Exit Rachel.*] *Exit Rachel Q* (at vi. 31)  
3 *Hiperbole's*?] *Hiperbole's Q* loue, O] loue? O *Q* sight?] sight:  
*Q* 13 person?] person: *Q* 14 *Oni.*] *Oni: Q* 15 O rare!]  
O? rare *Q* 16 A new line after come in *Q*.



*Oni.* Well said sweet *Iuniper* : Horizons? hang hem !  
knock, knock. <Iuniper knocks.>

*Rach.* Who's there? father? <Within.>

*Iuni.* Father no ; and yet a father, if you please to be  
25 a mother.

*Oni.* Well said *Iuniper*, to her againe, a smack or two  
more of the mother.

*Iuni.* Do you here? sweet soule, sweet *Radamant*, sweet  
*Machauell*? one word *Melpomine*, are you at leasure?

30 *Rach.* At leasure? what to doe? <Within.>

*Iuni.* To doe what, to doe nothing, but to be liable to  
the extasie of true loues exigent, or so, you smell my  
meaning?

*Oni.* Smell, filthy, fellow *Iuniper* filthy? smell? O most  
35 odious.

*Iuni.* How filthy?

*Oni.* Filthy, by this finger! smell? smell a rat, smel a  
pudding, away, these tricks are for truls, a plaine wench  
loues plaine dealing, ile vpon <her> my selfe, smel to <a>  
40 march paine wench?

*Iuni.* With all my heart, Ile be legitimate and silent as  
an apple-squire, Ile see nothing, and say nothing.

*Oni.* Sweet hart, sweet hart?

*Iuni.* And bag pudding, ha, ha, ha?

45 *Iaq.* What *Rachel* my girle, what *Rachel*? *Within.*

*Oni.* Gods lid?

*Iaq.* What *Rachel*? } *Within.*

*Rach.* Here I am.

*Oni.* What rakehell calls *Rachel* : O treason to my loue.

50 *Iuni.* Its her father on my life, how shall wee entrench  
and edifie our selues from him?

*Oni.* O conni-catching *Cupid*.

rv. vii. 21 hem! ] hem? Q 22 *Iuniper* knocks. G 23 Who's]  
Whose Q father? ] father. Q 23, 30 *Within.* G 24 no; ] no? Q  
27 mother. ] mother Q 28 *Radamant*, ] *radamant*? Q 29 *Macha-*  
*uell*? ] *mathauell* Q : *Machavel* G *Melpomine*, ] *Melpomine*? Q  
leasure? ] leasure Q 33 meaning? ] meaning. Q 36 filthy? ] filthy. Q  
37 finger! ] finger? Q 38 away, ] away Q 39 her W a G 40 wench? ]  
wench. Q 42 an apple- ] anapple- Q 45 girle, ] girle Q *Rachel*? ]  
*Rachel*, Q 46 lid? ] lid? Q 47 *Rachel*? ] *Rachel*, Q 48 am. ] am Q



Scæne 8.

Enter Iaques.

Iaq. How, in my back side? where? what come they for?

*Onion gets vp into a tree.*

Where are they, Rachel? theeues, theeues!

*⟨He seizes Iuniper.⟩*

Stay villaine slaue: Rachel? vntye my dog.

Nay theife thou canst not scape.

Iuni. I pray you sir. 5

*(Oni. A<h> pitifull Onion, that thou hadst a rope.)*

Iaq. Why Rachel: when I say? let loose my dog, Garlique my mastiue, let him loose I say.

Iuni. For Gods sake here me speake, keepe vp your cur.

*(Oni. I feare not Garlique, heele not bit Onion his kins- 10 man, pray God he come out, and then theile not smell me.)*

Iaq. Well then deliuer, come deliuer slaue!

Iuni. What should I deliuer?

Iaq. O thou wouldst haue me tell thee, wouldst thou? shew me thy hands, what hast thou in thy hands? 15

Iuni. Here be my hands.

Iaq. Stay, are not thy fingers ends begrimd with durt? no, thou hast wipt them.

Iuni. Wipt them?

Iaq. I thou villaine, thou art a subtile knaue! put off 20 thy shewes, come I will see them, giue me a knife here Rachel, Ile rip the soles.

*(Oni. No matter, he's a cobbler, he can mend them.)*

Iuni. What are you mad, are you detestable, would you > make an Anatomy of me, thinke you I am not true 25 Ortophaphie?

rv. viii. 1 How,] How Q 3 they,] they? Q theeues!] theeues?  
Q Stage dir. *Seizes Jun as he is running* G 5 Iuni] Inni Q  
6, 10-11, 23 *Asides not marked in* Q 6 Oni.] Oni Q Ah W  
7 say?] say: Q dog,] dog? Q 8, 10 Garlique] garlique Q 10  
kinsman, corr. Q: kinsman Q originally 12 Well] well Q slaue!] slaue? Q  
14 thee,] thee? Q thou?] thou Q 17 Stay,] Stay Q  
17-18 durt? no,] durt, no corr. Q: dur, tno- and dur, tno Q  
originally 20 villaine,] villaine? Q knaue!] knaue, Q 23  
matter,] matter Q 24 mad,] mad? Q



*Iaq.* Ortographie, Anatomy ?

*Iuni.* For Gods sake be not so inuiolable, I am no  
ambuscado, what predicament call you this, why do you  
30 intimate so much ?

*Iaq.* I can feele nothing.

(*Oni.* Bir Lady but *Onion* feeles something.)

*Iaq.* Soft sir, you are not yet gon, shake your legs, come,  
and your armes, be briefe, stay let me see these drums, these  
35 kilderkins, these bombard slops, what is it crams hem so ?

*Iuni.* Nothing but haire.

*Iaq.* Thats true, I had almost forgot this rug, this  
hedghogs nest, this haymowe, this beares skin, this heath,  
this firsbush.

40 *Iuni.* O let me goe, you teare my haire, you reuolue my  
braines and understanding.

*Iaq.* (Heart, thou art somewhat cas'd ; halfe of my feare  
Hath tane his leauc of me, the other halfe  
Still keepe possession in dispiht of hope,  
45 Vntill these amorous eyes, court my faire gold :  
Deare I come to thee :) Fiend, why art not gone ?  
Auoid my soules vexation, Sathan hence !  
Why doest thou stare on me, why doest thou stay ?  
Why por'st thou on the ground with theeuish eyes ?  
50 What see'st thou there, thou curre ? what gap'st thou at ?  
Hence from my house ! *Rachel*, send Garlick forth.

*Iunip.* I am gone sir, I am gone, for Gods sake stay.

*Exit Iuniper.*

*Iaq.* Packe, and thanke God thou scap'st so well away.

(*Oni.* If I scape this tree, destinies, I defie you.)

55 *Iaq.* I cannot see by any Characters  
Writ on this earth, that any fellon foote  
Hath tane acquaintance of this hallow'd ground.

rv. viii. 30 much ?] much. *Q* 32, 42-6, 54 *Asides not marked in Q*  
35 so ?] so. *Q* 39 firsbush. *corr. Q* : firsbush : *Q* originally 40 teare  
*corr. Q* : teare, *Q* originally my *corr. Q* : my *Q* originally haire, *corr. Q* :  
haire *Q* originally reuolue] reuolue *corr. Q* : reloulue *Q* originally 42  
eas'd ;] eas'd ? *Q* 43 me *W* : my *Q* 46 Fiend *G* : friend *Q* 47 hence !]  
hence ? *Q* 51 house !] house, *Q* Garlick] garlick *Q* 53 Packe]  
'e' visible in the Bodleian copy of *Q* ; in other copies the space of a dropped  
letter 57 hallow'd] hallowed *Q* ground. *corr. Q* : ground, *Q* originally



None sees me : knees do homage to your Lord.

*<He kneels and uncovers the treasure.>*

Tis safe, tis safe, it lyes and sleepes so soundly,  
Twould do one good to looke on't. If this blisse 60  
Be giuen to any man that hath much gold,  
Iustly to say tis safe, I say tis safe.

O what a heauenly round these two words dance  
Within me and without me : First I thinke hem,  
And then I speake hem, then I watch their sound, 65  
And drinke it greedily with both mine eares,  
Then thinke, then speake, then drinke their sound againe,  
And racket round about this bodies court  
These two sweet words : *tis safe* : stay I will feed  
My other sences, ô how sweet it smels. 70

*(Oni. I mar'le he smels not Onion, being so neere it.)*

*Iaq.* Downe to thy graue againe, thou beauteous Ghost,  
Angels men say, are spirits : Spirits be  
Inuisible, bright angels are you so ?  
Be you inuisible to euery eye, 75  
Saue onely these : Sleepe, Ile not breake your rest,  
Though you breake mine : Deare Saints adiew, adiew :

*<He rises.>*

My feete part from you, but my soule dwels with you. *Exit.*

*Oni.* Is he gone ? ô Fortune my friend, and not fortune  
my foe,

I come downe to embrace thee, and kisse thy great toe. 80

## Scæne 9.

*Enter Iuniper <as Onion comes down from the tree.>*

*Iunip.* Fellow *Onion* ? *Peter* ?

*Oni.* Fellow *Iuniper*.

*<Iunip.>* What's the old panurgo gone ? departed ?  
cosmografied, ha ?

iv. viii. 58 Stage dir. *Kneels and removes the dung from the treasure.* G  
68 court] court. Q 70 sences, corr. Q : sences ; Q originally 71 *Aside*  
*not marked in Q* 75 eye,] eye. Q 78 with corr. Q : with Q originally  
*Exit.] Rises and Exit.* G 81 Stage dir. *Comes down from the tree* G  
iv. ix. 1 *Peter* ?] *Peter.* Q 3 *Iunip.* W departed ?] departed, Q



5 *Oni.* O I, and harke sirrah. Shall I tell him? no.

*Iunip.* Nay, be briefe and declare, stand not vpon conondrums now, thou knowest what contagious speeches I haue sufferd for thy sake: and he should come againe and inuent me here——

10 *Oni.* He saies true, it was for my sake, I will tell him. Sirra *Iuniper*? and yet I will not.

*Iunip.* What sayest thou swete *Onion*?

*Oni.* And thou hadst smelt the sent of me when I was in the tree, thou wouldest not haue said so: but sirra, *The*  
15 *case is altered* with me, my heart has giuen loue a box of the care, made him kicke vp the heeles I faith.

*Iunip.* Sayest thou me so, mad Greeke? how haps it? how chances it?

*Oni.* I cannot hold it, *Iuniper*, haue an eye, looke, haue  
20 an eye to the doore. The old prouerb's true, I see: gold is but mucke. Nay Gods so *Iuniper*, to the doore, an eye to the maine chance, here you slaue, haue an eye.

*<He remoues the dung, and shows him the gold.>*

*Iunip.* O inexorable! ô infallible! ô intricate, deuine, and superficiall fortune!

25 *Oni.* Nay, it will be sufficient anon, here, looke heere.

*Iunip.* O insolent good lucke! How didst thou produce th'intelligence of the gold mynerals?

*Oni.* Ile tell you that anon, heere, make shift, conuey, cramme. Ile teach you how you shall call for Garlike  
30 againe I faith.

*Iunip.* S'bloud what shall we do with all this? we shall nere bring it to a consumption.

*Oni.* Consumption? why weelee bee most sumptuously attir'd, man.

35 *Iunip.* By this gold, I will haue three or foure most stigmaticall suites presently.

rv. ix. 5 sirrah.] Sirrah Q 8 sake:] sake Q 9 here—] here. Q  
11 Sirra begins a new line in Q 14 sirra] Sirra Q 18 chances it?] chances it. Q 20 doore. The] doore, the Q 21 *Iuniper,*]  
*Iuniper* Q 22 Stage dir. supplied by G 23 intricate,] intricate Q  
24 fortune!] fortune. Q 27 gold mynerals?] gold' mynerals. Q  
29 Ile teach begins a new line in Q Garlike] garlike Q



*Oni.* Ile go in my foot-cloth, Ile turne Gentleman.

*Iunip.* So will I.

*Oni.* But what badge shall we giue, what cullison?

*Iunip.* As for that lets vse the infidelity and commiseration of some harrot of armes, he shall giue vs a gudgeon.

*Oni.* A gudgeon? a scutcheon thou wouldst say, man.

*Iunip.* A scutcheon or a gudgeon, all is one.

*Oni.* Well, our armes be good inough, lets looke to our legges. 45

*Iunip.* Content, wee be iogging.

*Oni.* *Rachel*, we retire: Garlike God boy ye.

*Iunip.* Farewell sweete *Iaques*.

*Oni.* Farewell sweete *Rachel*, sweet dogge adiew. *Exeunt*.

<Scæne 10.>

*Enter Maximilian, Count Ferneze, Aurelia, Phœnixella, Pacue.*

*Max.* Nay but sweet *Count*.

*Count.* Away, Ile heare no more,  
Neuer was man so palpably abusd,  
My sonne so basely marded; and my selfe  
Am made the subiect of your mirth and scorne.

*Max.* *Count Ferneze* you tread too hard vpon my patience, 5  
do not persist I aduise your Lordship.

*Count.* I will persist, and vnto thee I speake.  
Thou *Maximilian* thou hast iniur'd me.

*Max.* Before the Lord:

*Aur.* Sweet signior. 10

*Phœ.* O my father.

*Max.* Lady let your father thank your beauty.

*Pac.* By gar me shall be hang for tella dis same, me tella  
madamoyselle, she tell her fadera.

iv. ix. 42 gudgeon corr Q: gupgeon Q originally. 47 *Rachel*,  
*Rachel*? Q Garlike] garlike Q iv. x. Scæne 10.] SCENE v. A  
Room in count Ferneze's House. G Enter] Enter Q Pacue] Pache Q  
6 Do not begins a new line in Q 12 *Max*] *Max.* Q c.w. *Pacue* Q  
13 Me tella begins a new line in Q



15 *Count.* The true *Chamount* set free, and one left here  
Of no descent, clad barely in his name.

Sirrah boy come hither, and be sure, you speake  
The simple truth :

*Pac.* O pardone moy mounsieur,

*Count.* Come leaue your pardons, and directly say,  
20 What villaine is the same, that hath vsurpt  
The honor'd name and person of *Chamount* ?

*Pac.* O Mounsieur, no point villaine, braue Cheualier,  
Mounsieur *Gasper*.

*Count.* Mounsieur *Gasper*,  
25 On what occasion did they change their names,  
What was their policy, or their pretext ?

*Pac.* Me canno tell, par ma foy Mounsieur.

*Max.* My honorable Lord.

*Count.* Tut tut, be silent.

30 *Max.* Silent ? *Count Fernese*, I tell thee if *Amurath* the  
great Turke were here I would speake, and he should here me :

*Count.* So will not I.

*Max.* By my fathers hand, but thou shalt *Count*, I say  
till this instant, I was neuer toucht in my reputation : here  
35 me, you shall knowe that you haue wrongd me, and I wil  
make you acknowledge it, if I cannot my sword shall.

*Count.* By heauen I will not, I will stop mine eares,  
My sences loath the sauour of thy breath,  
Tis poysen to me, I say I will not heare.

40 What shall I know ? tis you haue iniurd me.

What will you make ? make me acknowledge it ?

Fetch forth that *Gasper*, that lewd counterfeit. *<Exit Pacue.>*  
He make him to your face approue your wrongs.

IV. x. 15 *Count* corr. Q : *Count* Q originally 17-18 *Sirrah* . . . truth  
one line in Q 17 speake corr. Q : spaeke Q originally 18 simple corr.  
Q : simple Q originally 19 *Count* : *Count* Q say, The comma is blurred  
in some copies 20 same, same Q vsurpt vsurpt, Q 21 *Chamount* ?  
*Chamount* : Q 24-6 *Prose* in Q 24 Mounsieur] Monusieur Q  
26 pretext. corr. Q : pretext. Q originally 27 canno corr. Q : ccanno Q  
originally 28 Lord. corr. Q : Lord, Q originally 34-5 here  
me, here me Q 38 loath corr. Q : lotah Q originally sauour]  
savour W : Sauour Q breath, breath. Q 40 know ?] know, Q  
me.] me, Q 41 will you corr. Q : willy ou Q originally it ?] it. Q



<Scæne 11.>

*Enter serving-men with Camillo.*

<Count.> Come on false substance, shadow to Chamont :  
Had you none else to worke vpon but me,  
Was I your fittest proiect ? well confesse,  
What you intended by this secret plot,  
And by whose policy it was contriu'd. 5  
Speake truth, and be intreated courteously,  
But double with me, and resolute to proue  
The extremest rigor that I can inflict.

*Cam.* My honor'd Lord, heare me with patience.  
Nor hope of fauour, nor the feare of torment, 10  
Shall sway my tongue, from vttring of a truth.

*Count.* Tis well, proceed then.

*Cam.* The morne before this battell did begin,  
Wherein my Lord Chamont and I were tane,  
We vow'd one mutuall fortune, good or bad, 15  
That day should be imbraced of vs both,  
And vrging that might worst succcede our vow,  
We there concluded to exchange our names.

*Count.* Then *Maximilian* tooke you for *Chamont*?

*Cam.* True noble Lord.

*Count.* Tis false, ignoble wretch, 20  
Twas but a complot to betray my sonne.

*Max.* *Count*, thou lyest in thy bosome, *Count* :

*Count.* Lye ?

*Cam.* Nay I beseech you honor'd gentlemen,  
Let not the vntimely ruine of your loue 25  
Follow these sleight occur<r>ents ; be assur'd  
*Chamonts* returne will heale these wounds againe,  
And breake the points of your too piercing thoughts.

iv. xi. Stage dir. in Q after x. 42 1 substance, corr. Q : substance :  
Q originally Chamont . corr. Q : Chamont, Q originally 4 secret  
corr. Q : secret Q originally plot,] plot. Q duv c.w. in Q 5  
contriu'd.] contriu'd, Q 9 patience.] patience, Q 17 worst]  
worse W 19 Chamont ?] Chamont. Q 20, 23 Count.] Count : Q  
25 loue] loue, Q 26 assur'd] assured Q



*Count.* Returne? I when? when will *Chamount* returne?  
 30 Hege come to fetch you, will he? I tis like,  
 You'd haue me thinke so, that's your policy.  
 No, no, yong gallant, your deuice is stale,  
 You cannot feed me with so vaine a hope.

*Cam.* My Lord, I feece you not with a vaine hope,  
 35 I know assuredly he will returne,  
 And bring your noble sonne along with him.

*Max.* I, I dare pawne my soule he will returne.

*Count.* O impudent dirision? open scorne?  
 Intollerable wrong? is't not inough,  
 40 That you haue plaid vpon me all this while;  
 But still to mocke me, still to iest at me?  
 Fellowes, away with him: Thou ill-bred slaue,  
 That sets no difference twixt a noble spirit,  
 And thy owne slauish humour, do not thinke

45 But ile take worthy vengeance on thee, wretch!

*Cam.* Alas, these threats are idle, like the wind,  
 And breed no terror in a guiltlesse mind.

*Count.* Nay, thou shalt want no torture, so resolute,  
 Bring him away. (Exit.)

50 *Cam.* Welcome the worst, I suffer for a friend,  
 Your tortures will, my loue shall neuer end. *Exeunt.*

*Manent Maximillian, Aurelia, Phoenixella, [Pacue.]*

*Phœn.* Alas poore gentleman, my fathers rage  
 Is too extreame, too sterne and violent!  
 O that I knew with all my strongest powers,  
 55 How to remoue it from thy patient breast,  
 But that I cannot, yet my willing heart  
 Shall minister in spight of tyranny  
 To thy misfortune. Something there is in him,  
 That doth enforce this strange affection,  
 60 With more then common rapture in my breast:  
 For being but *Gaspar*, he is still as deare

rv. xi. 39 inough,] inough? Q 42 him: Thou] him, thou Q 45  
 wretch!] wretch? Q 48-9 One line in Q 56 heart] heart, Q  
 58 misfortune. Something] misfortune, something Q



To me, as when he did *Chamount* appeare. *Exit Phœnixella.*

*Aure.* But in good sadnesse Signior, do you thinke *Chamount* will returne ?

*Max.* Do I see your face, Lady ? 65

*Aure.* I sure, if loue haue not blinded you.

*Max.* That is a question, but I will assure you no, I can see, and yet loue is in mine eye : well, the *Count* your father simply hath dishonor'd me : and this steele shall engraue it on his burgonet. 70

*Aure.* Nay, sweet Signior.

*Max.* Lady, I do preferre my reputation to my life, but you shall rule me, come let 's march. *Exit Maximillian.*

*Aure.* Ile follow Signior, ô sweet Queene of loue, Soueraigne of all my thoughts, and thou faire Fortune, 75 Who (more to honour my affections)

Hast thus translated *Gasper* to *Chamount* !

Let both your flames now burne in one bright speare,

And giue true light to my aspiring hopes ;

Hasten *Chamounts* returne, let him affect me, 80

Though father, friends, and all the world reiect me. *Exit.*

## <Act 5. Scène 1.>

*Enter Angelo, Christopher<o>.*

*Ange.* Sigh for a woman, would I fould mine armes,

Raue in my sleepe, talke idly being awake,

Pine and looke pale, make loue-walkes in the night,

To steale cold comfort from a day-starres eyes ?

*Kit,* thou art a foole, wilt thou be wise ? then lad 5

Renounce this boy-gods nice idolatry,

Stand not on complement, and wooing trickes,

Thou louest old *Iaques* daughter, doest thou ?

iv. xi. 64 returne] e'er return W 72 But begins a new line in Q  
74 loue,] loue ! Q 75 Fortune] fortune Q 77 *Chamount* !] *Chamount* Q  
78 speare,] speare, Q 79 gue true corr Q : giuet rue  
Q originally hopes ;] hopes, Q v. i. Scène 1.] SCENE I. The Court  
at the back of Jaques' House. G. Stage dir. *Christophero* W 4  
eyes ?] eyes. Q 5 thou art] thou'rt W 7 wooing] coying G



*Chris.*

Loue her?

10 *Ange.* Come, come, I know't, be rul'd and shee's thine  
owne.

Thou'lt say her father *Iaques*, the old begger,  
Hath pawnd his word to thee, that none but thou,  
Shalt be his sonne in law.

*Chris.*

He has.

*Ange.*

He has?

Wilt thou belecue him, and be made a Rooke,

15 To waite on such an antique wethercocke?

Why he is more inconstant then the sea,

His thoughts, *Cameleon*-like, change euery minute:

No *Kit*, worke soundly, steale the wench away,

Wed her, and bed her, and when that is done,

20 Then say to *Iaques*, shall I be your sonne?

But come, to our deuice, where is this gold?

*Chris.* Heere Signior *Angelo*.

*Ange.* Bestow it, bid thy hands shed golden drops,

Let these bald french crownes be vncouered,

25 In open sight, to do obeysance

To *Iaques* staring eyes when he steps forth,

The needy begger will be glad of gold.

So, now keepe thou aloofe, and as he treads

This guilded path, stretch out his ambling hopes,

30 With scattring more & more, & as thou go'st,

Cry *Iaques*, *Iaques*.

*Chris.*

Tush, let me alone.

*Ang.* <And> first ile play the ghost, Ile cal him out,

*Kit* keep aloofe.

*Chris.*But Signior *Angelo*,

Where wil your selfe and *Rachel* stay for me,

35 After the iest is ended?

*Ange.*

Masse, that's true,

v. i. 10 owne.] owne, Q 13-14 *Ange.* He . . . Rooke, one line in Q  
14 Wilt] wilt Q Rooke] kooke Q: cook W: cokes G 15 wether-  
cocke?] wethercocke; Q 21 come,] come Q 30-1 With . . .  
*Iaques* one line in Q 32-3 First . . . aloofe one line in Q 32  
first] First Q 33-6 Prose in Q 33 *Angelo.*] *Angelo.* Q



At the old Priory behinde S. Foyes.

Chris. Agreed, no better place, ile meete you there.

⟨He retires, dropping the gold.⟩

Ange. Do good foole, do, but ile not meet you there.

Now to this geere, *Iaques*, *Iaques*, what *Iaques*?

{within} *Iaq.* Who cal's? who's there?

40

*Ange. Iaques.*

{within} *Iaq.* Who cal's?

*Ange.* Steward, he comes, he comes. *Iaques.*

⟨Scæne 2.⟩

*Enter Iaques.*

*Iaq.* What voice is this?

No body here, was I not cald? I was.

And one cride *Iaques* with a hollow voyce,

I was deceiu'd, no I was not deceiu'd,

See see, it was an Angell cald me forth,

5

Gold, gold, man-making gold, another starre,

Drop they from heauen? no, no, my house I hope

Is haunted with a Fairy. My deere Lar,

My houshold God, my Fairy, on my knees.

*Christ. Iaques.*

*Exit Christophero.*

*Iaq.* My Lar doth call me, ô sweet voyce,

10

Musically as the spheares, see, see, more gold.

{within} *Chris. Iaques.*

*Iaq.* What *Rachel*, *Rachel*, lock my doore,

*Enter Rachel.*

Looke to my house.

{within} *Chris. Iaques.*

*Iaq.* Shut fast my doore,

A golden crowne, *Iaques* shall be a king.

*Exit.*

*Ange.* To a fooles paradise that path will bring

15

Thee and thy houshold Lar.

v. i. 37 Stage dir. supplied by G 40 who's] whose Q 41 Ranged  
with 40 in Q 43 comes *Iaques*] comes *Iaques* Q v. ii. 1-2 One  
line in Q 7 heauen?] heauen, Q 9 my Fairy,] My Fairy Q  
11 see, more] see more Q 12-13 What... doore, prose in Q. 12 Stage  
dir. precedes *Iaques'* speech in Q 13-14 Shut... king. prose in Q



## 〈Scæne 3.〉

*Rach.* What means my father?  
I wonder what strange humor.

*Ange.* Come sweete soule,  
Leaue wondring, start not, twas I laide this plot  
To get thy father forth.

*Rach.* O *Angelo*.

5 *Ange.* O me no oo's, but heare, my Lord your loue, .  
*Paulo Fernese*, is returnd from warre,  
Lingers at *Pont Valerio*, and from thence  
By post at midnight last, I was coniu'r'd  
To man you thither, stand not on replies,  
10 A horse is saddled for you, will you go,  
And I am for you, if you will stay, why so.

*Rach.* O *Angelo*, each minute is a day  
Till my *Fernese* come; come, weele away [sir]. *〈Exit.〉*

*Ange.* Sweete soule I guesse thy meaning by thy looks,  
15 At *Pont Valerio* thou thy loue shalt see,  
But not *Fernese*. Steward fare you well.  
You wait for Rachel to, when can you tell? *Exit.*

## 〈Scæne 4.〉

*Enter Iaques.*

*Iaq.* O in what golden circle haue I dans't?  
*Millaine* these od'rous and enfloured fields  
Are none of thine, no heres *Elizium*,  
Heere blessed Ghosts do walke, this is the Court  
5 And glorious palace where the God of gold  
Shines like the sonne, of sparkling maiesty;  
O <my> faire fethered, my red-brested birds,

v. iii 1-4 *Prose in Q* 1 father?] father, Q 6 *Fernese*,]  
*Fernese* Q 7 *Valerio* W: *Valeria* Q 12, 13 *Prose in Q*.  
13 come; come] come, come Q sir om G *Exit. G* 15 *Pont*] *pont*  
Q 16 *Fernese*.] *Fernese*, Q 17 *Exit*] *Exeunt Q*: *Exit hastily G*  
v. iv. 2 *Millaine*] *Millaine* Q 7 my W



Come flye with me, ile bring you to a quier,  
Whose consort being sweetned with your sound,  
The musique will be fuller, and each hower 10  
These cares shall banquet with your harmony, ô, ô, ô.  
〈He counts ouer the gold, and goes slowly to the hiding-place  
of his treasure.〉

〈Scæne 5.〉

Enter Christ〈ophero〉.

Chris. At the old priorie, behind Saint Foyes,  
That was the place of our appointment sure :  
I hope he will not make me loose my gold,  
And mock me to. Perhaps they are within : Ile knock.

Iaq. O God, the case is altered. 5

Christ. Rachel ? Angelo ? Signior Angelo ?

Iaq. Angels ? I where ? mine Angels ? wher's my gold ?  
Why Rachel ? O thou theeuish Canibal,  
Thou eat'st my flesh in stealing of my gold.

Chris. What gold ?

Iaq. What gold ? Rachel call help, come forth, 10  
Ile rip thine entrailes, but ile haue my gold :

Rachel why comes thou not ? I am vndone,  
Ay me she speakes not, thou hast slaine my child. Exit.

Chris. What is the man possest trow ? this is strange,  
Rachel I see is gone with Angelo : 15

Well, 〈well,〉 ile once againe vnto the priory,  
And see if I can meete them. Exit Christopher〈o〉.

Iaq. Tis too true, Enter Iaquies.  
Th'hast made away my child, thou hast my gold :

O what Hienna cald me out of dores ?  
The thiefe is gone : my gold 's gone, Rachel's gone, 20  
Al's gone ! saue I that spend my cries in vaine,  
But ile hence too, and die or end this paine. Exit.

v. iv. 9 sound, ] sound · Q v v. 4 to. Perhaps] to, perhaps Q  
9 eatest] eat'st Q Exit ] Exit Q 16 Well ile Q : Well, I will W  
17 Stage dir. Christophero W 18 thou W : how Q 19 dores ?]  
dores, Q 20 Rachel's] Rachels Q 21 gone ] gone ? Q



## 〈Scæne 6.〉

*Enter Iuniper, Onion, <in rich Suits, Iuniper drunk,>*

*Finio, Valentine.*

*Iuni.* Swo>nds, let me goe, hay catso, catch him aliue,  
I call, I call, boy, I come, I come sweet heart :

*Oni.* Page hold my rapier, while I hold my freind here.

*Valen.* O hecr 's a sweet metamorphosis, a cupple of  
5 buzzards turn'd to a paire of peacocks.

*Iuni.* Signior *Onion*, lend me thy boy to vnhang my rapier.

*On.* Signior *Iuniper* for once or so, but troth is, you must  
inuicgle, as I have done, my Lords page here, a poor folower  
10 of mine.

*Iuni.* Hei ho, your page then sha'not be super intendent  
vpon me? he shall not be addicted? he shall not be  
incident? he shall not be incident? he shall not be incident,  
shall he? *He foynes.*

15 *Fin.* O sweet signior *Iuniper*.

*Iuni.* Sbloud stand away princocks! do not aggrauate  
my ioy.

*Valen.* Nay good Maister *Onion*.

*Oni.* Nay and he haue the heart to draw my bloud, let  
20 him come.

*Iuni.* Ile slice you *Onion*, Ile slice you.

*Oni.* Ile cleave you *Iuniper*.

*Valen.* Why hold, hold, hough? what do you meane?

*Iuni.* Let him come *Ingle*, stand by boy, his allebaster  
25 blad cannot feare me.

*Fin.* Why heare you sweet signior, let not there be any

v. vi. SCÆNE 6] SCENE II. The street before count Ferneze's House. G  
Enter . . . Valentine.] Enter Juniper and Onion, richly dressed and drunk,  
followed by Finio and Valentine. G 1 Q begins a new line after  
aliue 2 boy,] boy. Q 7 rapier corr. Q: rapi er (perhaps  
rapier :) Q originally 9 here,] here Q 14 Stage dir. in Q at 15.  
foynes.] foynes Q 16 Iuni.] Iuni Q princocks! ] princocks? Q  
18 Maister] Maister. Q 21 you.] you? Q



contention, betweene my Maister & you, about me ; if you want a page sir, I can helpe you to a proper stripling.

*Iuni.* Canst thou ? what parentage ? what ancestry ? what genealogy is he ? 30

*Fin.* A french boy sir.

*Iuni.* Has he his French linguist ? has he ?

*Fin.* I, sir.

*Iuni.* Then transport him : her's a crusado for thee.

*Oni.* You will not imbecell my seruant with your beneuo- lence, will you ? hold boy, there's a portmantu for thee. 35

*Fin.* Lord sir.

*On.* Do take it boy, its three pounds ten shill<ings,> a portmantu.

*Fin.* I thanke your Lordship. Exit Finio. 40

*Iuni.* Sirrah *Ningle* : thou art a traueller, and I honour thee. I prithe discourse ! cherish thy muse ! discourse !

*Valen.* Of what sir ?

*Iuni.* Of what thou wilt. Sbloud ! hang sorrow !

*Oni.* Prithy *Valentine* assoile me one thing. 45

*Valen.* Tis pittty to soile you sir, your new apparell.

*On.* Masse thou saist true, aparel makes a man forget himself.

*Tun.* Begin, find your tongue *Ningle*.

*Val.* (Now will <I> gull these ganders rarely :) Gentle- men hauing in my peregrination through Mesopotamia. 50

*Iun.* Speake legibly, this gam's gone, without the great mercy of God, heres a fine tragedy indeed. Thers a Keisars royall. By Gods bid, nor King nor Keisar shall ?

v. vi. 27 me ;] me, Q 33 Ranged with 32 in Q 35 not] not, Q  
beneuolence,] beneuolence Q 36 you ?] you, Q boy, there's]  
boy their's Q 38 shall Q 42 discourse !] discourse ? Q  
muse !] muse ? Q discourse !] discourse ? Q 44 Sbloud !]  
Sbloud ? Q sorrow !] sorrow ? Q 50 *Aside not marked in Q*  
I W 50 Gentlemen begins a new line in Q 53 here's] Heres Q,  
beginning a new line Keisars] keisar W 54 By Gods begins a  
new line in Q



## Scène 7.

*Enter Finio, Pacue, Balt<hasar,> Martino.*

*Balt.* Where? where? *Finio*, where be they?

*Iun.* Go to, ile be with you anon.

*Oni.* O her's the page signior *Iuniper*.

*Iun.* What sayth monsieur *Onion*, boy?

5 *Fin.* What say you sir?

*Iuni.* Tread out boy.

*Fin.* Take vp, you meane sir.

*Iun.* Tread out I say, so, I thanke you, is this the boy?

*Pac.* We mounsieur.

10 *Iuni.* Who gaue you that name?

*Pac.* Gaue me de name, vat name?

*Oni.* He thought your name had been we, yong gentleman, you must do more then his legges can do for him, beare with him sir.

15 *Iuni.* Sirrah giue me instance of your cariage; youle scrue my turne, will you?

*Pac.* What turne? vpon the toe?

*Fin.* O signior no.

*Iuni.* Page will you follow me, ile giue you good exhibition.

20 *Pac.* By gar, shal not alone follow you, but shal leade you to.

*Oni.* Plaguie boy, he sooths his humour; these french villaines ha pockie wits.

*Iuni.* Here! disarm me! take my semitary.

25 *Valen.* O rare, this would be a rare man, and he had a little trauell. *Balthasar*, *Martino*, put off your shoocs, and bid him coble them.

v. vii. Stage dir. *Balt.* Q 1 they? they: Q 3 *Iuniper.*  
*Iuniper*: Q 4, 8 boy? boy. Q 5, 7 *Fin.* *Fin.*: Q 5 sir?  
 sir. Q 6 *Ranged with 5 in Q* 9 We] Aue Q: *Oui G* 10 *Ranged*  
 with 9 in Q name? name. Q 11 name? name: Q 12 been  
 we,] been, we Q: been *Oui G* gentleman W: gentlemen Q 15  
 cariage:] cariage? Q 17 *Ranged with 16 in Q* What turne?  
 What? turne Q toe?] toe. Q 22 humour,] humour? Q 24  
 Here!] Here? Q me!] me? Q 26 trauell] trauell, Q



*Iuni.* Freinds, friends, but pardon me for fellows, no more in occupation, no more in corporation, tis so pardon me, the case is altered, this is law, but ile stand to nothing. 30

*Pac.* Fat so me tinke.

*Iuni.* Well then God saue the dukes Maiesty, is this any harme now? speake, is this any harme now?

*Oni.* No, nor good neither, sbloud!

*Iuni.* Do you laugh at me? do you laugh at me? do 35 you laugh at me?

*Valen.* I sir, we do.

*Iunip.* You do indeed?

*Valen.* I indeed sir.

*Iuni.* Tis sufficient, Page carry my purse, dog me! *Exit.* 40

*Oni.* Gentlemen leaue him not, you see in what case he is, he is not in aduersity, his purse is full of money, leaue him not!  
*Exeunt.*

<Scæne 8.>

*Enter Angelo with Rachel.*

*Ang.* Nay gentle *Rachel*?

*Rach.* Away! forbear! vngentle *Angelo*,  
Touch not my body, with those impious hands,  
That like hot Irons seare my trembling heart,  
And make it hisse, at your disloyalty. 5

Was this your drift? to vse *Fernezes* name? *Enter Chamount*,  
Was he your fittest stale, ô wild dishonor! *Paulo Ferneze.*

(*Pau.* Stay noble sir.)

*Ang.* Sbloud how like a puppet do you talke now?  
Dishonor? what dishonor? come, come, foole, 10  
Nay then I see y'are peeuish. S'heart dishonor?  
To haue you to a priest and marry you,  
And put you in an honorable state?

v. vii. 31 Fat] Fait G 33 speake . now ?] speake . . now Q 34  
No.] No Q sbloud !] Sbloud ? Q 37, 39 Ranged with 36 and 38 in Q  
40 me !] me ? Q 43 not !] not ? Q v. viii. Scæne 8.] SCENE III.  
The open Country. G 2 Away ! forbear !] Away ? forbear ? Q  
6-7 Stage-dir. at 4-5 in Q 6 Q has the incorrect c.w. 'Ang' though  
the next page opens with l. 7 7 wild] vile G : wild Chicago Acting  
Edition 8 Ranged with 7 in Q the aside is not marked 12 to  
a priest] a topriest Q 13 state ?] state. Q



*Rach.* To marry me? ô heauen, can it be,  
 15 That men should liue with such vnfeeling soules,  
 Without or touch of conscience or religion,  
 Or that their warping appetites should spoile  
 Those honor'd formes, that the true scale of friendship  
 Had set vpon their faces?

*Ange.* Do you heare?  
 20 What needs all this? say, will you haue me, or no?

*Rach.* I'le haue you gone, and leaue me, if you would.

*Ange.* Leaue you? I was accurst to bring you hither,  
 And make so faire an offer to a foole.  
 A pox vpon you, why should you be coy,  
 25 What good thing haue you in you to be proud of?  
 Are y' any other then a beggars daughter?  
 Because you haue beauty? O Gods light a blast.  
 (*Pau. I Angelo.*)

*Ange.* You scornfull baggage,  
 30 I lou'd thee not so much, but now I hate thee.

*Rach.* Vpon my knees, you heauenly powers, I thanke you,  
 That thus haue tam'd his wild affections.

*Ange.* (This will not do, I must to her againe.)  
*Rachel*, ô that thou sawst my heart, or didst behold  
 35 The place from whence that scalding sigh euented.

*Rachel*, by Iesu I love thee as my soule,

*Rachel*, sweet *Rachel*.

*Rach.* What, againe returnd  
 Vnto this violent passion?

*Ange.* Do but heare me,  
 By heauen I loue you *Rachel*.

*Rach.* Pray forbear,  
 40 O that my Lord *Ferneze* were but here.

*Ange.* Sbloud and he were, what would he do?

v. viii. 14 be,] be? Q 16 of conscience or J. P. Collier: or  
 conscience of Q 19 faces?] faces. Q 19-20 Do...no? one line  
 in Q. 21 I'le] I'll Q 27 beauty?] beauty. Q 28, 33 *Asides*  
 not marked in Q 29-30 One line in Q 33 againe.] againe, Q  
 34 behold] behold, Q 36-40 *As prose in Q* 38 passion?] passion?  
 passion. Q 40 O] ô Q 41 do?] do. Q



*Pau.* This would he do base villaine :

*<He flings Angelo off.>*

*Rach.*

My deere Lord,

*Pau.* Thou monster, euen the soule of trechery !

O what dishonord title of reproch,

May my tongue spit in thy deserued face ? 45

Me thinkes my very presence should inuert

The steeled organs of those traytrous eyes,

To take into thy heart, and pierce it through :

Turn'st thou them on the ground ? wretch, dig a graue,  
With their sharp points, to hide th<y> abhorred head ! 50

Sweet loue, thy wrongs haue beene too violent

Since my departure from thee, I perceiue :

But now true comfort shall againe appeare,

And like an armed angell guard thee safe

From all th' assaults of couer'd villany. 55

Come Mounsieur, let vs go, & leaue this wretch

To his despaire.

*Ange.* My noble <Lord> *Ferneze.*

*Pau.* What, canst thou speake to me, and not thy tongue,

Forc't with the torment of thy guilty soule,

Breake that infected circle of thy mouth 60

Like the rude clapper of a crazed bell ?

I, <I,> that in thy bosome lodg'd my soule,

With all her traine of secrets, thinking them

To be as safe, and richly entertain'd

As in a Princes court, or tower of strength, 65

And thou to proue a traitor to my trust,

And basely to expose it, ô this world !

*Ange.* My honorable Lord.

*Pau.* The very owle,

Whom other birds do stare & wonder at,

Shall hoot at thee, and snakes in euery bush 70

v. viii. 42 Stage dir. *Flings him off.* G 46 inuert] inuert, Q 50

thy] th' Q head ?] head ; Q 55 couer'd] couered Q 56-7

Come . . . despaire. *one line in Q* 56 let vs] let us G : let's Q 57

Lord G 58 What,] What Q 59 soule,] soule Q 61 bell ?] bell. Q

62 I, I G 64 entertain'd] entertained, Q 68-9 The very . .

wonder at, *one line in Q*



Shall deafe thine eares with their—

*Cha.* Nay good my Lord,  
Giue end vnto your passions.

*Ange.* You shall see,  
I will redceme your lost opinion.

*Rach.* My Lord belceue him.

*Cha.* Come, be satisfied,  
75 Sweet Lord you know our haste, let vs to horse,  
The time for my engag'd returne is past ;  
Be friends againe, take him along with you.

*Pau.* Come signior *Angelo*, hereafter proue more true.

*Exeunt.*

### 〈Scæne 9.〉

*Enter Count Fernese, Maximillian, Francesco.*

*Count.* Tut *Maximillian*, for your honor'd selfe,  
I am perswaded, but no words shall turne  
The edge of purposd vengeance on that wretch,  
Come, bring him forth to execution.

*Enter Camillo bound, with Seruants.*

5 Ile hang him for my sonne, he shall not scape,  
Had he an hundred liues : Tell me vile slaue,  
Think'st thou I loue my sonne ? is he my flesh ?  
Is he my bloud, my life ? and shall all these  
Be torturd for thy sake, and not reueng'd ?

10 Trusse vp the villaine.

*Max.* My Lord, there is no law to confirme this action.  
Tis dishonorable.

*Count.* Dishonorable ? *Maximillian* ?

It is dishonorable in *Chamout*,

15 The day of his prefixt returne is past,

v. viii. 71-3 Nay . . . opinion as *prose in Q* 74-6 Verse wrongly  
divided in *Q* at haste and past 76 engag'd] engaged *Q* 78  
signior om. *G* v. ix Scæne 9.] SCENE IV. A room in count Fernese's  
House. *G* 4 Enter. c.w. in *Q*. Stage dir. with *Servants*.] with *Servants*. *Q*  
7 Think'st *W*. Thinkest *Q* 8-10 *Prose in Q* 12-13 Tis . . .  
*Maximillian* ? one line in *Q*. 13-16 The *Count's* speech as *prose in*  
*Q*. but My Lord, my Lord ranged with the final words



And he shall pay for it.

*Cam.* My Lord, my Lord,  
Vse your extreamest vengeance, ile be glad  
To suffer ten times more, for such a friend.

*Count.* O resolute and peremptory wretch !

*Fran.* My honor'd Lord, let vs intreat a word. 20

*Count.* Ile heare no more, I say he shall not liue,  
My selfe will do it. Stay, what forme is this  
Stands betwixt him and me, and holds my hand ?  
What miracle is this ? tis my owne fancy,  
Carues this impression in me, my soft nature, 25  
That euer hath retaind such foolish pittie,  
Of the most abiect creatures misery,  
That it abhorres it. What a child am I  
To haue a child ? Ay me, my son, my son.

<Scæne 10.>

*Enter Christophero.*

*Chris.* O my deere loue, what is become of thee ?  
What vniust absence layest thou on my brest,  
Like waights of lead, when swords are at my backe,  
That run me th<ough with thy vnkind flight ?  
My gentle disposition waxeth wild, 5  
I shall run frantike, ô my loue, my loue.

<Scæne 11.>

*Enter Iaques.*

*Iaq.* My gold, my gold, my life, my soule, my heauen,  
What is become of thee ? see, ile impart  
My miserable losse to my good Lord,  
Let me haue search my Lord, my gold is gone.

*Count.* My sonne, *Christophero*, thinkst <thou> it possible.

v. ix. 16 for it G: fort Q 20 honor'd] honored Q word] wor d  
Q 23 hand ?] hand. Q 28 it. What] it, what Q v. x. 4  
thorough W flight ?] flight, Q v. xi. 5 thou W



I euer shall behold his face againe ?

*Chris.* O father wher's my loue, were you so carelesse  
To let an vnthrifft steale away your child ?

*Iaq.* I know your Lordship may find out my gold,  
10 For Gods sake pittie me, iustice, sweet Lord.

*Count.* Now they haue yong *Chamount*, *Christophoro*,  
Surely they neuer will restore my sonne ?

*Chris.* Who would haue thought you could haue beene  
so carelesse

To loose your onely daughter ?

*Iaq.* Who would thinke,

15 That looking to my gold with such hares eyes,  
That euer open, I euen when th(e)y sleepe,  
I thus should loose my gold ? My noble Lord,  
What saics your Lordship ?

*Count.* O my sonne, my sonne.

*Chris.* My deerest *Rachel*.

*Iaq.* My most hony gold.

20 *Count.* Heare me *Christophoro*.

*Chris.* Nay heare me *Iaques*.

*Iaq.* Heare me most honor'd Lord.

*Max.* What rule is here ?

*Count.* O God that we should let *Chamount* escape.

*Chris.* I and that *Rachel*, such a vertuous mayd,  
Should be thus stolne away.

*Iaq.* And that my gold,

25 Being so hid in earth, should bee found out.

*Max.* O confusion of languages, & yet no tower of *Babel* !

*Enter Aurelia, Phœnixella.*

*Fran.* Ladies, beshrew me, if you come not fit  
To make a iangling consort, will you laugh  
To see three constant passions ?

v. xi. 6 againe ?] againe. Q 8 child ?] child. Q 11 *Chamount*,  
*Christophoro*,] *Chamount* ? *Christophoro* ? Q 12 sonne ?] sonne. Q  
13-14 *Christophoro's* speech as prose in Q 14 daughter ?] daughter. Q  
16 they W 17-18 I thus . . . Lordship as prose in Q 17 gold ?  
My] gold, my Q 19 *Rachel*.] *Rachel* ? Q 23-5, 27-9, 37-8 *Prose*  
in Q 26 *Stage dir.* after 22 in Q 29 passions ?] passions. Q



*Max.* Stand by, I will vrge them : sweet *Count*, will you 30  
be comforted ?

*Count.* It cannot be  
But he is handled the most cruelly,  
That euer any noble prisoner was.

*Max.* Steward, go cheere my Lord.

*Chris.* Well, if *Rachel* tooke her flight willingly ? 35

*Max.* Sirrah, speake you touching your daughters flight.

*Iaq.* O that I could so soone forget to know  
The thiefe againe, that had my gold, my gold.

*Max.* Is not this pure ?

*Count.* Q thou base wretch, ile drag thee through the 40  
streets,

And as a monster, make thee wondred at,  
How now ? *Enter Balthasar, and whispers with him.*

*Phæn.* Sweet Gentleman, how too vnworthily  
Art thou thus tortured ? braue *Maximillian*,  
Pitty the poore youth, and appease my father. 45

*Count.* How, my sonne returnd ? O *Maximillian*,  
*Francisco*, daughters ? bid him enter here.  
Dost thou not mocke me ?

<Scæne 12.>

*Enter Chamount, <Paulo> Ferneze, Rachel, Angelo.*

<*Count*>. O my deere *Paulo* welcome.

*Max.* My Lord *Chamount* ?

*Cha.* My *Gasper*.

*Chris.* *Rachel*.

*Iaq.* My gold *Rachel* ? my gold ?

*Count.* Some body bid the beggar cease his noise.

*Chris.* O signior *Angelo*, would you deceiue  
Your honest friend, that simply trusted you ? 5

v. xi. 30 them ] them, Q comforted ?] comforted. Q 31-2 One  
line in Q 34 Lord ] Lord, Q 36 flight ] flight ? Q 39 Ranged  
with 38 in Q pure ?] pure · Q 42 Ranged with 41 in Q How now ?]  
how now. Q Stage dir. after 40 in Q 43 Gentleman,] Gentleman ? Q  
44 tortured ?] tortured, Q 45 father ] father, Q 48 With xii. 1 in  
Q v. xii. 1-2 Divided in Q after welcome, *Gasper*, gold



Well *Rachel*: I am glad tho'art here againe.

*Ang.* I faith she is not for you steward.

*Iaq.* I <do> beseech you maddam vrge your father.

*Phæ.* I will anon; good *Iaques* be content.

10 *Aur.* Now God a mercy, Fortune, and sweet Venus,

Let *Cupid* do his part, and all is well.

*Phæ.* Me thinks my heart's in heauen with this comfort.

*Cha.* Is this the true *Italian* courtesie,

*Ferneze* were you torturd thus in France?

15 By my soules safety.

*Count.* My most noble Lord?

I do beseech your Lordship.

<He kneels, Chamont raises him.>

*Cham.* Honor'd *Count*,

Wrong not your age with flexure of a knee,

I do impute it to those cares and griefes,

That did torment you in your absent sonne.

20 *Count.* O worthy gentlemen, I am ashamd

That my extreame affection to my sonne,

Should giue my honour so vncur'd a maime,

But my first sonne, being in *Vicensa* lost.

*Cha.* How in *Vicensa*? lost you a sonne there?

About what time my Lord?

25 *Count.* O the same night,

Wherein your noble father tooke the towne.

*Cha.* How long's that since my Lord? can you remember?

*Count.* Tis now well nie vpon the twentieth yeare.

*Cha.* And how old was he then?

*Count.* I cannot tel,

30 Betweene the yeares of three and foure, I take it.

*Cha.* Had he no speciall note in his attire,

Or otherwise, that you can call to mind?

v. xii. 9 anon;] anon? Q 10 mercy, Fortune,] mercy fortune Q  
13 courtesie,] courtesie. Q 14-15 *Ferneze*... safety one line in Q 15  
By] by Q 15-16 My... Lordship one line in Q 15 Stage dir. *Kneels*. G  
16-17 Honor'd... knee one line in Q 16 Honor'd] Honored Q Stage  
dir. *Raises him*. G 22 maime] maim W: maine Q 25-6 O... town  
as prose in Q 25 O] O' *Chicago Acting Edition* 27 remember?] re-  
member. Q 29-30 I cannot... it as prose in Q 32 mind?] mind. Q



Count. I cannot well remember his attire,  
But I haue often heard his mother say :  
He had about his necke a tablet, 35  
Giuen to him by the Emperour *Sigismund*,  
His Godfather, with this inscription,  
Vnder the figure of a siluer Globe :  
*In minimo, mundus.*

Cha. How did you call  
Your sonne my Lord ?

Count. Camillo Lord Chamount. 40

Cha. Then <now> no more my *Gasper*, but *Camillo*,  
Take notice of your father : gentlemen,  
Stand not amazd ; here is a tablet,  
With that inscription, found about his necke  
That night, and in *Vicenza* by my father, 45  
(Who being ignorant, what name he had,  
Christned him *Gasper*) nor did I reueale  
This secret till this hower to any man.

Count. O happy reuelation ! ô blest hower !  
O my *Camillo* !

Phœ. O strange my brother !

Fran. Maximilian ! 50

Behold how the abundance of his ioy  
Drownds him in teares of gladnesse.

Count. O my boy !  
Forgiue thy fathers late austerity.

Max. My Lord, I deliuered as much before, but your  
honour would not be perswaded. I will hereafter giue more 55  
obseruance to my visions, I drempt of this.

v. xii. 36 *Sigismund*,] *Sigismund*. Q 38-9 Vnder . . . *mundus* one  
line in Q 39 In W: En Q 39-40 How . . . Lord one line in Q  
40 Count.] Count Q 41 *Gasper*,] *Gasper* ? Q 42 father :  
gentlemen,] father, gentlemen : Q 43 amazd ;] amazd ? Q 44  
inscription,] inscription ? Q 46 had,] had) Q 47 *Gasper*]  
*Gasper*, Q reueale] reueale, Q 49-50 O . . . *Camillo* one line in Q  
49 reuelation ?] reuelation ? Q hower !] hower ? Q 50 O my] ô my Q  
brother !] brother. Q Maximilian !] Maximilian ? Q 50-1  
*Maximilian* . . . ioy one line in Q 52-3 O . . . austerity one line in Q  
boy !] boy ? Q 53 austerity.] austerity : Q 54 Lord,] Lord ? Q  
55 perswaded.] perswaded, Q 56 visions,] visions ? Q



*Iaq.* I can be still no longer, my good Lord,  
Do a poore man some grace mongst all your ioyes.

*Count.* Why whats the matter *Iaques* ?

*Iaq.* I am robd, I am robd,

60 I am vndone my Lord, robd and vndone :  
A heape of thirty thousand golden crownes,  
Stolne from me in one minute, and I feare :  
By her confedracy, that calms me father,  
But she is none of mine : therefore sweet Lord,  
65 Let her be tortur'd to confesse the truth.

*Max.* More wonders yet.

*Count.* How *Iaques*, is not *Rachel* then thy daughter ?

*Iaq.* No, I disclaime in her, I spit at her,  
She is a harlot, and her customers,  
79 Your sonne, this gallant, and your steward here,  
Haue all been partners with her in my spoile ;  
No lesse then thirty thousand.

*Count.* *Iaques, Iaques,*  
This is impossible, how shouldst thou come  
To the possession of so huge a heape :  
75 Being always a knowen begger ?

*Iaq.* Out alas,  
I haue betraid my selfe with my owne tongue,  
The case is altered.

*Count.* <Some> one stay him there.

*Max.* What, meanes he to depart ? *Count Fernese*, vpon  
my soule [this begger,] this begger is a counterfait : vrge  
80 him. Didst thou loose gold ?

*Iaq.* O no I lost no gold.

*Max.* Said I not true ?

v. xii. 59 *Iaques* ?] *Iaques*. Q 59-60 I . . . and vndone one line in Q  
64 she is G: she's Q mine:] mine, Q Lord,] Lord: Q 65 tortur'd]  
tortured Q 67 *Iaques*,] *Iaques* Q daughter?] daughter. Q 70 sonne,]  
sonne Q 71-2 Haue . . . thousand prose in Q 71 spoile;]  
spoile? Q 72-4 *Iaques* . . . heape as prose in Q 73 impossible]  
impossible Q come] come? Q 75 begger?] begger. Q 75-6  
Out . . . tongue one line in Q 77 Some W 78 What,] What Q  
depart?] depart, Q 80 him. Didst] him? didst Q 81 Ranged  
with 80 in Q 82 true?] true. Q



Count. How? didst thou first loose thirty thousand  
crowns,

And now no gold? was *Rachel* first thy child,  
And is shee now no daughter? sirra *Iaques*, 85  
You know how farre our *Millaine* lawes extend,  
For punishment of liars.

*Iaq.* I my Lord!  
(What shall I doe? I haue no starting hols!)  
Mounsieur *Chamount* stand you my honor'd Lord.

*Cha.* For what old man?

*Iaq.* Ill gotten goods ne'er thriue, 90  
I plaid the thiefe, and now am robd my selfe:  
I am not as I seeme, *Iaques de prie*,  
Nor was I borne a begger as I am:  
But sometime steward to your noble father.

*Cha.* What *Melun*, that robd my fathers treasure, stole 95  
my sister?

*Iaq.* I, I, that treasure is lost, but *Isabell*  
Your beautious sister here suruiues in *Rachel*:  
And therefore on my knes;

*Max.* Stay *Iaques* stay! the case still alters? 100

*Count.* Faire *Rachel* sister to the Lord *Chamount*?

*Ang.* Steward your cake is dow, as well as mine.

*Pau.* I see that honours flames cannot be hid,  
No more then lightening in the blackest cloud.

*Max.* Then sirra tis true, you haue lost this gold? 105

*Iaq.* I worthy signior, thirty thousand crownes.

*Count.* Masse who was it told me, that a couple of my  
men, were become gallants of late?

*Fran.* Marry twas I my Lord, my man told me.

v. xii. 84 child,] child : Q 85 daughter?] daughter, Q 86-7  
You . . . liars as prose in Q 87 liars.] liars, Q 87-8 I . . . hols! one  
line in Q : aside not marked 87 *Iaq.*] *Iaq.* Q Lord!] Lord? Q  
89 honor'd] honored Q 90 ne'er W : neuer Q 95 *Melun*,] *Melun* Q  
97-9 Prose in Q 97 treasure is] treasure's W 98 suruiues] seruiues  
Q 99 knes;] knes? Q 100 stay!] stay? Q 101 *Chamount* ?]  
*Chamount.* Q 105 true,] true? Q gold?] gold, Q 108 men c.w.  
in Q late?] late. Q 109 Lord,] Lord? Q me.] me? C



## 〈Scæne 13.〉

*Enter Onion and Iuniiper.**Max.* How now, what pagent is this ?*Iuni.* Come signior *Onion*, lets not be ashamd to appeare. Keepe state ! looke not ambiguous now !*Oni.* Not I while I am in this sute.5 *Iuni.* Lordings, equiualence to you all.*Oni.* We thought good, to be so good, as see you gentlemen.*Max.* What ? mounsieur *Onion* ?*Oni.* How dost thou good captaine ?10 *Count.* What, are my hinds turnd gentlemen ?*Oni.* Hinds sir ? Sbloud and that word will beare action, it shall cost vs a thousand pound a peece, but weele be reuenged.*Iuni.* Wilt thou sell thy Lordship *Count* ?15 *Count.* What ? pcasants purchase Lordships ?*Iuni.* Is that any Nouels sir ?*Max.* O transmutation of elements, it is certified you had pages.20 *Iuni.* I sir, but it is knowen they proued ridiculus, they did pilfer, they did purloine, they did procrastinate our purses, for the which wasting of our stocke, we haue put them to the stocks.*Count.* And thither shall you two 〈go〉 presently, These be the villaines, that stole *Iaques* gold,

25 Away with them, and set them with their men.

*Max.* *Onion* you will now bee peeld.*Fran.* The case is alterd now.*Oni.* Good my Lord, good my Lord :

v. xiii. 1 now,] now Q this ?] this, Q 3 appeare.] appeare, Q  
 Keepe state begins a new line in Q now !] now ? Q 6 gentle-  
 men ] gentlemen Q 9 captaine ?] captaine. Q 10 gentlemen ?]  
 gentlemen. Q 16 sir ?] sir Q 18 pages.] pages : Q 24 *Iaques*  
 gold] *Iaques*gold Q 27 *Fran.*] *Fran.* : Q now.] now Q



*Iuni.* Away scoundrell ! dost thou feare a little elocution ? shall we be confiscate now ? shal we droope now ? 30  
shall we be now in helogabolus ?

*Oni.* Peace, peace, leaue thy gabbling !

*Count.* Away, away with them ; whats this they prate ?

*Exeunt <Seruants> with Iuniper and Onion.*

Keepe the knaues sure, strickt inquisition  
Shall presently be made for *Iaques* gold, 35  
To be disposd at pleasure of *Chamount*.

*Cha.* She is your owne Lord *Paulo*, if your father  
Giue his consent.

*Ang.* How now *Christofero* ? The case is altered.

*Chris.* With you, as well as me, I am content sir. 40

*Count.* With all my heart ! and in exchange of her,  
(If with your faire acceptance it may stand)  
I tender my *Aurelia* to your loue.

*Cha.* I take her from your Lordship, with all thanks,  
And blesse the hower wherein I was made prisoner : 45  
For the fruition of this present fortune,  
So full of happy and vnlookt for ioyes.

*Melun*, I pardon thee, and for the treasure,  
Recouer it, and hold it as thine owne :  
It is enough for me to see my sister 50  
Liue in the circle of *Fernezes* armes,  
My friend, the sonne of such a noble father,  
And my vnworthy selfe rapt aboue all,  
By being the Lord to so diuine a dame.

*Max.* Well, I will now sweare the case is altered. Lady 55  
fare you well, I will subdue my affections. Maddam (as for  
you) you are a profest virgin, and I will be silent. My  
honorable Lord *Ferneze*, it shall become you at this time  
not be frugall, but bounteous, and open handed, your

v. xiii. 29 scoundrell ? Q 30-1 Shall we be confiscate  
and Shall we be now *begin new lines in Q* 31 helogabolus ?] heloga-  
bolus : Q 32 gabbling !] gabbling ? Q 33 prate ?] prate, Q Stage dir.  
*Servants* G 36 *Chamount*] *Chamouni* Q 41 heart !] heart ? Q  
50 sister] sister . Q 56 affections.] affections, Q 57 silent.  
My] silent, my Q



60 fortune hath been so to you. Lord *Chamount*, you are now  
 no stranger, you must be welcome, you haue a faire, amiable  
 and splendi<dio>us Lady: but signior *Paulo*, signior  
*Camillo*, I know you valiant; be louing. Lady I must be  
 better knowne to you. Signiors for you, I passe you not:  
 65 though I let you passe; for in truth I passe not of you.  
 Louers to your nuptials, Lordings to your dances. March  
 faire al, for a faire March, is worth a kings ransome.

*Exeunt.*

*The end.*

v. xiii. 60 to you. Lord *Chamount*,] to you Lord *Chamount*. Q You  
 are begins a new paragraph in Q 61 faire,] faire Q 62 splendidous  
 H. C. Hart 63 valiant;] valiant? Q louing.] louing: Q 64  
 you Signiors] you, signiors Q 65 you. Louers] you, louers Q 66  
 dances.] dances, Q 68 *Exeunt*] *Exeunt* Q



---

EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR

The Original Version of 1598,  
from the Quarto of 1601

---







## THE TEXT

THIS play is extant in two forms—the original version issued in Quarto in 1601, and the revised version of the 1616 Folio. Two entries relating to the Quarto are found in the Stationers' Register in 1600. On August 4, 'Euery man in his humour / a booke' is entered along with *As You Like It*, *King Henry the Fifth*, and *Much Ado about Nothing* as one of 'My lord chamberlens mens plaies', the publication of which was 'to be staied'. The company was responsible for this entry, probably, as Mr. A. W. Pollard suggests,<sup>1</sup> in order to secure the copyright and checkmate a possible pirate. Ten days later it was entered for Cuthbert Burby and Walter Burre.

14. Augusti.

Master Burby. Entred for yeir copie vnder the handes of  
Walter Burre. master PASVILL (= Pasfield) and ye Wardens.  
a booke called *Euery man in his humour*. vjd  
(Arber's *Transcript*, III. 169)

The play appeared next year with Burre's imprint.

Collation: A<sup>2</sup>, B-L<sup>4</sup>, M<sup>2</sup>, with the title on A, 'The number and names of *the Actors*' on A<sup>2</sup>, and the text beginning on B.

The copies in the British Museum, the Bodleian, and the Dyce Library have been collated in preparing the present text. Three printers' variants have been noted:

III. iii 56	abruptly	B.M. C. 34. c. 59, Bodl. Malone 229, 213, Dyce copies.
	abruptly?	B.M. 162. c. 70.
IV. iii 109	the.	B M. C. 34. c. 59.
	thee.	other copies.
V. iii. 12	messago	B M. copies.
	message	Bodleian & Dyce copies.

Purely typographical errors, such as turned letters and the use of a wrong fount, have been silently corrected. A few textual corrections have been introduced from the Folio version (marked 'F' in the critical notes).

<sup>1</sup> See *Shakespeare's Fight with the Pirates*, pp. 45-6.



There have been three reprints of the Quarto. The first, which is not very accurate, was issued by Dr. Carl Grahnan in the *Shakespeare-Jahrbuch*, 1902, vol. xxxviii, and was made from the two Museum copies. Dr. W. W. Greg edited a sound text in Bang's *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas*, 1905, vol. x, from the Bodleian copy, checked with one copy in the British Museum. Dr. H. Holland Carter edited the Quarto and Folio texts in parallel columns for the Yale Studies in English, 1921, no. lii. His text of the Quarto was taken from a copy belonging to Mr. William Augustus White, and checked with a second copy in the same collection. He records three variants which are not found in the five copies collated for the present edition: 'stockada' for 'stockado' in i. iii. 219, 'Phœbus' in roman, instead of italic, *ibid.* 229; and 'wound' not followed by a comma in iii. ii. 79. In this last example Dr. Carter notes that the paper of one copy is worn; by a curious coincidence this defect is found also in one of the Dyce copies.



# EVERY MAN IN his Humor.

As it hath beene fundry times  
*publickly acted by the right*  
Honorable the Lord Cham-  
*berlaine his servants.*

---

Written by BEN. JOHNSON.

---

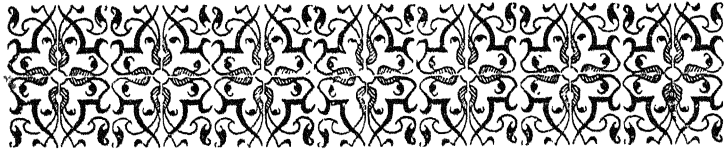
*Quod non dant proceres, dabit Histrio.*

*Haud tamen inuidias vati, quem pulpita pascunt.*

---

Imprinted at London for *Walter Burre*, and are to  
be sold at his shoppe in *Paules Church-yard*.  
1601.





☞ The number and names of  
*the Actors.*

---

*Lorenzo senior.*

*Giulliano.*

*Prospero.*

*Lorenzo iunior.*

*Thorello.*

*Biancha.*

*Stephano.*

*Hesperida.*

*Doctor Clement.*

*Peto.*

*Bobadilla.*

*Matheo.*

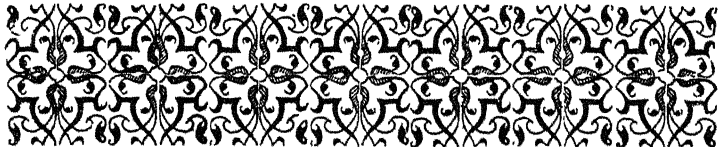
*Musco.*

*Pizo.*

*Cob.*

*Tib.*

---





# EVERY MAN

in his Humor.

---

## ACTVS PRIMVS, SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter Lorenzo di Pazzi Senior, Musco.*

**N**OW trust me, here's a goodly day toward. *Musco*,  
 Call vp my sonne *Lorenzo* : bid him rise :  
 Tell him, I haue some businesse to imploy him in.

*Mus.* I will, sir, presently.

*Lore.se.* But heare you, sirrah ;

5

If he be at study, disturbe him not.

*Mus.* Very good, sir.

*Exit Musco.*

*Lore.se.* How happy would I estimate my selfe,

Could I (by any meane) retyre my sonne,  
 From one vayne course of study he affects ?

10

He is a scholler (if a man may trust  
 The lib'rall voyce of double-toung'd report)  
 Of deare account, in all our *Academies*.

Yet this position must not breede in me  
 A fast opinion, that he cannot erre.

15

My selfe was once a *student*, and indeede  
 Fed with the selfe-same humor he is now,  
 Dreaming on nought but idle *Poetrie* :

But since, Experience hath awakt mysprit's, *Enter Stephano.*

And reason taught them, how to comprehend

20

The soueraigne vse of study. What, cousin *Stephano* ?

What newes with you, that you are here so earely ?

*Steph.* Nothing: but eene come to see how you doe, vncle.

*Lore.se.* That's kindly done, you are welcome, cousin.



25 *Steph.* I, I know that sir, I would not haue come else :  
how doeth my cousin, vncle ?

*Lore.se.* Oh well, well, goe in and see ; I doubt hee's  
scarce stirring yet.

*Steph.* Vncle, afore I goe in, can you tell me, and he haue  
30 e're a booke of the sciences of hawking and hunting ? I  
would fayne borrow it.

*Lor.* Why I hope you will not a hawking now, will you ?

*Steph.* No wusse ; but ile practise against next yeare :  
I haue bought me a hawke, and bels and all ; I lacke no-  
35 thing but a booke to keepe it by.

*Lor.* Oh most ridiculous.

*Steph.* Nay looke you now, you are angrie vncle, why you  
know, and a man haue not skill in hawking and hunting now  
a daies, ile not giue a rush for him ; hee is for no gentlemans  
40 company, and (by Gods will) I scorne it I, so I doe, to bee a  
consort for euerie *hum-drum* ; hang them *scroiles*, ther's  
nothing in them in the world, what doe you talke on it ?  
a gentleman must shew himselfe like a gentleman, vncle  
I pray you be not angrie, I know what I haue to do I trow,  
45 I am no nouice.

*Lor.* Go to, you are a prodigal, and selfe-wild foole,  
Nay neuer looke at me, it's I that speake,  
Take't as you will, ile not flatter you.

What ? haue you not meanes inow to wast

50 That which your friends haue left you, but you must  
Go cast away your money on a *Buzzard*,  
And know not how to keepe it when you haue done ?

Oh it's braue, this will make you a gentleman,  
Well Cosen well, I see you are e'ene past hope

55 Of all reclaime ; I so, now you are told on it,  
You looke another way.

*Steph.* What would you haue me do trow ?

*Lor.* What would I haue you do ? mary  
Learne to be wise, and practise how to thriue,  
60 That I would haue you do, and not to spend



Your crownes on euerie one that humors you :  
I would not haue you to intrude your selfe  
In euerie gentlemans societie,  
Till their affections or your owne desert,  
Do worthily inuite you to the place. 65  
For he thats so respectlesse in his course,  
Oft sels his reputation vile and cheape.  
Let not your cariage, and behauiour taste  
Of affectation, lest while you pretend  
To make a blaze of gentrie to the world 70  
A little puffe of scorne extinguish it,  
And you be left like an vnsauorie snuffe,  
Whose propertie is onely to offend.  
Cosen, lay by such superficiall formes,  
And entertaine a perfect reall substance, 75  
Stand not so much on your gentility,

*Enter a seruimgman.*

But moderate your expences (now at first)  
As you may keepe the same proportion still.  
Beare a low saile : soft who's this comes here.

*Ser.* Gentlemen, God saue you. 80

*Step.* Welcome good friend, we doe not stand much vpon  
our gentilitie ; yet I can assure you mine vncle is a man of a  
thousand pounce land a yeare ; hee hath but one sonne in  
the world ; I am his next heire, as simple as I stand here, if  
my cosen die : I haue a faire liuing of mine owne too beside. 85

*Ser.* In good time sir.

*Step.* In good time sir ? you do not flout, do you ?

*Ser.* Not I sir.

*Step.* And you should, here be them can perceiue it, and 90  
that quickly too : Go too, and they can giue it againe  
soundly, and need be.

*Ser.* Why sir let this satisfie you. Good faith I had no  
such intent.

*Step.* By God, and I thought you had sir, I would talke 95  
with you.

*Ser.* So you may sir, and at your pleasure.



*Step.* And so I would sir, and you were out of mine vnclcs ground, I can tell you.

100 *Lor.* Why how now cosen, will this nere be left ?

*Step.* Horson base fellow, by Gods lid, and't were not for shame, I would.

*Lor.se.* What would you do ? you peremptorie Asse, And yowle not be quiet, get you hence.

105 You see, the gentleman contaynes himselfe

In modest limits, giuing no reply

To your vnseason'd rude comparatiues ;

Yet yowle demeane your selfe, without respect

Eyther of duty, or humanity.

110 Goe get you in : fore God I am asham'd *Exit Steph.*

Thou hast a kinsmans interest in me.

*Ser.* I pray you, sir, is this *Pazzi* house ?

*Lor.se.* Yes mary is it, sir.

*Ser.* I should enquire for a gentleman here, one *Signior Lorenzo di Pazzi* ; doe you know any such, sir, I pray you ?

*Lore.se.* Yes, sir : or else I should forget my selfe.

*Ser.* I crye you mercy, sir, I was requested by a gentleman of Florence (hauing some occasion to ride this way) to  
120 deliuer you this letter.

*Lor.se.* To me, sir ? What doe you meane ? I pray you remember your curt'sy.

*To his deare and most elected friend, Signior Lorenzo di Pazzi.*

What might the gentlemans name be, sir, that sent it ? Nay,  
125 pray you be couer'd.

*Ser.* Signior *Prospero*.

*Lore.se.* Signior *Prospero* ? A young gentleman of the family of *Strozzi*, is he not ?

*Ser.* I, sir, the same : Signior *Thorello*, the rich Florentine  
130 merchant, married his sister.

*Lore.se.* You say very true. *Musco.* *Enter Musco.*

*Mus.* Sir.

*Lore.se.* Make this Gentleman drinke, here.



I pray you goe in, sir, and't please you. *Exeunt.*

Now (without doubt) this letter's to my sonne. 135

Well: all is one: Ile be so bold as reade it,

Be it but for the *styles* sake, and the *phrase* ;

Both which (I doe presume) are excellent,

And greatly varied from the vulgar forme,

If *Prospero's* inuention gaue them life. 140

How now? what stuffe is here?

*Sirha* Lorenzo, I muse we cannot see thee at Florence :  
S'blood, I doubt, Apollo hath got thee to be his Ingle, that thou  
commest not abroad, to visit thine old friends : well, take heede  
of him ; hee may doe somewhat for his houshold seruants, or 145  
so ; But for his Retayners, I am sure, I haue knowne some of  
them, that haue followed him, three, foure, fve yeere together,  
scorning the world with their bare heeles, & at length bene glad  
for a shift, (though no cleane shift) to lye a whole winter, in  
halfe a sheete, cursing Charles wayne, and the rest of the 150  
starres intolerably. But (quis contra diuos?) well ; *Sirha*,  
sweete villayne, come and see me ; but spend one minute in my  
company, and 'tis inough : I thinke I haue a world of good  
Iests for thee : oh *sirha*, I can shew thee two of the most perfect,  
rare, & absolute true Gulls, that euer thou saw'st, if thou wilt 155  
come. S'blood, inuent some famous memorable lye, or other,  
to flap thy father in the mouth withall : thou hast bene father  
of a thousand, in thy dayes, thou could'st be no Poet else : any  
sciruy roguish excuse will serue ; say thou com'st but to fetch  
wooll for thine Inke-horne. And then too, thy Father will say 160  
thy wits are a wooll-gathering. But it's no matter ; the worse,  
the better. Any thing is good inough for the old man. *Sirha*,  
how if thy Father should see this now? what would he thinke  
of me? Well, (how euer I write to thee) I reuerence him in my  
soule, for the generall good all Florence deliuers of him. 165  
Lorenzo, I coniure thee (by what, let me see) by the depth of our  
loue, by all the strange sights we haue seene in our dayes, (I or  
nights eyther) to come to me to Florence this day. Go to, you  
shall come, and let your Muses goe spinne for once. If thou  
wilt not, s'hart, what's your gods name? Apollo? I ; Apollo. 170



*If this melancholy rogue (Lorenzo here) doe not come, graunt, that he doe turne Foole presently, and neuer hereafter, be able to make a good Iest, or a blanke verse, but liue in more penurie of wit and Inuention, then eyther the Hall-Beadle, or Poet*  
 175 *Nuntius.*

Well, it is the strangest letter that euer I read.  
 Is this the man, my sonne (so oft) hath prays'd  
 To be the happiest, and most pretious wit  
 That euer was familiar with Art?  
 180 Now (by our Ladies blessed sonne) I sweare,  
 I rather thinke him most infortunate,  
 In the possession of such holy giftes,  
 Being the master of so loose a spirit.  
 Why what vnhallo'd ruffian would haue writ,  
 185 With so prophane a pen, vnto his friend?  
 The modest paper cene lookes pale for grieve  
 To feele her virgin-cheeke defilde and staine  
 With such a blacke and criminall *inscription*.  
 Well, I had thought my son could not haue straid,  
 190 So farre from iudgement, as to mart himselfe  
 Thus cheapely, (in the open trade of scorne)  
 To geering *follicie*, and fantastique *humour*.  
 But now I see *opinion* is a foole,  
 And hath abusde my sences. *Musco. Enter Musco.*  
 195 *Mus.* Sir.  
*Lor.se.* What is the fellow gone that brought this letter?  
*Mus.* Yes sir, a prettie while since.  
*Lor.se.* And wher's *Lorenzo*?  
*Mus.* In his chamber sir.  
 200 *Lor.se.* He spake not with the fellow, did he?  
*Mus.* No sir, he saw him not.  
*Lor.se.* Then *Musco* take this letter, and deliuer it  
 Vnto *Lorenzo*: but sirra, (on your life)  
 Take you no knowledge I haue open'd it.  
 205 *Mus.* O Lord sir, that were a iest indeed. *Exit Mus.*  
*Lor.se.* I am resolu'd I will not crosse his iourney.



Nor will I practise any violent meane,  
To stay the hot and lustie course of youth.  
For youth restrained straight growes impatient,  
And (in condition) like an eager dogge, 210  
Who (ne're so little from his game withheld)  
Turnes head and leapes vp at his masters throat.  
Therefore ile studie (by some milder drift)  
To call my sonne vnto a happier shrift. *Exit.*

### SCENA SECVNDA.

*Enter Lorenzo iunior, with Musco.*

*Mus.* Yes sir, (on my word) he opend it, & read the contents.

*Lor.iu.* It scarce contents me that he did so. But *Musco* didst thou obserue his countenance in the reading of it, whether hee were angrie or pleasde? 5

*Mus.* Why sir I saw him not reade it.

*Lo.iu.* No? how knowest thou then that he opend it?

*Mus.* Marry sir because he charg'd mee (on my life) to tell no body that he opend it, which (vnlesse he had done) he wold neuer feare to haue it reueald. 10

*Lo.iu.* Thats true: well *Musco* hie thee in againe,  
Least thy protracted absence do lend light,

*Enter Stephan<o>.*

To darke suspition: *Musco* be assurde  
Ile not forget this thy respectiue loue.

*Step.* Oh *Musco*, didst thou not see a fellow here in a 15  
what-sha-callum doublet; he brought mine vncle a letter  
euen now?

*Mus.* Yes sir, what of him?

*Step.* Where is he, canst thou tell?

*Mus.* Why he is gone. 20

*Step.* Gone? which way? when went he? how long since?

*Mus.* Its almost halfe an houre ago since he rid hence.

*Step.* Horson Scanderbag rogue, oh that I had a horse;  
by Gods lidde i'de fetch him backe againe, with heaue and ho.



*Mus.* Why you may haue my masters bay gelding, and you will.

*Step.* But I haue no boots, thats the spite on it.

*Mus.* Then its no boot to follow him. Let him go and  
30 hang sir.

*Step.* I by my troth ; *Musco*, I pray thee help to trusse me a little ; nothing angers mee, but I haue waited such a while for him all vnac'd and vntrust yonder, and now to see hee is gone the other way.

35 *Mus.* Nay I pray you stand still sir.

*Step.* I will, I will : oh how it vexes me.

*Mus.* Tut, neuer vexe your selfe with the thought of such a base fellow as he.

*Step.* Nay to see, he stood vpon poynts with me too.

40 *Mus.* Like inough so ; that was, because he saw you had so fewe at your hose.

*Step.* What ? Hast thou done ? Godamercy, good *Musco*.

*Mus.* I marle, sir, you weare such ill-fauourd course stockings, hauing so good a legge as you haue.

45 *Step.* Fo, the stockings be good inough for this time of the yeere ; but Ile haue a payre of silke, e're it be long : I thinke, my legge would shewe well in a silke hose.

*Mus.* I afore God would it rarely well.

*Step.* In sadnesse I thinke it would : I haue a reasonable  
50 good legge.

*Mus.* You haue an excellent good legge, sir : I pray you pardon me, I haue a little haste in, sir.

*Step.* A thousand thanks, good *Musco*. . . *Exit <Musco>*.  
What, I hope he laughs not at me ; and he doe——

55 *Lo.iun.* Here is a *style* indeed, for a mans sences to leape ouer, e're they come at it : why, it is able to breake the shinnes of any old mans patience in the world. My father reade this with patience ? Then will I be made an *Eunuch*, and learne to sing Ballads. I doe not deny, but my father  
60 may haue as much patience as any other man ; for hee vses to take phisicke, and oft taking phisicke, makes a man a



very patient creature. But, Signior *Prospero*, had your swaggering *Epistle* here, arriued in my fathers hands, at such an houre of his patience, (I meane, when hee had tane phisicke) it is to bee doubted, whether I should haue read 65 *sweete villayne* here. But, what? My wise cousin; Nay then, Ile furnish our feast with one Gull more toward a messe; hee writës to mee of two, and here's one, that's three, Ifayth. Oh for a fourth: now, *Fortune*, or neuer *Fortune*. 70

*Step.* Oh, now I see who he laught at: hee laught at some body in that letter. By this good light, and he had laught at me, I would haue told mine vncl.

*Lo.iu.* Cousin Stephano: good morrow, good cousin, how fare you? 75

*Step.* The better for your asking, I will assure you. I haue beene all about to seeke you; since I came I saw mine vncl; & ifaith how haue you done this great while? Good Lord, by my troth I am glad you are well cousin.

*Lor.iu.* And I am as glad of your comming, I protest to 80 you, for I am sent for by a priuate gentleman, my most speciall deare friend, to come to him to *Florence* this morning, and you shall go with me cousin, if it please you, not els, I will enioyne you no further then stands with your owne consent, and the condition of a friend. 85

*Step.* Why cousin you shall command me and't were twise so farre as *Florence* to do you good; what doe you thinke I will not go with you? I protest.

*Lo.iu.* Nay, nay, you shall not protest.

*Step.* By God, but I will sir, by your leaue ile protest 90 more to my friend then ile speake of at this time.

*Lo.iu.* You speake very well sir.

*Step.* Nay not so neither, but I speake to serue my turne.

*Lo.iu.* Your turne? why cousin, a gentleman of so faire sort as you are, of so true cariage, so speciall good parts; 95 of so deare and choice estimation; one whose lowest condition beares the stampe of a great spirit; nay more,



a man so grac'd, goulded, or rather (to vse a more fit  
*Metaphor*) tinfoyld by nature, (not that you haue a leaden  
 100 constitution, couze, although perhaps a little inclining to  
 that temper, & so the more apt to melt with pittie, when you  
 fall into the fire of rage) but for your lustre onely, which  
 reflects as bright to the world as an old Ale-wiues pewter  
 againe a good time; and will you now (with nice modestie)  
 105 hide such reall ornaments as these, and shadow their glorie  
 as a Millaners wife doth her wrought stomacher, with  
 a smoakie lawne or a blacke cipresse? Come, come, for  
 shame doe not wrong the qualitic of your desert in so poore  
 a kind: but let the *Idea* of what you are, be portraied in  
 110 your aspect, that men may reade in your lookes; *Here*  
*within this place is to be seene, the most admirable rare &*  
*accomplisht worke of nature*; Cousin what think you of this?

*Step.* Marry I do thinke of it, and I will be more melan-  
 cholic, and gentlemanlike then I haue beene, I doe ensure  
 115 you.

*Lo.iu.* Why this is well: now if I can but hold vp this  
 humor in him, as it is begun, *Catso* for *Florence*, match him  
 & she can; Come cousin.

*Step.* Ile follow you.

120 *Lo.iu.* Follow me? you must go before.

*Step.* Must I? nay then I pray you shew me good cousin.  
*Exeunt.*

## SCENA TERTIA.

*Enter Signior Matheo, to him Cob.*

*Mat.* I thinke this be the house: what howgh?

*Cob.* Who's there? oh Signior *Matheo*. God giue you  
 good morrow sir.

*Mat.* What? *Cob*? how doest thou good *Cob*? doest  
 5 thou inhabite here *Cob*?

*Cob.* I sir, I and my lineage haue kept a poore house in  
 our daies.



*Mat.* Thy lineage *monsieur Cob*? what lineage, what lineage?

*Cob.* Why sir, an ancient lineage, and a princely: mine <sup>10</sup> ancetrie came from a kings loynes, no worse man; and yet no man neither, but *Herring* the king of fish, one of the monarches of the world I assure you. I doe fetch my pedegree and name from the first redde herring that was eaten in *Adam*, & *Eues* kitchin: his *Cob* was my great, <sup>15</sup> great, mighty great grandfather.

*Mat.* Why mightie? why mightie?

*Cob.* Oh its a mightie while agoe sir, and it was a mightie great *Cob*.

*Mat.* How knowest thou that?

<sup>20</sup>

*Cob.* How know I? why his ghost comes to me euery night.

*Mat.* Oh vnsauorie iest: the ghost of a herring *Cob*.

*Cob.* I, why not the ghost of a herring *Cob*, as well as the ghost of *Rashero Baccono*, they were both broild on the <sup>25</sup> coales: you are a scholler, vpsolue me that now.

*Mat.* Oh rude ignorance. *Cob* canst thou shew me, of a gentleman, one Signior *Bobadilla*, where his lodging is?

*Cob.* Oh my guest sir, you meane?

<sup>30</sup>

*Mat.* Thy guest, alas? ha, ha.

*Cob.* Why do you laugh sir? do you not meane signior *Bobadilla*?

*Mat.* *Cob* I pray thee aduise thy selfe well: do not wrong the gentleman, and thy selfe too. I dare be sworne hee <sup>35</sup> scornes thy house hee. He lodge in such a base obscure place as thy house? Tut, I know his disposition so well, he would not lie in thy bed if thould'st giue it him.

*Cob.* I will not giue it him. Masse I thought (somewhat was in it) we could not get him to bed all night. Well sir, <sup>40</sup> though he lie not on my bed, he lies on my bench: and't please you to go vp sir, you shall find him with two cushions vnder his head, and his cloake wrapt about him, as though



he had neither won nor lost, and yet I warrant hee ne're  
 45 cast better in his life then hee hath done to night.

*Mat.* Why, was he drunke?

*Cob.* Drunk sir? you heare not me say so; perhaps he  
 swallow'd a tauerne token, or some such deuise sir; I haue  
 nothing to doe withal: I deale with water and not with  
 50 wine. Giue me my tankard there, ho. God be with you sir,  
 its sixe a clocke: I should haue caried two turnes by this,  
 what ho? my stopple, come.

*Mat.* Lie in a waterbearers house, a gentleman of his  
 note? well ile tell him my mind. *Exit.*

55 *Cob.* What *Tib*, shew this gentleman vp to Signior  
*Bobadilla*: oh and my house were the Brazen head now,  
 faith it would eene crie moe fooles yet: you should haue  
 some now, would take him to be a gentleman at the least;  
 alas God helpe the simple, his father's an honest man,  
 60 a good fishmonger, and so forth: and now doth he creep  
 and wriggle into acquaintance with all the braue gallants  
 about the towne, such as my guest is, (oh my guest is a fine  
 man) and they flout him inuincible. He vseth euery day  
 to a Marchants house (where I serue water) one *M. Thorellos*;  
 65 and here's the iest, he is in loue with my masters sister,  
 and cals her mistres: and there he sits a whole afternoone  
 sometimes, reading of these same abhominable, vile,  
 (a poxe on them, I cannot abide them) rascally verses,  
*Poetrie, poetrie*, and speaking of *Enterludes*, 't will make  
 70 a man burst to heare him: and the wenches, they doe so  
 geere and tihe at him; well, should they do as much to me,  
 Ild forswear them all, by the life of Pharaoh, there's an  
 oath: how many waterbearers shall you heare sweare such  
 an oath? oh I haue a guest (he teacheth me) he doth sweare  
 75 the best of any man christned: By Phœbus, By the life  
 of Pharaoh, By the body of me, As I am <a> gentleman, and  
 a soldier: such daintie oathes; & withall he doth take this  
 same filthie roaguish Tabacco the finest, and cleanliest; it  
 wold do a man good to see the fume come forth at his



nostrils : well, he owes me fortie shillings (my wife lent him 80 out of her purse ; by sixpence a time) besides his lodging ; I would I had it : I shall haue it he saith next *Action*.  
*Helter skelter*, hang sorrow, care will kill a cat, vptailles all, and a poxe on the hangman. *Exit*.

*Bobadilla discouers himselfe : on a bench ; to him Tib.*

*Bob.* Hostesse, hostesse. 85

*Tib.* What say you sir ?

*Bob.* A cup of your small beere sweet hostesse.

*Tib.* Sir, ther's a gentleman below would speake with you.

*Bob.* A gentleman, (Gods so) I am not within. 90

*Tib.* My husband told him you were sir.

*Bob.* What ha plague ? what meant he ?

*Mat.* Signior Bobadilla. *Matheo within.*

*Bob.* Who's there ? (take away the bason good hostesse) come vp sir. 95

*Tib.* He would desire you to come vp sir ; you come into a cleanly house here.

*Mat.* God saue you sir, God saue you. *Enter Matheo.*

*Bob.* Signior Matheo, is't you sir ? please you sit downe.

*Mat.* I thanke you good Signior, you may see, I am 100 somewhat audacious.

*Bob.* Not so Signior, I was requested to supper yesternight by a sort of gallants where you were wisht for, and drunke to I assure you.

*Mat.* Vouchsafe me by whom good Signior. 105

*Bob.* Marrie by Signior *Prospero*; and others, why hostesse, a stoole here for this gentleman.

*Mat.* No haste sir, it is very well.

*Bob.* Bodie of me, it was so late ere we parted last night, I can scarce open mine eyes yet ; I was but new risen as 110 you came : how passes the day abroad sir ? you can tell.

*Mat.* Faith some halfe houre to seuen : now trust me you haue an exceeding fine lodging here, very neat, and priuate.

*Bob.* I sir, sit downe I pray you : Signior *Matheo* (in any



115 case) possesse no gentlemen of your acquaintance with notice of my lodging.

*Mat.* Who I sir? no.

*Bob.* Not that I neede to care who know it, but in regard I would not be so popular and generall, as some be.

120 *Mat.* True Signior, I conceiue you.

*Bob.* For do you see sir, by the hart of my selfe (except it be to some peculiar and choice spirits, to whom I am extraordinarily ingag'd, as your selfe, or so) I would not extend thus farre.

125 *Mat.* O Lord sir I resolute so.

*Bob.* What new booke haue you there? what? *Go by Hieronimo.*

*Mat.* I, did you euer see it acted? is't not well pend?

*Bob.* Well pend: I would faine see all the Poets of our  
130 time pen such another play as that was; they'l prate and swagger, and keepe a stirre of arte and deuises, when (by Gods so) they are the most shallow pittifull fellows that liue vpon the face of the earth againe.

*Mat.* Indeepe, here are a number of fine speeches in this  
135 booke: *Oh eyes, no eyes but fountaines fraught with teares*; there's a conceit: Fountaines fraught with teares. *Oh life, no life, but liuely forme of death*: is't not excellent? *Oh world, no world, but masse of publique wrongs*; O Gods mee: *confusde and fild with murther and misdeeds*. Is't not  
140 simply the best that euer you heard? Ha, how do you like it?

*Bob.* Tis good.

*Mat.* *To thee the purest obiect to my sence,  
The most refined essence heauen couers,  
145 Send I these lines, wherein I do commence  
The happie state of true deseruing louers.  
If they proue rough, vnpolish't, harsh and rude,  
Haste made that waste; thus mildly I conclude.*

*Bob.* Nay proceed, proceed, where's this? where's this?

150 *Mat.* This sir, a toy of mine owne in my nonage: but  
1. iii. 139-41 Three lines in Q: *msdeeds*. | Is't . . . heard? | Ha,



when will you come and see my studie? good faith I can shew you some verie good thinges I haue done of late: that boote becomes your legge passing well sir, me thinks.

*Bob.* So, so, it's a fashion gentlemen vse.

*Mat.* Masse sir, and now you speake of the fashion, 155 Signior *Prosperos* elder brother and I are fallen out exceedingly: this other day I hapned to enter into some discourse of a hanger, which I assure you, both for fashion & workmanship was most beautifull and gentlemanlike; yet hee condemned it for the most pide and ridiculous that euer 160 he saw.

*Bob.* Signior *Giuliano*, was it not? the elder brother?

*Mat.* I sir, he.

*Bob.* Hang him Rooke, he? why he has no more iudgement then a malt horse. By *S. George*, I hold him the most 165 peremptorie absurd clowne (one a them) in Christendome: I protest to you (as I am a gentleman and a soldier) I ne're talk't with the like of him: he ha's not so much as a good word in his bellie, all iron, iron, a good commoditie for a smith to make hobnailes on. 170

*Mat.* I, and he thinkes to carrie it away with his manhood still where he comes: he brags he will giue mee the bastinado, as I heare.

*Bob.* How, the bastinado? how came he by that word throw? 175

*Mat.* Nay indeed he said cudgill me; I tearmd it so for the more grace.

*Bob.* That may bee, for I was sure it was none of his word: but when, when said he so?

*Mat.* Faith yesterday they say, a young gallant a friend 180 of mine told me so.

*Bob.* By the life of Pharaoh, and't were my case nowe, I should send him a challenge presently: the bastinado? come hither, you shall challenge him; ile shew you a tricke or two, you shall kill him at pleasure, the first *stockado* if 185 you will, by this ayre.



*Mat.* Indeed you haue absolute knowledge in the mistery,  
I haue heard sir.

*Bob.* Of whom? of whom I pray?

190 *Mat.* Faith I haue heard it spoken of diuers, that you  
haue verie rare skill sir.

*Bob.* By heauen, no, not I, no skill in the earth: some  
small science, know my time, distance, or so, I haue profest  
it more for noblemen and gentle mens use, then mine owne  
195 practise I assure you. Hostesse, lend vs another bedstaffe  
here quickly: looke you sir, exalt not your point aboue  
this state at any hand, and let your poyneard maintaine  
your defence thus: giue it the gentleman. So sir, come on,  
oh twine your bodie more about, that you may come to  
200 a more sweet comely gentlemanlike guard; so, indifferent.  
Hollow your bodie more sir, thus: now stand fast on your  
left leg, note your distance, keep your due proportion of  
time: oh you disorder your point most vilely.

*Mat.* How is the bearing of it now sir?

205 *Bob.* Oh out of measure ill, a well experienced man  
would passe vpon you at pleasure.

*Mat.* How meane you passe vpon me?

*Bob.* Why thus sir; make a thrust at me; come in vpon  
my time; controll your point, and make a full carriere at  
210 the bodie: the best practis'd gentlemen of the time terme  
it the *passado*, a most desperate thrust, belceue it.

*Mat.* Well, come sir.

*Bob.* Why you do not manage your weapons with that  
facilitie and grace that you should doe, I haue no spirit to  
215 play with you, your dearth of iudgement makes you seeme  
tedious.

*Mat.* But one veny sir.

*Bob.* Fie veney, most grosse denomination, as euer  
I heard: oh the *stockado* while you liue Signior, note that.  
220 Come put on your cloake, and weele go to some priuate  
place where you are acquainted, some tauerne or so, & weele  
send for one of these fencers, where he shall breath you at



my direction, and then ile teach you that tricke, you shall kill him with it at the first if you please : why ile learne you by the true iudgement of the eye, hand and foot, to 225 controll any mans point in the world ; Should your aduersary confront you with a pistoll, 'twere nothing, you should (by the same rule) controll the bullet, most certaine by *Phæbus* : vnles it were haile-shot : what mony haue you about you sir ? 230

*Mat.* Faith I haue not past two shillings, or so.

*Bob.* Tis somewhat with the least, but come, when we haue done, wee'll call vp Signior *Prospero* ; perhaps we shall meet with *Coridon* his brother there. *Exeunt.*

### SCENA QVARTA.

*Enter Thorello, Giuliano, Piso.*

*Tho.* Piso, come hither : there lies a note within vpon my deske ; here take my key : it's no matter neither, where's the boy ?

*Piso.* Within sir, in the warehouse.

*Thor.* Let him tell ouer that Spanish gold, and weigh it, 5 and do you see the deliuerie of those wares to Signior *Bentiuole* : ile be there my selfe at the receipt of the money anon.

*Piso.* Verie good sir.

*Exit Piso.*

*Tho.* Brother, did you see that same fellow there ? 10

*Giu.* I, what of him ?

*Tho.* He is e'ene the honestest faithfull seruant, that is this day in *Florence* ; (I speake a proud word now) and one that I durst trust my life into his hands, I haue so strong opinion of his loue, if need were. 15

*Giu.* God send me neuer such need : but you said you had somewhat to tell me, what is't ?

*Tho.* Faith brother, I am loath to vtter it, As fearing to abuse your patience, But that I know your iudgement more direct, 20 Able to sway the nearest of affection.



*Giu.* Come, come, what needs this circumstance ?

*Tho.* I will not say what honor I ascribe

Vnto your friendship, nor in what deare state

25 I hold your loue ; let my continued zeale,

The constant and religious regard,

That I haue euer caried to your name,

My cariage with your sister, all contest,

How much I stand affected to your house.

30 *Giu.* You are too tedious, come to the matter, come to the matter.

*Tho.* Then (without further ceremony) thus.

My brother *Prospero* (I know not how)

Of late is much declin'd from what he was,

35 And greatly alterd in his disposition.

When he came first to lodge here in my house,

Ne're trust me, if I was not proud of him :

Me thought he bare himselfe with such obseruance,

So true election and so faire a forme :

40 And (what was chiefe) it shewd not borrow'd in him,

But all he did became him as his owne,

And seemd as perfect, proper, and innate,

Vnto the mind, as collar to the blood,

But now, his course is so irregular,

45 So loose affected, and depriu'd of grace,

And he himselfe withall so farre falne off

From his first place, that scarce no note remaines,

To tell mens iudgements where he lately stood ;

Hee's growne a stranger to all due respect,

50 Forgetfull of his friends, and not content

To stale himselfe in all societies,

He makes my house as common as a *Mart*,

A *Theater*, a publike receptacle

For giddie humor, and diseased riot,

55 And there, (as in a *Tauerne*, or a *stewes*.)

He, and his wilde associates, spend their houres,

In repetition of lasciuious iests,



Swear, leape, and dance, and reuell night by night,  
Controll my seruants : and indeed what not ?

*Giu.* Faith I know not what I should say to him : so 60  
God saue mee, I am eene at my wits end, I haue tolde him  
inough, one would thinke, if that would serue : well, he  
knowes what to trust to for me : let him spend, and spend,  
and domineere till his hart ake : & he get a peny more of  
me, Ile giue him this eare. 65

*Tho.* Nay good Brother haue patience.

*Giu.* S'blood, he mads me, I could eate my very flesh  
for anger : I marle you will not tell him of it, how he  
disquiets your house.

*Tho.* O there are diuers reasons to dissuade me, 70  
But would your selfe vouchsafe to trauaile in it,  
(Though but with plaine, and easie circumstance,)  
It would, both come much better to his sence,  
And sauor lesse of grieffe and discontent.  
You are his elder brother, and that title 75  
Confirmes and warrants your authoritie :  
Which (seconded by your aspect) will breed  
A kinde of duty in him, and regard.  
Whereas, if I should intimate the least,  
It would but adde contempt, to his neglect, 80  
Heape worse on ill, reare a huge pile of hate,  
That in the building, would come tottring downe,  
And in the ruines, bury all our loue.

Nay more then this brother ; (if I should speake)  
He would be ready in the heate of passion, 85  
To fill the eares of his familiars,  
With oft reporting to them, what disgrace  
And grosse disparagement, I had propos'd him.  
And then would they straight back him, in opinion,  
Make some loose comment vpon euery word, 90  
And out of their distracted phantasies ;  
Contrieue some slander, that should dwell with me.  
And what would that be thinke you ? mary this,



They would giue out, (because my wife is fayre,  
 95 My selfe but lately married, and my sister  
 Heere sojourning a virgin in my house)  
 That I were icalous : nay, as sure as death,  
 Thus they would say . and how that I had wrongd  
 My brother purposely, thereby to finde  
 100 An apt pretext to banish them my house.

*Giu.* Masse perhaps so.

*Tho.* Brother they would, beleeue it : so should I  
 (Like one of these penurious quack-saluers,)  
 But trie experiments vpon my selfe,  
 105 Open the gates vnto mine owne disgrace,  
 Lend bare-ribd enuie, oportunitie,  
 To stab my reputation, and good name.

*Enter Boba<dilla> and Matheo.*

*Mat.* I will speake to him.

*Bob.* Speake to him ? away, by the life of *Pharoah* you  
 110 shall not, you shall not do him that grace : the time of daye  
 to you Gentleman : is Signior *Prospero* stirring ?

*Giu.* How then ? what should he doe ?

*Bob.* Signior *Thorello*, is he within sir ?

*Tho.* He came not to his lodging to night sir, I assure you.

115 *Giu.* Why do you heare ? you.

*Bob.* This gentleman hath satisfied me, Ile talke to no  
 Scauenger.

*Giu.* How Scauenger ? stay sir stay. *Exeunt.*

*Tho.* Nay Brother *Giuliano*.

120 *Giu.* S'blood stand you away, and you loue me.

*Tho.* You shall not follow him now I pray you,  
 Good faith you shall not.

*Giu.* Ha ? Scauenger ? well goe to, I say little, but, by  
 this good day (God forgiue me I should sweare) if I put it  
 125 vp so, say I am the rankest — that euer pist. S'blood  
 and I swallowe this, Ile neere drawe my sworde in the sight

1. iv. 102 would,] would *Q*      103 quack-saluers] quack-saluers *Q*  
 106 oportunitie,] oportunitie. *Q*



of man againe while I liue ; Ile sit in a Barne with Madge-  
owlet first. Scauenger ? 'Hart and Ile goe neere to fill that  
huge tumbrell slop of yours with somewhat and I haue  
good lucke, your *Garagantua* breech cannot carry it away so. 130

*Tho.* Oh do not fret your selfe thus, neuer thinke on't.

*Giu.* These are my brothers consorts these, these are his  
*Cumrades*, his walking mates, hees a gallant, a *Caueliero*  
too, right hangman cut. God let me not liue, and I could  
not finde in my hart to swinge the whole nest of them, one 135  
after another, and begin with him first. I am grieu'd it  
should be said he is my brother, and take these courses, well  
he shall heare on't, and that tightly too, and I liue Ifaith.

*Tho.* But brother, let your apprehension (then)

Runne in an easie current, not transported 140

With heady rashnes, or deuouring choller,

And rather carry a perswading spirit,

Whose powers will pearce more gently ; and allure

Th'imperfect thoughts you labour to reclaime,

To a more sodaine and resolu'd assent. 145

*Gui.* I, I, let me alone for that I warrant you. *Bell rings.*

*Tho.* How now ? oh the bell rings to breakefast.

Brother *Guiliano*, I pray you go in and beare my wife  
company : Ile but giue order to my seruants for the  
dispatche of some busines and come to you presently. 150

*Exit Guil<iano>.*

*Enter Cob.*

What *Cob* ? our maides will haue you by the back (Ifaith)  
for comming so late this morning.

*Cob.* Perhaps so sir, take heede some body haue not them  
by the belly for walking so late in the euening. *Exit.*

*Tho.* Now (in good faith) my minde is somewhat easd, 155  
Though not reposd in that securitie,  
As I could wish ; well, I must be content.

1. iv. 128 first.] first, Q      129 tumbrell in the catchword of sig. D 2,  
tumbrell in text of sig. D 2 verso      136 first.] first, Q      143 allure]  
allure, Q      150 Stage dir. *Guiliano*] *Guil.* Q      151-2 As verse in Q,  
divided at For      157 content. F : content, Q



They would giue out, (because my wife is fayre,  
 95 My selfe but lately married, and my sister  
 Heere sojourning a virgin in my house)  
 That I were iealous : nay, as sure as death,  
 Thus they would say : and how that I had wrongd  
 My brother purposely, thereby to finde  
 100 An apt pretext to banish them my house.

*Giu.* Masse perhaps so.

*Tho.* Brother they would, beleeeue it : so should I  
 (Like one of these penurious quack-saluers,)  
 But trie experiments vpon my selfe,  
 105 Open the gates vnto mine owne disgrace,  
 Lend bare-ribd enuie, oportunitie,  
 To stab my reputation, and good name.

*Enter Boba<dilla> and Matheo.*

*Mat.* I will speake to him.

*Bob.* Speake to him ? away, by the life of *Pharoah* you  
 110 shall not, you shall not do him that grace : the time of daye  
 to you Gentleman : is Signior *Prospero* stirring ?

*Giu.* How then ? what should he doe ?

*Bob.* Signior *Thorello*, is he within sir ?

*Tho.* He came not to his lodging to night sir, I assure you.

115 *Giu.* Why do you heare ? you.

*Bob.* This gentleman hath satisfied me, Ile talke to no  
 Scauenger.

*Giu.* How Scauenger ? stay sir stay. *Exeunt.*

*Tho.* Nay Brother *Giuliano*.

120 *Giu.* S'blood stand you away, and you loue me.

*Tho.* You shall not follow him now I pray you,  
 Good faith you shall not.

*Giu.* Ha ? Scauenger ? well goe to, I say little, but, by  
 this good day (God forgiue me I should sweare) if I put it  
 125 vp so, say I am the rankest — that euer pist. S'blood  
 and I swallowe this, Ile neere drawe my sworde in the sight

1. iv. 102 would,] would Q      103 quack-saluers] quack-saluers Q  
 106 oportunitie,] oportunitie. Q



of man againe while I liue ; Ile sit in a Barne with Madge-  
owlet first. Scauenger ? 'Hart and Ile goe neere to fill that  
huge tumbrell slop of yours with somewhat and I haue  
good lucke, your *Garagantua* breech cannot carry it away so. 130

*Tho.* Oh do not fret your selfe thus, neuer thinke on't.

*Giu.* These are my brothers consorts these, these are his  
*Cumrades*, his walking mates, hees a gallant, a *Caueliero*  
too, right hangman cut. God let me not liue, and I could  
not finde in my hart to swinge the whole nest of them, one 135  
after another, and begin with him first. I am grieu'd it  
should be said he is my brother, and take these courses, well  
he shall heare on't, and that tightly too, and I liue Ifaith.

*Tho.* But brother, let your apprehension (then)  
Runne in an easie current, not transported 140  
With heady rashnes, or deuouring choller,  
And rather carry a perswading spirit,  
Whose powers will pearce more gently ; and allure  
Th'imperfect thoughts you labour to reclaime,  
To a more sodaine and resolu'd assent. 145

*Gui.* I, I, let me alone for that I warrant you. *Bell rings.*

*Tho.* How now ? oh the bell rings to breakefast.  
Brother *Giuliano*, I pray you go in and beare my wife  
company : Ile but giue order to my seruants for the  
dispatche of some busines and come to you presently. 150

*Exit Gul<iano>.*

*Enter Cob.*

What *Cob* ? our maides will haue you by the back (Ifaith)  
for comming so late this morning.

*Cob.* Perhaps so sir, take heede some body haue not them  
by the belly for walking so late in the euening. *Exit.*

*Tho.* Now (in good faith) my minde is somewhat easd, 155  
Though not reposd in that securitie,  
As I could wish ; well, I must be content.

1. iv. 128 first.] first, Q 129 tumbrell in the catchword of sig. D 2,  
tumbrell in text of sig. D 2 verso 136 first.] first, Q 143 allure]  
allure, Q 150 Stage dir. *Giuliano*] *Gul.* Q 151-2 As verse in Q,  
divided at For 157 content. F : content, Q



How e're I set a face on't to the world,  
 Would I had lost this finger at a vente<r>,  
 160 So *Prospero* had ne're lodg'd in my house,  
 Why't cannot be, where there is such resort  
 Of wanton gallants, and young reuellers,  
 That any woman should be honest long.  
 Is't like, that factious beauty will preserue  
 165 The soueraigne state of chastitie vnscard,  
 When such strong motiues muster, and make head  
 Against her single peace? no, no: beware  
 When mutuall pleasure swayes the appetite,  
 And spirits of one kinde and qualitie,  
 170 Do meete to parlee in the pride of blood.  
 Well (to be plaine) if I but thought, the time  
 Had answer'd their affections: all the world  
 Should not perswade me, but I were a cuckold:  
 Mary I hope they haue not got that start.  
 175 For opportunity hath balkt them yet,  
 And shall do still, while I haue eyes and eares  
 To attend the imposition of my hart,  
 My presence shall be as an Iron Barre,  
 Twixt the conspiring motions of desire,  
 180 Yea euery looke or glaunce mine eye objects,  
 Shall checke occasion, as one doth his slaue,  
 When he forgets the limits of prescription.

*Enter Biancha, with Hesperida.*

*Bia.* Sister *Hesperida*, I pray you fetch downe the Rose  
 water aboue in the closet: Sweete hart will you come in to  
 185 breakfast?

*Exit Hesperida.*

*Tho.* And she haue ouer-heard me now?

*Bia.* I pray thee (good *Musse*) we stay for you.

*Tho.* By Christ I would not for a thousand crownes.

*Bia.* What ayle you sweete hart, are you not well, speake  
 190 good *Musse*.

*Tho.* Troth my head akes extreemely on a suddaine.

i. iv. 164 Is't] I'st Q      185 breakfast?] breakfast. Q



*Bia.* Oh Iesu !

*Tho.* How now ? what ?

*Bia.* Good Lord how it burnes ? *Musse* keepe you warme, good truth it is this new disease, there's a number 195 are troubled withall : for Gods sake sweete heart, come in out of the ayre.

*Tho.* How simple, and how subtile are her answeres ?  
A new disease, and many troubled with it.

Why true, she heard me, all the world to nothing. 200

*Bia.* I pray thee good sweet heart come in ; the ayre will do you harme in troth.

*Tho.* Ile come to you presently, it will away I hope.

*Bia.* Pray God it do. *Exit.*

*Tho.* A new disease ? I know not, new or old, 205  
But it may well be call'd poore mortals Plague ;

For like a pestilence it doth infect

The houses of the braine : first it begins

Solely to worke vpon the fantasie,

Filling her seat with such pestiferous aire, 210

As soone corrupts the iudgement, and from thence,

Sends like contagion to the memorie,

Still each of other catching the infection,

Which as a searching vapor spreads it selfe

Confusedly through euery sensiuie part, 215

Till not a thought or motion in the mind

Be free from the blacke poison of suspect.

Ah, but what error is it to know this,

And want the free election of the soule

In such extreames ? Well, I will once more striue, 220

(Euen in despite of hell) my selfe to be,

And shake this feauer off that thus shakes me.

*Exit.*

---

1. iv. 200 me,] me Q      205-17 Quoted in England's Parnassus, 1600, p. 143, with these variants : (206) term'd, poore mortall plaine. (207) the pestilence. (213) taking like infection. (217) Be farre. 220 Well] well Q



## ACTVS SECVNDVS,

## SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter Musco disguised like a soldier.*

*Musco.* S'blood, I cannot chuse but laugh to see my selfe translated thus, from a poore creature to a creator; for now must I create an intolerable sort of lies, or else my profession looses his grace, and yet the lie to a man of my  
 5 coat, is as ominous as the *Fico*: oh sir, it holds for good policie to haue that outwardly in vilest estimation, that inwardly is most deare to vs: So much for my borrowed shape. Well, the troth is, my maister intends to follow his sonne drie-foot to Florence, this morning: now  
 10 I knowing of this conspiracie, and the rather to insinuate with my young master, (for so must wee that are blew waiters, or men of seruice doe, or else perhaps wee may weare motley at the yeares end, and who weares motley you know :) I haue got me afore in this disguise, determining  
 15 here to lie in ambuscado, & intercept him in the midway: if I can but get his cloake, his purse, his hat, nay any thing so I can stay his iourney, *Rex Regum*, I am made for euer ifaith: well, now must I practise to get the true garbe of one of these *Launce-knights*: my arme here, and my:  
 20 Gods so, young master and his cousin.

*Enter Lo<renzo> iu<nior> and Step<hano>.**Lo.iu.* So sir, and how then?*Step.* Gods foot, I haue lost my purse, I thinke.*Lo.iu.* How? lost your purse? where? when had you it?25 *Step.* I cannot tell, stay.*Mus.* S'lid I am afeard they will know me, would I could get by them.*Lo.iu.* What? haue you it?*Step.* No, I thinke I was bewitcht, I.



*Lo.iu.* Nay do not weep, a poxe on it, hang it let 30  
it go.

*Step.* Oh it's here ; nay and it had beene lost, I had not  
car'd but for a iet ring *Marina* sent me.

*Lo.iu.* A iet ring ? oh the poesie, the poesie ?

*Step.* Fine ifaith : *Though fancie sleepe, my loue is deepe :* 35  
meaning that though I did not fancie her, yet shee loued  
mee dearely.

*Lo.iu.* Most excellent.

*Step.* And then I sent her another, and my poesie was ;  
*The deeper the sweeter, Ile be iudg'd by Saint Peter.* 40

*Lo.iu.* How, by *S. Peter* ? I do not conceiue that.

*Step.* Marrie, *S. Peter* to make vp the meeter.

*Lo.iu.* Well, you are beholding to that Saint, he help't  
you at your need ; thanke him, thanke him.

*Mus.* I will venture, come what will : Gentlemen, 45  
please you chaunge a few crownes for a verie excellent  
good blade here ; I am a poore gentleman, a soldier, one  
that (in the better state of my fortunes) scornd so meane  
a refuge, but now its the humour of necessitie to haue it so :  
you seeme to be gentlemen well affected to martiall men, 50  
els I should rather die with silence, then liue with shame :  
how e're, vouchsafe to remember it is my want speakes,  
not my selfe : this condition agrees not with my spirit.

*Lo.iu.* Where hast thou seru'd ?

*Mus.* May it please you Signior, in all the prouinces of 55  
*Bohemia, Hungaria, Dalmatia, Poland*, where not ? I haue  
beene a poore seruitor by sea and land, any time this xiiij.  
yeares, and follow'd the fortunes of the best Commaunders  
in Christendome. I was twice shot at the taking of *Aleppo*,  
once at the reliefe of *Vienna* ; I haue beene at *America* in the 60  
galleyes thrise, where I was most dangerously shot in the  
head, through both the thighes, and yet being thus maim'd  
I am voide of maintenance, nothing left me but my scarres,  
the noted markes of my resolution.

*Step.* How will you sell this Rapier friend ? 65



*Mus.* Faith Signior, I referre it to your owne iudgement ; you are a gentleman, giue me what you please.

*Step.* True, I am a gentleman, I know that ; but what though ? I pray you say, what would you aske ?

70 *Mus.* I assure you the blade may become the side of the best prince in *Europe*.

*Lo.iu.* I, with a veluet scabberd.

*Step.* Nay and't be mine it shall haue a veluet scabberd, that is flat, i'de not weare it as 'tis and you would giue me  
75 an angell.

*Mus.* At your pleasure Signior, nay it's a most pure *Toledo*.

*Step.* I had rather it were a *Spaniard* : but tell me, what shal I giue you for it ? and it had a siluer hilt—

80 *Lo.iu.* Come, come, you shall not buy it ; holde there's a shilling friend, take thy Rapier.

*Step.* Why but I will buy it now, because you say so : what shall I go without a rapier ?

*Lo.iu.* You may buy one in the citie.

85 *Step.* Tut, ile buy this, so I will ; tell me your lowest price.

*Lo.iu.* You shall not I say.

*Step.* By Gods lid, but I will, though I giue more then 'tis worth.

90 *Lo.iu.* Come away, you are a foole.

*Step.* Friend, ile haue it for that word : follow me.

*Mus.* At your service Signior. *Exeunt.*

## SCENA SECVNDA.

*Enter Lorenzo senior.*

*Lore.* My labouring spirit being late opprest  
With my sonnes follie, can embrace no rest,  
Till it hath plotted by aduise and skill,  
How to reduce him from affected will  
5 To reasons manage ; which while I intend,



My troubled soule beginnes to apprehend  
A farther secret, and to meditate  
Vpon the difference of mans estate :  
Where is deciphered to true iudgements eye  
A deep, conceald, and precious misterie. 10  
Yet can I not but worthily admire  
At natures art : who (when she did inspire  
This heat of life) plac'd Reason (as a king)  
Here in the head, to haue the marshalling  
Of our affections : and with soueraigntie 15  
To sway the state of our weake emperie.  
But as in diuers commonwealthes we see,  
The forme of gouernment to disagree :  
Euen so in man who searcheth soone shal find  
As much or more varietie of mind. 20  
Some mens affections like a sullen wife,  
Is with her husband reason still at strife.  
Others (like proud Arch-traitors that rebell  
Against their soueraigne) practise to expell  
Their liege Lord Reason, and not shame to tread 25  
Vpon his holy and annointed head.  
But as that land or nation best doth thriue,  
Which to smooth-fronted peace is most procliue,  
So doth that mind, whose faire affections rang'd  
By reasons rules, stand constant and vnchang'd, 30  
Els, if the power of reason be not such,  
Why do we attribute to him so much ?  
Or why are we obsequious to his law,  
If he want spirit our affects to awe ?  
Oh no, I argue weakly, he is strong, *Enter Musco.* 35  
Albeit my sonne haue done him too much wrong.

*Mus.* My master : nay faith haue at you : I am flesht  
now I haue sped so well : Gentleman, I beseech you respect  
the estate of a poor soldier ; I am asham'd of this base  
course of life (God's my comfort) but extremitie prouokes 40  
me to't, what remedie ?

*Loren.* I haue not for you now.



*Mus.* By the faith I beare vnto God, gentleman, it is no  
ordinarie custome, but onely to preserue manhood. I pro-  
45 test to you, a man I haue bin, a man I may be, by your  
sweet bountie.

*Lor.* I pray thee good friend be satisfied.

*Mus.* Good Signior : by Iesu you may do the part of  
a kind gentleman, in lending a poore soldier the price of two  
50 cans of beere, a matter of small value, the King of heauen  
shall pay you, and I shall rest thankfull : sweet Signior.

*Loren.* Nay and you be so importunate—

*Mus.* Oh Lord sir, need wil haue his course : I was not  
made to this vile vse ; well, the edge of the enemie could  
55 not haue abated me so much : it's hard when a man hath  
serued in his Princes cause and be thus. Signior, let me  
deriue a small peece of siluer from you, it shall not be giuen  
in the course of time. By this good ground, I was faine  
to pawne my rapier last night for a poore supper, I am  
60 a Pagan els : sweet Signior.

*Loren.* Beleeue me I am rapte with admiration,  
To thinke a man of thy exterior presence,  
Should (in the constitution of the mind)  
Be so degenerate, infirme, and base.  
65 Art thou a man ? and sham'st thou not to beg ?  
To practise such a seruile kinde of life ?  
Why were thy education ne're so meane, „  
Hauing thy limbes : a thousand fairer courses  
Offer themselues to thy election.  
70 Nay there the warres might still supply thy wants,  
Or seruice of some vertuous Gentleman,  
Or honest labour ; nay what can I name,  
But would become thee better then to beg ?  
But men of your condition feede on sloth,  
75 As doth the *Scarabe* on the dung she breeds in,  
Not caring how the temper of your spirits  
Is eaten with the rust of idlenesse.  
Now afore God, what e're he be, that should



Releeue a person of thy qualitie,  
While you insist in this loose desperate course, 80  
I would esteeme the sinne not thine, but his.

*Mus.* Faith signior, I would gladly finde some other  
course if so.

*Loren.* I, you'd gladly finde it, but you will not seeke it.

*Mus.* Alasse sir, where should a man seeke? in the 85  
warres, there's no assent by desart in these dayes, but :  
and for seruice would it were as soone purchast as wisht for  
(Gods my comfort) I know what I would say.

*Loren.* Whats thy name?

*Mus.* Please you : *Portensio.* 90

*Loren.* *Portensio*?

Say that a man should entertaine thee now,  
Would thou be honest, humble, iust and true?

*Mus.* Signior : by the place and honor of a souldier.

*Loren.* Nay, nay, I like not these affected othes ; 95  
Speake plainly man : what thinkst thou of my words?

*Mus.* Nothing signior, but wish my fortunes were as  
happy as my seruice should be honest.

*Loren.* Well follow me, ile prooue thee, if thy deedes  
Will cary a proportion to thy words. *Exit Lor.* 100

*Mus.* Yes sir straight, ile but garter my hose ; oh that  
my bellie were hoopt now, for I am readie to burst with  
laughing. S'lid, was there euer seene a foxe in yeares to  
betray himselfe thus? now shall I be possest of all his  
determinations, and consequently [and] my young master. 105  
Well, hee is resolu'd to proue my honestie : faith and I am  
resolved to proue his patience : oh I shall abuse him  
intollerablie : this small peece of seruice will bring him  
cleane out of loue with the soldier for euer. It's no matter,  
let the world thinke me a bad counterfeit, if I cannot giue 110  
him the slip at an instant : why this is better then to haue  
staid his iourney by halfe. Well, ile follow him : oh how  
I long to be employed. *Exit.*

ii. ii. 81 thine,] thine Q. 89 name ?] name Q. 93 true ?] true  
Q 105-6 master. Well,] master well Q 112 halfe. Well,] halfe, well Q



## SCENA TERTIA.

*Enter Prospero, Bobadilla, and Matheo.*

*Mat.* Yes faith sir, we were at your lodging to seeke you too.

*Pros.* Oh I came not there to night.

*Bob.* Your brother deliuered vs as much.

5 *Pros.* Who, *Giuliano*?

*Bob.* *Giuliano*? Signior *Prospero*, I know not in what kinde you value me, but let me tell you this: as sure as God I do hold it so much out of mine honor & reputation, if I should but cast the least regard vpon such a dunghill of  
10 flesh; I protest to you (as I haue a soule to bee saued) I ne're saw any gentlemanlike part in him: and there were no more men liuing vpon the face of the earth, I should not fancie him by *Phæbus*.

*Mat.* Troth nor I, he is of a rusticall cut, I know not  
15 how: he doth not carrie himselfe like a gentleman.

*Pros.* Oh Signior *Matheo*, that's a grace peculiar but to a few; *quos æquus amauit Iupiter*.

*Mat.* I vnderstand you sir.

*Enter Lorenzo iunior, and Step(hano).*

*Pros.* No question you do sir: *Lorenzo*; now on my  
20 soule welcome; how doest thou sweet raskall? my Genius? S'blood I shal loue *Apollo*, & the mad Thespian girles the better while I liue for this; my deare villaine, now I see there's some spirit in thee: Sirra these be the[y] two I writ to thee of, nay what a drowsie humor is this  
25 now? why doest thou not speake?

*Lo.Iu.* Oh you are a fine gallant, you sent me a rare letter.

*Pros.* Why, was't not rare?

*Lo.Iu.* Yes ile be sworne I was ne're guiltie of reading  
30 the like, match it in all *Plinies* familiar Epistles, and ile



haue my iudgement burnd in the eare for a rogue, make much of thy vaine, for it is inimitable. But I marle what Camell it was, that had the cariage of it? for doubtlesse he was no ordinarie beast that brought it.

*Pros.* Why?

35

*Lo.Iu.* Why sayest thou? why doest thou thinke that any reasonable creature, especially in the morning, (the sober time of the day too) would haue taine my father for me?

*Pros.* S'blood you iest I hope?

40

*Lo.Iu.* Indeed the best vse we can turne it to[o], is to make a iest on't now: but ile assure you, my father had the prouing of your copy, some howre before I saw it.

*Pros.* What a dull slaue was this? But sirrah what sayd he to it yfaith?

45

*Lo.Iu.* Nay I know not what he said. But I haue a shrewd gesse what he thought.

*Pro.* What? what?

*Lo.Iu.* Mary that thou art a damn'd dissolute villaine, and I some graine or two better, in keeping thee company.

50

*Pros.* Tut that thought is like the Moone in the last quarter, twill change shortly: but sirrha, I pray thee be acquainted with my two *Zanies* heere, thou wilt take exceeding pleasure in them if thou hearst them once, but what strange peece of silence is this? the signe of the dumbe man?

*Lo.Iu.* Oh sir a kinsman of mine, one that may make our Musique the fuller and he please, he hath his humor sir.

*Pros.* Oh what ist? what ist?

*Lo.Iu.* Nay: ile neyther do thy iudgement, nor his folly 60 that wrong, as to prepare thy apprehension: ile leaue him to the mercy of the time, if you can take him: so.

*Pros.* Well signior *Bobadilla*: signior *Matheo*: I pray you know this Gentleman here, he is a friend of mine, & one that will wel deserue your affection. I know not your name 65

11. iii. 50 and] And *Q* (a new line as if verse)

65 affection.] affection,

*Q*



signior, but I shalbe glad of any good occasion, to be more familiar with you.

*Step.* My name is signior *Stephano*, sir, I am this Gentlemans cousin, sir his father is mine vnckle; sir I am some-  
70 what melancholie, but you shall commaund me sir, in whatsoeuer is incident to a Gentleman.

*Bob.* Signior, I must tell you this, I am no generall man, embrace it as a most high fauour, for (by the host of Egypt) but that I conceue you, to be a Gentleman of some parts.  
75 I loue few words : you haue wit : imagine.

*Step.* I truely sir, I am mightily giuen to melancholy.

*Mat.* Oh Lord sir, it's your only best humor sir, your true melancholy, breedes your perfect fine wit sir : I am melancholie my selfe diuers times sir, and then do I no  
80 more but take your pen and paper presently, and write you your halfe score or your dozen of sonnets at a sitting.

*Lo.ii.* Masse then he vtters them by the grosse.

*Step.* Truely sir, and I loue such things out of measure.

*Lo.ii.* I faith, as well as in measure.

85 *Mat.* Why I pray you signior, make vse of my studie, it's at your seruice.

*Step.* I thanke you sir, I shalbe bolde I warrant you, haue you a close stoole there ?

*Mat.* Faith sir, I haue some papers there, toyes of mine  
90 owne doing at idle houres, that you'le say there's some sparkes of wit in them, when you shall see them.

*Prosp.* Would they were kindled once, and a good fire made, I might see selfe loue burnd for her heresie.

*Step.* Cousin, is it well ? am I melancholie enough ?

95 *Lo.iii.* Oh I, excellent.

*Prosp.* Signior *Bobadilla* ? why muse you so ?

*Lo.iii.* He is melancholy too.

*Bob.* Faith sir, I was thinking of a most honorable piece of seruice was perform'd to morow ; being *S. Marks* day :  
100 shalbe some ten years.

*Lo.ii.* In what place was that seruice, I pray you sir ?



*Bob.* Why at the beleagring of *Ghibelhetto*, where, in lesse then two houres, seuen hundred resolute gentlemen, as any were in *Europe*, lost their liues vpon the breach : ile tell you gentlemen, it was the first, but the best leagure that 105 euer I beheld with these eyes, except the taking in of *Tortosa* last yeer by the *Genowayes*, but that (of all other) was the most fatall & dangerous exploit, that euer I was rang'd in, since I first bore armes before the face of the enemy, as I am a gentleman and a souldier. 110

*Step.* So, I had as lief as an angell I could sweare as well as that gentleman.

*Lo.iu.* Then you were a seruitor at both it seemes.

*Bob.* Oh Lord sir : by *Phaeton* I was the first man that entred the breach, and had I not effected it with resolution, 115 I had bene slaine if I had had a million of liues.

*Lo.iu.* Indeed sir ?

*Step.* Nay & you heard him discourse you would say so : how like you him ?

*Bob.* I assure you (vpon my saluation) 'tis true, and your 120 selfe shall confesse.

*Prosp.* You must bring him to the racke first.

*Bob.* Obserue me iudicially sweet signior : they had planted me a demy culuering, iust in the mouth of the breach ; now sir (as we were to ascend) their master gunner 125 (a man of no meane skill and courage, you must thinke) confronts me with his Linstock ready to giue fire ; I spying his intendement, discharg'd my Petrinell in his bosome, and with this instrument my poore Rapier, ran violently vpon the *Moores* that guarded the ordinance, and put them 130 pell-mell to the sword.

*Pros.* To the sword ? to the Rapier signior.

*Lo.iu.* Oh it was a good figure obseru'd sir : but did you all this signior without hurting your blade ?

*Bob.* Without any impeach on the earth : you shall 135 perceiue sir, it is the most fortunate weapon, that euer rid on a poore gentlemans thigh : shall I tell you sir, you



talke of *Morglay*, *Excaliber*, *Durindana*, or so : tut, I lend  
no credit to that is reported of them, I know the vertue  
140 of mine owne, and therefore I dare the boldlier maintaine it.

*Step.* I marle whether it be a *Toledo* or no ?

*Bob.* A most perfect *Toledo*, I assure you signior.

*Step.* I haue a countriman of his here.

*Mat.* Pray you let's see sir : yes faith it is.

145 *Bob.* This a *Toledo* ? pish.

*Step.* Why do you pish signior ?

*Bob.* A Fleming by *Phæbus*, ile buy them for a guilder  
a peece and ile haue a thousand of them.

*Lo.iu.* How say you cousin, I told you thus much.

150 *Pros.* Where bought you it signior ?

*Step.* Of a scuruy rogue Souldier, a pox of God on him,  
he swore it was a *Toledo*.

*Bob.* A prouant Rapier, no better.

*Mat.* Masse I thinke it be indeed.

155 *Lo.iu.* Tut now it's too late to looke on it, put it vp,  
put it vp.

*Step.* Well I will not put it vp, but by Gods foote, and  
ere I meete him——

*Pros.* Oh it is past remedie now sir, you must haue  
160 patience.

*Step.* Horson conny-catching Raskall ; oh I could eate  
the very hilts for anger.

*Lo.iu.* A signe you haue a good Ostrich stomack Cousin.

*Step.* A stomack ? would I had him here, you should see  
165 and I had a stomacke.

*Pros.* It's better as 'tis : come gentlemen shall we goe ?

*Enter Musco.*

*Lo.iu.* A miracle cousin, looke here, looke here.

*Step.* Oh, Gods lid, by your leaue, do you know me sir ?

*Mus.* I sir, I know you by sight.

170 *Step.* You sold me a Rapier, did you not ?

*Mus.* Yes marry did I sir.



*Step.* You said it was a *Toledo* ha?

*Mus.* True I did so.

*Step.* But it is none.

*Mus.* No sir, I confesse it, it is none.

175

*Step.* Gentlemen beare witnesse, he has confest it. By Gods lid, and you had not confest it——

*Lo.iu.* Oh cousin, forbear, forbear.

*Step.* Nay I haue done cousin.

*Pros.* Why you haue done like a Gentleman, he ha's 180  
confest it, what would you more?

*Lo.iu.* Sirra how doost thou like him?

*Pros.* Oh its a pretious good foole, make much on him : I can compare him to nothing more happely, then a Barbers virginals ; for euery one may play vpon him. 185

*Mus.* Gentleman, shall I intreat a word with you?

*Lo.iu.* With all my heart sir, you haue not another *Toledo* to sell, haue yee?

*Mus.* You are pleasant, your name is signior *Lorenzo* as I take it. 190

*Lo.iu.* You are in the right : S'bloud he meanes to catechize me I thinke.

*Mus.* No sir, I leaue that to the Curate, I am none of that coate.

*Lo.iu.* And yet of as bare a coate ; well, say sir. 195

*Mus.* Faith signior, I am but seruant to God *Mars* extraordinarie, and indeed (this brasse varnish being washt off, and three or foure other tricks sublated) I appeare yours in reuersion, after the decease of your good father, *Musco*. 200

*Lo.iu.* *Musco*, s'bloud what winde hath blowne thee hither in this shape?

*Mus.* Your Easterly winde sir, the same that blew your father hither.

*Lo.iu.* My father? 205

*Mus.* Nay neuer start, it's true, he is come to towne of purpose to seeke you.



*Lo.iu.* Sirra *Prospero* : what shall we do sirra, my father is come to the city.

210 *Pros.* Thy father : where is he ?

*Mus.* At a Gentlemans house yonder by Saint *Anthones*, where he but stayes my returne ; and then——

*Pros.* Who's this ? *Musco* ?

*Mus.* The same sir.

215 *Pros.* Why how comst thou trans-muted thus ?

*Mus.* Faith a deuise, a deuise, nay for the loue of God, stand not here Gentlemen, house your selues and ile tell you all.

*Lo.iu.* But art thou sure he will stay thy returne ?

220 *Mus.* Do I liue sir ? what a question is that ?

*Pros.* Well wee'le prorogue his expectation a little : *Musco* thou shalt go with vs : Come on Gentlemen : nay I pray thee (good raskall) droope not, s'hart and our wits be so gowty, that one old plodding braine can out-strip vs all,  
225 Lord I beseech thee, may they lie and starue in some miserable spittle, where they may neuer see the face of any true spirit againe, but bee perpetually haunted with some church-yard *Hobgoblin in secula seculorum.*

*Mus.* Amen, Amen.

*Exeunt.*

## ACTVS TERTIVS.

### SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter Thorello, and Piso.*

*Pis.* He will expect you sir within this halfe houre.

*Tho.* Why what's a clocke ?

*Pis.* New stricken ten.

*Tho.* Hath he the money ready, can you tell ?

5 *Pis.* Yes sir, *Baptista* brought it yesternight.

*Tho.* Oh that's well : fetch me my cloake. *Exit Piso.*

Stay, let me see ; an hower to goe and come,



I that will be the least : and then 'twill be  
 An houre, before I can dispatch with him ;  
 Or very neare : well, I will say two houres ; 10  
 Two houres ? ha ? things neuer drempt of yet  
 May be contriu'd, I and effected too,  
 In two houres absence : well I will not go.  
 Two houres ; no fleering opportunity  
 I will not giue your trecherie that scope. 15  
 Who will not iudge him worthy to be robd,  
 That sets his doores wide open to a theefe,  
 And shewes the felon, where his treasure lyes ?  
 Againe, what earthy spirit but will attempt  
 To taste the fruite of beauties golden tree, 20  
 When leaden sleepe seales vp the dragons eyes ?  
 Oh beauty is a *Proiect* of some power,  
 Chiefely when oportunitie attends her :  
 She will infuse true motion in a stone,  
 Put glowing fire in an Icie soule, 25  
 Stuffe peasants bosoms with proud *Cæsars* spleene,  
 Powre rich deuce into an empty braine :  
 Bring youth to follies gate : there traine him in,  
 And after all, extenuate his sinne.  
 Well, I will not go, I am resolu'd for that. 30  
 Goe cary it againe, yet stay : yet do too, *Enter Piso.*  
 I will deferre it till some other time.

*Piso.* Sir, signior *Platano* wil meet you there with the bond.

*Tho.* That's true : by Iesu I had cleane forgot it. 35  
 I must goe, what's a clocke ?

*Pis.* Past ten sir.

*Tho.* 'Hart, then will *Prospero* presently be here too,  
 With one or other of his loose consorts.  
 I am a lew, if I know what to say, 40  
 What course to take, or which way to resolute.  
 My braine (me thinkes) is like an hower-glasse,  
 And my imaginations like the sands,



- Runne dribling foorth to fill the mouth of time,  
 45 Still chaung'd with turning in the ventricle.  
 What were I best to doe? it shalbe so.  
 Nay I dare build vpon his secrecie.  
*Piso.*  
*Piso.* Sir.  
 50 *Tho.* Yet now I haue bethought me to, I wil not.  
 Is *Cob* within?  
*Pis.* I thinke he be sir.  
*Tho.* But hee'le prate too, there's no talke of him.  
 No, there were no course vpon the earth to this,  
 55 If I durst trust him; tut I were secure,  
 But there's the question now, if he should prooue,  
*Rimarum plenus*, then, s'blood I were *Rookt*.  
 The state that he hath stood in till this present,  
 Doth promise no such change: what should I feare then?  
 60 Well, come what will, ile tempt my fortune once.  
*Piso*, thou mayest deceiue mee, but I thinke  
 Thou louest mee *Piso*.  
*Piso.* Sir, if a seruants zeale and humble duetie  
 May bee term'd loue, you are possest of it.  
 65 *Tho.* I haue a matter to impart to thee,  
 But thou must be secret, *Piso*.  
*Pis.* Sir for that——  
*Tho.* Nay heare me man; thinke I esteeme thee well,  
 To let thee in thus to my priuate thoughts;  
 70 *Piso*, it is a thing, sits neerer to my crest,  
 Then thou art ware of: if thou shouldst reueale it——  
*Pis.* Reueale it sir?  
*Tho.* Nay, I [do] not think thou wouldst,  
 But if thou shouldst:  
 75 *Pis.* Sir, then I were a villaine:  
 Disclaime in me for euer if I do.  
*Tho.* He will not sweare: he has some meaning sure,  
 Else (being vrg'd so much) how should he choose,



But lend an oath to all this protestation ?  
 He is no puritane, that I am certaine of. 80  
 What should I thinke of it ? vrge him againe,  
 And in some other forme : I will do so.  
 Well *Piso*, thou hast sworne not to disclose ;  
 I you did sweare ?

*Pis.* Not yet sir, but I will, 85  
 So please you.

*Tho.* Nay I dare take thy word.  
 But if thou wilt sweare ; do as you thinke good,  
 I am resolu'd without such circumstance.

*Pis.* By my soules safetie sir I here protest, 90  
 My tongue shall ne're take knowledge of a word  
 Deliuier'd me in compasse of your trust.

*Tho.* Enough, enough, these ceremonies need not,  
 I know thy faith to be as firme as brasse.  
*Piso* come hither : nay we must be close 95  
 In managing these actions : So it is,  
 (Now he ha's sworne I dare the safelier speake ;)   
 I haue of late by diuers obseruations——  
 But, whether his oath be lawfull, yea, or no, ha ?  
 I will aske counsel ere I do proceed : 100  
*Piso*, it will be now too long to stay,  
 Wee'le spie some fitter time soone, or to morrow.

*Pis.* At your pleasure sir.

*Tho.* I pray you search the bookes gainst I returne  
 For the receipts twixt me and *Platano*. 105

*Pis.* I will sir.

*Tho.* And heare you : if my brother *Prospero*  
 Chance to bring hither any gentlemen  
 Ere I come backe : let one straight bring me word.

*Pis.* Very well sir. 110

*Tho.* Forget it not, nor be not [you] out of the way.

*Pis.* I will not sir.

*Tho.* Or whether he come or no, if any other,

III. i. 83-7 *Divided in Q* Well . . . sweare | Not . . . please you Nay  
 99 lawfull,] lawfull *Q* 111 you *om. F*



Stranger or els? faile not to send me word.

115 *Pis.* Yes sir.

*Tho.* Haue care I pray you and remember it.

*Pis.* I warrant you sir.

*Tho.* But *Piso*, this is not the secret I told thee of.

*Pis.* No sir, I suppose so.

120 *Tho.* Nay beleeeue me it is not.

*Pis.* I do beleeeue you sir.

*Tho.* By heauen it is not, that's enough.

Marrie, I would not thou shouldst vtter it

To any creature liuing, yet I care not.

125 Well, I must hence: *Piso* conceiue thus much,

No ordinarie person could haue drawne

So deepe a secret from me; I meane not this,

But that I haue to tell thee: this is nothing, this.

*Piso*, remember, silence, buried here:

130 No greater hell then to be slaue to feare. *Exit Tho.*

*Piso.* *Piso*, remember, silence, buried here:

Whence should this flow of passion (trow) take head? ha?

Faith ile dreame no longer of this running humor,

For feare I sinke, the violence of the streame

135 Alreadie hath transported me so farre,

That I can feele no ground at all. but soft, *Enter Cob.*

Oh it's our waterbearer: somewhat ha's crost him now.

*Cob.* Fasting dayes: what tell you me of your fasting dayes? would they were all on a light fire for mee: they

140 say the world shall be consum'd with fire and brimstone in the latter day: but I would we had these ember weekes, and these villanous fridaies burnt in the meane time, and then——

*Pis.* Why how now *Cob*, what moues thee to this choller?  
145 ha?

*Cob.* Coller sir? swounds I scorne your coller, I sir, <I> am no colliers horse sir, neuer ride me with your coller, and you doe, ile shew you a iades tricke.

III. i. 123-4 *Divided in Q* Marrie, I . . . liuing, | Yet  
I am *F*: I sir am *Q*

146 I sir,



*Pis.* Oh you'll slip your head out of the collar: why  
*Cob* you mistake me.

*Cob.* Nay I haue my rewme, and I be angrie, as well as  
another, sir. 150

*Pis.* Thy rewme; thy humor man, thou mistakest.

*Cob.* Humor? macke, I thinke it bee so indeed: what is  
this humor? it's some rare thing I warrant. 155

*Piso.* Marrie ile tell thee what it is (as tis generally  
receiued in these daies) it is a monster bred in a man by selfe  
loue, and affectation, and fed by folly.

*Cob.* How? must it be fed?

*Pis.* Oh I, humor is nothing if it be not fed, why, didst  
thou neuer heare of that? it's a common phrase, *Feed my  
humor.* 160

*Cob.* Ile none on it: humor, auaunt, I know you not, be  
gon. Let who will make hungry meales for you, it shall not  
bee I: Feed you quoth he? s'blood I haue much adoe to  
feed my self, especially on these leane rascall daies too, and't  
had beene any other day but a fasting day: a plague on  
them all for mee: by this light one might haue done God  
good seruice and haue drown'd them al in the flood two or  
three hundred thousand yeares ago, oh I do stomacke them  
hugely: I haue a mawe now, and't were for sir Beuisses  
horse. 170

*Pis.* Nay, but I pray thee *Cob*, what makes thee so out of  
loue with fasting daies?

*Cob.* Marrie that, that will make any man out of loue with  
them, I thinke: their bad conditions and you wil needs  
know: First, they are of a Flemmish breed I am sure on't,  
for they rauen vp more butter then all the daies of the weeke  
beside: Next, they stinke of fish miserably: Thirdly,  
they'le keep a man deuoutly hungry all day, & at night send  
him supperlesse to bed. 180

*Pis.* Indeed these are faults *Cob*.

*Cob.* Nay and this were all, 'twere something, but they  
are the onely knowne enemies to my generation. A fasting



185 day no sooner comes, but my lincage goes to racke, poore  
 Cobbes they smoake for it, they melt in passion, and your  
 maides too know this, and yet would haue me turne  
*l's out* *Hannibal*, and eat my owne fish & blood. \* my princely  
*ed* couze, feare nothing, I haue not the heart to deuoure you,  
*ring.*  
 190 and I might bee made as rich as Goliath: oh that I had  
 roome for my teares, I could weep salt water enough now  
 to preserue the liues of ten thousand of my kin: but I may  
 curse none but these filthy Almanacks, for and't were not  
 for them, these daies of persecution would ne're bee knowne.  
 195 Ile be hang'd and some Fishmongers sonne doe not make  
 on 'hem, and puts in more fasting daies then hee should  
 doe, because he would vtter his fathers dried stockfish.

*Pis.* 'Soule peace, thou'lt be beaten *Enter Matheo, Pro-*  
 like a stockfish else: here is Signior *Ma-* *spero, Lo<renzo> minor,*  
*Bobadilla, Stephano,*  
 200 *theo.* Now must I looke out for a mes- *Musco.*  
 senger to my Master. *Exeunt Cob & Piso.*

## SCENA SECVNDA.

*Pros.* Beshrew me, but it was an absolute good iest, and  
 exceedingly well caried.

*Lo.m.* I and our ignorance maintained it as well, did it  
 not?

5 *Pros.* Yes faith, but was't possible thou should'st not  
 know him?

*Lo.m.* Fore God not I, and I might haue beene ioin'd pat-  
 ten with one of the nine worthies for knowing him. S'blood  
 man, he had so writen himselfe into the habit of one of  
 10 your poore *Disparuew's* here, your decaied, ruinous,  
 worme-eaten gentlemen of the round: such as haue vowed  
 to sit on the skirts of the city, let your Prouost & his half  
 dozen of halberders do what they can; and haue translated  
 begging out of the olde hackney pace, to a fine easy amble,  
 15 and made it runne as smooth of the tounge, as a shoue-groat



shilling. Into the likenes of one of these leane *Pirgo's*, had hee moulded himselfe so perfectly, obseruing euerie tricke of their action, as varying the accent : swearing with an *Emphasis*. Indeed all with so speciall and exquisite a grace, that (hadst thou seene him) thou wouldst haue sworne he might haue beene the Tamberlaine, or the Agamemnon of the rout.

*Pros.* Why Musco : who would haue thought thou hadst beene such a gallant ?

*Lo.iu.* I cannot tell, but (vnles a man had iuggled begging all his life time, and beene a weauer of phrases from his infancie, for the apparrelling of it) I thinke the world cannot produce his Riual.

*Pros.* Where got'st thou this coat I mar'le ?

*Mus.* Faith sir, I had it of one of the deuils neere kinsmen, a Broker.

*Pros.* That cannot be, if the prouerbe hold, a craftie knaue needs no broker.

*Mus.* True sir, but I need a broker, *Ergo* no crafty knaue.

*Pros.* Well put off, well put off. 35

*Lo.iu.* Tut, he ha's more of these shifts.

*Mus.* And yet where I haue one, the broker ha's ten sir.

*Enter Piso.*

*Piso.* Francisco : Martino : ne're a one to bee found now, what a spite's this ?

*Pros.* How now *Piso* ? is my brother within ? 40

*Pis.* No sir, my master went forth e'ene now : but Signior *Giuliano* is within. *Cob*, what *Cob* : is he gone too ?

*Pros.* Whither went thy master ? *Piso* canst thou tell ?

*Piso.* I know not, to Doctor *Clements*, I thinke sir. *Cob*.

*Exit Piso.*

*Lo.iu.* Doctor *Clement*, what's he ? I haue heard much speech of him.

*Pros.* Why, doest thou not know him ? he is the *Gonfa-*

III. ii. 16 shilling Into] shilling, into Q 22 of] on Q 29 mar'le ?]  
marl'e Q 47 *Gonfaloniere*] *Gonfalionere* Q



*loniere* of the state here, an excellent rare ciuilian, and a great scholler, but the onely mad merry olde fellow in Europe : I shewed him you the other day.

*Lo.iii.* Oh I remember him now ; Good faith, and he hath a very strange presence me thinkes, it shewes as if he stode out of the ranke from other men. I haue heard many of his iests in Padua : they say he will commit a man for taking the wall of his horse.

*Pros.* I or wearing his cloake of one shoulder, or any thing indeede, if it come in the way of his humor.

*Pis. Gasper, Martino, Cob :* S'hart, where should they be throw ?

*Enter Piso.*

*Bob.* Signior *Thorello's* man, I pray thee vouchsafe vs the lighting of this match.

*Pis.* A pox on your match, no time but now to vouchsafe ?  
*Francisco, Cob.* *Exit.*

*Bob.* Body of me : here's the remainder of seuen pound, since yesterday was seuennight. It's your right *Trinidado* : did you neuer take any, signior ?

*Step.* No truly sir ; but i'll learne to take it now, since you commend it so.

*Bob.* Signior beleeeue me, (vpon my relation) for what I tel you, the world shall not improue. I haue been in the Indies (where this herbe growes) where neither my selfe, nor a dozen Gentlemen more (of my knowledge) haue receiued the taste of any other nutriment, in the world, for the space of one and twentie weekes, but Tabacco onely. Therefore it cannot be but 'tis most diuine. Further, take it in the nature, in the true kinde so, it makes an Antidote, that (had you taken the most deadly poysonous simple in all Florence) it should expell it, and clarifie you, with as much ease, as I speak. And for your greene wound, your *Balsamum*, and your — are all meere gulleries, and trash to it, especially your *Trinidado* : your *Newcotian* is good too : I could say what

III ii. 67 sir ;] sir ? Q 77 Florence) it] Florence, it Q 79 wound  
one Dyce copy owing to a defect in the paper 81 Newcotian] Nicotian F



I know of the vertue of it, for the exposing of rewmes, raw humors, crudities, obstructions, with a thousand of this kind ; but I professe my selfe no quack-saluer : only thus much : by *Hercules* I doe holde it, and will affirme it (before 85 any Prince in Europe) to be the most soueraigne, and pretious herbe, that euer the earth tendred to the vse of man.

*Lo.iu.* Oh this speech would haue done rare in a pothecaries mouth.

90

*Enter Piso and Cob.*

*Pis.* I : close by Saint *Anthoines* : Doctor *Clements*.

*Cob.* Oh, Oh.

*Bob.* Where's the match I gaue thee ?

*Pis.* S'blood would his match, and he, and pipe, and all were at Sancto Domingo.

*Exit.* 95

*Cob.* By gods deynes : I marle what pleasure or felicitie they haue in taking this rogish Tabacco : it's good for nothing but to choake a man, and fill him full of smoake, and imbers : there were foure died out of one house last weeke with taking of it, and two more the bell went for 100 yester-night, one of them (they say) will ne're scape it, he voyded a bushell of soote yester-day, vpward and downeward. By the stockes ; and there were no wiser men then I, I'd haue it present death, man or woman, that should but deale with a Tabacco pipe ; why, it will stifle them all in 105 th'end as many as vse it ; it's little better then rats bane.

*Enter Piso.*

*All.* Oh good signior ; hold, hold.

*Bob.* You base cullion, you.

*Pis.* Sir, here's your match ; come, thou must needes be talking too.

110

*Cob.* Nay he wil not meddle with his match I warrant you : well it shall be a deere beating, and I liue.

*Bob.* Doe you prate ?

*Lo.iu.* Nay good signior, will you regard the humor of a foole ? away knaue.

115

III. II. 90 *Enter . . . Cob.* after 91 in Q. 105-6 in th'end] in the'nd Q



*Pros.* *Piso* get him away. *Exit Piso, and Cob.*

*Bob.* A horson filthy slaue, a turd, an excrement. Body of *Cesar*, but that I scorne to let forth so meane a spirit, i'd haue stab'd him to the earth.

120 *Pros.* Mary God forbid sir.

*Bob.* By this faire heauen I would haue done it.

*Step.* Oh he sweares admirably : (by this faire heauen :) (Body of *Cesar* :) I shall neuer doe it, sure (vpon my saluation) no I haue not the right grace.

125 *Mat.* Signior will you any ? By this ayre the most diuine Tabacco as euer I drunke.

*Lo.iu.* I thanke you sir.

*Step.* Oh this Gentleman doth it rarely too, but nothing like the other. By this ayre, as I am a Gentleman : by

130 *Phæbus.* *Exit Bob. and Mat.*

*Mus.* Master glaunce, glaunce : Signior *Prospero*.

*Step.* As I haue a soule to be saued, I doc protest ;

*Pros.* That you are a foole.

*Lo.iu.* Cousin will you any Tabacco ?

135 *Step.* I sir : vpon my saluation.

*Lo.iu.* How now cousin ?

*Step.* I protest, as I am a Gentleman, but no souldier indeede.

*Pros.* No signior, as I remember you seru'd on a great  
140 horse, last generall muster.

*Step.* I sir that's true : cousin may I swear as I am a souldier, by that ?

*Lo.iu.* Oh yes, that you may.

*Step.* Then as I am a Gentleman, and a souldier, it is  
145 diuine Tabacco.

*Pros.* But soft, where's signior *Matheo* ? gone ?

*Mus.* No sir, they went in here.

*Pros.* Oh let's follow them : signior *Matheo* is gone to salute his mistresse, sirra now thou shalt heare some of his  
150 verses, for he neuer comes hither without some shreds of poetrie : Come signior *Stephano*, *Musco*.



*Step.* Musco? where? is this Musco?

*Lo.iu.* I, but peace cousin, no words of it at any hand.

*Step.* Not I by this faire heauen, as I haue a soule to be  
saued, by *Phæbus*. 155

*Pros.* Oh rare! your cousins discourse is simply suted, all  
in oathes.

*Lo.iu.* I, he lacks no thing but a little light stuffe, to draw  
them out withall, and he were rarely fitted to the time.

*Ereunt.*

## ACTVS TERTIVS, SCENA TERTIA.

*Enter Thorello with Cob.*

*Tho.* Ha, how many are there, sayest thou?

*Cob.* Marry sir, your brother, Signior *Prospero*.

*Tho.* Tut, beside him: what strangers are there man?

*Cob.* Strangers? let me see, one, two; masse I know not  
well, there's so many. 5

*Tho.* How? so many?

*Cob.* I, there's some fiue or sixe of them at the most.

*Tho.* A swarme, a swarme,  
Spight of the Deuill, how they sting my heart!  
How long hast thou beene comming hither *Cob*? 10

*Cob.* But a little while sir.

*Tho.* Didst thou come running?

*Cob.* No sir.

*Tho.* Tut, then I am familiar with thy haste.  
Bane to my fortunes: what meant I to marrie? 15

I that before was rankt in such content,  
My mind attir'd in smoothe silken peace,  
Being free master of mine owne free thoughts,  
And now become a slaue? what, neuer sigh,  
Be of good cheare man: for thou art a cuckold, 20  
'Tis done, 'tis done: nay when such flowing store,

Plentie it selfe fals in my wiues lappe,  
The *Cornu-copiæ* will be mine I know. But *Cob*,

III. iii. 5 well,] well Q



What entertainment had they? I am sure

25 My sister and my wife would bid them welcome, ha?

*Cob.* Like ynough: yet I heard not a word of welcome.

*Tho.* No, their lips were seal'd with kisses, and the voice  
Drown'd in a flood of ioy at their arriuall,  
Had lost her motion, state and facultie.

30 *Cob.* which of them was't that first kist my wife?

(My sister I should say) my wife, alas,

I feare not her: ha? who was it sayst thou?

*Cob.* By my troth sir, will you haue the truth of it?

*Tho.* Oh I good *Cob*: I pray thee.

35 *Cob.* God's my iudge, I saw no body to be kist, vnlesse  
they would haue kist the post, in the middle of the ware-  
house; for there I left them all, at their Tabacco with a poxe.

*Tho.* How? were they not gone in then e're thou cam'st?

*Cob.* Oh no sir.

40 *Tho.* Spite of the Deuill, what do I stay here then?

*Cob.* follow me.

*Exit Tho.*

*Cob.* Nay, soft and faire, I haue egges on the spit; I  
cannot go yet sir: now am I for some diuers reasons ham-  
mering, hammering reuenge: oh for three or foure gallons  
45 of vineger, to sharpen my wits: Reuenge, vineger reuenge,  
russet reuenge; nay, and hee had not lyne in my house,  
'twould neuer haue greeu'd me; but being ny guest, one  
that ile bee sworne, my wife ha's lent him her smocke off  
her backe, while his owne shirt ha beene at washing:  
50 pawnd her neckerchers for cleane bands for him: sold  
almost all my platters to buy him Tabacco; and yet to see  
an ingratitude wretch: strike his host; well I hope to  
raise vp an host of furies for't: here comes M. Doctor.

*Enter Doctor Clement, Lorenzo sen<ior> Peto.*

*Clem.* What's Signior Thorello gone?

55 *Pet.* I sir.

*Clem.* Hart of me, what made him leaue vs so abruptly?

111. iii. 41 Stage dir. *Exit*] *Exit* Q 46 russet] mustard F 48  
'twould] t'would Q 56 abruptly? *corr.* Q: abruptly Q *originally*



How now sirra ; what make you here ? what wold you haue, ha ?

*Cob.* And't please your worship, I am a poore neighbour of your worships. 60

*Clem.* A neighbour of mine, knaue ?

*Cob.* I sir, at the signe of the water-tankerd, hard by the greene lattice : I haue paide scot and lotte there any time this eighteene yeares.

*Clem.* What, at the greene lattice ? 65

*Cob.* No sir : to the parish : mary I haue seldome scap't scot-free at the lattice.

*Clem.* So : but what busines hath my neighbour ?

*Cob.* And't like your worship, I am come to craue the peace of your worship. 70

*Clem.* Of me, knaue ? peace of me, knaue ? did I e're hurt thee ? did I euer threaten thee ? or wrong thee ? ha ?

*Cob.* No god's my comfort, I meane your worships warrant, for one that hath wrong'd me sir : his armes are at too much libertie, I would faine haue them bound to a 75 treatie of peace, and I could by any meanes compasse it.

*Loren.* Why, doest thou goe in danger of thy life for him ?

*Cob.* No sir ; but I goe in danger of my death euery houre by his meanes ; and I die within a twelue-moneth and a day, I may sweare, by the lawes of the land, that he kil'd me. 80

*Clem.* How ? how knaue ? sweare he kil'd thee ? what pretext ? what colour hast thou for that ?

*Cob.* Mary sir : both blacke and blew, colour ynough, I warrant you I haue it here to shew your worship.

*Clem.* What is he, that gaue you this sirra ? 85

*Cob.* A Gentleman in the citie sir.

*Clem.* A Gentleman ? what call you him ?

*Cob.* Signior *Bobadilla*.

*Clem.* Good : But wherefore did he beate you sirra ? how began the quarrel twixt you ? ha : speake truly knaue, I go aduise you.

*Cob.* Marry sir, because I spake against their vagrant Tabacco, as I came by them : for nothing else.



What entertainment had they? I am sure

25 My sister and my wife would bid them welcome, ha?

*Cob.* Like ynough: yet I heard not a word of welcome.

*Tho.* No, their lips were seal'd with kisses, and the voice  
Drown'd in a flood of ioy at their arriuall,  
Had lost her motion, state and facultie.

30 *Cob.* which of them was't that first kist my wife?

(My sister I should say) my wife, alas,

I feare not her: ha? who was it sayst thou?

*Cob.* By my troth sir, will you haue the truth of it?

*Tho.* Oh I good *Cob*: I pray thee.

35 *Cob.* God's my iudge, I saw no body to be kist, vnlesse  
they would haue kist the post, in the middle of the ware-  
house; for there I left them all, at their Tabacco with a poxe.

*Tho.* How? were they not gone in then e're thou cam'st?

*Cob.* Oh no sir.

40 *Tho.* Spite of the Deuill, what do I stay here then?

*Cob.* follow me.

*Exit Tho.*

*Cob.* Nay, soft and faire, I haue egges on the spit; I  
cannot go yet sir: now am I for some diuers reasons ham-  
mering, hammering reuenge: oh for three or foure gallons  
45 of vineger, to sharpen my wits: Reuenge, vineger reuenge,  
russet reuenge; nay, and hee had not lyne in my house,  
'twould neuer haue greeu'd me; but being ny guest, one  
that ile bee sworne, my wife ha's lent him her smocke off  
her backe, while his owne shirt ha beene at washing:  
50 pawnd her neckerchers for cleane bands for him: sold  
almost all my platters to buy him Tabacco; and yet to see  
an ingratitude wretch: strike his host; well I hope to  
raise vp an host of furies for't: here comes M. Doctor.

*Enter Doctor Clement, Lorenzo sen(ior), Peto.*

*Clem.* What's Signior Thorello gone?

55 *Pet.* I sir.

*Clem.* Hart of me, what made him leaue vs so abruptly?

iii. iii. 41 Stage dir *Exit* *Q* 46 russet] mustard *F* 48  
'twould] t'would *Q* 56 abruptly? *corr. Q*: abruptly *Q* originally



How now sirra ; what make you here ? what wold you haue, ha ?

*Cob.* And't please your worship, I am a poore neighbour of your worships. 60

*Clem.* A neighbour of mine, knaue ?

*Cob.* I sir, at the signe of the water-tankerd, hard by the greene lattice : I haue paide scot and lotte there any time this eightene yeares.

*Clem.* What, at the greene lattice ? 65

*Cob.* No sir : to the parish : mary I haue seldome scap't scot-free at the lattice.

*Clem.* So : but what busines hath my neighbour ?

*Cob.* And't like your worship, I am come to craue the peace of your worship. 70

*Clem.* Of me, knaue ? peace of me, knaue ? did I e're hurt thee ? did I euer threaten thee ? or wrong thee ? ha ?

*Cob.* No god's my comfort, I meane your worships warrant, for one that hath wrong'd me sir : his armes are at too much libertie, I would faine haue them bound to a 75 treatie of peace, and I could by any meanes compasse it.

*Loren.* Why, doest thou goe in danger of thy life for him ?

*Cob.* No sir ; but I goe in danger of my death euery houre by his meanes ; and I die within a twelue-moneth and a day, I may sweare, by the lawes of the land, that he kil'd me. 80

*Clem.* How ? how knaue ? sweare he kil'd thee ? what pretext ? what colour hast thou for that ?

*Cob.* Mary sir : both blacke and blew, colour ynough, I warrant you I haue it here to shew your worship.

*Clem.* What is he, that gaue you this sirra ? 85

*Cob.* A Gentleman in the citie sir.

*Clem.* A Gentleman ? what call you him ?

*Cob.* Signior *Bobadilla*.

*Clem.* Good : But wherefore did he beate you sirra ? how began the quarrel twixt you ? ha : speake truly knaue, I 90 aduise you.

*Cob.* Marry sir, because I spake against their vagrant Tabacco, as I came by them : for nothing else.



*Clem.* Ha, you speake against Tabacco? *Peto*, his name.

95 *Pet.* What's your name sirra?

*Cob.* *Oliuer Cob*, sir, set *Oliuer Cob*, sir.

*Clem.* Tell *Oliuer Cob* he shall goe to the iayle.

*Pet.* *Oliuer Cob*, master Doctor sayes you shall go to the iayle.

100 *Cob.* Oh I beseech your worship for gods loue, deare master Doctor.

*Clem.* Nay gods pretious: and such drunken knaues as you are come to dispute of Tabacco once; I haue done: away with him.

105 *Cob.* Oh good master Doctor, sweete Gentleman.

*Lore.* Sweete *Oliuer*, would I could doe thee any good; master Doctor let me intreat sir.

*Clem.* What? a tankard-bearer, a thread-bare rascall, a begger, a slaue that neuer drunke out of better then pispot  
110 mettle in his life, and he to deprauē, and abuse the vertue of an herbe, so generally recey'd in the courts of princes, the chambers of nobles, the bowers of sweete Ladies, the cabbins of souldiers: *Peto* away with him, by gods passion, I say, goe too.

115 *Cob.* Deare master Doctor.

*Loren.* Alasse poore *Oliuer*.

*Clem.* *Peto*: I: and make him a warrant, he shall not goe, I but feare the knaue.

*Cob.* O diuine Doctor, thankes noble Doctor, most dainty  
120 Doctor, delicious Doctor. *Exeunt Peto with Cob.*

*Clem.* Signior *Lorenzo*: Gods pittie man, be merry, be merry, leaue these dumps.

*Loren.* Troth would I could sir: but enforced mirth  
(In my weake iudgement) ha's no happy birth.

125 The minde, being once a prisoner vnto cares,  
The more it dreames on ioy, the worse it fares.

A smyling looke is to a heauie soule,

As a guilt bias, to a leaden bowle,

Which (in it selfe) appeares most vile, being spent

121 11 96 sir, set] sir set Q

124 ha's] h'as Q

121 man, be] man, | Be Q (as verse).



To no true vse ; but onely for ostent.

130

*Clem.* Nay but good Signior : heare me a word, heare me a word, your cares are nothing ; they are like my cap, soone put on, and as soone put off. What ? your sonne is old inough, to gouerne himselfe ; let him runne his course, it's the onely way to make him a stay'd man : if he were an vnthrif, a ruffian, a drunkard or a licentious liuer, then you had reason : you had reason to take care : but being none of these, Gods passion, and I had twise so many cares, as you haue, I'd drowne them all in a cup of sacke : come, come, I muse your parcell of a souldier returnes not all this while.

*Exeunt.*

## SCENA QVARTA.

*Enter Giuliano, with Biancha.*

*Giul.* Well sister, I tell you true : and you'le finde it so in the ende.

*Bia.* Alasse brother, what would you haue me to doe ? I cannot helpe it ; you see, my brother *Prospero* he brings them in here, they are his friends.

5

*Giul.* His friends ? his f[r]iends. s'blood they do nothing but haunt him vp and downe like a sorte of vn-lucky Sprites, and tempt him to all maner of villany, that can be thought of ; well, by this light, a little thing would make me play the deuill with some of them ; and't were not more for your husbands sake, then any thing else, I'd make the house too hot for them ; they should say and sweare, Hell were broken loose, e're they went : But by gods bread, 'tis no bodies fault but yours : for and you had done as you might haue done, they should haue beene damn'd e're they should haue come in, e're a one of them.

*Bia.* God's my life ; did you euer heare the like ? what a strange man is this ? could I keepe out all them thinke you ? I should put my selfe against halfe a dozen men ? should I ? Good faith you'd mad the patient'st body in the world, to heare you talke so, without any sense or reason.

III. iv. 6 fiends. *F*: friends ? *Q*



*Enter Matheo with Hesperida, Bobadilla, Stephano,  
Lorenzo in<mor,> Prospero, Musco.*

*Hesp.* Seruant (in troth) you are too prodigall  
Of your wits treasure, thus to powre it foorth  
Vpon so meane a subiect, as my worth ?

25 *Mat.* You say well, you say well.

*Giu.* Hoyday, heare is stuffe.

*Lo.iu.* Oh now stand close : pray God she can get him to  
reade it.

*Pros.* Tut, feare not : I warrant thee, he will do it of  
30 himselfe with much impudencie.

*Hes.* Seruant, what is that same I pray you ?

*Mat.* Mary an *Elegie*, an *Elegie*, an odde toy.

*Gun.* I to mocke an Ape with all, Oh Iesu.

*Bia.* Sister, I pray you lets heare it.

35 *Mat.* Mistresse Ile reade it if you please.

*Hes.* I pray you doe *seruant*.

*Gui.* Oh heares no foppery, sblood it freates me to the  
galle to thinke on it. *Exit.*

*Pros.* Oh I, it is his condition, peace : we are farely ridde  
40 of him

*Mat.* Fayth I did it in an humor . I know not how it is,  
but please you come neare signior : this gentleman hath  
iudgement, he knowes how to censure of a—I pray you  
sir, you can iudge.

45 *Step.* Not I sir : *as I haue a soule to be saued, as I am  
a gentleman.*

*Lò.iu.* Nay its well ; so long as he doth not forswear  
himselfe.

*Bob.* Signior you abuse the excellencie of your mistresse,  
50 and her fayre sister. Fye while you liue auoyd this  
prolixity.

*Mat.* I shall sir : well, *Incipere dulce*.

*Lo.iu.* How, *Insihere dulce* ? a sweete thing to be a Foole  
indeede.

III iv. 22-4, *Prose in Q* 33 Iesu] Icsu Q 37 sblood] Sblood Q  
43 censure of a] censre of a. Q 49 Bob ] Bob, Q 53 *Insihere*]  
*Incipere Q*



Pros. What, do you take *Incipere* in that sence ? 55

Lo.iu. You do not you ? Sblood this was your villanie  
to gull him with a motte.

Pros. Oh the Benchers phrase : *Pauca verba, Pauca  
verba.*

Mat. *Rare creature let me speake without offence,* 60  
*Would God my rude woords had the influence*  
*To rule thy thoughts, as thy fayre lookes do mine,*  
*Then shouldst thou be his prisoner, who is thine.*

Lo.iu. S'hart, this is in *Hero and Leander* ?

Pros. Oh I : peace, we shall haue more of this. 65

Mat. *Be not vnkinde and fayre, mishapen stuffe*  
*Is of behauour boysterous and rough :*

<Pros.> How like you that signior ? Sblood he shakes  
his head like a bottle, to feele and there be any brayne  
in it. 70

Mat. But obserue the *Catastrophe* now,  
*And I in dutie will excede all other,*  
*As you in bewtie do excell loues mother.*

Lo.iu. Well ile haue him free of the brokers, for he vtters  
no thing but stolne remnants. 75

Pros. Nay good *Critique* forbear.

Lo.iu. A pox on him, hang him filching rogue, steale from  
the deade ? its worse then sacriledge.

Pros. Sister what haue you heare ? *verses* ? I pray you  
lets see. 80

Bia. Do you let them go so lightly sister ?

Hes. Yes fayth when they come lightly.

Bia. I but if your *seruant* should heare you, he would  
take it heauely.

Hes. No matter, he is able to beare. 85

Bia. So are *Asses*.

Hes. So is hee.

Pros. Signior *Matheo*, who made these verses ? they are  
excellent good.

III. iv. 61 *influence*] *influence* : Q 64 *and*] *and* Q 66 *fayre,*  
*fayre* Q *stuffe*] *stuffe*, Q 68 signior ? Sblood] signior, sblood Q  
81 sister ?] sister. Q 85 matter,] matter Q 87 So] so Q



90 *Mat.* Oh God sir, its your pleasure to say so sir. Fayth  
I made them *extempore* this morning.

*Pros.* How *extempore*?

*Mat.* I would I might be damnd els: aske signior  
*Bobadilla.* He sawe me write them, at the: (poxe on it)  
95 the *Miter* yonder.

*Mus.* Well, and the Pope knew hee curst the *Miter*, it  
were enough to haue him excommunicated all the Tauerns  
in the towne.

*Step.* Cosen how do you like this gentlemans verses?

100 *Lo.u.* Oh admirable, the best that euer I heard.

*Step.* By this fayre heauen[s], they are admirable,  
The best that euer I heard.

*Enter Giuliano.*

*Giu.* I am vext, I can hold neuer a bone of me still, sblood  
I think they meane to build a *Tabernacle* heare, well?

105 *Pros.* Sister you haue a simple seruant heare, that  
crownes your bewtie with such *Encomions* and *Deuises*, you  
may see what it is to be the mistresse of a wit, that can  
make your perfections so transeparent, that euery bleare  
eye may looke thorough them, and see him drowned ouer  
110 head and eares, in the deepe well of desire. Sister *Biancha*  
I meruaile you get you not a seruant that can rime and do  
*trickes* too.

*Giu.* Oh monster? impudence it selfe; *trickes*?

*Bia.* *Trickes*, brother? what *trickes*?

115 *Hes.* Nay, speake I pray you, what *trickes*?

*Bia.* I, neuer spare any body heare: but say, what  
*trickes*?

*Hes.* Passion of my heart? do *trickes*?

*Pros.* Sblood heares a *tricke* vied, and reuied: why you  
120 monkiees you? what a catterwaling do you keepe? has he  
not giuen you *rymes*, and *verses*, and *trickes*.

*Giu.* Oh see the Diuell?

*Pros.* Nay, you lampe of virginitie, that take it in snuffe

III 1v 90 Fayth a new line in Q 96 *Miter*,] *Miter* Q 99 verses?]   
verses. Q 103 vext,] vext Q sblood] Sblood a new line in Q



so : come and cherish this tame poetical fury in your  
*servant*, youle be begd else shortly for a concealement : go 125  
to, rewarde his muse, you cannot giue him lesse then  
a shilling in conscience, for the booke he had it out of cost  
him a teston at the least, how now gallants, *Lorenzo*,  
signior *Bobadilla* ? what all sonnes of scilence ? no spirite ?

*Giu.* Come you might practise your Ruffian trickes some- 130  
where else, and not heare I wisse : this is no Tauerne, nor  
no place for such exploites.

*Pros.* Shart how now ?

*Giu.* Nay boy, neuer looke askaunce at me for the  
matter ; ile tell you of it by Gods bread, I, and you and 135  
your companions mend your selues when I haue done.

*Pros.* My companions.

*Gui.* I your companions sir, so I say ! Sblood I am not  
affrayed of you nor them neyther, you must haue your  
Poets, & your caueleeres, & your fooles follow you vp and 140  
downe the citie, and heare they must come to domineere  
and swagger ? sirha, you *Ballad singer*, and *Slops* your  
fellow there, get you out ; get you out : or (by the will of  
God) Ile cut of your eares, goe to.

*Pros.* Sblood stay, lets see what he dare do : cut of his 145  
eares, you are an asse, touch any man heare, and by the  
Lord ile run my rapier to the hilts in thee.

*Gui.* Yea, that would I fayne see, boy.

*Bia.* Oh Iesu *Piso*, *Matheo* murder.

*Hes.* Helpe, helpe, *Piso*.

*Lo.iu.* Gentlemen, *Prospero*, forbear  
I pray you.

*Bob.* Well sirrah, you *Holofernes* : by my hand I will  
pinck thy flesh full of holes with my rapier for this, I will  
by this good heauen : nay let him come,  
let him come, gentlemen by the body  
of S. *George* ile not kill him.

*They all draw, enter  
Piso and some more  
of the house to part  
them, the women 150  
make a great crie.*

*The(y) offer to fight 155  
agaime and are  
parted.*

iii. iv. 129 signior] siignior Q spirite?] spirite Q 133 now ?]  
now. Q 135 bread,] bread ? Q 138 sir] fir Q say !] say ? Q  
144 eares,] eares Q 153 *Holofernes*] *Hollofernus* Q



*Piso.* Hold, hold, forbear :

*Gui.* You whorson bragging coystryll. *Enter Thorello.*

160 *Tho.* Why, how now ? whats the matter ? what stirre  
is heare,

Whence springs this quarrell, *Piso* where is he ?

Put vp your weapons, and put of this rage.

My wife and sister they are cause of this,

What, *Piso* ? where is this knaue ?

165 *Piso.* Heare sir.

*Pros.* Come, lets goe : this is one of my brothers auncient  
humors, this !

*Steph.* I am glad no body was hurt by this auncient  
humor.

*Exeunt Prospero, Lorenzo iu<nior>, Musco, Stephano,  
Bobadilla, Matheo.*

170 *Tho.* Why how now brother, who enforst this braule ?

*Gui.* A sorte of lewd rakehelles, that care neither for God  
nor the Diuell. And they must come heare to read *Ballads*  
and *Rogery*, and *Trash*, Ile marre the knot of them ere  
I sleepe perhaps : especially signior *Pithagoras*, he thats  
175 al manner of shapes : and *Songs and sonnets*, his fellow  
there.

*Hes.* Brother indeede you are to violent,  
To sudden in your courses, and you know  
My brother *Prosperos* temper will not beare  
180 Any reproofe, chiefly in such a presence,  
Where euery slight disgrace he should receiue,  
Would wound him in opinion and respect.

*Gu.* Respect ? what talke you of respect mongst such  
as ha' neyther sparke of manhood nor good manners, by  
185 God I am ashamed to heare you : respect ? *Exit.*

*Hes.* Yes there was one a ciuill gentleman,

III. iv. 158 hold, forbear] hold forbear Q 164 knaue ?] knaue. Q  
167 humors, this !] humors this ? Q 168 auncient] auncient Q 169  
Stage dir. *Exeunt*] *Exit* Q *Lorenzohumor*] *Lorenzou.* Q *Bobadilla,*  
*Matheo.*] *Bobadillo, Matheo,* Q 170 braule ?] braule Q 172 Diuell.]  
Diuell, Q 173 *Rogery*] *Rogery* Q 174 *Pithagoras*] *Pithagorus* Q  
179 *Prosperos*] *Prosperus* Q 181 receiue,] receiue Q 183-5  
*Verse in Q, divided at* As ha', By God 184 ha' F: had Q



And very worthely demeand himselfe.

*Tho.* Oh that was some loue of yours, sister.

*Hes.* A loue of mine ? in fayth I would he were

No others loue but mine.

190

*Bia.* Indeede he seemd to be a gentleman of an exceeding fayre disposition, and of very excellent good partes.

*Exeunt Hesperida, Biancha.*

*Tho.* Her loue, by Iesu : my wifes minion,

Fayre disposition ? excellent good partes ?

S'hart, these phrases are intollerable,

195

Good partes ? how should she know his partes ? well, well :

It is too playne, too cleare : *Pizo*, come hether.

What are they gone ?

*Pi.* I sir they went in.

*Tho.* Are any of the gallants within ?

200

*Pi.* No sir they are all gone.

*Tho.* Art thou sure of it ?

*Pi.* I sir I can assure you.

*Tho.* *Pizo* what gentleman was that they prays'd so ?

*Pizo.* One they call him signior *Lorenzo*, a fayre young gentleman sir.

*Tho.* I, I thought so : my minde gaue me as much :

Sblood ile be hangd if they haue not hid him in the house,

Some where, ile goe search, *Pizo* go with me,

Be true to me and thou shalt finde me bountifull. *Exeunt.*

205

## SCENA QVINTA.

*Enter Cob, to him Tib.*

*Cob.* What *Tib*, *Tib*, I say.

*Tib.* How now, what cuckold is that knockes so hard ?

Oh husband ist you, whats the newes ?

*Cob.* Nay you haue stonnd me I fayth ; you h<a>ue

III. iv. 189 in fayth] infayth Q

196 well, well:] well : well, Q

hard ? | Oh 4 fayth:] fayth ? Q

192 Stage dir. *Exeunt*] *Exit* Q

III v. 2, 3 *As verse in Q, divided at*



5 giuen me a knocke on the forehead, will sticke by me :  
cuckold? Swoundes cuckold?

*Tib.* Away you foole, did I know it was you that knockt?  
Come, come, you may call me as bad when you list.

*Cob.* May I? swoundes *Tib* you are a whore :

10 *Tib.* S'hart you lie in your throte.

*Cob.* How the lye? and in my throte too? do you long  
to be stabd, ha?

*Tib.* Why you are no souldier?

*Cob.* Masse thats true, when was *Bobadilla* heare? that  
15 *Rogue*, that *Slaue*, that fencing *Burgullian*? ile tickle him  
I faith.

*Tib.* Why what's the matter?

*Cob.* Oh he hath basted me rarely, sumptiously : but  
I haue it heare will sause him, oh the *doctor*, the honestest  
20 old *Troian* in all *Italy*, I do honour the very flea of his dog :  
a plague on him, he put me once in a villanous filthy feare :  
marry it vanisht away like the smooke of *Tobacco* : but  
I was smookt soundly first, I thanke the Diuell, and his  
good *Angell* my guest : well wife : or *Tib* (which you will)  
25 get you in, and locke the doore I charge you, let no body  
in to you : not *Bob[b]adilla* himselfe; nor the duell in his  
likenesse; you are a woman; you haue flesh and blood  
enough in you; therefore be not tempted; keepe the doore  
shut vpon all cummers.

30 *Tib.* I warrant you there shall no body enter heare  
without my consent.

*Cob.* Nor with your consent sweete *Tib*, and so I leaue  
you.

*Tib.* Its more then you know, whether you leaue me so.

35 *Cob.* How?

*Tib.* Why sweete.

*Cob.* Tut sweete, or soure, thou art a flower,

Keepe close thy doore, I aske no more.

*Exeunt.*

III. v 7 foole,] foole Q knockt ?] knockt, Q 21 him,] him Q  
26 in to] into Q 32 *Tib*,] *Tib* Q 35-6 One line in Q



SCENA SEXTA.

*Enter Lorenzo iu(nior) Prospero, Stephano, Musco.*

*Lo.iu.* Well *Musco* performe this businesse happily, and thou makest a conquest of my loue foreuer.

*Pros.* I fayth now let thy spirites put on their best habit, but at any hand remember thy message to my brother : for theres no other meanes to start him. 5

*Mus.* I warrant you sir, feare nothing, I haue a nimble soule that hath wakt all my imaginatiue forces by this time, and put them in true motion : what you haue possesst me withall, Ile discharge it amply sir. Make no question.

*Exit Musco.*

*Pros.* Thats well sayd *Musco* : fayth sirha how dost thou aproue my wit in this deuise ? 10

*Lo.iu.* Troth well, howsoeuer ; but excellent if it take.

*Pros.* Take man : why it cannot chuse but take, if the circumstances miscarry not, but tell me zealously : dost thou affect my sister *Hesperida* as thou pretendest ? 15

*Lo.iu.* *Prospero* by Iesu.

*Pros.* Come do not protest, I beleeeue thee : I fayth she is a virgine of good ornament, and much modestie, vnlesse I conceiud very worthely of her, thou shouldest not haue her. 20

*Lo.iu.* Nay I thinke it a question whether I shall haue her for all that.

*Pros.* Sblood thou shal(t) haue her, by this light thou shalt !

*Lo.iu.* Nay do not sweare. 25

*Pros.* By *S. Marke* thou shalt haue her : ile go fetch her presently, poynt but where to meete, and by this hand ile bring her.

III. vi. 1-5 *As verse in Q, diuided* happily, | And . . . foreuer, | I fayth . . . habit, | But . . . brother. | For 5 him.] him ? Q 6 nothing,] nothing Q 9 withall,] withall ? Q 11 thou] thou, Q 12 howsoeuer ;] howsoeuer ? Q 17 protest,] protest Q 24 shalt !] shalt ? Q 28 her.] her ? Q



*Lo.iii.* Hold, hold, what all pollicie dead? no preuention  
30 of mischiefes stirring?

*Pros.* Why, by what shall I sweare by? thou shalt haue  
her by my soule.

*Lo.iiu.* I pray the<e> haue patience, I am satisfied:

*Prospero* omit no offered occasion, that may make my  
35 desires compleate, I beseech thee.

*Pros.* I warrant thee.

*Exeunt.*

## ACTVS QVARTVS, SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter Lorenzo senior, Peto, meeting Musco.*

*Peto.* Was your man a souldier sir?

*Lo.* I a knaue, I tooke him vp begging vpon the way,  
This morning as I was cumming to the citie,  
Oh? heare he is; come on, you make fayre speede:  
5 Why? where on Gods name haue you beene so long?

*Mus.* Mary (Gods my comfort) where I thought I should  
haue had little comfort of your worships seruice:

*Lo.* How so?

*Mus.* Oh God sir; your cumming to the cittie, & your  
10 entertaynement of me[n], and your sending me to watch;  
indeede, all the circumstances are as open to your sonne as  
to your selfe.

*Lo.* How should that be? vnlesse that villaine *Musco*  
Haue told him of the letter, and discouered  
15 All that I strictly chard him to conceale? tis soe.

*Mus.* I fayth you haue hit it: tis so indeede.

*Lo.* But how should he know thee to be my man?

*Mus.* Nay sir, I cannot tell; vnlesse it were by the  
blacke arte? is not your sonne a scholler sir?  
20 *Lo.* Yes; but I hope his soule is not allied

To such a diuelish practise: if it were,  
I had iust cause to weepe my part in him,

III. vi. 30 stirring?] stirring Q 33 patience,] patience Q 35 com-  
pleate,] compleate Q IV. i. 1 sir?] sir Q 2 knaue,] knaue Q  
5 where on] whereon Q 9 sir;] sir? Q 10 me F: men Q 13  
*Musco*] *Museo* Q 17 man?] man. Q



And curse the time of his creation.

But where didst thou finde them *Portensio* ?

*Mus.* Nay sir, rather you should aske where the(y) 25  
found me ? for ile be sworne I was going along in the streete,  
thinking nothing, when (of a suddayne) one calles, *Signior*  
*Lorenzos man* : another, he cries, *souldier* : and thus halfe  
a dosen of them, till they had got me within doores, where  
I no sooner came, but out flies their rapiers and all bent 30  
agaynst my brest, they swore some two or three hundreth  
oathes, and all to tell me I was but a dead man, if I did not  
confesse where you were, and how I was imployed, and  
about what, which when they could not get out of me :  
(as Gods my iudge, they should haue kild me first) they 35  
lockt me vp into a roome in the toppe of a house, where  
by great miracle (hauing a light hart) I slidde downe by  
a bottome of packthread into the streete, and so scapt :  
but maister, thus much I can assure you, for I heard it  
while I was lockt vp : there were a great many merchants 40  
and rich citzens wiues with them at a banquet, and your  
sonne *Signior Lorenzo*, has poynted one of them to meete  
anone at one *Cobs* house, a waterbearers, that dwelles by  
the wall : now there you shall be sure to take him : for  
fayle he will not. 45

*Lo.* Nor will I fayle to breake this match, I doubt not ;  
Well : go thou along with maister doctors man,  
And stay there for me ; at one *Cobs* house sayst thou ?

*Exit.*

*Mus.* I sir, there you shall haue him : when, can you  
tell ? Much wench, or much sonne : sblood when he has 50  
stayd there three or foure houres, traouelling with the  
expectation of somewhat ; and at the length be deliuered  
of nothing : oh the sport that I should then take to look on  
him if I durst, but now I meane to appeare no more afore  
him in this shape : I haue another tricke to act yet ; oh 55

iv. i. 43 waterbearers,] waterbearers ? Q 48 me ;] me ? Q thou ?]  
thou Q 49 when,] when Q 50 Much] much Q 54 durst,] durst Q  
55 yet ;] yet ? Q



that I were so happy, as to light vpon an ounce now of this doctors clarke : God saue you sir.

*Peto.* I thanke you good sir.

*Mus.* I haue made you stay somewhat long sir.

60 *Peto.* Not a whit sir, I pray you what sir do you meane ? you haue beene lately in the warres sir, it seemes.

*Mus.* I marry haue I sir.

*Peto.* Troth sir, I would be glad to bestow a pottle of wine of you if it please you to accept it.

65 *Mus.* Oh Lord sir.

*Peto.* But to heare the manner of you<r> seruises, and your deuises in the warres, they say they be very strange, and not like those a man reades in the Romane histories.

*Mus.* Oh God no sir, why at any time when it please you, 70 I shall be ready to descourse to you what I know : and more to somewhat.

*Peto.* No better time then now sir, wee le goe to the *Meeremaide*, there we shall haue a cuppe of neate wine, I pray you sir let me request you.

75 *Mus.* Ile follow you sir, he is mine owne I fayth. *Exeunt.*

### <SCENA SECVNDA.>

*Enter Bobadilla, Lorenzo iu<nior>, Matheo, Stephano.*

*Mat.* Signior did you euer see the like cloune of him, where we were to day : signior *Prosperos* brother ? I thinke the whole earth cannot shew his like by Iesu.

*Lo.* We were now speaking of him, signior *Bobadilla* 5 telles me he is fallen foule of you two.

*Mat.* Oh I sir, he threatned me with the bastinado.

*Bo.* I but I think I taught you a trick this morning for that. You shall kill him without all question : if you be so minded.

10 *Mat.* Indeede it is a most excellent tricke.

iv 1. 57 sir.] sir, Q 60 meane ?] meane : Q 61 sir.] sir Q 62  
marry] Marry Q 73 *Meeremaide*.] *Meeremaide* Q iv. ii. stage  
dir. *Bobadilla*] *Babadillo* Q 1 *Mat*] *Mat* Q 4 *Bobadilla*] *Boba-*  
*aillo* Q 5 two] too F



*Bo.* Oh you do not giue spirit enough to your motion, you are too dull, too tardie : oh it must be done like lightning, hay ?

*Mat.* Oh rare.

*Bob.* Tut tis nothing and't be not done in a—— 15

*Lo.iu.* Signior did you neuer play with any of our maisters here ?

*Mat.* Oh good sir.

*Bob.* Nay for a more instance of their preposterous humor, there came three or foure of them to me, at a gentle- 20 mans house, where it was my chance to bee resident at that time, to intreate my presence at their scholes, and withall so much importund me, that (I protest to you as I am a gentleman) I was ashamd of their rude demeanor out of all measure : well, I tolde them that to come to a publique 25 schoole they should pardon me, it was opposite to my humor, but if so they would attend me at my lodging, I protested to do them what right or fauour I could, as I was a gentleman, &c.

*Lo.iu.* So sir, then you tried their skill. 30

*Bob.* Alasse soone tried : you shall heare sir, within two or three dayes after, they came, and by Iesu good signior beleeeue me, I grac't them exceedingly, shewd them some two or three trickes of preuention, hath got them since admirable credit, they cannot denie this ; and yet now 35 they hate me, and why ? because I am excellent, and for no other reason on the earth.

*Lo.iu.* This is strange and vile as euer I heard.

*Bob.* I will tell you sir, vpon my first comming to the citie, they assaulted me some three, foure, fve, six, of them 40 together as I haue walkt alone, in diuers places of the citie ; as vpon the exchange, at my lodging, and at my ordinarie : where I haue driuen them afore me the whole length of a streete, in the open view of all our gallants, pittying to hurt them beleeeue me ; yet all this lenety will not depresse 45

rv. ii. 17 here ?] here. Q 29 gentleman,] gentleman. Q 34  
hath] haue F 39 sir,] sir Q



their spleane : they will be doing with the Pismier, raysing  
a hill, a man may spurne abroad with his foote at pleasure :  
by my soule I could haue slayne them all, but I delight not  
in murder : I am loth to beare any other but a bastinado  
50 for them, and yet I should it good pollicie not to goe disarmd,  
for though I be skilfull, I may be suppressd with multitudes.

*Lo.iu.* I by Iesu may you sir, and (in my conceite) our  
whole nation should sustayne the losse by it, if it were so.

*Bob.* Alasse no : whats a peculier man, to a nation ?  
55 not seene.

*Lo.iu.* I but your skill sir.

*Bob.* Indeede that might be some losse, but who respects  
it ? I will tel you Signior (in priuate) I am a gentleman,  
and liue here obscure, and to my selfe : but were I known  
60 to the Duke (obserue me) I would vndertake (vpon my  
heade and life) for the publique benefit of the state, not onely  
to spare the intire liues of his subiects in generall, but to  
saue the one halfe : nay three partes of his yeerely charges,  
in houlding warres generally agaynst all his enemies ; and  
65 how will I do it thinke you ?

*Lo.iu.* Nay I know not, nor can I conceiue.

*Bo.* Marry thus, I would select 19 more to my selfe,  
throughout the land, gentlemen they should be of good  
spirit, strong & able constitution ; I would chuse them by  
70 an instinct, a trick that I haue : & I would teach these 19  
the special tricks, as your *Punto*, your *Reuerso*, your  
*Stoccato*, your *Imbroccato*, your *Passado*, your *Montaunto*,  
till they could all play very neare or altogether as well as  
my selfe. This done ; say the enemy were forty thousand  
75 strong : we twenty wold come into the field the tenth of  
*March*, or therabouts ; & would challendge twenty of the  
enemy ; they could not in their honor refuse the combat :  
wel, we would kil them : challenge twentie more, kill them ;

iv. ii. 52 sir,] sir Q 62 in generall] ingenerall Q 63 three  
F : there Q 64 enemies ;] enemies ? Q 67 more to] moreto Q  
69 spint,] spirit ; Q constitution,] constitutio, Q 73 well as]  
wellas Q 74 This] this Q 76 therabouts] ther abouts Q 77  
enemie ;] enemie ? Q their] there Q



twentie more, kill them ; twentie more, kill them too ; and  
thus would we kill euery man, his twentie a day, thats 80  
twentie score ; twentie score, thats two hundreth ; two  
hundreth a day, fife dayes a thousand : fortie thousand ;  
fortie times fife, fife times fortie, two hundreth dayes killes  
them all, by computation, and this will I venture my life  
to performe : prouided there be no treason practised 85  
vpon vs.

*Lo.iu.* Why are you so sure of your hand at all times ?

*Bob.* Tut, neuer miss thrust vpon my soule.

*Lo.iu.* Masse I would not stand in signior *Giuliano*<s>  
state, then, and you meete him, for the wealth of *Florence*. 90

*Bob.* Why signior, by Iesu if hee were heare now : I  
would not draw my weapon on him, let this gentleman doe  
his mind, but I wil bastinado him (by heauen) & euer  
I meete him.

*Mat.* Fayth and ile haue a fling at him. 95

*Enter Giuliano and goes out agayne.*

*Lo.iu.* Looke yonder he goes I thinke.

*Gui.* Sblood what lucke haue I, I cannot meete with these  
bragging rascalls.

*Bob.* Its not he : is it ?

*Lo.iu.* Yes fayth it is he. 100

*Mat.* Ile be hangd then if that were he.

*Lo.iu.* Before God it was he : you make me sweare.

*Step.* Vpon my saluation it was hee.

*Bob.* Well had I thought it had beene he : he could not  
haue gone so, but I cannot be induc'd to beleeeue it was 105  
he yet.

*Enter Giulliano.*

*Giu.* Oh gallant haue I found you ? draw, to your tooles,  
draw, or by Gods will ile thresh you.

*Bob.* Signior heare me !

*Gui.* Draw your weapons then : 110

iv. ii. 88 misse thrust *F* : mistrust *Q*      90 then, and] then ; | And *Q*  
100 he.] he ? *Q*      107 draw,] draw *Q*      109 me !] me ? *Q*



*Bob.* Signior, I neuer thought <on> it till now : body of *S. George*, I haue a warrant of the peace serued on me euen now, as I came along, by a waterbearer, this gentleman saw it, signior *Matheo*. *Matheo runnes away.*

115 *Giu.* The peace? Sblood, you will not draw ?

*He beates him and desarmes him.*

*Lo.iu.* Hold signior hold, vnder thy fauour forbear.

*Giu.* Prate agayne as you like this you whoreson cowardly rascall, youle controule the poynt you ? your consort hee is gone ? had he stayd he had shard with yow infayth.

*Exit Giulliano.*

120 *Bob.* Well gentlemen beare witnesse I was bound to the peace, by Iesu.

*Lo.iu.* Why and though you were sir, the lawe allowes you to defend your selfe ; thats but a poore excuse.

*Bob.* I cannot tell ; I neuer sustayned the like disgrace  
125 (by heauen) sure I was strooke with a Plannet then, for I had no power to touch my weapon. *Exit.*

*Lo.iu.* I like inough, I haue heard of many that haue beene beaten vnder a plannet ; goe get you to the Surgions, sblood and these be your tricks, your passados, & your  
130 Mountauntos, ile none of them : oh God that this age should bring foorth such creatures ? come cosen.

*Step.* Masse ile haue this cloke.

*Lo.iu.* Gods will : its *Giullianos*.

*Step.* Nay but tis mine now, another might haue tane it  
135 vp aswell as I, ile weare it, so I will.

*Lo.iu.* How and he see it, heele challenge it, assure your selfe.

*Step.* I but he shall not haue it ; ile say I bought it.

*Lo.iu.* Aduise you cosen, take heede he giue not you as much. *Exeunt.*

iv. ii. 113 along,] along Q	114 Stage dir in Q at 115	124
<i>Bob.</i> ] <i>Boh.</i> Q	127 inough,] inough Q	130 Mountauntos,]
Mountauntos Q	ile none] ilenone Q	131 such] snch Q
it, so] it so Q	136 challenge it,] challenge it Q	135



<SCENA TERTIA.>

*Enter Thorello, Prospero, Biancha, Hesperida.*

*Tho.* Now trust me *Prospero* you were much to blame,  
T'incense your brother, and disturbe the peace  
Of my poore house, for there be sentinelles,  
That euery minute watch to giue alarmes  
Of ciuill warre, without adiection 5  
Of your assistance and occasion.

*Pros.* No harme done brother I warrant you: since  
there is no harme done, anger costs a man nothing: and  
a tall man is neuer his owne man til he be angry: to keep  
his valure in obscuritie, is to keepe himselfe as it were in 10  
a cloke-bag: whats a musition vnlesse he play? whats a  
tall man vnlesse he fight? for indeede all this my brother  
stands vpon absolutely, and that made me fall in with him  
so resolutely.

*Bia.* I but what harme might haue come of it? 15

*Pros.* Might? so might the good warme cloathes your  
husband weares be poysond for any thing he knowes, or the  
wholesome wine he drunke euen now at the table.

*Tho.* Now God forbid: O me? now I remember,  
My wife drunke to me last; and changd the cuppe, 20  
And bad me ware this cursed sute to day.  
See, if God suffer murder vndiscovered?  
I feele me ill; giue me some Mithredate,  
Some Mithredate and oyle; good sister fetch me,  
O, I am sicke at hart: I burne, I burne; 25  
If you will saue my life goe fetch it mee.

*Pros.* Oh strange humor, my very breath hath poysond  
him.

*Hes.* Good brother be content, what do you meane?  
The strength of these extreame conceites will kill you. 30

rv. iii. 2 brother,] brother Q peace] peace, Q 4 alarmes]  
alarmes, Q 5 adiection] adiection, Q 9 angry:] angry, Q  
10 obscuritie,] obscuritie: Q 21 day.] day, Q 27 humor,]  
humor Q 29 meane?] meane, Q 30 you.] you? Q



*Bia.* Beshrew your hart blood, brother *Prospero*,  
For putting such a toy into his head.

*Pros.* Is a fit similie, a toy? will he be poysond with  
a similie? Brother *Thorello*, what a strange and vaine  
35 imagination is this? For shame be wiser, of my soule  
theres no such matter.

*Tho.* Am I not sicke? how am I then not poysond?  
Am I not poysond? how am I then so sicke?

*Bia.* If you be sicke, your owne thoughts make you  
40 sicke.

*Pros.* His iealoucie is the poyson he hath taken.

*Enter Musco like the doctors man.*

*Mus.* Signior *Thorello* my maister doctor *Clement* salutes  
you, and desires to speake with you, with all speede possible.

*Tho.* No time but now? well, ile waite vpon his worship.  
45 *Pizo, Cob,* ile seeke them out, and set them sentinelles till  
I returne *Pizo, Cob, Pizo.* *Exit.*

*Pros.* *Musco*, this is rare, but how gotst thou this apparel  
of the doctors man?

*Mus.* Marry sir. My youth would needes bestow the  
50 wine of me to heare some martiall discourse; where I so  
marshald him, that I made him monstrous drunke, &  
because too much heate was the cause of his distemper,  
I stript him starke naked as he lay along a sleepe, and  
borrowed his sewt to deluier this counterfeit message in,  
55 leauing a rustie armoure, and an olde browne bill to watch  
him, till my returne: which shall be when I haue paund  
his apparrell, and spent the monie perhappes.

*Pros.* Well thou art a madde knaue *Musco*, his absence  
will be a good subiect for more mirth: I pray the(e)  
60 returne to thy young maister *Lorenzo*, and will him to  
meete me and *Hesperida* at the Friery presently: for here  
tell him the house is so storde with iealousie, that there is  
no roome for loue to stand vpright in: but ile vse such

iv in 44 worship ] worship, Q      48 man ?] man. Q      56 him,]  
hum; Q      62 storde] stor'd F. sturde Q



meanes she shall come thether, and that I thinke will meete  
best with his desires : Hye thee good *Musco*.

65

*Mus.* I goe sir.

*Exit.*

*Enter Thorello, to him Pizo.*

*Tho.* Ho *Pizo*, *Cob*, where are these villaines tree ?

Oh, art thou there ? *Pizo* harke thee here :

Marke what I say to thee, I must goe foorth ;

Be carefull of thy promise, keepe good watch, 70

Note euery gallant and obserue him well,

That enters in my absence to thy mistrisse ;

If she would shew him roomes, the ieast is stale,

Follow them *Pizo* or els hang on him,

And let him not go after, marke their lookes ; 75

Note if she offer but to see his band,

Or any other amorous toy about him,

But prayse his legge, or foote, or if she say,

The day is hotte, and bid him feele her hand,

How hot it is, oh thats a monstrous thing : 80

Note me all this, sweete *Pizo* ; marke their sighes,

And if they do but whisper breake them off,

Ile beare thee out in it : wilt thou do this ?

Wilt thou be true sweete *Pizo* ?

*Pi.* Most true sir. 85

*Tho.* Thankes gentle *Pizo* : where is *Cob* now ? *Cob* ?

*Exit Thorello.*

*Bia.* Hees euer calling for *Cob*, I wonder how hee employes  
*Cob* soe.

*Pros.* Indeede sister to aske how he employes *Cob*, is  
a necessary question for you that are his wife, and a thing 90  
not very easie for you to be satisfied in : but this ile assure  
you, *Cob*s wife is an excellent baud indeede : and oftentimes  
your husband hauntes her house, marry to what end  
I cannot altogether accuse him, imagine you what you

rv. iii. stage dir. Thorello,] Thorello Q 75 lookes ;] lookes ? Q  
77 other] other Q 82 whisper] wisper Q 86 Cob now ?] Cob ?  
now : Q 92 you,] you Q



95 thinke conuenient : but I haue knowne fayre hides haue  
foule hartes eare now, I can tell you.

*Bia.* Neuer sayd you truer then that brother! *Pizo*  
fetch your cloke, and goe with me, ile after him presently :  
I would to Christ I could take him there I fayth.

*Exeunt Pizo and Biancha.*

100 *Pros.* So let them goe : this may make sport anone. Now  
my fayre sister *Hesperida* : ah that you knew how happy  
a thing it were to be fayre and bewtifulf ?

*Hes.* That toucheth not me brother.

*Pros.* Thats true : thats euen the fault of it, for indeede  
105 bewtie stands a woman in no stead, vnles it procure her  
touching · but sister whether it touch you or noe, it touches  
your bewties, and I am sure they will abide the touch, and  
they doe not a plague of al ceruse say I, and it touches me  
to in part, though not in thee. Well, theres a deare and  
110 respected friend of mine sister, stands very strongly  
affected towards you, and hath vowed to inflame whole  
bonefires of zeale in his hart, in honor of your perfections,  
I haue already engaged my promise to bring you where  
you shal heare him conferme much more then I am able  
115 to lay downe for him : Signior *Lorenzo* is the man : what  
say you sister, shall I intreate so much fauour of you for my  
friend, as to[o] direct and attend you to his meeting ?  
Vpon my soule he loues you extreemely, approue it sweete  
*Hesperida* will you ?

120 *Hes.* Fayth I had very little confidence in mine owne  
constancie if I durst not meete a man : but brother *Prospero*  
this motion of yours sauours of an olde knight aduenturers  
seruant, me thinkes.

*Pros.* Whats that sister ?

125 *Hes.* Marry of the squire.

*Pros.* No matter *Hesperida* if it did, I would be such an  
one for my friend, but say, will you goe ?

iv iii. 97 brother!] brother? Q 100 anone Now] anone, now Q  
109 in part,] in part. Q thee] the some copies of Q 116 sister,]  
sister Q 117 as] is Q 118 Vpon] vpon Q 124 sister?] sister. Q



*Hes.* Brother I will, and blesse my happy starres.

*Enter Clement and Thorello.*

*Clem.* Why what villanie is this? my man gone on a false message, and runne away when he has done, why what 130  
trick is there in it trow? 1. 2. 3. 4. and 5.

*Tho.* How: is my wife gone foorth, where is she sister?

*Hes.* Shees gone abrode with *Pizo*.

*Tho.* Abrode with *Pizo*? oh that villaine dors me,  
He hath discouered all vnto my wife, 135  
Beast that I was to trust him: whither went she?

*Hes.* I know not sir.

*Pros.* Ile tell you brother whither I suspect shees gone.

*Tho.* Whither for Gods sake?

*Pros.* To *Cobs* house I beleue: but keepe my counsayle. 140

*Tho.* I will, I will, to *Cobs* house? doth she haunt *Cobs*?  
Shees gone a purpose now to cuckold me,  
With that lewd rascall, who to winne her fauour,  
Hath told her all. *Exit.*

*Clem.* But did you mistresse see my man bring him 145  
a message?

*Pros.* That we did maister doctor.

*Clem.* And whither went the knaue?

*Pros.* To the Tauerne I thinke sir.

*Clem.* What did *Thorello* giue him any thing to spend for 150  
the message he brought him? if he did I should commend  
my mans wit exceedingly if he would make himselfe drunke,  
with the ioy of it. Farewell Lady: keepe good rule you  
two, I beseech you now: by Gods marry my man makes  
mee laugh. *Exit.* 155

*Pros.* What a madde Doctor is this? come sister lets  
away. *Exeunt.*

iv iii. 141 haunt *Cobs*?] haunt *Cobs*, *Q* 146 message?] message *Q*  
153 it. Farewell Lady:] it, farewell Lady, *Q* 154 two,] two: *Q*



(SCENA QVARTA.)

*Enter Matheo and Bobadilla.*

*Mat.* I wonder signior what they will say of my going away : ha ?

*Bob.* Why, what should they say ? but as of a discreet gentleman, quick, wary, respectfull of natures fayre  
5 liniamentes, and thats all.

*Mat.* Why so, but what can they say of your beating ?

*Bob.* A rude part, a touch with soft wood, a kinde of grosse batterie vsed, layd on strongly : borne most patiently, and thats all.

10 *Mat.* I but would any man haue offered it in *Venice* ?

*Bob.* Tut I assure you no : you shall haue there your *Nobilis*, your *Gentilezza*, come in brauely vpon your reuerse, stand you close, stand you ferme, stand you fayre, saue your retricato with his left legge, come to the assaulto with  
15 the right, thrust with braue steele, defie your base wood. But wherefore do I awake this remembrance ? I was bewicht by Iesu : but I will be reuengd.

*Mat.* Do you heare, ist not best to get a warrant and haue him arested, and brought before doctor *Clement* ?

20 *Bob.* It were not amisse, would we had it.

*Enter Musco.*

*Mat.* Why here comes his man, lets speake to him.

*Bob.* Agreed, do you speake.

*Mat.* God saue you sir.

*Mus.* With all my hart sir !

25 *Mat.* Sir there is one *Giulliano* hath abusd this gentleman and me, and we determine to make our amendes by law, now if you would do vs the fauour to procure vs a warrant for his arest of your maister, you shall be well considered I assure <you>, I fayth sir.

iv. iv. stage dir. Bobadilla] Bobadillo Q 4 Divided in Q gentle-  
man. | Quick, .. natures, | Fayre 18 heare,] heare Q 19 Clement ?]  
Clement. Q 20 amisse,] amisse Q 24 sir !] sir ? Q



*Mus.* Sir you know my seruice is my liuing, such fauours 30  
as these gotten of my maister is his onely preferment, and  
therefore you must consider me, as I may make benefit of  
my place

*Mat.* How is that?

*Mus.* Fayth sir, the thing is extraordinarie, and the 35  
gentleman may be of great accompt: yet be what he will,  
if you will lay me downe fūe crownes in my hand, you shall  
haue it, otherwise not.

*Mat.* How shall we do signior? you haue no monie?

*Bob.* Not a crosse by Iesu. 40

*Mat.* Nor I before God but two pence, left of my two  
shillings in the morning for wine and cakes: let's giue him  
some pawne.

*Bob.* Pawne? we haue none to the value of his demaunde.

*Mat.* Oh Lord man, ile pawne this iewell in my eare, 45  
and you may pawne your silke stockins, and pull vp your  
bootes, they will neare be mist.

*Bob.* Well and there be no remedie: ile step aside and  
put them of.

*Mat.* Doe you heare sir, we haue no store of monie at 50  
this time, but you shall haue good pawnes, looke you sir,  
this Iewell, and this gentlemans silke stockins, because we  
would haue it dispatcht ere we went to our chambers.

*Mus.* I am content sir, I will get you the warrant  
presently, whats his name say you (*Giulliano*.) 55

*Mat.* I, I, *Giulliano*.

*Mus.* What manner of man is he?

*Mat.* A tall bigge man sir, he goes in a cloake most  
commonly of silke russet: layd about with russet lace.

*Mus.* Tis very good sir. 60

*Mat.* Here sir, heres my iewell.

*Bob.* And heare are stockins.

*Mus.* Well gentlemen ile procure this wa[a]rrant pre-  
sently, and appoynt you a varlet of the citie to serue it, if

rv. iv. 39 monie?] monie. Q 41 pence,] pence: Q 42 cakes:]  
cakes, Q 55 presently,] presently Q 61 iewell.] iewell? Q



65 youle be vpon the Realto anone, the varlet shall meete you there.

*Mat.* Very good sir, I wish no better.

*Exeunt Bobadilla and Matheo.*

*Mus.* This is rare, now will I goe pawne this cloake of the doctors mans at the brokers for a varlets sute, and be the  
70 varlet my selfe, and get eyther more pawnes, or more money of *Giulliano* for my arrest. *Exit.*

## ACTVS QVINTVS. SCENA PRIMA.

*Enter Lorenzo senior.*

*Lo.se.* Oh heare it is, I am glad I haue found it now,  
Ho ? who is within heare ? *Enter Tib.*

*Tib.* I am within sir, whats your pleasure ?

*Lo.se.* To know who is within besides your selfe.

5 *Tib.* Why sir, you are no constable I hope ?

*Lo.se.* O feare you the constable ? then I doubt not,  
You haue some guests within deserue that feare,  
Ile fetch him straight.

*Tib.* A Gods name sir.

10 *Lo.se.* Go to, tell me is not the young *Lorenzo* here ?

*Tib.* Young *Lorenzo*, I saw none such sir, of mine honestie.

*Lo.se.* Go to, your honestie flies too lightly from you :  
Theres no way but fetch the constable.

15 *Tib.* The constable, the man is mad I think.

*Claps to the doore.*

*Enter Pizo, and Biancha.*

*Pizo.* Ho, who keepest house here ?

*Lo se.* Oh, this is the female copes-mate of my sonne.  
Now shall I meete him straight.

*Bia.* Knocke *Pizo* pray thee.

20 *Pi.* Ho good wife.

*Tib.* Why whats the matter with you ? *Enter Tib.*



*Bia.* Why woman, grieues it you to ope your doore?  
Belike you get something to keepe it shut.

*Tib.* What meane these questions pray ye?

*Bia.* So strange you make it? is not *Thorello* my tryed 25  
husband here.

*Lo.se.* Her husband?

*Tib.* I hope he needes not to be tryed here.

*Bia.* No dame: he doth it not for neede but pleasure.

*Tib.* Neyther for neede nor pleasure is he here. 30

*Lo.se.* This is but a deuise to balke me with al; Soft  
whoes this? *Enter Thorello.*

*Bia.* Oh sir, haue I fore-stald your honest market?  
Found your close walkes? you stand amazd now, do you?  
I fayth (I am glad) I haue smokt you yet at last; 35  
Whats your iewell trow? In: come lets see her;  
Fetch foorth your huswife, dame; if she be fayrer  
In any honest iudgement then my selfe,  
Ile be content with it: but she is chaunge,  
She feedes you fat; she soothes your appetite, 40  
And you are well: your wife an honest woman,  
Is meate twise sod to you sir; A<h> you trecher.

*Lo.se.* She cannot counterfeit thus palpably.

*Tho.* Out on thy more then strumpets impudencie,  
Stealst thou thus to thy hauntes? and haue I taken, 45  
Thy baud, and thee, and thy companion,  
This hoary headed letcher, this olde goate,  
Close at your villanie, and wouldst thou scuse it,  
With this stale harlots iest, accusing me?  
O ould incontinent, dost thou not shame, 50  
When all thy powers in chastitie is spent,  
To haue a minde so hot? and to entise  
And feede the intisements of a lustfull woman?

*Bia.* Out I defie thee I, desembling wretch:

*Tho.* Defie me strumpet? aske thy paunder here, 55  
Can he denie it? or that wicked elder?

v. i. 29 doth] both Q      43 thus F: this Q      44 thy F:  
thee Q      46 companion,] companion? Q      47 goate,] goate Q  
56 elder?] elder. Q



*Lo.se.* Why heare you signior.

*Tho.* Tut, tut, neuer speake,

Thy guiltie conscience will discouer thee :

60 *Lo.se.* What lunacie is this that haunts this man ?

*Enter Giulliano.*

*Giu.* Oh sister did you see my cloake ?

*Bia.* Not I, I see none.

*Giu.* Gods life I haue lost it then, saw you *Hesperida* ?

*Tho.* *Hesperida* ? is she not at home ?

65 *Giu.* No she is gone abroade, and no body can tell me of it at home. *Exit.*

*Tho.* Oh heauen, abroade ? what light ? a harlot too ?

Why ? why ? harke you, hath she ? hath she not a brother ?

A brothers house to keepe ? to looke vnto ?

70 But she must fling abroade, my wife hath spoyld her,

She takes right after her, she does, she does,

Well you goody baud and ——— *Enter Cob.*

That make your husband such a hoddy dody ;

And you young apple squire, and olde cuckold maker,

75 Ile haue you euery one before the Doctor,

Nay you shall answer it, I chardge you goe.

*Lo.se.* Marry with all my hart, ile goe willingly : how haue I wrongd my selfe in comming here.

*Bi.* Go with thee ? ile go with thee to thy shame,  
80 I warrant thee.

*Cob.* Why whats the matter ? whats here to doe ?

*Tho.* What *Cob* art thou here ? oh I am abusd,  
And in thy house, was neuer man so wrongd.

*Cob.* Slid in my house ? who wrongd you in my house ?

85 *Tho.* Marry young lust in olde, and olde in young here,  
Thy wifes their baud, here haue I taken them.

*Cob.* Doe you here ? did I not charge you *Cob beates*  
keepe your dores shut here, and do you let *his wife.*  
them lie open for all commers, do you scratch ?

v i. 57 signior ] signior ? Q      64 home ? ] home Q      67 heauen, ]  
heauen, ? Q      76 it, ] it Q      77 with all ] withall (?) Q      89 lie open ]  
lieopen Q      scratch ? ] scratch. Q



*Lo.se.* Friend haue patience, if she haue done wrong in 90  
this let her answere it afore the Magistrate.

*Cob.* I, come, you shall goe afore the Doctor.

*Tib.* Nay, I will go, ile see and you may be alowd to beate  
your poore wife thus at euery cuckoldly knaues pleasure, the  
Diuell and the Pox take you all for me : why doe you not 95  
goe now ?

*Tho.* A bitter queane, come weelee haue you tamd. *Exeunt.*

<SCENA SECVNDA.>

*Enter Musco alone.*

*Mus.* Well of all my disguises yet now am I most like my  
selfe, beeing in this varlets suit, a man of my present  
profession neuer counterfeites till he lay holde vpon a  
debtor, and sayes he rests him, for then he bringes him to  
al manner of vnrest ; A kinde of little kings we are, bearing 5  
the diminitue of a mace made like a young Hartechocke  
that alwayes carries Pepper and salte in it selfe, well I know  
not what danger I vnder go by this exploite, pray God  
I come well of.

*Enter Bobadilla and Matheo.*

*Mat.* See I thinke yonder is the varlet. 10

*Bob.* Lets go in quest of him.

*Mat.* God saue you friend, are not you here by the  
appoyntment of doctor *Clements* man ?

*Mus.* Yes and please you sir, he told me two gentlemen  
had wild him to procure an arest vpon one signior *Giulliano* 15  
by a warrant from his maister, which I haue about me.

*Mat.* It is honestly done of you both, and see where hee  
coms you must arest, vppon him for Gods sake before hee  
beware.

v. i. 90 patience,] patience Q      93 alowd] aloud Q      96 now ?  
now. Q      97 come] come Q      *Exeunt* ] *Exeunt* Q      v. ii. 11 in  
quest] inquest Q      13 *Clements* man ?] *Clements* man Q



*Enter Stephano.*

20 *Bob.* Beare backe *Matheo* !

*Mus.* Signior *Giulliano* I arest you sir in the Dukes name.

*Step.* Signior *Giulliano* ? am I signior *Giulliano* ? I am one signior *Stephano* I tell you, and you do not well by Gods [s]lid to arest me, I tell you truely ; I am not in your  
25 maisters bookes, I would you should well know I : and a plague of God on you for making me afrayd thus.

*Mus.* Why, how are you deceiued gentlemen ?

*Bob.* He weares such a cloake, and that deceiued vs, but see here a coms, officer, this is he.

*Enter Giulliano.*

30 *Giu.* Why how now signior gull : are you turnd a fincher of late, come deliuer my cloake.

*Step.* Your cloake sir ? I bought it euen now in the market.

*Mus.* Signior *Giulliano* I must arest you sir.

35 *Giu.* Arrest me sir, at whose suite ?

*Mus.* At these two gentlemens.

*Giu.* I obey thee varlet ; but for these villaines——

*Mus.* Keepe the peace I charge you sir, in the Dukes name Sir.

40 *Giu.* Whats the matter varlet ?

*Mus.* You must goe before maister doctor *Clement* sir, to answere what these gentlemen will obiect agaynst you, harke you sir, I will vse you kindly.

*Mat.* Weele be euen with you sir, come signior *Bobadilla*,  
45 weele goe before and prepare the doctor : varlet looke to him.

*Bob.* The varlet is a tall man by Iesu.

*Exeunt Bobadilla and Matheo.*

*Giu.* Away you rascalles, Signior I shall haue my cloake.

*Step.* Your cloake : I say once agayne I bought it, and  
50 ile keepe it.

v. ii. 20 *Matheo* !] *Matheo* ? Q 29 but] But begins a new line in Q  
30 turnd a] a turnd Q 31 fincher] flitcher F 37 villaines] villianes  
Q 47 stage dir. at 46 in Q 48 Signior begins a new line in Q



*Giu.* You will keepe it ?

*Step.* I, that I will.

*Giu.* Varlet stay, heres thy fee, arrest him.

*Mus.* Signior *Stephano* I arrest you.

*Step.* Arrest me ? there take your cloake : ile none of it. 55

*Giu.* Nay that shall not serue your turne, varlet, bring him away, ile goe with thee now to the doctors, and carry him along.

*Step.* Why is not here your cloake ? what would you haue ? 60

*Giu.* I care not for that.

*Mus.* I pray you sir.

*Giu.* Neuer talke of it ; I will haue him answere it.

*Mus.* Well sir then ile leaue you, ile take this gentlemans woorde for his appearance, as I haue done yours. 65

*Giu.* Tut ile haue no woordes taken, bring him along to answere it.

*Mus.* Good sir I pitie the gentlemans case, heres your monie agayne.

*Giu.* Gods bread, tell not me of my monie, bring him 70 away I say.

*Mus.* I warrant you, he will goe with you of himselfe.

*Giu.* Yet more adoe ?

*Mus.* I haue made a fayre mashe of it.

*Step.* Must I goe ? *Exeunt.* 75

<SCENA TERTIA.>

*Enter doctor Clement, Thorello, Lorenzo se<nior> Biancha, Pizo, Tib, a seruant or two of the Doctors.*

*Clem.* Nay but stay, stay, giue me leaue ; my chayre sirha ? you signior *Lorenzo* say you went thether to meete your sonne.

*Lo.se.* I sir.

*Clem.* But who directed you thether ? 5



*Lo.se.* That did my man sir.

*Clem.* Where is hee ?

*Lo.se.* Nay I know not now, I left him with your clarke,  
and appoynted him to stay here for me.

10 *Clem.* About what time was this ?

*Lo.se.* Marry betweene one and two as I take it.

*Clem.* So, what time came my man with the message to  
you Signior *Thorello* ?

*Tho.* After two sir.

15 *Clem.* Very good, but Lady how that you were at *Cobs* :  
ha ?

*Bia.* And please you sir, ile tell you : my brother  
*Prospero* tolde me that *Cobs* house was a suspected place.

*Clem.* So it appeares me thinkes ; but on.

20 *Bia.* And that my husband vsed thether dayly ;

*Clem.* No matter, so he vse himselfe well.

*Bia.* True sir, but you know what growes by such haunts  
oftentimes.

*Clem.* I, ranke fruites of a iealous brayne Lady : but did  
25 you finde your husband there in that case, as you suspected ?

*Tho.* I found her there sir.

*Clem.* Did you so ? that alters the case ; who gaue you  
knowledge of your wiues beeing there ?

*Tho.* Marry that did my brother *Prospero*.

30 *Clem.* How *Prospero*, first tell her, then tell you after ?  
where is *Prospero* ?

*Tho.* Gone with my sister sir, I know not whither.

*Clem.* Why this is a meare tricke, a deuise ; you are  
gulled in this most grosly : alassee poore wench wert thou  
35 beaten for this, how now sirha whats the matter ?

*Enter one of the Do<ctors> men.*

*Ser.* Sir theres a gentleman in the court without desires  
to speake with your worship.

*Clem.* A gentleman ? whats he ?

v. iii. 6 sir ] sir ? Q 9 and] And beginning a new line in Q 12  
message corr Q : messago Q originally 19 on ] on, Q 25 suspected ?]  
suspected Q 31 *Prospero* ?] *Prospero*. Q



Ser. A Souldier, sir, he sayeth.

Clem. A Souldier? fetch me my armour, my sworde, 40  
quickly, a souldier speake with me, why when knaues,—  
come on, come on, hold my cap there, so; giue me my  
gorget, my sword; stand by, I will end your matters  
anone; let the souldier enter, now sir what haue you to  
say to me? 45

*Enter Bobadilla and Matheo.*

Bob. By your worships fauour.

Clem. Nay keepe out sir, I know not your pretence, you  
send me word sir you are a souldier, why sir you shall bee  
answered here, here be them haue beene amongst souldiers.  
Sir your pleasure 50

Bob. Fayth sir so it is: this gentleman and my selfe haue  
beene most violently wronged by one signior *Giulliano*,  
a gallant of the citie here, and for my owne part I protest,  
beeing a man in no sorte giuen to this filthy humor of  
quarreling, he hath asaulted me in the way of my peace: 55  
dispoyle me of mine honor, disarmd me of my weapons,  
and beaten me in the open streetes: when I not so much  
as once offered to resist him.

Clem. Oh Gods precious is this the souldier? here take  
my armour quickly, twill make him swoone I feare; he is 60  
not fit to look on't, that will put vp a blow.

*Enter Seruant.*

Mat. Andt please your worship he was bound to the  
peace.

Clem. Why, and he were sir, his hands were not bound,  
were they? 65

Ser. There is one of the varlets of the citie, has brought  
two gentlemen here vpon arest sir.

Clem. Bid him come in, set by the picture: *Enter Mus.*  
now sir, what? signior *Giulliano*? ist you that *with Giu. and*  
are arested at signior freshwaters suit here. *Stephano.* 70

v. iii. 41 quickly,] quickly Q 43 sword;] sword Q by,] by Q  
45 stage dir. Bobadilla] Bobadillo] Q 52 *Giulliano*,] *Giulliano*: Q  
53 The comma after here doubtful or missing in some copies



*Giu.* Ifayth maister Doctor, and heres another brought at my suite.

*Clem.* What are yo<u> sir?

*Step.* A gentleman sir, oh vncle?

75 *Clem.* Vncle? who, *Lorenzo*?

*Lo.se.* I Sir.

*Step.* Gods my wnesse [my] vncle, I am wrongd here monstrously, he chargeth me with stealing of his cloake, & would I might neuer stir, if I did not finde it in the street  
80 by chance.

*Giu.* Oh did you finde it now? you saide you bought it ere while.

*Step.* And you sayd I stole it, nay now my vnckle is here I care not.

85 *Clem.* Well let this breath a while; you that haue cause to complaine there, stand foorth; had you a warrant for this arrest?

*Bob.* I andt please your worship.

*Clem.* Nay do not speake in passion so, where had you it?

90 *Bob.* Of your clarke sir.

*Clem.* Thats well and my clarke can make warrants, and my hand not at them; where is the warrant? varlet haue you it?

*Mus.* No sir your worshippes man bid me doe it for  
95 these gentlemen; and he would be my discharge.

*Clem.* Why signior *Giulliano*, are you such a nouice to be arrested and neuer see the warrant?

*Giu.* Why sir, he did not arrest me.

*Clem.* No? how then?

100 *Giu.* Marry sir he came to me and sayd he must arrest me, and he would vse me kindly, and so foorth.

*Clem.* Oh Gods pittie, was it so sir, he must arrest you: giue me my long sworde there: helpe me of; so, come on sir varlet, I must cut of your legges sirha; nay stand vp,  
105 ile vse you kindly; I must cut of your legges I say.

v. iii. 73 sir? ] sir. Q      74 sir,] sir? Q      82 while.] while? Q  
87 arrest?] arrest Q      94 it] it; Q      95 gentlemen;] gentlemen Q  
104 vp,] vp Q



*Mus.* Oh good sir I beseech you, nay good maister doctor, oh good sir.

*Clem.* I must do it ; there is no remedie ;  
I must cut of your legges sirha.  
I must cut of your eares, you rascall I must do it ; 110  
I must cut of your nose, I must cut of your head.

*Mus.* Oh for God sake good Maister Doctor.

*Clem.* Well rise, how doest thou now ? doest thou feele thy selfe well ? hast thou no harme ?

*Mus.* No I thanke God sir and your good wor- 115  
shippe.

*Clem.* Why so, I sayd I must cut of thy legges, and I must cut of thy armes, and I must cut of thy head : but I did not do it : so you sayd you must arrest this gentleman, but you did not arrest him you knaue, you slaue, you rogue, do you 120 say you must arrest ? sirha away with him to the iayle, ile teach you a tricke for your must.

*Mus.* Good M. Doctor I beseech you be good to me.

*Clem.* Marry a God : away with him I say.

*Mus.* Nay sblood before I goe to prison, ile put on my 125 olde brasen face, and disclaime in my vocation : Ile discover, thats flat, and I be committed, it shall be for the committing of more villainies then this, hang me, and I loose the least graine of my fame.

*Clem.* Why ? when knaue ? by Gods marry, ile clappe 130 thee by the heeles to.

*Mus.* Hold, hold, I pray you.

*Clem.* Whats the matter ? stay there.

*Mus.* Fayth sir afore I goe to this house of bondage, I haue a case to vnfolde to your worshippe : which (that it 135 may appeare more playne vnto your worshippes view) I do thus first of all vncase, & appeare in mine owne proper nature, seruant to this gentleman : and knowne by the name of *Musco*.

*Lo.se.* Ha ? *Musco.* 140

v. iii. 107 oh] Oh Q 113 rise,] rise Q 117 so,] so Q 121 arrest ?  
sirha] arrest sirha : Q 127 discover,] discover Q



*Step.* Oh vncke, *Musco* has beene with my cosen and I all this day.

*Clem.* Did not I tell you there was some deuise ?

*Mus.* Nay good M. Doctor since I haue layd my selfe  
145 thus open to your worship : now stand strong for me, till  
the progresse of my tale be ended, and then if my wit do  
not deserue your countenance : Slight throw it on a dogge,  
and let me goe hang my selfe.

*Cle.* Body of me a merry knaue, giue me a boule of Sack.  
150 Signior *Lorenzo*, I bespeak your patience in perticuler,  
marry your eares in generall. Here knaue, Doctor *Clement*  
drinckes to thee.

*Mus.* I pledge M. Doctor and't were a sea to the bottome.

*Cle.* Fill his boule for that, fil his boule . so, now speak  
155 freely.

*Mus.* Indeede this is it will make a man speake freely.  
But to the poynt, know then that I *Musco* (beeing somewhat  
more trusted of my maister then reason required, and  
knowing his intent to *Florence*) did assume the habit of  
160 a poore souldier in wants, and minding by some meanes to  
intercept his iorney in the mid way, twixt the grandg and  
the city, I encountred him, where begging of him in the  
most accomlisht and true garbe (as they tearme it) con-  
trarie to al expectation, he reclaimd me from that bad course  
165 of life ; entertayned me into his seruice, employed me in his  
busines, possest me with his secrets, which I no sooner had  
receiued, but (seeking my young maister, and finding him  
at this gentlemans house) I reuealed all most amply : this  
done, by the deuise of signior *Prospero*, and him together,  
170 I returnd (as the *Rauen* did to the *Arke*) to mine olde  
maister againe, told him he should finde his sonne in what  
maner he knows, at one *Cobs* house, where indced he neuer  
ment to come : now my maister he to maintayne the iest,  
went thether, and left me with your worships clark : who  
175 being of a most fine supple disposition (as most of your

v. iii 143 deuise ?] deuise Q    144 haue] hane Q    149-50 Sack.  
Signior] Sack, signior Q    150 your] your Q    151 in generall  
Here] in generall, here Q    173 come ] come, Q    174 left] left Q



clarkes are) proffers me the wine, which I had the grace to accept very easily, and to the tauerne we went : there after much ceremonie, I made him drunke in kindenesse, stript him to his shurt, and leauing him in that coole vayne, departed, frolicke, courtier like, hauing obtayned a suit : 180 which suit fitting me exceedingly well, I put on, and vsurping your mans phrase & action, caried a message to Signior *Thorello* in your name : which message was meerely deuised but to procure his absence, while signior *Prospero* might make a conueiance of *Hesperida* to my maister. 185

*Clem.* Stay, fill me the boule agayne, here ; twere pittie of his life would not cherish such a spirite : I drinke to thee, fill him wine, why now do you perceiue the tricke of it ?

*Tho.* I, I perceiue well we were all abusd.

*Lo.se.* Well what remedie ? 190

*Clem.* Where is *Lorenzo*, and *Prospero*, canst thou tell ?

*Mus.* I sir, they are at supper at the *Meeremaid*, where I left your man.

*Clem.* Sirha goe warne them hether presently before me : and if the hower of your fellowes resurrection be come, 195 bring him to. But forward, forward, when thou hadst beene at *Thor[r]ellos*. *Exit seruant.*

*Mus.* Marry sir (comming along the streete) these two gentlemen meet me, and very strongly supposing me to be your worships scribe, entreated me to procure them 200 a warrant, for the arrest of signior *Giulliano*, I promist them vpon some paire of silke stockins or a iewell, or so, to do it, and to get a varlet of the citie to serue it, which varlet I appoynted should meete them vpon the Realto at such an houre : they no sooner gone, but I in a meere hope of 205 more gaine by signior *Giulliano*, went to one of *Satans* old Ingles a broker, & there paund your mans liuerie for a varlets suite, which here with my selfe, I offer vnto your worships consideration.

v. iii. 188 it ?] it. Q  
*Prospero*,] *Prospero* Q  
 varlet] which vatlet Q

189 I, I] I, I, Q abusd.] abusd- Q 191  
 195 be come,] become Q 203 which  
 205 houre :] houre, Q



- 210 *Clem.* Well giue me thy hand: *Proh superi ingenium  
magnum quis nosset Homerum, Ill[us] æternum si latuisset  
opus?* I admire thee, I honor thee, and if thy maister, or  
any man here be angry with thee, I shall suspect his wit  
while I know him for it, doe you heare Signior *Thorello*,  
215 Signior *Lorenzo*, and the rest of my good friendes, I pray  
you let me haue peace when they come, I haue sent for the  
two gallants and *Hesperida*, Gods marry I must haue you  
friendes, how now? what noyse is there?

*Enter seruant, then Peto.*

*Ser.* Sir it is *Peto* is come home.

- 220 *Cle. Peto*, bring him hether, bring him hether, what how  
now signior drunckard, in armes against me, ha? your  
reason, your reason for this?

*Pe.* I beseech your worship to pardon me.

*Clem.* Well, sirha tell him I do pardon him.

- 225 *Pe.* Truly sir I did happen into bad companie by chance,  
and they cast me in a sleepe and stript me of all my cloathes.

*Clem.* Tut this is not to the purpose, touching your  
armour, what might your armour signifie?

- Pe.* Marry sir it hung in the roome where they stript me,  
230 and I borrowed it of on of the drawers, now in the euening  
to come home in, because I was loth to come through the  
street in my shurt.

*Enter Lorenzo iunior, Prospero, Hesperida.*

- Clem.* Well disarme him, but its no matter, let him stand  
by, who be these? oh young gallants; welcome, welcome,  
235 and you Lady, nay neuer scatter such amazed lookes  
amongst vs, *Qui nil potest sperare desperet nihil.*

*Pros.* Faith M. Doctor thats euen I, my hopes are smal,  
and my dispaire shal be as little. Brother, sister, brother,  
what cloudy, cloudy? *and will noe sunshine on these lookes*

v. iii. 210 *Proh*] *Proh.* Q 211 *nosset*] *noscit* Q *Homerum,*] *Homerum.* Q 212 thee, I] thee I Q 217 *must*] *musi* Q 220 *Peto,*] *Peto* Q 222 *reason, your*] *reason your* Q this?] this Q 225 *chance,*] *chance* Q 227 *purpose,*] *purpose* Q 228 *signifie*] *signifie.* Q 233 *matter,*] *matter* Q 238-9 brother, what] brother what Q



*appeare* ? well since there is such a tempest towarde, ile be 240  
the porpuis, ile daunce : wench be of good cheare, thou  
hast a cloake for the rayne yet, where is he ? S'hart how  
now, the picture of the prodigal, go to, ile haue the calfe  
drest for you at my charges.

*Lo.se.* Well sonne *Lorenzo*, this dayes worke of yours hath 245  
much deceiued my hopes, troubled my peace, and stretcht  
my patience further then became the spirite of dutie.

*Cle.* Nay Gods pitie signior *Lorenzo* you shal vrge it no  
more, come since you are here, ile haue the disposing of all,  
but first signior *Giulliano* at my request take your cloake 250  
agayne.

*Gu.* Well sir I am content.

*Cle.* Stay now let me see, oh signior Snow-liuer, I had  
almost forgotten him, and your *Genius* there, what doth he  
suffer for a good conscience to ? doth he beare his crosse 255  
with patience ?

*Mu.* Nay they haue scarce one cros between them both  
to beare.

*Clem.* Why doest thou know him, what is he ? what  
is he ? 260

*Mus.* Marry search his pocket <s> sir, and the <i>le shew  
you he is an Author Sir.

*Cle.* *Dic mihi musa virum* : are you an Author sir, giue  
me leaue a little, come on sir, ile make verses with you now  
in honor of the Gods, and the Goddesses for what you dare 265  
*extempore* ; and now I beginne.

Mount the <e> my *Phlegon* muse, and testifie,

How Saturne sitting in an Ebon cloud,

Disrobd his *podex*, white as iuorie,

And through the welkin thundred all aloud. 270

Theres for you sir.

*Pros.* Oh he writes not in that height of stile.

*Clem.* No : weele come a steppe or two lower then.

v iii. 240 *appeare* ?] *appeare*, Q 243 go to,] go to Q 249 more,]  
more Q 253 Snow-liuer,] Snow-liuer Q 256 patience ?] patience.  
Q 267 *Phlegon* muse] *Phlegon* muse Q 270-1 One line in Q 271  
Theres] theres Q



- From Catadupa and the bankes of Nile,*  
 275 *Where onely breedes your monstrous Crocodile :*  
*Now are we purposd for to fetch our stile.*  
*Pros.* Oh too farre fetcht for him still maister Doctor.  
*Clem.* I, say you so ? lets intreat a sight of his vaine then.  
*Pros.* Signior, maister Doctor desires to see a sight of  
 280 your vaine, nay you must not denie him.  
*Cle.* What, al this verse ? body of me he carries a whole  
 realme ; a common wealth of paper in his hose, lets see  
 some of his subiects.  
*Vnto the boundlesse ocean of thy bewtie,*  
 285 *Runnes this poor riuer, chargd with streames of zeale,*  
*Returning thee the tribute of my dutie :*  
*Which here my youth, my plaints, my loue reueale.*  
 Good ! is this your owne inuention ?  
*Mat.* No sir, I translated that out of a booke, called *Delia*.  
 290 *C.* Oh but I wold see some of your owne, some of your  
 owne.  
*Mat.* Sir ; heres the beginning of a sonnet I made to my  
 mistresse.  
*Clem.* That that : who ? to *Maddona Hesperida*, is she  
 295 your mistresse ?  
*Pros.* It pleaseth him to call her so, sir.  
*Clem.* *In Sommer time when Phœbus golden rayes.*  
 You translated this too ? did you not ?  
*Pros.* No this is inuention ; he found it in a ballad.  
 300 *Mat.* Fayth sir, I had most of the conceite of it out of  
 a ballad indeede.  
*Clem.* Conceite, fetch me a couple of torches, sirha, I  
 may see the conceite : quickly ! its very darke !  
*Giu.* Call you this poetry ?  
 305 *Lo.iu.* Poetry ? nay then call blasphemie, religion ;  
 Call Diuels, Angels ; and Sinne, pietie :

v. v. 277 Doctor.] Doctor : Q 278 so ?] so, Q then.] then ? Q  
 281 What.] what ; Q verse ?] verse, Q 288 Good !] Good ? Q 294  
*Hesperida.*] *Hesperida* Q 295 mistresse ?] mistresse Q 297  
*Phœbus*] *Phœbus* Q 302-3 *As verse, divided at sirha, | I in Q.* 303  
 quickly !] quickly ? Q darke !] darke ? Q



Let all things be preposterously transchangd.

*Lo.se.* Why how now sonne? what? are you startled  
now?

Hath the brize prickt you? ha? go to; you see,  
How abiectly your Poetry is ranckt, 310  
In generall opinion.

*Lo.in.* Opinion, O God let grosse opinion  
Sinck & be damnd as deepe as *Barathrum*.  
If it may stand with your most wisht content,  
I can refell opinion, and approue 315  
The state of poesie, such as it is,  
Blessed, æternall, and most true deuine :  
Indeede if you will looke on Poesie,  
As she appeares in many, poore and lame,  
Patcht vp in remnants and olde worne ragges, 320  
Halfe starud for want of her peculiar foode,  
Sacred inuention, then I must conferme,  
Both your conceite and censure of her merrite.  
But view her in her glorious ornaments,  
Attired in the maiestie of arte, 325  
Set high in spirite with the precious taste  
Of sweete philosophie, and which is most,  
Crownd with the rich traditions of a soule,  
That hates to haue her dignitie prophand,  
With any relish of an earthly thought : 330  
Oh then how proud a presence doth she beare.  
Then is she like her selfe, fit to be seene  
Of none but graue and consecrated eyes :  
Nor is it any blemish to her fame,  
That such leane, ignorant, and blasted wits, 335  
Such brainlesse guls, should vtter their stolne wares  
With such aplauses in our vulgar eares :  
Or that their slubberd lines haue currant passe,

v v. 310-13 *Divided in Q* How . . . generall opinion. | Opinion, . . .  
damnd | As . . . *Barathrum*, 315 opinion,] opinion Q approue]  
approue, Q 320 worne] worn-out G 321 foode,] foode: Q 323  
merrite,] merrite, Q 326 taste] taste, Q 332 selfe,] selfe Q seene]  
seene, Q 335 leane,] leane. Q



From the fat iudgements of the multitude,

340 But that this barren and infected age,  
Should set no difference twixt these empty spirits,  
And a true Poet : then which reuerend name,  
Nothing can more adorne humanitie. *Enter with torches.*

*Clem.* I *Lorenzo*, but election is now governd altogether  
345 by the influence of humor, which instead of those holy  
flames that should direct and light the soule to eternitie,  
hurles foorth nothing but smooke and congested vapours,  
that stifle her vp, & bereaue her of al sight & motion. But  
she must haue store of *Ellebore* giuen her to purge these  
350 grosse obstructions : oh thats well sayd, giue me thy torch,  
come lay this stuffe together. So, giue fire ? there, see, see,  
how our Poets glory shines brighter, and brighter, still, still  
it increaseth, oh now its at the highest, and now it declines  
as fast : you may see gallants, *Sic transit gloria mundi.*

355 Well now my two Signior Out-sides, stand foorth, and lend  
me your large eares, to a sentence, to a sentence : first you  
signior shall this night to the cage, and so shall you sir,  
from thence to morrow morning, you signior shall be  
carried to the market crosse, and be there bound : and so  
360 shall you sir, in a large motlie coate, with a rodde at your  
girdle ; and you in an olde suite of sackcloth, and the ashes  
of your papers (saue the ashes sirha) shall mourne all day,  
and at night both together sing some ballad of repentance  
very pitteously, which you shall make to the tune of *Who*  
365 *list to leade and a souldiers life.* Sirha bilman, imbrace you  
this torch, and light the gentlemen to their lodgings, and  
because we tender their safetie, you shall watch them to  
night, you are prouided for the purpose, away and looke  
to your charge with an open eye sirha.

370 *Bob.* Well I am armd in soule agaynst the worst of  
fortune.

*Mat.* Fayth so should I be, and I had slept on it.

*Pe.* I am armd too, but I am not like to sleepe on it.

v. v. 349 *Ellebore*] *Ellebore*, Q  
bilman] bil man Q

355 Out-sides] out sides Q 365



*Mus.* Oh how this pleaseth me.

*Exeunt* (*Bobadilla, Matheo, and Piso*).

*Clem.* Now Signior *Thorello, Giulliano, Prospero, Biancha.* 375

*Step.* And not me sir.

*Clem.* Yes and you sir : I had lost a sheepe and he had not bleated. I must haue you all friends : but first a worde with you young gallant, and you Lady.

*Giu.* Wel brother *Prospero* by this good light that shines 380 here I am loth to kindle fresh coles, but and you had come in my walke within these two houres I had giuen you that you should not haue clawne of agayne in hast, by Iesus I had done it, I am the arren<t>st rogue that euer breathd else, but now beshrew my hart if I beare you any malice in the 385 earth.

*Pros.* Fayth I did it but to hould vp a iest : and helpe my sister to a husband. But brother *Thorello*, and sister, you haue a spice of the yealous yet both of you, (in your hose I meane,) come do not dwell vpon your anger so much, 390 lets all be smoth foreheaded once agayne.

*Tho.* He playes vpon my forehead, brother *Giulliano*, I pray you tell me one thing I shall aske you : is my foreheade any thing rougher then it was wont to be ?

*Giu.* Rougher ? your forehead is smoth enough man. 395

*Tho.* Why should he then say be smoth foreheaded, Vnlesse he iested at the smothnesse of it ?

And that may be ; for horne is very smoth ; So are my browes ? by Iesu, smoth as horne ?

*Bia.* Brother had he no haunt thether in good fayth ? 400

*Pros.* No vpon my soule.

*Bia.* Nay then sweet hart : nay I pray the<e> be not angry, good faith ile neuer suspect thee any more, nay kisse me sweet musse.

*Tho.* Tell me *Biancha*, do not you play the woman with 405 me ?

v v. 375 *Biancha*] *Biancha*. Q 378 bleated.] bleated, Q 388 But] but Q 391 foreheaded] fore headed Q 392 forehead] fore head Q 394 be ?] be. Q 396 say] say ? Q 404 me sweet] mesweet Q 406 me ?] me. Q



*Bia.* Whats that sweete hart ?

*Tho* Dissemble ?

*Bia.* Dissemble ?

410 *Tho.* Nay doc not turne away : but say I fayth was it  
not a match appoynted twixt this old gentleman and you ?

*Bia.* A match ?

*Tho.* Nay if it were not, I do not care : do not weepe  
I pray thee sweete *Biancha*, nay so now ; by Iesus I am not  
415 iealous, but resolued I haue the faythfulst wife in *Italie*.

*For this I finde where realousie is fed,*

*Hornes in the minde, are worse then on the head.*

*See what a droue of hornes flie in the ayre,*

*Wingd with my cleansed, and my credulous breath :*

420 *Watch them suspicious eyes, watch where they fall,*

*See see, on heades that thinke they haue none at all.*

*Oh what a plentuous world of this will come,*

*When ayre raynes hornes, all men be sure of some.*

*Clem.* Why thats well, come then : what say you, are all  
425 agreed ? doth none stand out ?

*Pros.* None but this gentleman : to whom in my owne  
person I owe all dutie and affection : but most seriously  
intreate pardon, for whatsoeuer hath past in these occur-  
rants, that might be contrarie to his most desired content.

430 *Lo.* Fayth sir it is a vertue that persues

Any saue rude and vncomposed spirites,

To make a fayre construction, and indeede

Not to stand of, when such respectiue meanes

Inuite a generall content in all

435 *Clem.* Well then I coniure you all here to put of all  
discontentment, first you Signior *Lorenzo* your cares ; you,  
and you, your iealousie : you your anger, and you your wit  
sir : and for a peace offering, heres one willing to be sacri-  
fised vppon this aulter : say do you approue my motion ?

v v 407 hart ?] hart Q 412 match ?] match Q 414 now,]  
now ? Q 416-17 where . head, quoted in *England's Parnassus*,  
1600, p 145, with the variants 'iealousie is bred', 'worse then hornes in  
the head' 423 be sure] besure Q 424 you,] you Q 425 out ?]  
out Q 430 persues] persues, Q 432 construction,] construction Q  
433 meanes] meanes, Q



*Pros.* We doe, ile be mouth for all.

440

*Clem.* Why then I wish them all 10y, and now to make our euening happinesse more full : this night you shall be all my gueses : where weele inioy the very spirite of mirth, and carouse to the health of this *Heroick* spirite, whom to honor the more I do inuest in my owne robes, desiring you 445 two *Giulliano*, and *Prospero*, to be his supporters ; the trayne to follow, my selfe will leade, vsherd by my page here with this honorable verse. *Claudite iam riuos pueri, sat prata biberunt.*

*FINIS.*

v v 440 doe,] doe Q  
*pueri,*] *pueri* Q

446 supporters ;] supporters, Q

448







---

EVERY MAN IN HIS HUMOUR.

The Revised Version  
from the Folio of 1616.

---







## THE TEXT

A MINUTE collation of the Folio text of *Every Man in his Humour* shows that it was set up from a copy of the 1601 Quarto which Jonson had worked over with manuscript corrections to prepare it for the press. The evidence is microscopic, but it is cumulative. In estimating it, it should be remembered that the Folio of 1616 was printed with scrupulous care, especially in the matter of punctuation, which Jonson rather elaborated. The following peculiarities are common to the two texts. As a rule, the Folio prints a question with the note of interrogation, but in a few passages it follows the Quarto in using a full stop :

Sweete hart will you come in to breakfast.

(Quarto, sig. D 3. Cf. II. iii. 35-6.)

. . . but did you all this signior without hurting your blade.

(Sig. E 4. Cf. III. i. 150-1.)

*Musco*, s'bloud what winde hath blowne thee hither in  
this shape.

(Sig. F. Cf. III. ii. 40-1.)

. . . are you not here by the appoyntment of doctor  
*Clemants* man.

(Sig. K 4. Cf. IV. xi. 12-13.)

In the following passages the Quarto wrongly inserts a note of interrogation, and is copied by the Folio :

*Step.* No truly sir ? (Sig. G. Cf. III. v. 74.)

*Mat.* Here sir, heres my iewell ? (Sig. K 2. Cf. IV. ix. 64.)

*Step.* A gentleman sir ? (Sig. L 2. Cf. V. iii. 3.)

In III. v. 84-5, ' that (had you taken the most deadly poysonous simple in all Florence, it should expell it ', the Quarto omitted the second bracket ; the Folio revised the passage, but also omitted the bracket.

In three prose passages the Quarto wrongly prints a



semblance of metrical form, which the Folio reproduces :

What *Cob*? our maides will haue you by the back (Ifaith)  
For comming so late this morning.

(Sig. D 2 verso. Cf. II. III. I-2.)

Well *Musco* performe this businesse happily,  
And thou makest a conquest of my loue foreuer,  
(Sigg. H 3 verso, H 4. Cf. IV. V. I-3.)

Nay I know not how, I left him with your clarke,  
And appoynted him to stay here for me.  
(Sig. L. Cf. V. I. 8-9.)

Slight though these clues are, they seem to prove that the printer of the Folio had before him a printed copy of the 1601 text interlined with corrections in Jonson's handwriting, and not a new manuscript.

The text of 1640 is substantially a reprint of the earlier Folio. Occasionally it makes a correction, as in v. v. 81 '*all may be sure of some*', where the 1616 Folio misprinted '*fame*'. At III. ii. 52 '*At Iustice CLEMENTS house here, in Colman-street*' the word '*here*' is inconsistent with the stage arrangement presupposing that the first two scenes are laid at the Windmill Tavern, and the 1640 text omits it: but such a discrepancy counts for little on the Elizabethan stage, where a change of locality is often indicated in this way. But '*here*' may simply mean '*The Old Jewry*' as in III. iii. 119, where the 1640 Folio makes no alteration. Other changes are the superlative '*he sweares most admirably!*' in III. v. 132, where the 1616 text has '*sweares admirably*'; and '*how chance that you were . . .*' in v. i. 15-16 for '*how that you were*'. The punctuation is corrected from time to time: all deliberate changes in it are recorded in the critical apparatus, and a few have been adopted in the text. The errors of the 1640 in this respect have not been recorded; they are chiefly errors of omission. But it may be noted that the 1640 editor or press-corrector



had carefully studied Jonson's own method, and attempted to harmonize a number of passages which he thought inconsistent with it. In this he did not always succeed; he was apt to misread a lightly stopped sentence, which the actor was meant to deliver 'trippingly on the tongue'. For instance the 1616 Folio uses such natural pointing as this: 'What aile you sweet heart, are you not well, speake good Mvsse' (II. iii. 40-1). The 1640 Folio spoils the effect by making one sentence into three: 'What aile you Sweet-heart? are you not well? speake good Musse.'

Other examples are III. iii. 133-5:

when I meant  
So deepe a secret to you, I meane not this,  
But that I haue to tell you, this is nothing, this.

Kitely is in a breathless hurry; but he marks time with an emphatic pause in the text of 1640:

But that I haue to tell you; this is nothing, this.

Or when Down-right at last catches Bobadill (IV. vii. 120-1), the 1616 Folio prints 'haue I found you? Come, draw, to your tooles: draw, gipsie, or Ile thresh you'. He pauses after 'toolles' to give Bobadill time to draw; but the methodical 'draw, gipsie;' of the 1640 text leaves Down-right as limp and dilatory as his victim. There is too a very interesting punctuation of Jonson's which the 1640 Folio frequently misses both in this and other plays—his use of the apostrophe to mark a sequence of two lightly pronounced syllables.<sup>1</sup> The following examples from the 1616 text illustrate this practice:

If he be'at his booke, disturbe him not.—Well sir. (I. i. 5.)  
Ah, but what miserie' is it, to know this? (II. iii. 70.)

Nay, rather then 't shall learne  
No bawdie song, the mother'her selfe will teach it!  
(II. v. 23-4.)

Carry' in my cloke againe. Yet, stay. Yet, doe too.  
(III. iii. 40.)

Wherein, my 'imaginationes runne, like sands (ib. 50.)

<sup>1</sup> See vol II, pp. 430-1.



In the first, third, or fourth of these examples the 1640 Folio omits the apostrophe; in the second and fifth it attempts a press-correction, 'what mis'rie is it', and 'my 'magnations'.

To decry the 1640 text, as Gifford did, shows a lack of critical insight; but we may be thankful that one-half of Jonson's work was printed in the earlier authoritative Folio.

The 1616 recension of this play has been reproduced four times. by Professor W. Bang in his excellent reprint of the Folio, of which the first part, containing the plays, from *Every Man in his Humour* to *Cynthia's Revels*, appeared at Louvain in 1905; by Dr. G. A. Smithson in Gayley's *Representative English Comedies*, vol. ii, 1913—a text with modernizing touches and some misprints (e. g. 'pinch your flesh, full of holes' in iv. ii. 132); by Percy Simpson in a critical edition of the play published by the Clarendon Press in 1919; and by Dr. H. Holland Carter in the parallel text of Quarto and Folio already noticed.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See page 194



Euery  
M A N I N  
H I S  
H V M O V R.

*A Comœdie.*

Acted in the yeere 1598. By the then  
Lord Chamberlaine his  
Seruants.

The Author B. I.

I U V E N.

*Haud tamen inuideo vati, quem pulpita pascunt.*

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by W I L L I A M S T A N S B Y.

---

M. D C. XVI.







EVERY MAN  
IN HIS  
HUMOUR.

A Comedy.

Acted in the yeere 1598. By the then  
Lord CHAMBERLAINE  
his Servants.

The Author B. I.

JUVEN.

*Haud tamen invidess vati, quem pulpita pascunt.*

---



LONDON;  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

---

M. DC. XL.







TO THE MOST  
LEARNED, AND  
MY HONOR'D  
FRIEND,

M<sup>r</sup>. Cambden, CLARENTIAVX.

SIR,

**T**Here are, no doubt, a supercilious race in the world, who  
will esteeme all office, done you in this kind, an iniurie ;  
so solempne a vice it is with them to vse the authoritie of their  
ignorance, to the crying downe of Poetry, or the Professors : 5  
But, my gratitude must not leaue to correct their error ; since  
I am none of those, that can suffer the benefitis confer'd vpon  
my youth, to perish with my age. It is a fraile memorie, that  
remembers but present things : And, had the fauour of the times  
so conspir'd with my disposition, as it could haue brought 10  
forth other, or better, you had had the same proportion,  
& number of the fruits, the first. Now, I pray you, to accept  
this, such, wherein neither the confession of my manners shall  
make you blush ; nor of my studies, repent you to haue beene  
the instructor : And, for the profession of my thanke-fulnesse, 15  
I am sure, it will, with good men, find either praise, or excuse.

Your true louer,

BEN. IONSON.

CLARENTIAVX not in F1 originally 5 Poetry F2 6 error]  
error F2 18 IONSON] IONSON F2



## The Persons of the Play.

KNO'WELL, <i>An old Gentleman.</i>	ROGER FORMALL, <i>His Clarke.</i>	15
ED. KNO'WELL, <i>His Sonne.</i>	KITELY, <i>A Merchant.</i>	
BRAYNE-WORME, <i>The Father's man.</i>	DAME KITELY, <i>His wife.</i>	
5 M <sup>r</sup> . STEPHEN, <i>A country Gull.</i>	M <sup>rs</sup> . BRIDGET, <i>His Sister.</i>	
DOWNE-RIGHT, <i>A plaine Squier.</i>	M <sup>r</sup> . MATTHEW, <i>The townegull.</i>	20
10 WELL-BRED, <i>His halfe Brother.</i>	CASH, <i>KITELIES Man.</i>	
IVST. CLEMENT, <i>An old merry Magistrat.</i>	COB, <i>A Water-bearer.</i>	
	TIB, <i>His Wife.</i>	
	CAP. BOBADILL, <i>A Paulesman.</i>	25

## THE SCENE L O N D O N.

6-7 *country Gull*] *country-Gull* F2      25 *Servants &c.* added by G  
*After The Scene F2 inserts the Actor-list and the note on the first performance given in F1 at the end of the play*



EVERY MAN IN  
HIS HUMOUR.

PROLOGUE.

THOUGH neede make many *Poets*, and some such  
 As art, and nature haue not betterd much ;  
 Yet ours, for want, hath not so lou'd the stage,  
 As he dare serue th'ill customes of the age :  
 Or purchase your delight at such a rate, 5  
 As, for it, he himselfe must iustly hate.  
 To make a child, now swadled, to proceede  
 Man, and then shoote vp, in one beard, and weede,  
 Past threescore yeeres : or, with three rustie swords,  
 And helpe of some few foot-and-halfe-foote words, 10  
 Fight ouer *Yorke*, and *Lancasters* long iarres :  
 And in the tyring-house bring wounds, to scarres.  
 He rather prayes, you will be pleas'd to see  
 One such, to day, as other playes should be.  
 Where neither *Chorus* wafts you ore the seas ; 15  
 Nor creaking throne comes downe, the boyes to please ;  
 Nor nimble squibbe is seene, to make afear'd  
 The gentlewomen ; nor roul'd bullet heard  
 To say, it thunders ; nor tempestuous drumme  
 Rumbles, to tell you when the storme doth come ; 20  
 But deedes, and language, such as men doe vse :  
 And persons, such as *Comædie* would chuse,  
 When she would shew an Image of the times,  
 And sport with humane follies, not with crimes.  
 Except, we make 'hem such by louing still 25  
 Our popular errors, when we know th'are ill.  
 I meane such errors, as you'll all confesse  
 By laughing at them, they deserue no lesse :  
 Which when you heartily doe, there's hope left, then,  
 You, that haue so grac'd monsters, may like men. 30

3 stage.] stage originally in *Fr*



*Act I. Scene I.*

KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-WORME, M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN.

A Goodly day toward! and a fresh morning! BRAYNE-WORME,

Call vp your yong master: bid him rise, sir.  
Tell him, I haue some businesse to employ him.

BRA. I will sir, presently. KNO. But heare you, sirah,  
5 If he be'at his booke, disturbe him not. BRA. Well sir.

KNO. How happie, yet, should I esteeme my selfe  
Could I (by any practise) weane the boy  
From one vaine course of studie, he affects.  
He is a scholler, if a man may trust

10 The liberall voice of fame, in her report  
Of good accompt, in both our *vniversities*,  
Either of which hath fauour'd him with graces:  
But their indulgence, must not spring in me  
A fond opinion, that he cannot erre.

15 My selfe was once a student; and, indeed,  
Fed with the selfe-same humour, he is now,  
Dreaming on nought but idle *poetrie*,  
That fruitlesse, and vnprofitable art,  
Good vnto none, but least to the professors,

20 Which, then, I thought the mistresse of all knowledge:  
But since, time, and the truth haue wak'd my iudgement,  
And reason taught me better to distinguish,  
The vaine, from th'vsefull learnings. Cossin STEPHEN!  
What newes with you, that you are here so early?

25 STE. Nothing, but eene come to see how you doe, vncle.

KNO. That's kindly done, you are wel-come, cousse.

STE. I, I know that sir, I would not ha' come else.

How doe my cousin EDWARD, vncle?

KNO. O, well cousse, goe in and see: I doubt he be  
30 scarce stirring yet.

1. 1 ] A Street. Enter Knowell at the door of his House G 5 be'at]  
be at F2 23 Cossin] Coussin F2 28 doe] does F2



S T E. Vncle, afore I goe in, can you tell me, an' he haue ere a booke of the sciences of hawking, and hunting? I would faine borrow it.

K N O. Why, I hope you will not a hawking now, will you? 35

S T E P. No wusse; but I'll practise against next yeere vncle: I haue bought me a hawke, and a hood, and bells, and all; I lacke nothing but a booke to keepe it by.

K N O. O, most ridiculous.

S T E P. Nay, looke you now, you are angrie, vncle: why 40 you know, an' a man haue not skill in the hawking, and hunting-languages now a dayes, I'll not giue a rush for him. They are more studied then the *Greeke*, or the *Latine*. He is for no gallants companie without 'hem. And by gads lid I scorne it, I, so I doe, to be a consort for euery *hum-drum*, 45 hang 'hem scroyles, there's nothing in 'hem, i' the world. What doe you talke on it? Because I dwell at *Hogsden*, I shall keepe companie with none but the archers of *Finsburie*? or the citzens, that come a ducking to *Islington* ponds? A fine iest ifaith! Slid a gentleman mun show 50 himselfe like a gentleman. Vncle, I pray you be not angrie, I know what I haue to doe, I trow, I am no nouice.

K N O. You are a prodigall absurd cocks-combe: Goe to. Nay neuer looke at me, it's I that speake. 55

Tak't as you will sir, I'll not flatter you.

Ha' you not yet found meanes enow, to wast

That, which your friends haue left you, but you must

Goe cast away your money on a kite,

And know not how to keepe it, when you ha' done? 60

O it's comely! this will make you a gentleman!

Well cosen, well! I see you are eene past hope

Of all reclaime. I, so, now you are told on it,

You looke another way. S T E P. What would you ha' me doe?

i. i. 43 then] than F2  
cousen F2

49 a ducking] aducking F2

62 cosen]



- 65 KNO. What would I haue you doe? I'll tell you  
kinsman,  
Learne to be wise, and practise how to thriue,  
That would I haue you doe: and not to spend  
Your coyne on euery bable, that you phansie,  
Or euery foolish braine, that humors you.  
70 I would not haue you to inuade each place,  
Nor thrust your selfe on all societies,  
Till mens affections, or your owne desert,  
Should worthily inuite you to your ranke.  
He, that is so respectlesse in his courses,  
75 Oft sells his reputation, at cheape market.  
Nor would I, you should melt away your selfe  
In flashing brauerie, least while you affect  
To make a blaze of gentrie to the world,  
A little puffe of scorne extinguish it,  
80 And you be left, like an vnsauorie snuffe,  
Whose propertie is onely to offend.  
I'd ha' you sober, and containe your selfe;  
Not, that your sayle be bigger then your boat:  
But moderate your expences now (at first)  
85 As you may keepe the same proportion still.  
Nor, stand so much on your gentilitie,  
Which is an aërie, and meere borrow'd thing,  
From dead mens dust, and bones: and none of yours  
Except you make, or hold it. Who comes here?

*Act I. Scene II.*

SERVANT, M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN, KNO'WELL,  
BRAYNE-WORME.

S Aue you, gentlemen.

STEP. Nay, we do' not stand much on our gentilitie,  
friend; yet, you are wel-come, and I assure you, mine  
vncke here is a man of a thousand a yeare, *Middlesex* land:

i. i. 77 brauerie] brav'rie F2    80 vnsauorie] unsav'ry F2    83 then]  
than F2    87 aerie] ayrie F2    i. ii. 4 here] here, some copies of F1



hee has but one sonne in all the world, I am his next heire 5  
(at the common law) master STEPHEN, as simple as I  
stand here, if my cossen die (as there's hope he will) I haue  
a prettie liuing o' mine owne too, beside, hard-by here.

SERV. In good time, sir.

STEP. In good time, sir? why! and in very good time, 10  
sir. You doe not flout, friend, doe you?

SERV. Not I, sir.

STEP. Not you, sir? you were not best, sir; an' you  
should, here bee them can perceiue it, and that quickly  
to: goe to. And they can giue it againe soundly to, and 15  
neede be.

SERV. Why, sir, let this satisfie you: good faith, I had  
no such intent.

STEP. Sir, an' I thought you had, I would talke with  
you, and that presently. 20

SERV. Good master STEPHEN, so you may, sir, at  
your pleasure.

STEP. And so I would sir, good my saucie companion!  
an' you were out o' mine vncles ground, I can tell you;  
though I doe not stand vpon my gentilitie neither in't. 25

KN O. Cossen! cossen! will this nere be left?

STEP. Whorson base fellow! a mechanicall seruing-  
man! By this cudgell, and't were not for shame, I  
would——

KN O. What would you doe, you peremptorie gull? 30  
If you can not be quiet, get you hence.

You see, the honest man demeanes himselfe

Modestly to'ards you, giuing no replie

To your vnseason'd, quarrelling, rude fashion:

And, still you huffe it, with a kind of cariage, 35

As voide of wit, as of humanitie.

Goe, get you in; fore heauen, I am asham'd

Thou hast a kinsmans interest in me.

i. ii. 7 cossen] couden F2 will)] will.) F2 10 very] a very some  
copies of F1 15 and] an' F2 26 Cossen! cossen!] Cousin!  
cousin! F2 37 fore] 'fore F2



SERV. I pray you, sir. Is this master KN O'WELL' S  
40 house ?

KN O. Yes, marie, is it sir.

SERV. I should enquire for a gentleman, here, one  
master EDWARD KN O'WELL: doe you know any  
such, sir, I pray you ?

45 KN O. I should forget my selfe else, sir.

SERV. Are you the gentleman ? crie you mercie sir : I  
was requir'd by a gentleman i' the citie, as I rode out at this  
end o' the towne, to deliuer you this letter, sir.

KN O. To me, sir ! What doe you meane ? pray you  
50 remember your court'sie. (*To his most selected friend, master*  
EDWARD KN O'WELL.) What might the gentlemans  
name be, sir, that sent it ? nay, pray you be couer'd.

SERV. One master WELL-BRED, sir.

KN O. Master WELL-BRED ! A yong gentleman ?  
55 is he not ?

SERV. The same sir, master KITELY married his  
sister : the rich merchant i' the old Iewrie.

KN O. You say very true. BRAINE-WORME,  
BRAY. Sir.

60 KN O. Make this honest friend drinke here : pray you  
goe in.

This letter is directed to my sonne :

Yet, I am EDWARD KN O'WELL too, and may

With the safe conscience of good manners, vse

The fellowes error to my satisfaction.

65 Well, I will breake it ope (old men are curious)

Be it but for the stiles sake, and the phrase,

To see, if both doe answere my sonnes praises,

Who is, almost, growne the idolater

Of this yong WELL-BRED : what haue we here ? what's  
this ?

The  
letter. 70 *Why, NED, I beseech thee ; hast thou for-sworne all thy*  
*friends i' the old Iewrie ? or dost thou think vs all Iewes that*



inhabit there, yet? If thou dost, come ouer, and but see our  
 fripperie: change an olde shirt, for a whole smocke, with vs.  
 Doe not conceiue that antipathy betweene vs, and Hogs-den;  
 as was betweene Iewes, and hogs-flesh. Leauē thy vigilant 75  
 father, alone, to number ouer his greene apricots, euening, and  
 morning, o' the north-west wall: An' I had beene his sonne, I  
 had sau'd him the labor, long since; if, taking in all the yong  
 wenches, that passe by, at the back-dore, and codd'ling euery  
 kernell of the fruit for 'hem, would ha' seru'd. But, pr'y thee, 80  
 come ouer to me, quickly, this morning: I haue such a present  
 for thee (our Turkie companie neuer sent the like to the Grand-  
 SIGNIOR) One is a Rimer sir, o' your owne batch, your  
 owne leuin; but doth think himselfe Poet-maior, o' the towne:  
 willing to be showne, and worthy to be seene. The other—I 85  
 will not venter his description with you, till you come, because  
 I would ha' you make hether with an appetite. If the worst of  
 'hem be not worth your iorney, draw your bill of charges, as  
 unconscionable, as any Guild-hall verdict will grue it you,  
 and you shall be allow'd your viaticum. 90

From the wind-mill.

From the *Burdello*, it might come as well;  
 The *Spittle*: or *Pict-hatch*. Is this the man,  
 My sonne hath sung so, for the happiest wit,  
 The choysiest braine, the times hath sent vs forth? 95  
 I know not what he may be, in the arts;  
 Nor what in schooles: but surely, for his manners,  
 I iudge him a prophane, and dissolute wretch:  
 Worse, by possession of such great good guifts,  
 Being the master of so loose a spirit. 100  
 Why, what vnhallo'd ruffian would haue writ,  
 In such a scurrilous manner, to a friend!  
 Why should he thinke, I tell my *Apri-cotes*?  
 Or play th' *Hesperian* Dragon, with my fruit,  
 To watch it? Well, my sonne, I had thought 105  
 Y' had had more iudgement, t'haue made election

1. ii. 72 there, yet? If] there. Yet if F3 78 labor] labour F2 83  
 owne] owne F1 87 hether] hither F2 95 hath] have F3 99 guifts]  
 gifts F2 105 I had] I had F3



- Of your companions, then t'haue tane on trust,  
Such petulant, geering gamsters, that can spare  
No argument, or subiect from their iest.
- 110 But I perceiue, affection makes a foole  
Of any man, too much the father. BRAYNE-WORME,  
BRAY. Sir.  
KNO. Is the fellow gone that brought this letter?  
BRAY. Yes, sir, a pretie while since.
- 115 KNO. And, where's your yong master?  
BRAY. In his chamber sir.  
KNO. He spake not with the fellow! did he?  
BRAY. No sir, he saw him not.  
KNO. Take you this letter, and deliuer it my sonne,  
120 But with no notice, that I haue open'd it, on your life.  
BRAY. O lord, sir, that were a iest, indeed!  
KNO. I am resolu'd, I will not stop his iourney;  
Nor practise any violent meane, to stay  
The vnbridled course of youth in him: for that,  
125 Restrain'd, growes more impatient; and, in kind,  
Like to the eager, but the generous grey-hound,  
Who ne're so little from his game with-held,  
Turnes head, and leapes vp at his holders throat.  
There is a way of winning, more by loue,  
130 And vrging of the modestie, then feare:  
Force workes on seruile natures, not the free.  
He, that's compell'd to goodnesse, may be good;  
But 'tis but for that fit: where others drawne  
By softnesse, and example, get a habit.
- 135 Then, if they stray, but warne 'hem: and, the same  
They should for vertu'haue done, they'll doe for shame.

I 11 107 then *not originally in F1*: than *F2* 108 geering] jeering  
*F2* 111 BRAYNE-WORME,] BRAYN-WORM *F2* (*but cf.* 58). 119  
 sonne,] sonne *F1* sonne, *F2* 123 meane] means *F3* 125 in  
 kind] in-kind *originally in F1* 130 then] than *F2*



Act I. Scene III.

EDW. KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-WORME,  
M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN.

D Id he open it, sayest thou?

BRAY. Yes, o' my word sir, and read the contents.

E. KN. That scarce contents me. What countenance  
(pr'y thee) made he, i' the reading of it? was he angrie, or  
pleas'd? 5

BRAY. Nay sir, I saw him not reade it, nor open it,  
I assure your worship.

E. KN. No? how know'st thou, then, that he did either?

BRAY. Marie sir, because he charg'd me, on my life, to  
tell nobodie, that he open'd it: which, vnlesse hee had done, 10  
hee would neuer feare to haue it reueal'd.

E. KN. That's true: well I thanke thee, BRAYNE-  
WORME.

STEP. O, BRAYNE-WORME, did'st thou not see a  
fellow here in a what-sha'-call-him doublet! he brought 15  
mine vnle a letter e'en now.

BRAY. Yes, master STEPHEN, what of him?

STEP. O, I ha' such a minde to beate him—— Where is  
hee? canst thou tell?

BRAY. Faith, he is not of that mind: he is gone, master 20  
STEPHEN.

STEP. Gone? which way? when went he? how long  
since?

BRAY. He is rid hence. He tooke horse, at the streete  
dore. 25

STEP. And, I staid i' the fields! horson *scander-bag*  
rogue! ô that I had but a horse to fetch him backe againe.

BRAY. Why, you may ha' my m<sup>rs</sup>. gelding, to saue your  
longing, sir.

1. in] *Misnumbered Scene II in F1*      Scene II.—A Room in  
Knowell's House. G      12 BRAYNE-WORME] BLAYNE-WORME F1      16  
letter] lettler *some copies of F1*      22 he?] he! Ff



30 STEP. But, I ha' no bootes, that's the spight on't.

BRAY. Why, a fine wispe of hay, rould hard, master

STEPHEN.

STEP. No faith, it's no boote to follow him, now : let him eene goe, and hang. 'Pray thee, helpe to trusse me, 35 a little. He dos so vexe me——

BRAY. You'll be worse vex'd, when you are truss'd, master STEPHEN. Best, keepe vn-brac'd ; and walke your selfe, till you be cold : your choller may foundre you else.

40 STEP. By my faith, and so I will, now thou tell'st me on't : How dost thou like my legge, BRAYNE-WORME ?

BRAY. A very good leg ! master STEPHEN ! but the woollen stocking do's not commend it so well.

STEP. Foh, the stockings be good enough, now summer 45 is comming on, for the dust : Ile haue a paire of silke, again' winter, that I goe to dwell i' the towne. I thinke my legge would shew in a silke-hose.

BRAY. Beleeue me, master STEPHEN, rarely well.

STEP. In sadnesse, I thinke it would : I haue a reason- 50 able good legge.

BRAY. You haue an excellent good legge, master STEPHEN, but I cannot stay, to praise it longer now, and I am very sorie for't.

STEP. Another time wil serue, BRAYNE-WORME. 55 Gramercie for this.

*Kno'well* E. KN. Ha, ha, ha !

*laughes* STEP. Slid, I hope, he laughes not at me, and he doe——

*hawng* E. KN. Here was a letter, indeede, to be intercepted by a  
*read the* mans father, and doe him good with him ! Hee cannot but  
60 thinke most vertuously, both of me, and the sender, sure ;  
that make the carefull Costar'-monger of him in our *familiar*  
*Epistles*. Well, if he read this with patience, Ile be gelt, and  
troll ballads for M<sup>r</sup>. IOHN TRVNDLE, yonder, the rest of my

1 III. 34 'Pray thee] Pr'y thee F2 47 silke-hose ] silke-hose—— F2  
48 BRAY ] BRAP. F1 well ] well, Ff 56 stage dir. *Kno'well*  
F2 : Knowell F1 *laughes*] *laught* F3 62 be gelt F2 : be-gelt F1



mortalitie. It is true, and likely, my father may haue as much patience as another man; for he takes much physicke: 65 and, oft taking physicke makes a man very patient. But would your packet, master WEL-BRED, had arriu'd at him, in such a minute of his patience; then, we had knowne the end of it, which now is doubtfull, and threatens— What! my wise cossen! Nay, then, Ile furnish our feast 70 with one gull more to'ard the messe. He writes to me of a brace, and here's one, that's three: O, for a fourth; Fortune, if euer thou'lt vse thine eyes, I intreate thee—

STEP. O, now I see, who hee laught at. Hee laught at 75 some-body in that letter. By this good light, and he had laught at me—

E. K N. How now, coussen STEPHEN, melancholy'?

STEP. Yes, a little. I thought, you had laught at me, 80 cossen.

E. K N. Why, what an' I had cousse, what would you ha' done?

STEP. By this light, I would ha' told mine vncle.

E. K N. Nay, if you wold ha' told your vncle, I did laugh 85 at you, cousse.

STEP. Did you, indeede?

E. K N. Yes, indeede.

STEP. Why, then—

E. K N. What then?

STEP. I am satisfied, it is sufficient. 90

E. K N. Why, bee so gentle cousse. And, I pray you let me intreate a courtesie of you. I am sent for, this morning, by a friend i' the old *Iewrie* to come to him; It's but crossing ouer the fields to *More-gate*: Will you beare me companie? I protest, it is not to draw you into bond, or any 95 plot against the state, cousse.

STEP. Sir, that's all one, and 't were: you shall com-

1. iii 70 cossen] coussen F2 Ile furnish] Il efurnish F1 76 and]  
an' F2 78 melancholy'] melancholy F2 (cf. III. 1. 100) 81  
cousse,] cousse? F2 83, 86 STEP F2: SERV. F1 91 so] so, F2  
93 *Iewrie*] *Iewrie*, F2 94 *More-gate*] *Moore-gate* F2



mand me, twise so farre as *More-gate* to doe you good, in  
such a matter. Doe you thinke I would leaue you ? I pro-  
test—

E. K N. No, no, you shall not protest, cousse.

S T E P. By my fackins, but I will, by your leaue ; Ile  
protest more to my friend, then Ile speake off, at this time.

E. K N. You speake very well, cousse.

105 S T E P. Nay, not so neither, you shall pardon me : but  
I speake, to serue my turne.

E. K N. Your turne, couss ? Doe you know, what you  
say ? A gentleman of your sort, parts, carriage, and estima-  
tion, to talke o' your turne i' this companie, and to me,  
110 alone, like a tankard-bearer, at a conduit ! Fie. A wight,  
that (hetherto) his euery step hath left the stampe of a great  
foot behind him, as euery word the sauour of a strong spirit !  
and he ! this man ! so grac'd, guilded, or (to vse a more fit  
*metaphore*) so tin-foild by nature, as not ten house-wiues  
115 pewter (again' a good time) shew's more bright to the world  
then he ! and he (as I said last, so I say againe, and still shall  
say it) this man ! to conceale such reall ornaments as these,  
and shaddow their glorie, as a Millaners wife do's her  
wrought stomacher, with a smokie lawne, or a black  
120 cypresse ? O couss ! It cannot be answer'd, goe not about  
it. D R A K E S old ship, at *Detford*, may sooner circle the  
world againe. Come, wrong not the qualitie of your desert,  
with looking downeward, couz ; but hold vp your head, so :  
and let the *Idea* of what you are, be pourtray'd i' your face,  
125 that men may reade i' your physnomie, (*Here, within this  
place, is to be seene the true, rare, and accomplish'd monster, or  
miracle of nature, which is all one.*) What thinke you of this,  
couss ?

S T E P. Why, I doe thinke of it ; and I will be more  
130 prowd, and melancholy, and gentleman-like, then I haue  
beene : I'll ensure you.

E. K N. Why, that's resolute master S T E P H E N ! Now,

1. iii 98 *More-gate*] *Moore-gate* F2 103 then] than F2 111  
hetherto] hitherto F2 130 then] than F2 131 beene ] been, F2



if I can but hold him vp to his height, as it is happily begunne, it will doe well for a suburbe-humor : we may hap haue a match with the citie, and play him for fortie pound. 135  
Come, couss.

STEP. I'll follow you.

E. K. N. Follow me ? you must goe before.

STEP. Nay, an' I must, I will. Pray you, shew me, good cousin. 140

Act I. Scene IIII.

Mr. MATTHEW, COB.

I Thinke, this be the house : what, hough ?  
COB. Who's there ? O, master MATTHEW ! gi' your worship good morrow.

MAT. What ! COB ! how do'st thou, good COB ?  
do'st thou inhabite here, COB ? 5

COB. I, sir, I and my linage ha'kept a poore house, here, in our dayes.

MAT. Thy linage, *Monsieur* COB, what linage ? what linage ?

COB. Why sir, an ancient linage, and a princely. Mine 10  
ance'trie came from a Kings belly, no worse man : and yet no man neither (by your worships leaue, I did lie in that) but *Herring* the King of fish (from his belly, I proceed) one o' the Monarchs o' the world, I assure you. The first red herring, that was broil'd in ADAM, and EVE's kitchin, 15  
doe I fetch my pedigree from, by the Harrots bookes. His COB, was my great-great-mighty-great Grand-father.

MAT. Why mightie ? why mightie ? I pray thee.

COB. O, it was a mightie while agoe, sir, and a mightie great COB. 20

MAT. How know'st thou that ?

COB. How know I ? why, I smell his ghost, euer and anon.



MAT. Smell a ghost? ô vnsauoury iest! and the  
25 ghost of a herring COB!

COB. I sir, with fauour of your worships nose, M<sup>r</sup>.  
MATHEW, why not the ghost of a herring-cob, as well  
as the ghost of rasher-bacon?

MAT. ROGER BACON, thou wouldst say?

30 COB. I say rasher-bacon. They were both broyl'd o' the  
coles? and a man may smell broyld-meate, I hope? you  
are a scholler, vpsolue me that, now.

MAT. O raw ignorance! COB, canst thou shew me  
of a gentleman, one Captayne BOBADILL, where his  
35 lodging is?

COB. O, my guest, sir! you meane.

MAT. Thy guest! Alas! ha, ha.

COB. Why doe you laugh, sir? Doe you not meane  
Captayne BOBADILL?

40 MAT. COB, 'pray thee, aduise thyselfe well: doe not  
wrong the gentleman, and thy selfe too. I dare bee sworne,  
hee scornes thy house: hee! He lodge in such a base,  
obscure place, as thy house! Tut, I know his disposition  
so well, he would not lye in thy bed, if tho'uldst gi't  
45 him.

COB. I will not giue it him, though, sir. Masse, I thought  
somewhat was in't, we could not get him to bed, all night!  
Well, sir, though he lye not o' my bed, he lies o' my bench:  
an't please you to goe vp, sir, you shall find him with two  
50 cushions vnder his head, and his cloke wrapt about him,  
as though he had neither wun nor lost, and yet (I warrant)  
he ne're cast better in his life, then he has done, to night.

MAT. Why? was he drunke?

COB. Drunke, sir? you heare not me say so. Perhaps,  
55 hee swallow'd a tauerne-token, or some such deuice, sir:  
I haue nothing to doe withall. I deale with water, and not  
with wine. Gi'me my tankard there, hough. God b'w'you,  
sir. It's sixe a clocke: I should ha' carried two turnes, by  
this. What hough? my stopple? come.



MAT. Lye in a water-bearers house ! A gentleman of his 60  
hauings ! Well, I'll tell him my mind.

COB. What TIB, shew this gentleman vp to the  
Captayne. O, an' my house were the *Brasen-head* now !  
faith, it would eene speake, *Mo fooles yet*. You should ha'  
some now would take this M<sup>r</sup>. MATTHEW to be a gentle- 65  
man, at the least. His father's an honest man, a worship-  
full fish-monger, and so forth ; and now dos he creepe, and  
wriggle into acquaintance with all the braue gallants about  
the towne, such as my guest is : (ô, my guest is a fine man)  
and they flout him invincibly. Hee vseth euery day to 70  
a Merchants house (where I serue water) one master  
KITELY's, i' the *old Iewry* ; and here's the iest, he is  
in loue with my masters sister, (mistris BRIDGET)  
and calls her mistris : and there hee will sit you a whole  
after-noone some-times, reading o' these same abominable, 75  
vile, (a poxe on 'hem, I cannot abide them) rascally verses,  
*poetrie, poetrie*, and speaking of *enterludes*, 'twill make a  
man burst to heare him. And the wenches, they doe so  
geere, and ti-he at him—well, should they do so much to me,  
Ild for-sweare them all, by the foot of PHARAOH. 80  
There's an oath ! How many water-bearers shall you heare  
sweare such an oath ? ô, I haue a guest (he teaches me) he  
dos sweare the legiblest, of any man christned : By S<sup>t</sup>.  
GEORGE, the foot of PHARAOH, the body of me, as  
I am <a> gentleman, and a souldier : such daintie oathes ! 85  
and withall, he dos take this same filthy roguish *tobacco*,  
the finest, and cleanliest ! it would doe a man good to see  
the fume come forth at's tonnells ! Well, he owes mee fortie  
shillings (my wife lent him out of her purse, by sixe-pence  
a time) besides his lodging : I would I had it. I shall ha'it, 90  
he saies, the next *Action*. *Helter skelter*, hang sorrow, care 'll  
kill a cat, vp-tailes all, and a louse for the hang-man.



*Act 1. Scene v.*

*Bobad is  
discouered  
lying on  
his bench*

BOBADILL, TIB, MATTHEW.

H O S T E S S E, hostesse.

T I B. What say you, sir?

B O B. A cup o' thy small beere, sweet hostesse.

T I B. Sir, there's a gentleman, below, would speake  
5 with you.

B O B. A gentleman! 'ods so, I am not within.

T I B. My husband told him you were, sir.

B O B. What a plague——what meant he?

M A T. Capitaine BOBADILL?

10 B O B. Who's there? (take away the bason, good  
hostesse) come vp, sir.

T I B. He would desire you to come vp, sir. You come  
into a cleanly house, here.

M A T. 'Saue you, sir. 'Saue you, Captayne.

15 B O B. Gentle master MATTHEW! Is it you, sir?  
Please you sit downe.

M A T. Thanke you, good Capitaine, you may see, I am  
some-what audacious.

B O B. Not so, sir. I was requested to supper, last night,  
20 by a sort of gallants, where you were wish'd for, and drunke  
to, I assure you.

M A T. Vouchsafe me, by whom, good Capitaine.

B O B. Mary, by yong W E L L - B R E D, and others: Why,  
hostesse, a stoole here, for this gentleman.

25 M A T. No haste, sir, 'tis very well.

B O B. Body of me! It was so late ere we parted last  
night, I can scarce open my eyes, yet; I was but new risen,  
as you came: how passes the day abroad, sir? you can tell.

M A T. Faith, some halfe houre to seuen: now trust mee,  
30 you haue an exceeding fine lodging here, very neat, and  
priuate!

I v.] Scene iv —A Room in Cob's House G.  
downe] down? F2 17 MAT.] MAR. F1

16 sit] to sit F2



B O B. I, sir: sit downe, I pray you. Master M A T-  
T H E W (in any case) possesse no gentlemen of our acquaint-  
tance, with notice of my lodging.

M A T. Who? I sir? no. 35

B O B. Not that I need to care who know it, for the  
Cabbins is conuenient, but in regard I would not be too popu-  
lar, and generally visited, as some are.

M A T. True, Captaine, I conceiue you.

B O B. For, doe you see, sir, by the heart of valour, in 40  
me, (except it be to some peculiar and choice spirits, to  
whom I am extraordinarily ingag'd, as your selfe, or so) I  
could not extend thus farre.

M A T. O Lord, sir, I resolue so.

B O B. I confesse, I loue a cleanly and quiet priuacy, 45  
about all the tumult, and roare of fortune. What new  
booke ha' you there? What! *Goe by*, H I E R O N Y M O!

M A T. I, did you euer see it acted? is't not well  
pend?

B O B. Well pend? I would faine see all the *Poets*, of 50  
these times, pen such another play as that was! they'll  
prate and swagger, and keepe a stir of arte and deuices, when  
(as I am a gentleman) reade 'hem, they are the most shallow,  
pittifull, barren fellowes, that liue vpon the face of the earth,  
again! 55

M A T. Indeed, here are a number of fine speeches in this  
booke! *O eyes, no eyes, but fountaynes fraught with teares!*  
There's a conceit! *fountaines fraught with teares! O life,*  
*no life, but liuely forme of death!* Another! *O world, no*  
*world, but masse of publique wrongs!* A third! *Confus'd and* 60  
*fil'd with murder, and misdeeds!* A fourth! *O, the Muses!*  
Is't not excellent? Is't not simply the best that euer you  
heard, Captayne? Ha? How doe you like it?

B O B. 'Tis good.

M A T. *To thee, the purest obiect to my sense,* 65  
*The most refined essence heauen couers,*  
*Send I these lines, wherein I doe commence*  
*The happy state of turtle-billing louers.*



*If they proue rough, vn-polish't, harsh, and rude,  
Hast made the wast. Thus, mildly, I conclude.*

70  
Bobadill  
is making  
him ready  
all this  
while.

B O B. Nay, proceed, proceed. Where's this ?

M A T. This, sir ? a toy o' mine owne, in my nonage : the  
infancy of my *Muses* ! But, when will you come and see my  
studie ? good faith, I can shew you some very good things,  
75 I haue done of late—That boot becomes your legge,  
passing well, Captayne, me thinkes !

B O B. So, so, It's the fashion, gentlemen now vse.

M A T. Troth, Captayne, an' now you speake o' the  
fashion, master W E L L - B R E D 's elder brother, and I, are  
80 fall'n out exceedingly : this other day, I hapned to enter  
into some discourse of a hanger, which I assure you, both for  
fashion, and worke-man-ship, was most peremptory-beauti-  
full, and gentlemanlike ! Yet, he condemn'd, and cry'd it  
downe, for the most pyed, and ridiculous that euer he saw.

85 B O B. Squire D O W N E - R I G H T ? the halfe brother ?  
was't not ?

M A T. I sir, he.

B O B. Hang him, rooke, he ! why, he has no more  
iudgement then a malt-horse. By S. G E O R G E, I wonder  
90 you'd loose a thought vpon such an animal : the most  
peremptory absurd clowne of *christendome*, this day, he is  
holden. I protest to you, as I am a gentleman, and a  
souldier, I ne're chang'd wordes, with his like. By his  
discourse, he should eate nothing but hay. He was borne  
95 for the manger, pannier, or pack-saddle ! He ha's not so  
much as a good phrase in his belly, but all old iron, and  
rustie prouerbes ! a good commoditie for some smith, to  
make hob-nailes of.

M A T. I, and he thinks to carry it away with his man-  
100 hood still, where he comes. He brags he will gi' me the  
*bastinado*, as I heare.

B O B. How ! He the *bastinado* ! how came he by that  
word, trow ?

i. v. 78 an'] and F2      88 has] ha's F2      89 then] than F2  
90 you'd] you'l'd F1      loose] lose F2      95 ha's] has F2



M A T. Nay, indeed, he said cudgell me ; I term'd it so,  
for my more grace. 105

B O B. That may bee : For I was sure, it was none of his  
word. But, when ? when said he so ?

M A T. Faith, yesterday, they say : a young gallant,  
a friend of mine told me so.

B O B. By the foot of P H A R A O H, and't were my case 110  
now, I should send him a *chartel*, presently. The *bastinado* !  
A most proper, and sufficient *dependance*, warranted by the  
great C A R A N Z A. Come hither. You shall *chartel* him.  
I'll shew you a trick, or two, you shall kill him with, at  
pleasure : the first *stoccata*, if you will, by this ayre. 115

M A T. Indeed, you haue absolute knowledge i' the  
mysterie, I haue heard, sir.

B O B. Of whom ? Of whom ha' you heard it, I beseech  
you ?

M A T. Troth, I haue heard it spoken of diuers, that you 120  
haue very rare, and vn-in-one-breath-vtter-able skill, sir.

B O B. By heauen, no, not I ; no skill i' the earth : some  
small rudiments i' the science, as to know my time, distance,  
or so. I haue profest it more for noblemen, and gentlemens  
vse, then mine owne practise, I assure you. Hostesse, 125  
accommodate vs with another bed-staffe here, quickly :  
Lend vs another bed-staffe. The woman do's not vnder-  
stand the wordes of *Action*. Looke you, sir. Exalt not your  
point about this state, at any hand, and let your poynard  
maintayne your defence, thus : (giue it the gentleman, and 130  
leauē vs) so, sir. Come on : O, twine your body more about,  
that you may fall to a more sweet comely gentleman-like  
guard. So, indifferent. Hollow your body more sir, thus.  
Now, stand fast o' your left leg, note your distance, keepe  
your due proportion of time——Oh, you disorder your point, 135  
most irregularly !

M A T. How is the bearing of it, now, sir ?

B O B. O, out of measure ill ! A well-experienc'd hand  
would passe vpon you, at pleasure.

1. v. 125 then] than F2

132 sweet comely] sweet, comely, F2



140 M A T. How meane you, sir, passe vpon me ?

B O B. Why, thus sir (make a thrust at me) come in, vpon the answere, controll your point, and make a full carreere, at the body. The best-practis'd gallants of the time, name it the *passada* : a most desperate thrust, beleeeue it !

145 M A T. Well, come, sir.

B O B. Why, you doe not manage your weapon with any facilitie, or grace to inuite mee : I haue no spirit to play with you. Your dearth of iudgement renders you tedious.

M A T. But one *venue*, sir.

150 B O B. *Venue* ! Fie. Most grosse denomination, as euer I heard. O, the *stoccata*, while you liue, sir. Note that. Come, put on your cloke, and wee'll goe to some priuate place, where you are acquainted, some tauerne, or so—— and haue a bit——He send for one of these Fencers, and hee  
155 shall breath you, by my direction ; and, then, I will teach you your tricke. You shall kill him with it, at the first, if you please. Why, I will learne you, by the true iudgement of the eye, hand, and foot, to controll any enemies point i' the world. Should your aduersarie confront you with  
160 a pistoll, 'twere nothing, by this hand, you should, by the same rule, controll his bullet, in a line : except it were hayle-shot, and spread. What money ha' you about you, M<sup>r</sup>. M A T T H E W ?

M A T. Faith, I ha' not past a two shillings, or so.

165 B O B. 'Tis somewhat with the least : but, come. We will haue a bunch of redish, and salt, to tast our wine ; and a pipe of *tobacco*, to close the orifice of the stomach : and then, wee'll call vpon yong W E L - B R E D. Perhaps wee shall meet the C O R I D O N, his brother, there : and  
170 put him to the question.



Act II. Scene I.

KITELY, CASH, DOWNER-RIGHT.

THOMAS, Come hither,  
There lyes a note, within vpon my deske,  
Here, take my key : It is no matter, neither.  
Where is the Boy ? CAS. Within, sir, i' the ware-house.

KIT. Let him tell ouer, straight, that *Spanish* gold, 5  
And weigh it, with th' picces of eight. Doe you  
See the deliuary of those siluer stuffes,  
To M<sup>r</sup>. LV CAR. Tell him, if he will,  
He shall ha' the grogran's, at the rate I told him,  
And I will meet him, on the *Exchange*, anon. 10

CAS. Good, sir.

KIT. Doe you see that fellow, brother DOWNER-  
RIGHT ?

DOW. I, what of him ?

KIT. He is a iewell, brother. 15

I tooke him of a child, vp, at my dore,  
And christned him, gaue him mine owne name, THOMAS,  
Since bred him at the Hospitall ; where proung  
A toward impe, I call'd him home, and taught him  
So much, as I haue made him my Cashier, 20  
And giu'n him, who had none, a surname, CASH :  
And find him, in his place so full of faith,  
That, I durst trust my life into his hands.

DOW. So, would not I in any bastards, brother,  
As, it is like, he is : although I knew 25  
My selfe his father. But you said yo' had somewhat  
To tell me, gentle brother, what is't ? what is't ?

KIT. Faith, I am very loath, to vtter it,  
As fearing, it may hurt your patience :

II. i. Misnumbered Scene II in most copies of F2 Scene I.—The Old  
Jewry A Hall in Kiteley's House. G 1 hither,] hither. F2 4  
i' the] i'th F3 ware-house.] ware-house, F2 6 th'] the F2 (cf. III.  
iii. 42) 17 owne] one F2



- 30 But, that I know, your iudgement is of strength,  
Against the neerenesse of affection——  
D o w. What need this circumstance? pray you be  
direct.  
K I T. I will not say, how much I doe ascribe  
35 Vnto your friendship; nor, in what regard  
I hold your loue: but, let my past behaiour,  
And vsage of your sister, but confirme  
How well I'auē beene affected to your——  
D o w. You are too tedious, come to the matter, the  
40 matter.  
K I T. Then (without further ceremonie) thus.  
My brother W E L L-B R E D, sir, (I know not how)  
Of late, is much declin'd in what he was,  
And greatly alter'd in his disposition.  
45 When he came first to lodge here in my house,  
Ne're trust me, if I were not proud of him:  
Me thought he bare himselfe in such a fashion,  
So full of man, and sweetnesse in his carriage,  
And (what was chiefe) it shew'd not borrowed in him,  
50 But all he did, became him as his owne,  
And seem'd as perfect, proper, and posset  
As breath, with life, or colour, with the bloud.  
But, now, his course is so irregular,  
So loose, affected, and depriu'd of grace,  
55 And he himselfe withall so farre falne off  
From that first place, as scarce no note remaines,  
To tell mens iudgements where he lately stood.  
Hee's growne a stranger to all due respect,  
Forgetfull of his friends, and not content  
60 To stale himselfe in all societies,  
He makes my house here common, as a *Mart*,  
A *Theater*, a publike receptacle  
For giddie humour, and diseased riot;  
And here (as in a tauerne, or a stewes)

11 1 37 but] both G  
52 lfe,] life, F2

49 borrowed Ff *Read perhaps borrow'd.*



He, and his wild associates, spend their houres, 65  
In repetition of lasciuious iests,  
Sweare, leape, drinke, dance, and reuell night by night,  
Controll my seruants : and indeed what not ?

D o w. 'Sdeynes, I know not what I should say to him,  
i' the whole world ! He values me, at a crackt three- 70  
farthings, for ought I see : It will neuer out o' the flesh  
that's bred i' the bone ! I haue told him inough, one would  
thinke, if that would serue : But, counsell to him, is as good,  
as a shoulder of mutton to a sicke horse. Well ! he knowes  
what to trust to, for G E O R G E. Let him spend, and spend, 75  
and domineere, till his heart ake ; an' hee thinke to bee  
relieu'd by me, when he is got into one o'your citie pounds,  
the Counters, he has the wrong sow by the eare, ifaith : and  
claps his dish at the wrong mans dore. I'll lay my hand  
o' my halfe-peny, e're I part with't, to fetch him out, I'll 80  
assure him.

K I T. Nay, good brother, let it not trouble you, thus.

D o w. 'Sdeath, he mads me, I could eate my very spur-  
lethers, for anger ! But, why are you so tame ? Why doe  
you not speake to him, and tell him how he disquiets your 85  
house ?

K I T. O, there are diuers reasons to disswade, brother.  
But, would your selfe vouchsafe to trauaile in it,  
(Though but with plaine, and easie circumstance)  
It would, both come much better to his sense, 90  
And sauour lesse of stomack, or of passion.  
You are his elder brother, and that title  
Both giues, and warrants you authoritie ;  
Which (by your presence seconded) must breed  
A kinde of dutie in him, and regard : 95  
Whereas, if I should intimate the least,  
It would but adde contempt, to his neglect,  
Heape worse on ill, make vp a pile of hatred  
That, in the rearing, would come tottring downe,

11. i 77 citie pounds] City-pounds F<sub>2</sub> 87 brother] me G (from Q)  
88 trauaile] travell F<sub>2</sub> 93 you] your F<sub>2</sub>



not finde in my heart to swinge the whole ging of'hem, one  
after another, and begin with him first. I am grieu'd, it  
should be said he is my brother, and take these courses.  
Wel, as he brewes, so he shall drinke, for G E O R G E, againe.  
35 Yet, he shall heare on't, and that tightly too, and I liue,  
Ifaith.

K I T. But, brother, let your reprehension (then)  
Runne in an easie current, not ore-high  
Carried with rashnesse, or deuouring choller ;  
40 But rather vse the soft perswading way,  
Whose powers will worke more gently, and compose  
Th'imperfect thoughts you labour to reclaime :  
More winning, then enforcing the consent.

D o w. I, I, let me alone for that, I warrant you.  
*Bell rings.* K I T. How now ? oh, the bell rings to breakfast.  
46 Brother, I pray you goe in, and beare my wife  
Companie, till I come ; Ile but giue order  
For some dispatch of businesse, to my seruants——

*Act II. Scene III.*

[*To them.*] K I T E L Y, C O B, D A M E K I T E L Y.

W Hat, C O B ? our maides will haue you by the back  
(Ifaith) for comming so late this morning.

C O B. Perhaps so, sir, take heed some body haue not them  
*He passes by with his tankard.* by the belly, for walking so late in the euening.

K I T. Well, yet my troubled spirit's somewhat eas'd,  
Though not repos'd in that securitie,  
As I could wish : But, I must be content.  
How e're I set a face on't to the world,  
Would I had lost this finger, at a venter,  
10 So W E L L - B R E D had ne're lodg'd within my house.

II. ii 31 ging] gang F3 34 he brewes] hee brews *corrected copies of*  
F2 so he shall F1: so shall he F2 43 then] than F2 II. iii.  
BRIDGET is added by Dr G A Smithson, but she need not enter at 34.  
2 Ifaith] ifaith F2 for] For Ff, *beginning a new line* 7 content ]  
content, G 8 world,] world G 9 venter] venture F3



Why't cannot be, where there is such resort  
 Of wanton gallants, and yong reuellers,  
 That any woman should be honest long.  
 Is't like, that factious beautie will preserue  
 The publike weale of chastitie, vn-shaken, 15  
 When such strong motiues muster, and make head  
 Against her single peace? no, no. Beware,  
 When mutuall appetite doth meet to treat,  
 And spirits of one kinde, and qualitie,  
 Come once to parlee, in the pride of bloud : 20  
 It is no slow conspiracie, that followes.  
 Well (to be plaine) if I but thought, the time  
 Had answer'd their affections : all the world  
 Should not perswade me, but I were a cuckold.  
 Mary, I hope, they ha'not got that start : 25  
 For oportunitie hath balkt 'hem yet,  
 And shall doe still, while I haue eyes, and eares  
 To attend the impositions of my heart.  
 My presence shall be as an iron barre,  
 'Twixt the conspiring motions of desire : 30  
 Yea, euery looke, or glance, mine eye elects,  
 Shall checke occasion, as one doth his slaue,  
 When he forgets the limits of prescription.

D A M E. Sister B R I D G E T, pray you fetch downe the  
 rose-water aboue in the closet. Sweet heart, will you come 35  
 in, to breakefast?

K I T E. An' shee haue ouer-heard me now?

D A M E. I pray thee (good M v s s E) we stay for you.

K I T E. By heauen I would not for a thousand angells.

D A M E. What aile you sweet heart, are you not well, 40  
 speake good M v s s E.

K I T E. Troth my head akes extremely, on a sudden.

D A M E. Oh, the lord!

K I T E. How now? what?

11 in 12 yong] young F<sub>2</sub> 14 Is't F<sub>2</sub>: 1st F<sub>1</sub> 20 bloud F<sub>2</sub>:  
 blood F<sub>1</sub> 26 oportunitie] opportunitie F<sub>2</sub> 36 breakefast ?]  
 breakefast F<sub>1</sub>: break-fast. F<sub>2</sub> 40 sweet heart,] Sweet-heart? F<sub>2</sub>  
 well,] well? F<sub>2</sub> 43 lord] Lord F<sub>2</sub>



45 D A M E. Alas, how it burnes ? M V S S E, keepe you warme, good truth it is this new disease ! there's a number are troubled withall ! for loues sake, sweet heart, come in, out of the aire.

K I T E. How simple, and how subtile are her answeres ?  
50 A new disease, and many troubled with it !

Why, true : shee heard me, all the world to nothing.

D A M E. I pray thee, good sweet heart, come in ; the aire will doe you harme, in troth.

K I T E. The aire ! shee has me i' the wind ! sweet heart !  
55 Ile come to you presently : 't will away, I hope.

D A M E. Pray heauen it doe.

K I T E. A new disease ? I know not, new, or old,  
But it may well be call'd poore mortalls plague :  
For, like a pestilence, it doth infect  
60 The houses of the braine. First, it begins  
Solely to worke vpon the phantasie,  
Filling her seat with such pestiferous aire,  
As soone corrupts the iudgement ; and from thence  
Sends like contagion to the memorie :

65 Still each to other giuing the infection.  
Which, as a subtle vapor, spreads it selfe,  
Confusedly, through euery sensiue part,  
Till not a thought, or motion, in the mind,  
Be free from the blacke poyson of suspect.

70 Ah, but what miserie' is it, to know this ?  
Or, knowing it, to want the mindes erection,  
In such extremes ? Well, I will once more striue,  
(In spight of this black cloud) my selfe to be,  
And shake the feauer off, that thus shakes me.

<sup>^</sup> 11 11 53 harme, in F2 : harme in, F1 56 DAME. F2 : Dow. F1  
66 vapor] vapour F2 70 miserie' is] mis'rie is F2



Act II. Scene IIII.

BRAYNE-WORME, ED. KNO'WELL,  
M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN.

S'lid, I cannot choose but laugh, to see my selfe translated thus, from a poore creature to a creator ; for now must I create an intolerable sort of lyes, or my present profession looses the grace : and yet the lye to a man of my coat, is as ominous a fruit, as the *Fico*. O sir, it holds for 5 good politie euer, to haue that outwardly in vilest estimation, that inwardly is most deare to vs So much, for my borrowed shape. Well, the troth is, my old master intends to follow my yong, drie foot, ouer *More-fields*, to *London*, this morning : now I, knowing, of this hunting-match, or 10 rather conspiracie, and to insinuate with my yong master (for so must we that are blew-waiters, and men of hope and seruice doe, or perhaps wee may weare motley at the yeeres end, and who weares motley, you know) haue got me afore, in this disguise, determining here to lye in 15 *ambuscado*, and intercept him, in the mid-way. If I can but get his cloke, his purse, his hat, nay, any thing, to cut him off, that is, to stay his iourney, *Veni, vidi, vici*, I may say with Captayne C A E S A R, I am made for euer, ifaith. Well, now must I practice to get the true garb of one of 20 these *Lance-knights*, my arme here, and my—yong master ! and his cousin, M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN, as I am true counterfeit man of warre, and no souldier !

E. KN. So sir, and how then, couss ?

STEP. 'Sfoot, I haue lost my purse, I thinke. 25

E. KN. How ? lost your purse ? where ? when had you it ?

STEP. I cannot tell, stay.

BRAY. 'Slid, I am afeard, they will know mee, would I could get by them, 30

II. IV ] Scene II —Moorfields G 4 looses] loses F2 9, 11 yong]  
young F2 9 More-fields] Moore Fields, F2 10 knowing,] knowing  
F2 18 vici,] vici; F2 21 my -- yong F1: my -- yong F2



E. K N. What? ha' you it?

S T E P. No, I thinke I was bewicht, I——

E. K N. Nay, doe not weepe the losse, hang it, let it goe.

S T E P. Oh, it's here: no, and it had beenc lost, I had  
35 not car'd, but for a iet ring mistris M A R Y sent me.

E. K N. A iet ring? oh, the *poesie*, the *poesie*?

S T E P. Fine, ifaith! *Though fancie sleep, my loue is  
deepe* Meaning that though I did not fancie her, yet shee  
loued me dearely.

40 E. K N. Most excellent!

S T E P. And then, I sent her another, and my *poesie* was:  
*The deeper, the sweeter, Ile be iudg'd by* S<sup>t</sup>. P E T E R.

E. K N. How, by S<sup>t</sup>. P E T E R? I doe not conceue that!

S T E P. Mary, S<sup>t</sup> P E T E R, to make vp the meeter.

45 E. K N. Well, there the Saint was your good patron, hee  
help't you at your need: thanke him, thanke him.

*He is  
come back.* B R A Y. I cannot take leaue on 'hem, so: I will venture,  
come what will. Gentlemen, please you change a few  
crownes, for a very excellent good blade, here? I am  
50 a poore gentleman, a souldier, one that (in the better state  
of my fortunes) scorn'd so meane a refuge, but now it is  
the humour of necessitie, to haue it so. You seeme to  
be gentlemen, well affected to martiall men, else I should  
rather die with silence, then liue with shame: how euer,  
55 vouchsafe to remember, it is my want speakes, not my selfe.  
This condition agrees not with my spirit——

E. K N. Where hast thou seru'd?

B R A Y. May it please you, sir, in all the late warres of  
*Bohemia, Hungaria, Dalmatra, Poland*, where not, sir?  
60 I haue beene a poore seruitor, by sea and land, any time  
this fourteene yeeres, and follow'd the fortunes of the best  
Commanders in *christendome*. I was twice shot at the  
taking of *Alepo*, once at the reliefe of *Vienna*; I haue beene  
at *Marseilles, Naples*, and the *Adriatique* gulfe, a gentleman-  
65 slaue in the galleys, thrice, where I was most dangerously

11 iv. 47 st dir. at l. 46 in F1  
54 then] than F2

53 I should F1. should I F2



shot in the head, through both the thighs, and yet, being thus maym'd, I am void of maintenance, nothing left me but my scarres, the noted markes of my resolution.

STEP. How will you sell this rapier, friend ?

BRAV. Generous sir, I referre it to your owne iudgement; 70  
you are a gentleman, giue me what you please.

STEP. True, I am a gentleman, I know that friend :  
but what though ? I pray you say, what would you aske ?

BRAV. I assure you, the blade may become the side,  
or thigh of the best prince, in *Europe*. 75

E. KN. I, with a veluet scabberd, I thinke.

STEP. Nay, and't be mine, it shall haue a veluet  
scabberd, Couss, that's flat : I'de not weare it as 'tis, and  
you would giue me an angell.

BRAV. At your worships pleasure, sir ; nay, 'tis a most so  
pure *Toledo*.

STEP. I had rather it were a *Spaniard* ! but tell me,  
what shall I giue you for it ? An' it had a siluer hilt——

E. KN. Come, come, you shall not buy it ; hold, there's  
a shilling fellow, take thy rapier. 85

STEP. Why, but I will buy it now, because you say so,  
and there's another shilling, fellow. I scorne to be out-  
bidden. What, shall I walke with a cudgell, like *Higgin-  
Bottom* ? and may haue a rapier, for money ?

E. KN. You may buy one in the citie. 90

STEP. Tut, Ile buy this i' the field, so I will, I haue  
a mind to't, because 'tis a field rapier. Tell me your lowest  
price.

E. KN. You shall not buy it, I say.

STEP. By this money, but I will, though I giue more 95  
then 'tis worth.

E. KN. Come away, you are a foole.

STEP. Friend, I am a foole, that's granted : but Ile  
haue it, for that words sake. Follow me, for your money.

BRAV. At your seruice, sir. 100



*Act II. Scene v.*

KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-WORME.

I Cannot loose the thought, yet, of this letter,  
 Sent to my sonne : nor leaue t'admire the change  
 Of manners, and the breeding of our youth,  
 Within the kingdome, since my selfe was one.  
 5 When I was yong, he lu'd not in the stewes,  
 Durst haue conceiu'd a scorne, and vtter'd it,  
 On a grey head ; age was authoritie  
 Against a buffon : and a man had, then,  
 A certaine reuerence pai'd vnto his yeeres,  
 10 That had none due vnto his life. So much  
 The sanctitie of some preuail'd, for others.  
 But, now, we all are fall'n ; youth, from their feare :  
 And age, from that, which bred it, good example.  
 Nay, would our selues were not the first, euen parents,  
 15 That did destroy the hopes, in our owne children :  
 Or they not learn'd our vices, in their cradles,  
 And suck'd in our ill customes, with their milke.  
 Ere all their teeth be borne, or they can speake,  
 We make their palats cunning ! The first wordes,  
 20 We forme their tongues with, are licentious iests !  
 Can it call, whore ? crie, bastard ? ô, then, kisse it,  
 A wittie childe ! Can't sweare ? The fathers dearling !  
 Giue it two plums. Nay, rather then 't shall learne  
 No bawdie song, the mother'her selfe will teach it !  
 25 But, this is in the infancie ; the dayes  
 Of the long coate : when it puts on the breeches,  
 It will put off all this. I, it is like :  
 When it is gone into the bone alreadie.  
 No, no : This die goes deeper then the coate,  
 30 Or shirt, or skin. It staines, vnto the liuer,  
 And heart, in some. And, rather, then it should not,

II v ] Scene III Another Part of Moorfields. G. I loose] lose F<sub>2</sub>  
 5 yong] young F<sub>2</sub> 8 buffon ] buffon, F<sub>2</sub> 22 dearling] darling  
 F<sub>2</sub> 24 mother'her] mother her F<sub>2</sub> 29, 31, then] than F<sub>2</sub>



Note, what we fathers doe ! Looke, how we liue !  
 What mistresses we keepe ! at what expense,  
 In our sonnes eyes ! where they may handle our gifts,  
 Heare our lasciuious courtships, see our dalliance, 35  
 Tast of the same prouoking meates, with vs,  
 To ruine of our states ! Nay, when our owne  
 Portion is fled, to prey on their remainder,  
 We call them into fellowship of vice !  
 Baite 'hem with the yong chamber-maid, to seale ! 40  
 And teach 'hem all bad wayes, to buy affliction !  
 This is one path ! but there are millions more,  
 In which we spoile our owne, with leading them  
 Well, I thanke heauen, I neuer yet was he,  
 That trauail'd with my sonne, before sixteene, 45  
 To shew him, the *Venetian cortezans*.  
 Nor read the grammar of cheating, I had made  
 To my sharpe boy, at twelue : repeating still  
 The rule, *Get money ; still, Get money, Boy ;*  
*No matter, by what meanes ; Money will doe* 50  
*More, Boy, then my Lords letter*. Neither haue I  
 Drest snailes, or mushromes curiously before him,  
 Perfum'd my sauces, and taught him to make 'hem ;  
 Preceding still, with my grey gluttonie,  
 At all the ordinaries : and only fear'd 55  
 His palate should degenerate, not his manners.  
 These are the trade of fathers, now ! how euer  
 My sonne, I hope, hath met within my threshold,  
 None of these household precedents ; which are strong,  
 And swift, to rape youth, to their precipice. 60  
 But, let the house at home be nere so cleane-  
 Swept, or kept sweet from filth ; nay, dust, and cob-webs :  
 If he will liue, abroad, with his companions,  
 In dung, and leystalls ; it is worth a feare.  
 Nor is the danger of conversing lesse, 65  
 Then all that I haue mention'd of example.

11. v. 37 states] state F2      41 affliction G : affection F1 : affection  
 F2      46 cortezans ] Courtizans ; F2      49 still] still Ff      51 then]  
 than F2      53 sauces] sauce F2



B R A Y. My master? nay, faith haue at you: I am flesht now, I haue sped so well. Worshipfull sir, I beseech you, respect the estate of a poore souldier; I am asham'd  
70 of this base course of life (god's my comfort) but extremitie prouokes me to't, what remedie?

K N O. I haue not for you, now.

B R A Y. By the faith I beare vnto truth, gentleman, it is no ordinarie custome in me, but only to preserue manhood.  
75 I protest to you, a man I haue beene, a man I may be, by your sweet bountie.

K N O. 'Pray thee, good friend, be satisfied.

B R A Y. Good sir, by that hand, you may doe the part of a kind gentleman, in lending a poore souldier the price  
80 of two cannes of beere (a matter of small value) the king of heauen shall pay you, and I shall rest thankfull: sweet worship——

K N O. Nay, and you be so importunate——

B R A Y. Oh, tender sir, need will haue his course: I was  
85 not made to this vile vse! well, the edge of the enemie could not haue abated mee so much: It's hard when a man hath seru'd in his Princes cause, and be thus—Honorable worship, let me deriue a small piece of siluer from you, it shall not bee giuen in the course of time, by this good  
90 ground, I was faine to pawne my rapier last night for a poore supper, I had suck'd the hilts long before, I am a pagan else: sweet honor.

*Hee  
weepes.*

K N O. Beleeue me, I am taken with some wonder,  
To thinke, a fellow of thy outward presence  
95 Should (in the frame, and fashion of his mind)  
Be so degenerate, and sordid-base!  
Art thou a man? and sham'st thou not to beg?  
To practise such a seruile kind of life?  
Why, were thy education ne're so meane,  
100 Hauing thy limbs, a thousand fairer courses  
Offer themselues, to thy election.

II. v 70 god's] God's F<sub>2</sub>      86 hard] hard, F<sub>2</sub>      89 time,] time  
F<sub>2</sub>      92 honor] Honour F<sub>2</sub>      94 presence] prescnce, F<sub>2</sub>



Either the warres might still supply thy wants,  
Or seruice of some vertuous gentleman,  
Or honest labour : nay, what can I name,  
But would become thee better then to beg ? 105  
But men of thy condition feed on sloth,  
As doth the beetle, on the dung shee breeds in,  
Not caring how the mettall of your minds  
Is eaten with the rust of idlenesse.  
Now, afore me, what e're he be, that should 110  
Relieue a person of thy qualitie,  
While thou insist's in this loose desperate course,  
I would esteeme the sinne, not thine, but his.

B R A Y. Faith sir, I would gladly finde some other course,  
if so—— 115

K N O. I, you'd gladly finde it, but you will not seeke it.

B R A Y. Alas sir, where should a man seeke ? in the  
warres, there's no ascent by desert in these dayes, but——  
and for seruice, would it were as soone purchast, as wisht  
for (the ayre's my comfort) I know, what I would say—— 120

K N O. What's thy name ?

B R A Y. Please you, F I T Z-S W O R D, sir.

K N O. F I T Z-S W O R D ?

Say, that a man should entertayne thee now,  
Would'st thou be honest, humble, iust, and true ? 125

B R A Y. Sir, by the place, and honor of a souldier——

K N O. Nay, nay, I like not those affected othes ;  
Speake plainely man : what think'st thou of my wordes ?

B R A Y. Nothing, sir, but wish my fortunes were as  
happy, as my seruice should be honest. 130

K N O. Well, follow me, Ile proue thee, if thy deedes  
Will carry a proportion to thy words.

B R A Y. Yes sir, straight, Ile but garter my hose. O that  
my belly were hoopt now, for I am readie to burst with  
laughing ! neuer was bottle, or bag-pipe fuller. S'lid, was 135  
there euer seene a foxe in yeeres to betray himselfe thus ?

11. v. 105 then] than F2  
honour F2

118 dayes,] dayes ; F2

126 honor]



now shall I be possest of all his counsell: and, by that  
 conduit, my yong master. Well, hee is resolu'd to proue my  
 honestie; faith, and I am resolu'd to proue his patience: oh  
 140 I shall abuse him intollerably. This small piece of seruice,  
 will bring him cleane out of loue with the souldier, for euer.  
 He will neuer come within the signe of it, the sight of  
 a cassock, or a musket-rest againe. Hee will hate the  
 musters at Mile-end for it, to his dying day. It's no matter,  
 145 let the world thinke me a bad counterfeit, if I cannot giue  
 him the slip, at an instant: why, this is better then to haue  
 staid his journey! well, Ile follow him: oh, how I long to  
 bee employed.

*Act III. Scene I.*

MATTHEW, WELL-BRED, BOBADILL, ED.  
 KNO'WELL, STEPHEN.

YEs faith, sir, we were at your lodging to seeke you, too.  
 WEL. Oh, I came not there to night.

BOB. Your brother deliuered vs as much.

WEL. Who? my brother DOWNER-RIGHT?

5 BOB. He. M<sup>r</sup>. WELL-BRED, I know not in what  
 kind you hold me, but let me say to you this: as sure as  
 honor, I esteeme it so much out of the sunne-shine of  
 reputation, to through the least beame of regard, vpon  
 such a———

10 WEL. Sir, I must heare no ill wordes of my brother.

BOB. I, protest to you, as I haue a thing to be sau'd  
 about me, I neuer saw any gentleman-like part———

WEL. Good Captayne, *faces about*, to some other  
 discourse.

15 BOB. With your leaue, sir, and there were no more men  
 liuing vpon the face of the earth, I should not fancie him,  
 by S. GEORGE.

II. v. 138 yong] young F<sub>3</sub> 146 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 148 employed.]  
 employed! F<sub>2</sub> III 1] Scene I.—The Old Jewry. A Room in  
 the Windmill Tavern. G (but at III. ii. 52, III 129 the action takes  
 place in the street) 8 through] throw F<sub>3</sub> 11 I, protest] I  
 protest F<sub>2</sub>



MAT. Troth, nor I, he is of a rusticall cut, I know not how: he doth not carry himselfe like a gentleman of fashion——

20

WEL. Oh, M<sup>r</sup>. MATTHEW, that's a grace peculiar but to a few; *quos æquus amavit* IVPITER.

MAT. I vnderstand you sir.

WEL. No question, you doe, or you doe not, sir. NED <sup>Yong</sup> KN O'WELL! by my soule welcome; how doest thou <sup>Kn o'well enters.</sup> sweet spirit, my *Genius*? S'lid I shall loue APOLLO, and the mad *Thespian* girles the better, while I liue, for this; my deare *furie*: now, I see there's some loue in thee! Sirra, these bee the two I writ to thee of (nay, what a drowsie humour is this now? why doest thou not speake?) 30

E. KN. Oh, you are a fine gallant, you sent me a rare letter!

WEL. Why, was't not rare?

E. KN. Yes, Ile bee sworne, I was ne're guiltie of reading the like; match it in all PLINIE, or SYMMACHVS 35 epistles, and Ile haue my iudgement burn'd in the eare for a rogue: make much of thy vaine, for it is inimitable. But I marle what camell it was, that had the carriage of it? for doubtlesse, he was no ordinarie beast, that brought it!

WEL. Why?

40

E. KN. Why, saiest thou? why doest thou thinke that any reasonable creature, especially in the morning (the sober time of the day too) could haue mis-tane my father for me?

WEL. S'lid, you iest, I hope?

45

E. KN. Indeed, the best vse wee can turne it to[o], is to make a iest on't, now: but Ile assure you, my father had the full view o' your flourishing stile, some houre before I saw it.

WEL. What a dull slaue was this? But, sirrah, what 50 said hee to it, Ifaith?

E. KN. Nay, I know not what he said: but I haue a shrewd gesse what hee thought.

WEL. What? what?



55 E. K N. Mary, that thou art some strange dissolute yong fellow, and I a graine or two better, for keeping thee companie.

W E L. Tut, that thought is like the moone in her last quarter, 'twill change shortly : but, sirrha, I pray thee be  
60 acquainted with my two hang-by's, here ; thou wilt take exceeding pleasure in 'hem if thou hear'st 'hem once goe : my wind-instruments Ile wind 'hem vp—but what strange piece of silence is this ? the signe of the dumbeman ?

E. K N. Oh, sir, a kinsman of mine, one that may make  
65 your musique the fuller, and he please, he has his humour, sir.

W E L. Oh, what ist ? what ist ?

E. K N. Nay, Ile neither doe your iudgement, nor his folly that wrong, as to prepare your apprehension : Ile leaue  
70 him to the mercy o' your search, if you can take him, so.

W E L. Well, Captaine B O B A D I L L, M<sup>r</sup>. M A T T H E W, pray you know this gentleman here, he is a friend of mine, and one that will deserue your affection. I know not your  
*To Master Stephen.* name sir, but I shall be glad of any occasion, to render me  
75 more familiar to you.

• S T E P. My name is M<sup>r</sup>. S T E P H E N, sir, I am this gentlemans owne cousin, sir, his father is mine vnckle, sir, I am somewhat melancholy, but you shall command me, sir, in whatsoever is incident to a gentleman.

*To Kno'-well.* B O B. Sir, I must tell you this, I am no generall man, but for M<sup>r</sup>. W E L-B R E D's sake (you may embrace it, at what height of fauour you please) I doe communicate with you : and conceiue you, to bee a gentleman of some parts, I loue few wordes.

85 E. K N. And I fewer, sir. I haue scarce inow, to thanke you.

*To Master Stephen.* M A T. But are you indeed, sir ? so giuen to it ?

S T E P. I, truely, sir, I am mightily giuen to melancholy.

III i. 72 pray] 'pray F2 75 you F2 : you F1 77 vnckle, sir,] uncle, sir ; F2 87 indeed, sir ? F2 . indeed. Sir ? F1 88 melancholy F2 ; melancholy, F1



MAT. Oh, it's your only fine humour, sir, your true melancholy breeds your perfect fine wit, sir : I am melancholy my selfe diuers times, sir, and then doe I no more but take pen, and paper presently, and ouerflow you halfe a score, or a dozen of sonnets, at a sitting.

(E. KN. Sure, he vtters them then, by the grosse.)

STEP. Truly sir, and I loue such things, out of measure. 95

E. KN. I faith, better then in measure, Ile vnder-take.

MAT. Why, I pray you, sir, make vse of my studie, it's at your seruice.

STEP. I thanke you sir, I shall bee bold, I warrant you ; haue you a stoole there, to be melancholy' vpon ? 100

MAT. That I haue, sir, and some papers there of mine owne doing, at idle houres, that you'll say there's some sparkes of wit in 'hem, when you see them.

WEL. Would the sparkes would kindle once, and become a fire amongst 'hem, I might see selfe-loue burn't 105 for her heresie.

STEP. Cousin, is it well ? am I melancholy inough ?

E. KN. Oh I, excellent !

WEL. Captaine BOBADILL : why muse you so ?

E. KN. He is melancholy, too. 110

BOB. Faith, sir, I was thinking of a most honorable piece of seruice, was perform'd to morrow, being St.

MARKE'S day : shall bee some ten yeeres, now ?

E. KN. In what place, Captaine ?

BOB. Why, at the beleag'ring of *Strigonium*, where, in 115 lesse then two houres, seuen hundred resolute gentlemen, as any were in *Europe*, lost their liues vpon the breach. Ile tell you, gentlemen, it was the first, but the best leagure, that euer I beheld, with these eies, except the taking in of —what doe you call it, last yeere, by the *Genowayes*, but 120 that (of all other) was the most fatall, and dangerous exploit, that euer I was rang'd in, since I first bore armes

III. i. 89-90 true melancholy F2 : true melancholy, Fr 91 selfe] selfe, F2 96, 116 then] than F2 100 melancholy'] melancholy F2 105 might] migh F2 111 honorable] honourable F2 113 day :] day, F2 now ?] now. F2 118 leagure] Leaguer F3



before the face of the enemie, as I am a gentleman, & souldier.

125 S T E P. 'So, I had as lief, as an angell, I could sweare as well as that gentleman !

E. K N. Then, you were a serutor, at both it seemes ! at *Strigonium* ? and what doe you call't ?

B O B. Oh lord, sir ? by S. G E O R G E, I was the first  
130 man, that entred the breach : and, had I not effected it with resolution, I had beene slaine, if I had had a million of liues.

E. K N. 'Twas pittie, you had not ten ; a cats, and your owne, ifaith. But, was it possible ?

135 (M A T. 'Pray you, marke this discourse, sir.

S T E P. So, I doe.)

B O B. I assure you (vpon my reputation) 'tis true, and your selfe shall confesse.

E. K N. You must bring me to the racke, first.

140 B O B. Obserue me iudicially, sweet sir, they had planted mee three demi-culuerings, iust in the mouth of the breach ; now, sir (as we were to giue on) their master gunner (a man of no meane skill, and marke, you must thinke) confronts me with his linstock, readie to giue fire ; I spying his  
145 intendment, discharg'd my petrionel in his bosome, and with these single armes, my poore rapier, ranne violently, vpon the *Moores*, that guarded the ordinance, and put 'hem pell-mell to the sword.

W E L. To the sword ? to the rapier, Capitaine ?

150 E. K N. Oh, it was a good figure obseru'd, sir ! but did you all this, Capitaine, without hurting your blade ?

B O B. Without any impeach, o' the earth : you shall perceiue sir. It is the most fortunate weapon, that euer rid on poore gentlemans thigh : shal I tell you, sir ? you  
155 talke of *Morglay*, *Excalibur*, *Durindana*, or so ? tut, I lend no credit to that is fabled of 'hem, I know the vertue

III. i 124 souldier ] a Soldier F3 129 lord, sir ?] Lord, sir, F2  
131 slaine,] slain F2 142 gunner] gunner, F2 147 ordinance]  
ordnance F2 151 blade ? F2 ; blade F1



of mine owne, and therefore I dare, the boldlier, maintaine it.

STEP. I mar'le whether it be a *Toledo*, or no ?

BOB. A most perfect *Toledo*, I assure you, sir. 160

STEP. I haue a countriman of his, here.

MAT. Pray you, let's see, sir : yes faith, it is !

BOB. This a *Toledo* ? pish.

STEP. Why doe you pish, Captaine ?

BOB. A *Fleming*, by heauen, Ile buy them for a guilder, 165  
a piece, an' I would haue a thousand of them.

E. KN. How say you, cousin ? I told you thus much ?

WEL. Where bought you it, M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN ?

STEP. Of a scuruie rogue souldier (a hundred of lice goe  
with him) he swore it was a *Toledo*. 170

BOB. A poore prouant rapier, no better.

MAT. Masse, I thinke it be, indeed ! now I looke on't,  
better.

E. KN. Nay, the longer you looke on't, the worse. Put  
it vp, put it vp. 175

STEP. Well, I will put it vp, but by——(I ha' forgot the  
Captaynes oath, I thought to ha' sworne by it) an' ere  
I meet him——

WEL. O, it is past helpe now, sir, you must haue  
patience. 180

STEP. Horson connie-catching raskall ! I could eate  
the very hilts for anger !

E. KN. A signe of good digestion ! you haue an ostrich  
stomack, cousin.

STEP. A stomack ? would I had him here, you should 185  
see, an' I had a stomack.

WEL. It's better as 'tis : come, gentlemen, shall we goe ?

III 1. 157 owne,] owne F2 165 heauen,] heauen F2 176 vp,]  
up; F2 181 connie-catching] cunny-catching F2 183-4 ostrich  
stomack] ostrich-stomack F2



*Act III. Scene II.*

E. KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-WORME, STEPHEN,  
WELL-BRED, BOBADILL, MATTHEW.

A Miracle, cousin, looke here ! looke here !

STEP. Oh, gods lid, by your leaue, doe you know me, sir ?

BRAY. I sir, I know you, by sight.

5 STEP. You sold me a rapier, did you not ?

BRAY. Yes, marie, did I sir.

STEP. You said, it was a *Toledo*, ha ?

BRAY. True, I did so.

STEP. But, it is none ?

10 BRAY. No sir, I confesse it, it is none.

STEP. Doe you confesse it ? gentlemen, beare witnesse, he has confest it. By gods will, and you had not confest it——

E. KN. Oh cousin, forbear, forbear.

15 STEP. Nay, I haue done, cousin.

WEL. Why you haue done like a gentleman, he ha's confest it, what would you more ?

STEP. Yet, by his leaue, he is a raskall, vnder his fauour, doe you see ?

20 E. KN. I, by his leaue, he is, and vnder fauour : a prettie piece of ciuilitie ! Sirra, how doest thou like him ?

WEL. Oh, it's a most pretious foole, make much on him : I can compare him to nothing more happily, then a drumme ; for euery one may play vpon him.

25 E. KN. No, no, a childes whistle were farre the fitter.

BRAY. Sir, shall I intreat a word with you ?

E. KN. With me, sir ? you haue not another *Toledo* to sell, ha' you ?

BRAY. You are conceipted, sir, your name is M<sup>r</sup>.

30 KNO'WELL, as I take it ?

111. ii. 6 I] I, F2  
Why] Why, F2

9 none ?] none F2  
23 then] than F2

12 and] an' F2  
29 sir,] sir ; F2

16



E. K N. You are i' the right ; you meane not to proceede  
in the catechisme, doe you ?

B R A Y. No sir, I am none of that coat.

E. K N. Of as bare a coat, though ; well, say sir.

B R A Y. Faith sir, I am but seruant to the drum extra- 35  
ordinarie, and indeed (this smokie varnish being washt off,  
and three or four patches remou'd) I appeare your worships  
in reuersion, after the decease of your good father,  
B R A Y N E - W O R M E.

E. K N. B R A Y N E - W O R M E ! S'light, what breath of 40  
a coniurer, hath blowne thee hither in this shape ?

B R A Y. The breath o' your letter, sir, this morning : the  
same that blew you to the wind-mill, and your father after  
you.

E. K N. My father ? 45

B R A Y. Nay, neuer start, 'tis true, he has follow'd you  
ouer the field's, by the foot, as you would doe a hare i' the  
snow.

E. K N. Sirra, W E L - B R E D, what shall we doe, sirra ?  
my father is come ouer, after me. 50

W E L. Thy father ? where is he ?

B R A Y. At Iustice C L E M E N T S house here, in *Colman-*  
street, where he but staies my returne ; and then——

W E L. Who's this ? B R A Y N E - W O R M E ?

B R A Y. The same, sir. 55

W E L. Why how, i' the name of wit, com'st thou trans-  
muted, thus ?

B R A Y. Faith, a deuise, a deuise : nay, for the loue of  
reason, gentlemen, and auoiding the danger, stand not here,  
withdraw, and Ile tell you all. 60

W E L. But, art thou sure, he will stay thy returne ?

B R A Y. Doe I liue, sir ? what a question is that ?

W E L. Wee'le prorogue his expectation then, a little :  
B R A Y N E - W O R M E, thou thalt goe with vs. Come on,

III. n 31 are] are, F1 right ; F2 : right ? F1 34 though ;  
F2 : though ? F1 41 shape ? F2 : shape F1 43 wind-mill,]  
Wind-mill F2 47 field's] fields F2 52 here om F2 52-3  
Colman-street] Coleman-street F2 59 here,] here ; F2



65 gentlemen, nay, I pray thee, sweet NED, droope not :  
 'heart, and our wits be so wretchedly dull, that one old  
 plodding braine can out-strip vs all, would we were eene  
 prest, to make porters of ; and serue out the remnant of  
 our daies, in *Thames-street*, or at *Custome-house* key, in  
 70 a ciuill warre, against the car-men.

B R A Y. AMEN, AMEN, AMEN, say I.

*Act III. Scene III.*

K I T E L Y, C A S H.

W H a t saies he, T H O M A S ? Did you speake with him ?  
 C A S. He will expect you, sir, within this halfe houre.

K I T. Has he the money readie, can you tell ?

C A S. Yes, sir, the money was brought in, last night.

5 K I T. O, that's well : fetch me my cloke, my cloke.

Stay, let me see, an houre, to goe and come ;

I, that will be the least : and then 'twill be

An houre, before I can dispatch with him ;

Or very neere : well, I will say two houres.

10 Two houres ? ha ? things, neuer dreamt of yet,

May be contriu'd, I, and effected too,

In two houres absence : well, I will not goe.

Two houres ; no, fleering oportunitie,

I will not giue your subtiltie that scope.

15 Who will not iudge him worthie to be rob'd,

That sets his doores wide open to a thiefe,

And shewes the fellow, where his treasure lies ?

Againe, what earthie spirit but will attempt

To taste the fruit of beauties golden tree,

20 When leaden sleepe seales vp the Dragons eyes ?

I will not goe. Businesse, goe by, for once.

No beautie, no ; you are of too good caract,

To be left so, without a guard, or open !

III. ii. 65 gentlemen,] gentlemen; F2 not:] not; F2 66 and]  
 an' F2 III. iii.] Scene II —The Old Jewry. Kitley's Warehouse. G  
 1 he,] hee F2 13 oportunitie] opportunitie F2 17 fellow,]  
 fellow F2 19 taste the F2. the taste F1



Your lustre too'll enflame, at any distance,  
 Draw courtship to you, as a iet doth strawes, 25  
 Put motion in a stone, strike fire from ice,  
 Nay, make a porter leape you, with his burden !  
 You must be then kept vp, close, and well-watch'd,  
 For, giue you oportunitie, no quick-sand  
 Deuoures, or swallowes swifter ! He that lends 30  
 His wife (if shee be faire) or time, or place ;  
 Compells her to be false. I will not goe.  
 The dangers are to many. And, then, the dressing  
 Is a most mayne attractiue ! Our great heads,  
 Within the citie, neuer were in safetie, 35  
 Since our wiues wore these little caps : Ile change 'hem,  
 Ile change 'hem, streight, in mine. Mine shall no more  
 Weare three-pild akornes, to make my hornes ake.  
 Nor, will I goe. I am resolu'd for that.  
 Carry' in my cloke againe. Yet, stay. Yet, doe too. 40  
 I will deferre going, on all occasions.

C A S H. Sir. S N A R E, your scriuener, will be there with  
 th'bonds.

K I T E. That's true ! foole on me ! I had cleane forgot it,  
 I must goe. What's a clocke ? C A S H. *Exchange time,*  
 sir.

K I T E. 'Heart, then will W E L L - B R E D presently be 45  
 here, too,

With one, or other of his loose consorts.  
 I am a knaue, if I know what to say,  
 What course to take, or which way to resolute.  
 My braine (me thinkes) is like an houre-glasse,  
 Wherein, my' imaginations runne, like sands, 50  
 Filling vp time ; but then are turn'd, and turn'd :  
 So, that I know not what to stay upon,

III. iii. 24 enflame] inflame *F2* 27 you,] you *F2* 29 oportunitie]  
 opportunitie *F2* 30 Deuoures,] Deuoures *F2* 37 'hem,] 'hem  
*F2* 39 Nor,] Nor *F2* 40 Carry' in] Carry in *F2* 42 Sir,]  
 Sir, *F2* (but cf. 136, 139) 43 it,] it, *F2* 44 *Exchange time,*  
*Exchange-time F2* 46 one,] one *F2* 49 (me thinkes)] me thinks  
*F2* 50 my' imaginations] my 'magnations *F2* 52 So,] So *F2*



And lesse, to put in act. It shall be so.

Nay, I dare build vpon his secrecie,

55 He knowes not to deceiue me. T H O M A S ? C A S H. Sir.

K I T E. Yet now, I haue bethought me, too, I will not.

T H O M A S, is C O B within ? C A S H. I thinke he be, sir.

K I T E. But hee'll prate too, there's no speech of him.

No, there were no man o' the earth to T H O M A S,

60 If I durst trust him ; there is all the doubt.

But, should he haue a chinke in him, I were gone,

Lost i' my fame for euer : talke for th'Exchange.

The manner he hath stood with, till this present,

Doth promise no such change ! what should I feare then ?

65 Well, come what will, Ile tempt my fortune, once.

T H O M A S—you may deceiue me, but, I hope——

Your loue, to me, is more—— C A S. Sir, if a seruants

Duetie, with faith, may be call'd loue, you are

More then in hope, you are possess'd of it.

70 K I T. I thanke you, heartily, T H O M A S ; Gi' me your hand :

With all my heart, good T H O M A S. I haue, T H O M A S,

A secret to impart, vnto you——but

When once you haue it, I must seale your lips vp :

(So farre, I tell you, T H O M A S.) C A S. Sir, for that——

75 K I T. Nay, heare me, out. Thinke, I esteeme you, T H O M A S,

When, I will let you in, thus, to my priuate.

It is a thing sits, neerer, to my crest,

Then thou art ware of, T H O M A S. If thou should'st

Reuale it, but—— C A S. How ? I reuale it ? K I T.

Nay,

80 I doe not thinke thou would'st ; but if thou should'st :

'Twere a great weakenesse. C A S. A great trecherie.

Giue it no other name. K I T. Thou wilt not do't, then ?

C A S. Sir, if I doe, mankind disclaime me, cuer.

K I T. He will not sweare, he has some reseruatiō,

111 in 69, 78 then] than F2    71 haue,] have F2    74 farre,] far F2  
77 thing sits,] thing. sits F2    78 ware] 'ware F2    84 has] ha's F2



Some conceal'd purpose, and close meaning, sure : 85  
 Else (being vrg'd so much) how should he choose,  
 But lend an oath to all this protestation ?  
 H'is no precisian, that I am certaine of.  
 Nor rigid *Roman-catholike*. Hee'll play,  
 At *Fayles*, and *Tick-tack*, I haue heard him sweare. 90  
 What should I thinke of it ? vrge him againe,  
 And by some other way ? I will doe so.  
 Well, T H O M A S, thou hast sworne not to disclose ;  
 Yes, you did sweare ? C A S. Not yet, sir, but I will,  
 Please you—— K I T. No, T H O M A S, I dare take thy 95  
 word.

But ; if thou wilt sweare, doe, as thou think'st good ;  
 I am resolu'd without it ; at thy pleasure.

C A S. By my soules safetie then, sir, I protest.  
 My tongue shall ne're take knowledge of a word,  
 Deliu'er'd me in nature of your trust. 100

K I T. It's too much, these ceremonies need not,  
 I know thy faith to be as firme as rock.  
 T H O M A S, come hither, neere : we cannot be  
 Too priuate, in this businesse. So it is,  
 (Now, he ha's sworne, I dare the safelier venter) 105  
 I haue of late, by diuers obseruations——

(But, whether his oath can bind him, yea, or no ;  
 Being not taken lawfully ? ha ? say you ?  
 I will aske counsell, ere I doe proceed :)  
 T H O M A S, it will be now too long to stay, 110  
 Ile spie some fitter time soone, or to morrow.

C A S. Sir, at your pleasure ? K I T. I will thinke.

And, T H O M A S,

I pray you search the bookes 'gainst my returne,  
 For the receipts 'twixt me, and T R A P S. C A S. I will, sir.

K I T. And, heare you, if your mistris brother, W E L- 115

B R E D,

III iii 88 precisian] precision F2 90 *Tick-tack*] at *Tick-tack* F3  
 93 Well,] Well F2 105 venter)] ventuer F3 107 no ; F2 :  
 no', F1



Chance to bring hither any gentlemen,  
Ere I come backe ; let one straight bring me word.

C A S. Very well, sir. K I T. To the Exchange ; doe  
you heare ?

119 Or here in *Colman*-street, to Iustice C L E M E N T S.  
Forget it not, nor be not out of the way.

C A S. I will not, sir. K I T. I pray you haue a care on't.  
Or whether he come, or no, if any other,  
Stranger, or else, faile not to send me word.

C A S. I shall not, sir. K I T. Be't your speciall  
businesse

125 Now, to remember it. C A S. Sir. I warrant you.

K I T. But, T H O M A S, this is not the secret, T H O M A S,  
I told you of. C A S. No, sir. I doe suppose it.

K I T. Belleeue me, it is not. C A S. Sir. I doe beleeue  
you.

K I T. By heauen, it is not, that's enough. But,  
T H O M A S,

130 I would not, you should vtter it, doe you see ?

To any creature liuing, yet, I care not.

Well, I must hence. T H O M A S, conceiue thus much.

It was a tryall of you, when I meant

So deepe a secret to you, I meane not this,

135 But that I haue to tell you, this is nothing, this.

But, T H O M A S, keepe this from my wife, I charge you,

Lock'd vp in silence, mid-night, buried here.

No greater hell, then to be slaue to feare.

C A S. Lock'd vp in silence, mid-night, buried here.

140 Whence should this flood of passion (trow) take head ? ha ?

Best, dreame no longer of this running humour,

For feare I sinke ! the violence of the streame

Alreadie hath transported me so farre,

That I can feele no ground at all ! but soft,

145 Oh, 'tis our water-bearer : somewhat ha's crost him, now.

III. iii 125, 128 Sir.] Sir, F<sub>2</sub> 129 But,] But F<sub>2</sub> 131 liuing,]  
liuing ; F<sub>2</sub> 135 you,] you ; F<sub>2</sub> 136 you,] you. F<sub>2</sub> 138  
then] than F<sub>2</sub>



*Act III. Scene III.*

C O B, C A S H.

Fasting dayes? what tell you me of fasting dayes?  
S'lid, would they were all on a light fire for me: They  
say, the whole world shall bee consum'd with fire one day,  
but would I had these ember-weekes, and villanous fridayer  
burnt, in the meane time, and then—— 5

C A S. Why, how now C O B, what moues thee to this  
choller? ha?

C O B. Collar, master T H O M A S? I scorne your collar,  
I sir, I am none o' your cart-horse, though I carry, and  
draw water. An' you offer to ride me, with your collar, or 10  
halter either, I may hap shew you a jades trick, sir.

C A S. O, you'll slip your head out of the collar? why,  
goodman C O B, you mistake me.

C O B. Nay, I haue my rewme, & I can be angrie as well  
as another, sir. 15

C A S. Thy rewme, C O B? thy humour, thy humour?  
thou mistak'st.

C O B. Humour? mack, I thinke it be so, indeed: what  
is that humour? some rare thing, I warrant.

C A S. Mary, Ile tell thee, C O B: It is a gentleman-like 20  
monster, bred, in the speciall gallantrie of our time, by  
affectation; and fed by folly.

C O B. How? must it be fed?

C A S. Oh I, humour is nothing, if it bee not fed. Didst  
thou neuer heare that? it's a common phrase, *Feed my* 25  
*humour.*

C O B. Ile none on it: Humour, auant, I know you not,  
be gone. Let who will make hungrie meales for your  
monster-ship, it shall not bee I. Feed you, quoth he?  
S'lid, I ha' much adoe, to feed my selfe; especially, on 30  
these leane rascally dayes, too; and't had beene any other  
day, but a fasting-day (a plague on them all for mee) by this



light, one might haue done the common-wealth good seruice,  
and haue drown'd them all i' the floud, two or three hundred  
35 thousand yeeres agoe. O, I doe stomack them hugely !  
I haue a maw now, and't were for S<sup>r</sup> B E V I S his horse,  
against 'hem.

C A S. I pray thee, good C O B, what makes thee so out of  
loue with fasting-dayes ?

40 C O B Mary that, which will make any man out of loue  
with 'hem, I thinke : their bad conditions, and you will  
needs know. First, they are of a *Flemmish* breed, I am sure  
on't, for they rauē vp more butter, then all the dayes of  
the weeke, beside ; next, they stinke of fish, and leeke-  
45 porridge miserably : thirdly, they'le keepe a man deuoutly  
hungrie, all day, and at night send him supperlesse to bed.

C A S. Indeed, these are faults, C O B.

C O B. Nay, and this were all, 'twere something, but they  
are the only knowne enemies, to my generation. A fasting-  
50 day, no sooner comes, but my lineage goes to racke, poore  
cobs they smoke for it, they are made martyrs o' the  
gridiron, they melt in passion : and your maides too know  
this, and yet would haue me turne H A N N I B A L, and eate  
*He pulls  
out a red  
herring.* my owne fish, and bloud : My princely couz, fear nothing ;  
55 I haue not the hart to deuoure you, & I might be made as  
rich as King C O P H E T V A. O, that I had roome for my  
teares, I could weepe salt-water enough, now, to preserue  
the lues of ten thousand of my kin. But I may curse none  
but these filthie *Almanacks*, for an't were not for them, these  
60 dayes of persecution would ne're be knowne. Ile bee hang'd,  
an' some Fish-mongers sonne doe not make of 'hem ; and  
puts in more fasting-dayes then he should doe, because hee  
would vtter his fathers dried stock-fish, and stinking conger.

C A S. S'light, peace, thou'lt bee beaten like a stock-fish,  
65 else : here is M<sup>r</sup>. M A T T H E W. Now must I looke out for  
a messenger to my master.

III iv. 41 and] an' F2      43 then] than F2      44 beside ;] beside .  
F2      49 enemies.] enemies F2      50 lineage] lineage F2 (cf I. iv 6)  
51 cobs] cobs, F2      54 fish] Flesh F3      55 &] an' F2      61 'hem  
F2 : hem F1      62 then] than F2      65 here is] here's F2



Act III. Scene v.

WELL-BRED, ED. KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-  
WORME, BOBADILL, MATTHEW, STEPHEN,  
THOMAS, COB.

B Eshrew me, but it was an absolute good iest, and  
exceedingly well carried!

E. KNO. I, and our ignorance maintain'd it as well,  
did it not?

WEL. Yes faith, but was't possible thou should'st not  
know him? I forgue M<sup>r</sup>. STEPHEN, for he is stupiditie  
it selfe!

E. KN. 'Fore god, not I, and I might haue been ioynd  
patten with one of the seuen wise masters, for knowing him.  
He had so writhen himselfe, into the habit of one of your  
poore *Infanterie*, your decay'd, ruinous, worme-eaten  
gentlemen of the round: such as haue vowed to sit on the  
skirts of the citie, let your Prouost, and his halfe-dozen of  
halberdeirs doe what they can; and haue translated  
begging out of the old hackney pace, to a fine easie amble,  
and made it runne as smooth, of the tongue, as a shoue-  
groat shilling. Into the likenesse of one of these *Reformado's*  
had he moulded himselfe so perfectly, obseruing euery tricke  
of their action, as varying the accent, swearing with an  
*emphasis*, indeed all, with so speciall, and exquisite a grace,  
that (hadst thou seene him) thou would'st haue sworne, he  
might haue beene *Serieant-Maior*, if not *Lieutenant-  
Coronell* to the regiment.

WEL. Why, BRAYNE-WORME, who would haue  
thought thou hadst beene such an artificer?

E. KN. An artificer! An architect! except a man had  
studied begging all his life-time, and beene a weauer of

III v BOBADILL] BOBADILI F2 5 faith,] faith; F2 8 god]  
God F2 and] an' F2 13 let *misprinted* like F3 14 halber-  
deirs] Halberdiers F2 16 smooth,] smooth F2 of] on F3 19 as]  
as, F2 21 would'st] wouldst F2 22-3 Lieutenant-Coronell] Lieu-  
tenant-Collonell F2



language, from his infancie, for the clothing of it ! I neuer saw his riual.

30 W E L. Where got'st thou this coat, I mar'le ?

B R A Y. Of a *Hounds-ditch* man, sir. One of the deuill's neere kinsmen, a broker.

W E L. That cannot be, if the prouerbe hold ; for, a craftie knaue needs no broker.

35 B R A Y. True sir, but I did need a broker, *Ergo*.

W E L. (Well put off) no craftie knaue, you'll say.

E. K N. Tut, he ha's more of these shifts.

B R A Y. And yet where I haue one, the broker ha's ten, sir.

40 T H O. F R A N C I S, M A R T I N, ne're a one to be found, now ? what a spite's this ?

W E L. How now, T H O M A S ? is my brother K I T E L Y, within ?

T H O. No sir, my master went forth eene now . but  
45 master D O W N E - R I G H T is within. C O B, what C O B ?  
is he gone too ?

W E L. Whither went your master ? T H O M A S, canst thou tell ?

T H O. I know not, to Iustice C L E M E N T S, I thinke,  
50 sir. C O B.

E. K N. Iustice C L E M E N T, what's he ?

W E L. Why, doest thou not know him ? he is a citie-  
magistrate, a Iustice here, an excellent good Lawyer, and  
a great scholler : but the onely mad, merrie, old fellow in  
55 *Europe* ! I shew'd him you, the other day.

E. K N. Oh, is that he ? I remember him now. Good  
faith, and he ha's a very strange presence, mee thinkes ; it  
shewes as if hee stood out of the ranke, from other men :  
I haue heard many of his iests i' <the> *universitie*. They  
60 say, he will commit a man, for taking the wall, of his  
horse.

III. v 30 mar'le *F2* · mar'le *Fr* 32 kinsmen] kinsman *F2* 37 ha's]  
has *F2* 39 sir *F2* sir, *Fr* 49 not,] not ; *F2* 55 you,]  
you *F2* 57 ha's] has *F2* 59 the *F2*



WEL. I, or wearing his cloke of one shoulder, or seruing of god: any thing indeed, if it come in the way of his humour.

CAS. GASPER, MARTIN, COB: 'heart, where should they be, trow? Cash goes in and out calling.

BOB. Master KITELY's man, 'pray thee vouchsafe vs the lighting of this match.

CAS. Fire on your match, no time but now to vouchsafe? FRANCIS. COB. 70

BOB. Bodie of me! here's the remainder of seuen pound, since yesterday was seuen-night. 'Tis your right *Trinidado*! did you neuer take any, master STEPHEN?

STEP. No truely, sir; but I'le learne to take it now, since you commend it, so. 75

BOB. Sir, beleue mee (vpon my relation) for what I tell you, the world shal not reprove. I have been in the *Indies* (where this herb growes) where neither my selfe, nor a dozen gentlemen more (of my knowledge) haue receiued the tast of any other nutriment, in the world, for the space 80 of one and twentie weekes, but the fume of this simple onely. Therefore, it cannot be, but 'tis most diuine! Further, take it in the nature, in the true kind so, it makes an *antidote*, that (had you taken the most deadly poysonous plant in all *Italy*) it should expell it, and clarifie you, with as much ease, 85 as I speake. And, for your greene wound, your *Balsamum*, and your S<sup>t</sup>. IOHN's *woort* are all mere gulleries, and trash to it, especially your *Trinidado*: your *Nicotian* is good too. I could say what I know of the vertue of it, for the expulsion of rhewmes, raw humours, crudities, obstructions, with 90 a thousand of this kind; but I professe my selfe no *quack-saluer*. Only, thus much, by HERCVLES, I doe hold it, and will affirme it (before any Prince in *Europe*) to be the most soueraigne, and precious weede, that euer the earth tendred to the vse of man. 95

III. v. 62 of one] on one F3 63 god] God F2 65 s d. out] out, F2  
67 'pray] pray F2 70 FRANCIS.] FRANCIS, F2 74 sir; F2: sir? F1  
84 (had] had F2 85 Italy]] Italy, F1 86 Balsamum,] Balsamum F2  
87 S<sup>t</sup>. IOHN's *woort*] S<sup>t</sup>. JOHN's-woort F2 88 especially] especially, F2



E. K N. This speech would ha' done decently in a *tabacco*-traders mouth !

C A S. At Iustice C L E M E N T S, hee is : in the middle of *Colman*-street.

100 C O B. O, oh ?

B O B. Where's the match I gaue thee ? Master K I T E - L I E S man ?

C A S. Would his match, and he, and pipe, and all were at S A N C T O D O M I N G O ! I had forgot it.

105 C O B. By gods mee, I marle, what pleasure, or felicitie they haue in taking this roguish *tabacco* ! it's good for nothing, but to choke a man, and fill him full of smoke, and embers : there were foure dyed out of one house, last weeke, with taking of it, and two more the bell went for, yester-  
110 night ; one of them (they say) will ne're scape it : he voided a bushell of soot yester-day, vpward, and downeward. By the stocks, an' there were no wiser men then I, I'd haue it present whipping, man, or woman, that should but deale with a *tabacco*-pipe ; why, it will stifle them all in the end,  
115 as many as vse it ; it's little better then rats-bane, or rosaker.

*Bobadil  
beates him  
with a  
cudgell.*

A L L. Oh, good Captayne, hold, hold.

B O B. You base cullion, you.

C A S. Sir, here's your match : come, thou must needs be  
120 talking, too, tho'art well inough seru'd.

C O B. Nay, he will not meddle with his match, I warrant you : well it shall be a deare beating, and I liue.

B O B. Doe you prate ? Doe you murmur ?

E. K N. Nay, good Captayne, will you regard the humour  
125 of a foole ? away, knaue.

\* W E L. T H O M A S, get him away.

B O B. A horson filthie slaue, a dung-worme, an excrement ! Body o' C A E S A R, but that I scorne to let forth so meane a spirit, I'd ha' stab'd him, to the earth.

III v 99 *Colman*-street] *Coleman*-street F2 105 marle] mar'le F2  
107 smoke,] smoke F2 112 then] than F2 115 then] than F2  
rats-bane F2 : rats bane F1 122 well] well, F2 and] an' F2  
129 him,] him F2



WEL. Mary, the law forbid, sir.

130

BOB. By PHAROAH'S foot, I would haue done it.

STEP. Oh, he sweares admirably! (by PHAROAH'S foot) (body of CAESAR) I shall neuer doe it, sure (vpon mine honor, and by Saint GEORGE) no, I ha' not the right grace.

135

MAT. Master STEPHEN, will you any? By this aire, the most diuine *tabacco*, that euer I drunke!

STEP. None, I thanke you, sir. O, this gentleman do's it, rarely too! but nothing like the other. By this aire, as I am a gentleman: by——

140

BRAY. Master, glance, glance! Master WELLBRED!

STEP. As I haue somewhat to be sau'd, I protest——

WEL. You are a foole: It needes no *affidavit*.

E. KN. Cousin, will you any *tabacco*?

STEP. I sir! vpon my reputation——

145

E. KN. How now, cousin!

STEP. I protest, as I am a gentleman, but no souldier, indeed——

WEL. No, Master STEPHEN? as I remember your name is entred in the artillerie garden?

150

STEP. I sir, that's true: Cousin, may I swear, as I am a souldier, by that?

E. KN. Oh yes, that you may. It's all you haue for your money.

STEP. Then, as I am a gentleman, and a souldier, it is 155 diuine *tabacco*!

WEL. But soft, where's M<sup>r</sup>. MATTHEW? gone?

BRAY. No, sir, they went in here.

WEL. O, let's follow them: master MATTHEW is gone to salute his mistris, in verse. Wee shall ha' the 160 happinesse, to heare some of his poetrie, now. Hee neuer comes vn furnish'd. BRAYNE-WORME?

STEP. BRAYNE-WORME? Where? Is this BRAYNE-WORME?

III. v. 132 admirably] most admirably *F2* 133 of] o' *F2* 134  
honor] honour *F2* 149 remember] remember, *F2*

Master  
Stephen is  
practis-  
ing, to the  
post.



- 165 E. K N. I, cousin, no wordes of it, vpon your gentilitie.  
 S T E P. Not I, body of me, by this aire, S. G E O R G E,  
 and the foot of P H A R O A H.  
 W E L. Rare ! your cousins discourse is simply drawn  
 out with oathes.  
 170 E. K N. 'Tis larded with 'hem A kind of french dressing,  
 if you loue it.

*Act III. Scene VI.*

K I T E L Y, C O B.

H A ? how many are there, sayest thou ?  
 C O B. Mary sir, your brother, master W E L L -  
 B R E D —

K I T. Tut, beside him : what strangers are there, man ?  
 5 C O B. Strangers ? let me see, one, two ; masse I know  
 not well, there are so many.

K I T. How ? so many ?

C O B. I, there's some fieve, or sixe of them, at the most.

K I T. A swarme, a swarme,  
 10 Spight of the deuill, how they sting my head  
 With forked stings, thus wide, and large ! But, C O B,  
 How long hast thou beene comming hither, C O B ?

C O B. A little while, sir.

K I T. Did'st thou come running ?

15 C O B. No, sir.

K I T. Nay, then I am familiar with thy haste !  
 Bane to my fortunes : what meant I to marry ?  
 I, that before was rankt in such content,  
 My mind at rest too, in so soft a peace,

20 Being free master of mine owne free thoughts,  
 And now become a slaue ? What ? neuer sigh,  
 Be of good cheere, man : for thou art a cuckold,  
 'Tis done, 'tis done ! nay, when such flowing store,  
 Plentie it selfe, falls in my wiues lap,

25 The *Cornu-copiae* will be mine, I know. But, C O B,



What entertaynement had they? I am sure  
My sister, and my wife, would bid them welcome! ha?

C O B. Like inough, sir, yet, I heard not a word of it.

K I T. No their lips were seal'd with kisses, and the  
voyce

Drown'd in a floud of ioy, at their arriuall, 30  
Had lost her motion, state, and facultie.

C O B, which of them was't, that first kist my wife?

(My sister, I should say) my wife, alas,

I feare not her: ha? who was it, say'st thou?

C O B. By my troth, sir, will you haue the truth of it? 35

K I T. Oh I, good C O B: I pray thee, heartily.

C O B. Then, I am a vagabond, and fitter for *Bride-well*,  
then your worships companie, if I saw any bodie to be kist,  
vnlesse they would haue kist the post, in the middle of the  
ware-house; for there I left them all, at their *tabacco*, with 40  
a poxe.

K I T. How? were they not gone in, then, e're thou  
cam'st?

C O B. Oh no sir.

K I T. Spite of the deuill! what doe I stay here, then? 45

C O B, follow me.

C O B. Nay, soft and faire, I haue egges on the spit; I can-  
not goe yet, sir. Now am I for some fūe and fiftie reasons  
hammering, hammering reuenge: oh, for three or foure gallons  
of vineger, to sharpen my wits. Reuenge: vineger reuenge: 50  
vineger, and mustard reuenge: nay, and hee had not lyen  
in my house, 't would neuer haue grieu'd me, but being  
my guest, one, that Ile be sworne, my wife ha's lent him her  
smock off her back, while his one shirt ha's beene at washing;  
pawn'd her neckerchers for cleane bands for him; so'd 55  
almost all my platters, to buy him *tabacco*; and he to turne  
monster of ingratitude, and strike his lawfull host! well,  
I hope to raise vp an host of furie for't: here comes Iustice

C L E M E N T.

III vi 35 truth] troth F2 36 thee,] thee F2 38 then] than  
F2 44 Oh] O, F2 51 and] an' F2 53. 54 h'as] has F2 54  
one] own W (from Q)



*Act III. Scene VII.*

CLEMENT, KNO'WELL, FORMALI, COB.

What's master K I T E L Y gone ? R O G E R ?  
F O R. I, sir.

C L E M 'Hart of me ! what made him leaue vs so abruptly ! How now, sirra ? what make you here ? what  
5 would you haue, ha ?

C O B. And't please your worship, I am a poore neighbour of your worships——

C L E M A poore neighbour of mine ? why, speake poore neighbour.

10 C O B. I dwell, sir, at the signe of the water-tankard, hard by the greene lattice I haue paid scot, and lot there, any time this eightcene yeeres.

C L E M. To the greene lattice ?

C O B No, sir, to the parish. mary, I haue seldome  
15 scap't scot-free, at the lattice.

C L E M O, well ! what businesse ha's my poore neighbour with me ?

C O B And't like your worship, I am come, to craue the peace of your worship.

20 C L E M. Of mee knaue ? peace of mee, knaue ? did I e're hurt thee ? or threaten thee ? or wrong thee ? ha ?

C O B. No, sir, but your worships warrant, for one that ha's wrong'd me, sir : his armes are at too much libertie, I would faine haue them bound to a treatie of peace, an'  
25 my credit could compasse it, with your worship.

C L E M. Thou goest farre inough about for't, I'am sure.

K N O. Why, doest thou goe in danger of thy life for him ? friend ?

C O B No sir ; but I goe in danger of my death, euery  
30 houre, by his meanes : an' I die, within a twelue-moneth

III vii 6, 18 And't] An't F<sub>2</sub> 15 scap't] scap'd F<sub>2</sub> 16, 23  
ha's] has F<sub>2</sub> 20 Of mee] Of mee, F<sub>2</sub> e're] euer F<sub>2</sub> 26 I'am]  
I am F<sub>2</sub> 29 No] No, F<sub>2</sub>



and a day, I may sweare, by the law of the land, that he kill'd me.

C L E M. How ? how knaue ? sweare he kill'd thee ? and by the law ? what pretence ? what colour hast thou for that ?

C O B. Mary, and't please your worship, both black, and 35 blew ; colour inough, I warrant you. I haue it here, to shew your worship.

C L E M. What is he, that gaue you this, sirra ?

C O B. A gentleman, and a souldier, he saies he is, o' the citie here. 40

C L E M. A souldier o' the citie ? What call you him ?

C O B. Captayne B O B A D I L.

C L E M. B O B A D I L ? And why did he bob, and beate you, sirrah ? How began the quarrell betwixt you : ha ? speake truely knaue, I aduise you. 45

C O B. Mary, indeed, and please your worship, onely because I spake against their vagrant *tabacco*, as I came by 'hem, when they were taking on't, for nothing else.

C L E M. Ha ? you speake against *tabacco* ? F O R M A L L, his name. 50

F O R M. What's your name, sirra ?

C O B. O L I V E R, sir, O L I V E R C O B, sir.

C L E M. Tell O L I V E R C O B, he shall goe to the iayle, F O R M A L L.

F O R M. O L I V E R C O B, my master, Iustice C L E - 55 M E N T, saies, you shall goe to the iayle.

C O B. O, I beseech your worship, for gods sake, deare master Iustice.

C L E M. Nay, gods pretious : and such drunkards, and tankards, as you are, come to dispute of *tabacco* once ; I 60 haue done ! away with him.

C O B. O, good master Iustice, sweet old gentleman.

K N O. Sweet O L I V E R, would I could doe thee any good : Iustice C L E M E N T, let me intreat you, sir.

C L E M. What ? a thred-bare rascall ! a begger ! a 65

III. vii 31 sweare,] swear F<sub>2</sub> 35 and't] an't F<sub>2</sub> 38 he,] he F<sub>2</sub>  
44 you : ha ? F<sub>2</sub> · you ? ha : F<sub>1</sub> 46 and] an't F<sub>2</sub> 48 on't,] on't ;  
F<sub>2</sub> 57 gods] Gods F<sub>2</sub> 59 and such] an' such F<sub>2</sub> 64 good:] good F<sub>2</sub>



slauē that neuer drunke out of better then pisse-pot mettle  
in his life ! and he to depraue, and abuse the vertue of an  
herbe, so generally receiu'd in the courts of princes, the  
chambers of nobles, the bowers of sweet ladies, the cabbins  
70 of souldiers ! R O G E R, away with him, by gods pretious  
——I say, goe too.

C O B. Deare master Iustice ; Let mee bee beaten againe,  
I haue deseru'd it : but not the prison, I beseech you.

K N O. Alas, poore O L I V E R !

75 C L E M. R O G E R, make him a warrant (hee shall not  
goe) I but feare the knaue.

F O R M. Doe not stinke, sweet O L I V E R, you shall not  
goe, my master will giue you a warrant.

C O B. O, the Lord maintayne his worship, his worthy  
80 worship.

C L E M. Away, dispatch him. How now, master  
K N O'W E L ! In dumps ? In dumps ? Come, this be-  
comes not.

K N O. Sir, would I could not feele my cares——

85 C L E M. Your cares are nothing ! they are like my cap,  
soone put on, and as soone put off What ? your sonne is  
old inough, to gouerne himselfe : let him runne his course,  
it's the onely way to make him a stay'd man. If he were an  
vnthrift, a ruffian, a drunkard, or a licentious luer, then  
90 you had reason ; you had reason to take care : but, being  
none of these, mirth's my witnesse, an' I had twise so many  
cares, as you haue, I'd drowne them all in a cup of sacke.  
Come, come, let's trie it : I muse, your parcell of a souldier  
returnes not all this while.



Act III. Scene I.

DOWNER-RIGHT, DAME KITELEY.

WELL sister, I tell you true : and you'll finde it so, in the end.

DAME. Alas brother, what would you haue mee to doe ? I cannot helpe it : you see, my brother brings 'hem in, here, they are his friends. 5

DOW. His friends ? his fiends. S'lud, they doe nothing but hant him, vp and downe, like a sort of vnluckie sprites, and tempt him to all manner of villanie, that can be thought of. Well, by this light, a little thing would make me play the deuill with some of 'hem ; and 't were not more for your 10 husbands sake, then any thing else, I'd make the house too hot for the best on 'hem : they should say, and sweare, hell were broken loose, e're they went hence. But, by gods will, 'tis no bodies fault, but yours : for, an' you had done, as you might haue done, they should haue beene perboy'l'd, and 15 bak'd too, euery mothers sonne, e're they should ha' come in, e're a one of 'hem.

DAME: God's my life ! did you euer heare the like ? what a strange man is this ! Could I keepe out all them, thinke you ? I should put my selfe, against halfe a dozen 20 men ? should I ? Good faith, you'd mad the patient'st body in the world, to heare you talke so, without any sense, or reason !

iv. 1 ] Scene 1 — A Room in Kiteley's House G 1 so,] so F2  
5 here,] here ; F2 7 hant] haunt F2 11 then] than F2  
12 'hem F2 : hem F1 15 perboy'l'd] parboil'd F3 17 in,] in F2



*Act III. Scene II.*

M<sup>rs</sup>. BRIDGET, M<sup>r</sup>. MATTHEW, DAME KITELY,  
DOWNERIGHT, WELBRED, STEPHEN,  
ED. KNO'WELL, BOBADIL,  
BRAYNE-WORME, CASH.

SERuant (in troth) you are too prodigall  
Of your wits treasure, thus to powre it forth,  
Vpon so meane a subiect, as my worth ?

MAT. You say well, mistris ; and I meane, as well.

5 DOW N. Hoy-day, here is stuffe !

WELL. O, now stand close : pray heauen, shee can get  
him to reade : He should doe it, of his owne naturall  
impudencie.

BRID. Seruant, what is this same, I pray you ?

10 MAT T. Mary, an *Elegie*, an *Elegie*, an odde toy——

DOW N. To mock an ape withall. O, I could sow vp his  
mouth, now.

DAME. Sister, I pray you let's heare it.

DOW N. Are you rime-giuen, too ?

15 MAT T. Mistris, Ile reade it, if you please.

BRID. Pray you doe, seruant.

DOW N. O, here's no fopperie ! Death, I can endure the  
stocks, better.

E. KN. What ayles thy brother ? can he not hold his  
20 water, at reading of a ballad ?

WELL. O, no : a rime to him, is worse then cheese, or a  
bag-pipe. But, marke, you loose the protestation.

MAT T. Faith, I did it in an humour ; I know not how it  
is : but, please you come neere, sir. This gentleman ha's  
25 iudgement, hee knowes how to censure of a——pray you  
sir, you can iudge.

STEP. Not I, sir : vpon my reputation, and, by the foot  
of PHAROAH.

iv. ii. 11 sow] sew F3  
23 an] a F

21 then] than F2

22 loose] lose F2



WELL. O, chide your cossen, for swearing.

E. KN. Not I, so long as he do's not forswear himselfe. 30

BOB. Master MATTHEW, you abuse the expectation of your deare mistris, and her faire sister : Fie, while you liue, auoid this prolixitie.

MATT. I shall, sir : well, *Incipere dulce*.

E. KN. How ! *Insipere dulce* ? a sweet thing to be a 35 foole, indeed.

WELL. What, doe you take *Incipere*, in that sense ?

E. KN. You doe not ? you ? This was your villanie, to gull him with a *motte*.

WELL. O, the Benchers phrase : *pauca verba, pauca* 40 *verba*.

MATT. *Rare creature, let me speake without offence, Would god my rude wordes had the influence, To rule thy thoughts, as thy faire lookes doe mine, Then should'st thou be his prisoner, who is thine.*

45

E. KN. This is in HERO and LEANDER ?

WELL. O, I ! peace, we shall haue more of this.

MATT. *Be not vnkinde, and faire, mishapen stuffe Is of behaiour boysterous, and rough :*

WELL. How like you that, sir ?

E. KN. S'light, he shakes his head like a bottle, to feele and there be any braine in it !

Master  
Stephen  
answers  
with  
shaking  
his head.

MATT. But obserue the *catastrophe*, now,  
*And I in dutie will excede all other,*

*As you in beautie doe excell loues mother.*

55

E. KN. Well, Ile haue him free of the wit-brokers, for hee vtters nothing, but stolne remnants.

WEL. O, forgiue it him.

E. KN. A flitching rogue ? hang him. And, from the dead ? it's worse then sacrilege.

60

WEL. Sister, what ha' you here ? verses ? pray you, lets see. Who made these verses ? they are excellent good !

iv. ii. 29 cossen] coussen F2 37 *Incipere* G: *Insipere* Ff 43  
Would] The W has got out of position in some copies of F1 and is  
printed before MATT. in 42 47 I !] I F2 48 *faire,*] *faire*, F2  
49 rough.] rough. F2 60 then] than F2



MAT. O, master WEL-BRED, 'tis your disposition to say so, sir. They were good i' the morning, I made 'hem, 65 *extempore*, this morning.

WEL. How? *extempore*?

MAT. I, would I might bee hang'd else; aske Captayne BOBADILL. He saw me write them, at the——(poxe on it) the starre, yonder.

70 BRAY. Can he find, in his heart, to curse the starres, so?

E. KN. Faith, his are euen with him: they ha' curst him ynough alreadye.

STEP. Cosen, how doe you like this gentlemans verses?

75 E. KN. O, admirable! the best that euer I heard, cousse!

STEP. Body o' CAESAR! they are admirable! The best, that euer I heard, as I am a souldier.

DO W. I am vext, I can hold ne're a bone of mee still! 80 Heart, I thinke, they meane to build, and breed here!

WEL. Sister, you haue a simple seruant, here, that crownes your beautie, with such *encomions*, and deuises: you may see, what it is to be the mistris of a wit! that can make your perfections so transparent, that euery bleare eye 85 may looke through them, and see him drown'd ouer head, and eares, in the deepe well of desire. Sister KITELY, I maruaile, you get you not a seruant, that can rime, and doe tricks, too.

DOWN. Oh monster! impudence it selfe! tricks?

90 DAME. Tricks, brother? what tricks?

BRI D. Nay, speake, I pray you, what tricks?

DAME. I, neuer spare any body here: but say, what tricks?

BRI D. Passion of my heart! doe tricks?

95 WEL. S'light, here's a trick vyed, and reuyed! why, you munkies, you? what a catter-waling doe you keepe? ha's hee not giuen you rimes, and verses, and tricks?



D o w. O, the fiend !

W E L. Nay, you, lampe of virginitie, that take it in snuffe so ! come, and cherish this tame *poeticall furie*, in 100 your seruant, you'll be begg'd else, shortly, for a concealement : goe to, reward his muse. You cannot giue him lesse then a shilling, in conscience, for the booke, he had it out of, cost him a teston, at least. How now, gallants ? M<sup>r</sup>. M A T T H E W ? Captayne ? What ? all sonnes of silence ? 105 no spirit ?

D o w. Come, you might practise your ruffian-tricks somewhere else, and not here, I wusse ; this is no tauerne, nor drinking-schole, to vent your exploits in.

W E L. How now ! whose cow ha's calu'd ? 110

D o w. Mary, that ha's mine, sir. Nay, Boy, neuer looke askance at me, for the matter ; Ile tell you of it, I, sir, you, and your companions, mend your selues, when I ha' done ?

W E L. My companions ?

D o w. Yes sir, your companions, so I say, I am not 115 afraid of you, nor them neither : your hang-byes here. You must haue your Poets, and your potlings, your *soldado's*, and *foolado's*, to follow you vp and downe the citie, and here they must come to domineere, and swagger. Sirrha, you, ballad-singer, and slops, your fellow there, get you out ; 120 get you home : or (by this steele) Ile cut off your eares, and that, presently.

W E L. S'light, stay, let's see what he dare doe : cut off his eares ? cut a whetstone. You are an asse, doe you see ? touch any man here, and by this hand, Ile runne my rapier 125 to the hilts in you.

D o w. Yea, that would I faine see, boy.

D A M E. O Iesu ! murder. T H O M A S, G A S P A R !

B R I D. Helpe, helpe, T H O M A S.

E. K N. Gentlemen, forbear, I pray you.

B O B. Well, sirrah, you, H O L O F E R N E S : by my hand, I will pinck your flesh, full of holes, with my rapier for

*They all  
draw, and  
they of the  
house  
make  
out to part  
them.*

rv. ii. 103 then] than F2 115 your] you F1 originally 118 foo-  
ado's,] foolado's F2 122 that,] that F2 127 Yea,] Yea F2



*They offer  
to fight  
againe,  
and are  
parted*

this ; I will, by this good heauen : Nay, let him come, let him come, gentlemen, by the body of Saint G E O R G E, Ile not kill him.

C A S H. Hold, hold, good gentlemen.

D O W. You whorson, bragging coystrell !

### *Act III. Scene III.*

*To them.*

K I T E L Y.

W H Y, how now ? what's the matter ? what's the stirre here ?

Whence springs the quarrell ? T H O M A S ! where is he ?

Put vp your weapons, and put off this rage.

5 My wife and sister, they are cause of this,

What, T H O M A S ? where is this knaue ?

C A S H. Here, sir.

W E L. Come, let's goe : this is one of my brothers ancient humours, this.

10 S T E P. I am glad, no body was hurt by his ancient humour.

K I T E. Why, how now, brother, who enforst this brawle ?

D O W. A sort of lewd rake-hells, that care neither for god, nor the deuill ! And, they must come here to reade ballads,

15 and rogerie, and trash ! Ile marre the knot of 'hem ere I sleepe, perhaps : especially B O B, there : he that's all manner of shapes ! and *Songs, and sonnets*, his fellow.

B R I D. Brother, indeed, you are too violent,

To sudden, in your humour : and, you know

20 My brother W E L-B R E D's temper will not beare

Anie reproofe, chiefly in such a presence,

Where euery slight disgrace, he should receiue,

Might wound him in opinion, and respect.

D O W N. Respect ? what talke you of respect 'mong such,

iv iii. 3 rage ] rage, F2  
of F2

13 god] God F2  
21 reproofe] reprooffe F2

15 trash some copies



As ha' nor sparke of manhood, nor good manners ? 25

'Sdeynes I am asham'd, to heare you ! respect ?

B R I D. Yes, there was one a ciuill gentleman,  
And very worthily demean'd himselfe !

K I T E. O, that was some loue of yours, sister !

B R I D. A loue of mine ? I would it were no worse, 30  
brother !

You'lld pay my portion sooner, then you thinke for.

D A M E. Indeed, he seem'd to be a gentleman of an  
exceeding faire disposition, and of verie excellent good  
parts !

K I T E. Her loue, by heauen ! my wifes minion ! 35

Faire disposition ? excellent good parts ?

Death, these phrases are intollerable !

Good parts ? how should shee know his parts ?

His parts ? Well, well, well, well, well, well !

It is too plaine, too cleere : T H O M A S, come hither. 40

What, are they gone ? C A S H. I, sir, they went in.

My mistris, and your sister——

K I T E. Are any of the gallants within ?

C A S H. No, sir, they are all gone.

K I T E. Art thou sure of it ? 45

C A S H. I can assure you, sir.

K I T E. What gentleman was that they prais'd so,  
T H O M A S ?

C A S H. One, they call him master K N O ' W E L L, a  
handsome yong gentleman, sir. 50

K I T E. I, I thought so : my mind gaue me as much.

Ile die, but they haue hid him i' the house,

Somewhere ; Ile goe and search : goe with me, T H O M A S.

Be true to me, and thou shalt find me a master. •

iv. iii 31 then] than *F*<sub>2</sub> 35 wives] Wives *F*<sub>3</sub> 43 within ?]  
within *F*<sub>f</sub> 51 much] much : *F*<sub>2</sub>



*Act III. Scene III.*

C O B, T I B.

W<sup>H</sup>at T I B, T I B, I say  
T I B. How now, what cuckold is that knocks so  
hard? O, husband, ist you? what's the newes?

C O B. Nay, you haue stonn'd me, Ifaith! you ha' giu'n  
me a knock o' the forehead, will stick by me! cuckold?  
'Slid, cuckold?

T I B. Away, you foole, did I know it was you, that  
knockt? Come, come, you may call me as bad, when  
you list.

10 C O B. May I? T I B, you are a whore.

T I B. You lye in your throte, husband.

C O B. How, the lye? and in my throte too? doe you  
long to bee stab'd, ha?

T I B. Why, you are no souldier, I hope?

15 C O B. O, must you be stab'd by a souldier? Masse, that's  
true! when was B O B A D I L L here? your Captayne?  
that rogue, that foist, that fencing *Burgullian*? Ile tickle  
him, ifaith.

T I B. Why, what's the matter? trow!

20 C O B. O, he has basted me, rarely, sumptuously! but I  
haue it here in black and white; for his black, and blew:  
shall pay him. O, the Iustice! the honestest old braue  
*Troian* in *London*! I doe honour the very flea of his dog.  
A plague on him though, he put me once in a villanous filthy  
25 feare; mary, it vanisht away, like the smoke of *tabacco*; but  
I was smok't soundly first. I thanke the deuill, and his good  
angell, my guest. Well, wife, or T I B (which you will) get  
you in, and lock the doore, I charge you, let no body in to  
you; wife, no body in, to you: those are my wordes.  
30 Not Captayne B O B himselfe, nor the fiend, in his likenesse;  
you are a woman; you haue flesh and bloud enough in you,

iv. 14] Scene II.—The Lane before Cob's House. G 4 Nay.]  
Nay F2 5 forehead,] forehead F2 8 Come begins a new line  
in Ff 20 sumptuously] sumptuously F2 22 honestest] honest F3



to be tempted : therefore, keepe the doore, shut, vpon all commers.

T I B. I warrant you, there shall no body enter here, without my consent. 35

C O B. Nor, with your consent, sweet T I B, and so I leaue you.

T I B. It's more, then you know, whether you leaue me so.

C O B. How ?

T I B. Why, sweet. 40

C O B. Tut, sweet, or sowre, thou art a flowre,  
Keepe close thy dore, I aske no more

*Act IIII. Scene v.*

E D. K N O'W E L L, W E L L-B R E D, S T E P H E N,  
B R A Y N E-W O R M E.

W E L L B R A Y N E-W O R M E, performe this businesse, happily, and thou makest a purchase of my loue, for-euer.

W E L. Ifaith, now let thy spirits vse their best faculties. But, at any hand, remember the message, to my brother : 5  
for, there's no other meanes, to start him.

B R A Y. I warrant you, sir, feare nothing : I haue a nimble soule ha's wakt all forces of my phant'sie, by this time, and put 'hem in true motion. What you haue possest mee withall, Ile discharge it amply, sir. Make it no question. 10

W E L. Forth, and prosper, B R A Y N E-W O R M E. Faith, N E D, how dost thou approue of my abilities in this deuise ?

E. K N. Troth, well, howsoeuer : but, it will come excellent, if it take.

W E L. Take, man ? why, it cannot choose but take, if 15  
the circumstances miscarrie not : but, tell me, ingenuously, dost thou affect my sister B R I D G E T, as thou pretend'st ?

E. K N. Friend, am I worth beliefe ?

iv. iv 38 then] than F2  
Windmill Tavern G. BRAYNE-WORME, F2 2 and] And Ff,  
beginning a new line 3 for-euer ] for ever. F2: for-euer, F1  
5 But F2: but F1 6 meanes,] means F2 8 ha's] has F2



W E L. Come, doe not protest. In faith, shee is a maid of  
20 good ornament, and much modestie : and, except I con-  
ceiu'd very worthily of her, thou shouldest not haue her.

E. K N. Nay, that I am afraid will bee a question yet,  
whether I shall haue her, or no ?

W E L. Slid, thou shalt haue her ; by this light, thou shalt.

25 E. K N. Nay, doe not sweare.

W E L. By this hand, thou shalt haue her : Ile goe fetch  
her, presently. Point, but where to meet, and as I am an  
honest man, I'll bring her.

E. K N. Hold, hold, be temperate.

30 W E L. Why, by——what shall I sweare by ? thou shalt  
haue her, as I am——

E. K N. 'Pray thee, be at peace, I am satisfied : and doe  
beleuee, thou wilt omit no offered occasion, to make my  
desires compleat.

35 W E L. Thou shalt see, and know, I will not.

### *Act IIII. Scene VI.*

FORMALL, KNO'WELL, BRAYNE-WORME.

W As your man a souldier, sir ?

K N O. I, a knaue, I tooke him begging o' the way,  
This morning, as I came ouer *More*-fields !

O, here he is ! yo' haue made faire speed, belecue me :

5 Where, i' the name of sloth, could you be thus——

B R A Y. Mary, peace be my comfort, where I thought  
I should haue had little comfort of your worships seruice.

K N O. How so ?

6 B R A Y. O, sir ! your comming to the citie, your enter-  
10 tainment of me, and your sending me to watch——indeed,  
all the circumstances either of your charge, or my employ-  
ment, are as open to your sonne, as to your selfe !

iv. v. 22 that] that, F2 afraid] afraid, F2 iv. vi.] Scene iv.—  
The Old Jewry G: Scene vi —A Street. H. B Wheatley 3 *More*-  
fields] *Moore*-fields F2 5 thus——] thus ?——F2 6 be] by F2  
11 employment.] employment F2



KNO. How should that be! vnlesse that villaine,

BRAYNE-WORME,

Haue told him of the letter, and discouer'd 15

All that I strictly charg'd him to conceale? 'tis so!

BRAY. I am, partly, o' the faith, 'tis so indeed.

KNO. But, how should he know thee to be my man?

BRAY. Nay, sir, I cannot tell; vnlesse it bee by the  
black art! Is not your sonne a scholler, sir? 20

KNO. Yes, but I hope his soule is not allied

Vnto such hellish practise: if it were,

I had iust cause to weepe my part in him,

And curse the time of his creation.

But, where didst thou find them, FITZ-SWORD? 25

BRAY. You should rather aske, where they found me,  
sir, for, Ile bee sworne I was going along in the street,  
thinking nothing, when (of a suddain) a voice calls, M<sup>r</sup>.  
KNO-WEL's man; another cries, souldier and thus, halfe  
a dosen of 'hem, till they had cal'd me within a house where 30  
I no sooner came, but they seem'd men, and out flue al their  
rapiers at my bosome, with some three or foure score oathes  
to accompanie 'hem, & al to tel me, I was but a dead man,  
if I did not confesse where you were, and how I was im-  
ployed, and about what; which, when they could not get 35  
out of me (as I protest, they must ha' dissected, and made  
an *Anatomie* o' me, first, and so I told 'hem) they lockt  
mee vp into a roome i' the top of a high house, whence, by  
great miracle (hauing a light heart) I slid downe, by a  
bottom of pack-thred, into the street, and so scapt. But, 40  
sir, thus much I can assure you, for I heard it, while I was  
lockt vp, there were a great many rich merchants, and  
braue citizens wiues with 'hem at a feast, and your sonne,  
M<sup>r</sup>. EDWARD, with-drew with one of 'hem, and has  
pointed to meet her anon, at one COBS house, a water- 45  
bearer, that dwells by the wall. Now, there, your worship

iv. vi. 17 am,] am F2 27 sir,] sir; F2 sworne] sworne, F2  
28 calls,] calls F2 29 KNO-WEL'S] KNOWEL'S F2 30 house]  
house, F2 31 they F2 thy F1 men] mad-men W. conj. flue]  
flew F2 43 feast,] feast: F2 46 there,] there F2



shall be sure to take him, for there he preyes, and faile he will not.

KNO. Nor, will I faile, to breake his match, I doubt not.  
50 Goe thou, along with Iustice CLEMENT's man,

And stay there for me. At one COBS house, sai'st thou?

BRAV. I sir, there you shall haue him. Yes? Inuisible? Much wench, or much sonne! 'Slight, when hee has staid there, three or foure houres, traueilling with the  
55 expectation of wonders, and at length be deliuer'd of aire: ô, the sport, that I should then take, to looke on him, if I durst! But, now, I meane to appeare no more afore him in this shape. I haue another trick, to act, yet. O, that I were so happy, as to light on a nupson, now, of this Iustices  
60 nouice. Sir, I make you stay somewhat long.

FORM. Not a whit, sir. 'Pray you, what doc you meane? sir?

BRAV. I was putting vp some papers——

FORM. You ha' beene lately in the warres, sir, it seemes.

65 BRAV. Mary haue I, sir; to my losse: and expence of all, almost——

FORM. Troth sir, I would be glad to bestow a pottle of wine o' you, if it please you to accept it——

BRAV. O, sir——

70 FORM. But, to heare the manner of your seruices, and your deuices in the warres, they say they be very strange, and not like those a man reades in the *Romane* histories, or sees, at *Mile-end*.

BRAV. No, I assure you, sir, why, at any time when it  
75 please you, I shall be readie to discourse to you, all I know: and more too, somewhat.

\* FORM. No better time, then now, sir; wee'll goe to the wind-mill: there we shall haue a cup of neate grist, wee call it. I pray you, sir, let mee request you, to the wind-mill.

80 BRAV. Ile follow you, sir, and make grist o' you, if I haue good lucke.

iv vi. 47 preyes] presy F2 49 KN ] E. KNO. F2 56 sport,] sport F2  
61 'Pray] Pray F2 meane?] meane, F2 74 sir,] sir; F2 77 then]  
than F2 78, 79 wind-mill] Wind-mill F2 79 you, to] you to F2



Act III. Scene VII.

MATTHEW, ED. KNO'WELL, BOBADILL, STEPHEN,  
DOWNE-RIGHT.

To them.

Sir, did your eyes euer tast the like clowne of him, where we were to day, M<sup>r</sup>. WEL-BRED's halfe brother? I thinke, the whole earth cannot shew his paralell, by this day-light.

E. K N. We were now speaking of him: Captayne 5  
BOBADILL tells me, he is fall'n foule o'you, too.

MAT. O, I, sir, he threatned me, with the bastinado.

BOB. I, but I thinke, I taught you preuention, this morning, for that—— You shall kill him, beyond question: 10  
if you be so generously minded.

MAT. Indeed, it is a most excellent trick!

BOB. O, you doe not giue spirit enough, to your motion, 15  
you are too tardie, too heauie! ô, it must be done like *He practises at a post.*  
lightning, hay?

MAT. Rare Captaine! 15

BOB. Tut, 'tis nothing, and 't be not done in a——*punto!*

E. K N. Captaine, did you euer proue your selfe, vpon any of our masters of defence, here?

MAT. O, good sir! yes, I hope, he has.

BOB. I will tell you, sir. Vpon my first comming to the 20  
citie, after my long trauaile, for knowledge (in that mysterie only) there came three, or foure of 'hem to me, at a gentle-mans house, where it was my chance to be resident, at that time, to intreat my presence at their scholes, and with-all so much importun'd me, that (I protest to you as I am a 25  
gentleman) I was asham'd of their rude demeanor, out of all measure: well, I told 'hem, that to come to a publike

IV. vii ] Scene v — Moorfields G: Scene vi — A Street H B Wheat-  
ley Ff arrange the characters in two lines, MATTHEW . . BOBADILL, ]  
STEPHEN, DOWNE-RIGHT Ff prints 'To them' parallel with the first  
line, F2 with the second 16 and 't] an't F2 17 selfe,] selfe F2  
18 defence,] defence F2 19 hope,] hope F2 25 you] you, F2 26  
demeanor] demeanour F2 27 that] that, F2



schoole, they should pardon me, it was opposite (in *diameter*)  
to my humour, but, if so they would giue their attendance  
30 at my lodging, I protested to doe them what right or  
fauour I could, as I was a gentleman, and so forth.

E. K N. So, sir, then you tried their skill ?

B o b. Alas, soone tried ! you shall heare sir. Within two  
or three daies after, they came ; and, by honestie, faire sir,  
35 beleue mee, I grac't them exceedingly, shew'd them some  
two or three tricks of preuention, haue purchas'd 'hem,  
since, a credit, to admiration ! they cannot denie this : and  
yet now, they hate mee, and why ? because I am excellent,  
and for no other vile reason on the earth.

40 E. K N. This is strange, and barbarous ! as euer I heard !

B o b. Nay, for a more instance of their preposterous  
natures, but note, sir. They haue assaulted me some three,  
foure, fiue, sixe of them together, as I haue walkt alone, in  
diuers skirts i' the towne, as *Turne-bull*, *White-chappell*,  
45 *Shore-ditch*, which were then my quarters, and since vpon  
the *Exchange*, at my lodging, and at my ordinarie : where  
I haue driuen them afore me, the whole length of a street,  
in the open view of all our gallants, pittying to hurt them,  
beleue me. Yet, all this lenitie will not ore-come their  
50 spleene. they will be doing with a pismier, raysing a hill,  
a man may spurne abroad, with his foot, at pleasure. By  
my selfe, I could haue slaine them all, but I delight not in  
murder. I am loth to beare any other then this bastinado  
for 'hem : yet, I hold it good politie, not to goe disarm'd,  
55 for though I bee skilfull, I may bee oppress'd with multi-  
tudes.

E. K N. I, beleue me, may you sir : and (in my conceit)  
our whole nation should sustaine the losse by it, if it were so.

B o b. Alas, no : what's a peculiar man, to a nation ? not  
60 seene

E. K N. O, but your skill, sir !

iv vii. 29 so] so be F2 35 grac't] grac'd F2 45 quarters,]  
quarters ; F2 since] since, F2 49 Yet,] Yet F2 53 then]  
than F2 54 yet,] yet F2 61 sir !] sir F2



B o b. Indeed, that might be some losse ; but, who respects it ? I will tell you, sir, by the way of priuate, and vnder seale ; I am a gentleman, and lue here obscure, and to my selfe : but, were I knowne to her Maiestie, and the 65 Lords (obserue mee) I would vnder-take (vpon this poore head, and life) for the publique benefit of the state, not only to spare the intire liues of her subiects in generall, but to saue the one halfe, nay, three parts of her yeerely charge, in holding warre, and against what enemie soeuer. And, how 70 would I doe it, thinke you ?

E. K n. Nay, I know not, nor can I conceiue.

B o b. Why thus, sir. I would select nineteene, more, to my selfe, throughout the land ; gentlemen they should bee of good spirit, strong, and able constitution, I would choose 75 them by an instinct, a character, that I haue : and I would teach these nineteene, the speciall rules, as your *Punto*, your *Reuerso*, your *Stoccata*, your *Imbroccata*, your *Passada*, your *Montanto* : till they could all play very neare, or altogether as well as my selfe. This done, say the enemie 80 were fortie thousand strong, we twentie would come into the field, the tenth of *March*, or thereabouts ; and wee would challenge twentie of the enemie ; they could not, in their honour, refuse vs, well, wee would kill them : challenge twentie more, kill them ; twentie more, kill them ; 85 twentie more, kill them too ; and thus, would wee kill, euery man, his twentie a day, that's twentie score ; twentie score, that's two hundreth ; two hundreth a day, fise dayes a thousand ; fortie thousand ; fortie times fise, fise times fortie, two hundreth dayes kills them all vp, by computation. 90 And this, will I venture my poore gentleman-like carcasce, to performe (prouided, there bee no treason practis'd vpon vs) by faire, and discreet manhood, that is, ciuilly by the sword.

E. K n. Why, are you so sure of your hand, Capitaine, at 95 all times ?

iv. vii 64 vnder seale] under-seale F2  
F2 84 vs.,] us, F2

70, 80, 83 enemie] enemy



B o b. Tut, neuer misse thrust, vpon my reputation with you.

E. K n. I would not stand in D o w n e r i g h t s state,  
100 then, an' you meet him, for the wealth of any one street in  
*London.*

B o b. Why, sir, you mistake me ! if he were here now,  
by this welkin, I would not draw my weapon on him !  
let this gentleman doe his mind : but, I will bastinado him  
105 (by the bright sunne) where-euer I meet him.

M a t. Faith, and Ile haue a fling at him, at my distance.

*Downe-  
right  
walkes  
ouer the  
stage*

E. K n. Gods so', looke, where he is : yonder he goes.

D o w. What peeuish luck haue I, I cannot meet with  
these bragging raskalls ?

110 B o b. It's not he ? is it ?

E. K n. Yes faith, it is he.

M a t. Ile be hang'd, then, if that were he.

E. K n. Sir, keepe your hanging good, for some greater  
matter, for I assure you, that was he

115 S t e p. Vpon my reputation, it was hee.

B o b. Had I thought it had beene he, he must not haue  
gone so : but I can hardly be induc'd, to beleeeue, it was he,  
yet.

E. K n. That I thinke, sir. But sec, he is come againe !

120 D o w. O, P h a r o a h s foot, haue I found you ? Come,  
draw, to your tooles . draw, gipsie, or Ile thresh you.

B o b. Gentleman of valour, I doe beleeeue in thee, heare  
me——

D o w. Draw your weapon, then.

125 B o b. Tall man, I neuer thought on it, till now (body of  
me) I had a warrant of the peace, serued on me, euen now,  
as I came along, by a water-bearer ; this gentleman saw it,  
M<sup>r</sup>. M a t t h e w.

129 D o w. 'Sdeath, you will not draw, then ?

*He beates  
him, and  
disarmes  
him :*

B o b. Hold, hold, vnder thy fauour, forbear.

D o w. Prate againe, as you like this, you whoreson

iv. vii 107 so'] so, F2  
121 gipsie,] gipsie, F2

110-111 *One line in F2*

111 he ] he ? Ff



foist, you. You'le controll the point, you ? Your consort is gone ? had he staid, he had shar'd with you, sir. *Matthew runnes away.*

B o b. Well, gentlemen, beare witnesse, I was bound to the peace, by this good day. 135

E. K N. No faith, it's an ill day, Captaine, neuer reckon it other: but, say you were bound to the peace, the law allowes you, to defend your selfe : that'll proue but a poore excuse.

B o b. I cannot tell, sir. I desire good construction, in faire sort. I neuer sustain'd the like disgrace (by heauen) 140 sure I was strooke with a plannet thence, for I had no power to touch my weapon.

E. K N. I, like inough, I haue heard of many that haue beene beaten vnder a plannet : goe, get you to a surgean. 'Slid, an' these be your tricks, your *passada's*, and your 145 *mountanto's*, Ile none of them. O, manners ! that this age should bring forth such creatures ! that Nature should bee at leisure to make 'hem ! Come, cousse.

S T E P. Masse, Ile ha' this cloke.

E. K N. Gods will, 'tis D O W N E - R I G H T ' S. 150

S T E P. Nay, it's mine now, another might haue tane vp, aswell as I : Ile weare it, so I will.

E. K N. How, an' he see it ? hee'll challenge it, assure your selfe.

S T E P. I, but he shall not ha' it ; Ile say, I bought it. 155

E. K N. Take heed, you buy it not, too deare, cousse.

### Act IIII. Scene VIII.

K I T E L Y, W E L - B R E D, D A M E K I T. B R I D G E T,  
B R A Y N E - W O R M E, C A S H.

N O W, trust me brother, you were much to blame,  
T'incense his anger, and disturbe the peace,  
Of my poore house, where there are sentinells  
That euery minute watch, to giue alarmes,

iv. vii. 141 strooke] struck F2 145 *passada's*] *passadaes* F2  
146 *mountanto's*] *mountantoes* F2 148 'hem F2 : hem F1 151  
tane] tane't F2 153 an'] an F2 iv. viii.] Scene VI.—A Room in  
Kitely's House. G



5 Of ciuill warre, without adiection

Of your assistance, or occasion.

WELL. No harme done, brother, I warrant you : since there is no harme done. Anger costs a man nothing : and a tall man is neuer his owne man, till he be angrie. To  
10 keepe his valure in obscuritie, is to keepe himselfe, as it were, in a cloke-bag. What's a musitian, vnlesse he play ? what's a tall man, vnlesse he fight ? For, indeed, all this, my wise brother stands vpon, absolutely : and, that made me fall in with him, so resolutely.

15 DAME. I, but what harme might haue come of it, brother ?

WELL. Might, sister ? so, might the good warme clothes, your husband weares, be poyson'd, for any thing he knowes : or the wholesome wine he drunke, euen now, at the table——

20 KITE. Now, god forbid : O me. Now, I remember, My wife drunke to me, last ; and chang'd the cup : And bade me weare this cursed sute to day. See, if heau'n suffer murder vndiscouer'd !

I feele me ill ; giue me some *mithridate*,

25 Some *mithridate* and oile, good sister, fetch me ;

O, I am sicke at heart ! I burne, I burne.

If you will saue my life, goe, fetch it me.

WELL. O, strange humour ! my verie breath ha's poyson'd him.

30 BRID. Good brother, be content, what doe you meane ? The strength of these extreme conceits, will kill you.

DAME. Beshrew your heart-bloud, brother WELL-BRED, now ;

For putting such a toy into his head.

• WELL. Is a fit *simile*, a toy ? will he be poyson'd with  
35 a *simile* ? Brother KITELY, what a strange, and idle imagination is this ? For shame, bee wiser. O' my soule, there's no such matter.

iv. viii 8 done ] done, Q, G 10 valure] valour F2 himselfe,]  
himself, F2 12 For,] For F2 13 and,] and F2 20 god] God  
F2 23 vndiscouer'd] vndiscour'd F1 vndiscover'd F2 32-3  
Verse in Q : prose in Ff. 34 simile,] simile F2 36 O'] O F2



K I T E. Am I not sicke? how am I, then, not poyson'd?  
Am I not poyson'd? how am I, then, so sicke?

D A M E. If you be sicke, youre owne thoughts make you 40  
sicke.

W E L L. His iealousie is the poyson, he ha's taken.

B R A Y. M<sup>r</sup>. K I T E L Y, my master, Iustice C L E M E N T, *He comes  
disguis'd  
like  
Iustice  
Clements  
man.*  
salutes you; and desires to speake with you, with all  
possible speed.

K I T E. No time, but now? when, I thinke, I am sicke?  
very sicke! well, I will wait vpon his worship. T H O M A S, 46  
C O B, I must seeke them out, and set 'hem sentinells, till  
I returne. T H O M A S, C O B, T H O M A S.

W E L L. This is perfectly rare, B R A Y N E-W O R M E!  
but how got'st thou this apparell, of the Iustices man? 50

B R A Y. Mary sir, my proper fine pen-man, would needs  
bestow the grist o'me, at the wind-mil, to hear some martial  
discourse; where so I marshal'd him, that I made him  
drunke, with admiration! &, because, too much heat was  
the cause of his distemper, I stript him starke naked, as he 55  
lay along asleepe, and borrowed his sute, to deliuer this  
counterfeit message in, leauing a rustie armor, and an  
old browne bill to watch him, till my returne: which shall  
be, when I ha' pawn'd his apparell, and spent the better  
part o' the money, perhaps. 60

W E L L. Well, thou art a successefull merry knaue,  
B R A Y N E-W O R M E, his absence will be a good subiect for  
more mirth. I pray thee, returne to thy yong master, and  
will him to meet me, and my sister B R I D G E T, at the  
tower instantly: for, here, tell him, the house is so stor'd 65  
with iealousie, there is no roome for loue, to stand vpright  
in. We must get our fortunes committed to some larger  
prison, say; and, then the tower, I know no better aire:  
nor where the libertie of the house may doe vs more present  
service. Away. 70

K I T E. Come hether, T H O M A S. Now, my secret's ripe,  
And thou shalt haue it: lay to both thine eares.



Harke, what I say to thee. I must goe forth, T H O M A S.  
 Be carefull of thy promise, keepe good watch,  
 75 Note euery gallant, and obserue him well,  
 That enters in my absence, to thy mistris :  
 If shee would shew him roomes, the iest is stale,  
 Follow 'hem, T H O M A S, or else hang on him,  
 And let him not goe after ; marke their lookes ;  
 80 Note, if shee offer but to see his band,  
 Or any other amorous toy, about him ;  
 But praise his legge ; or foot ; or if shee say,  
 The day is hot, and bid him feele her hand,  
 How hot it is ; ô, that's a monstrous thing !  
 85 Note me all this, good T H O M A S, marke their sighes,  
 And, if they doe but whisper, breake 'hem off :  
 Ile beare thee out in it. Wilt thou doe this ?  
 Wilt thou be true, my T H O M A S ? C A S. As truth's selfe,  
 sir

K I T E. Why, I belecue thee : where is C O B, now ?  
 C O B ?

90 D A M E. Hee's euer calling for C O B ! I wonder, how hee  
 imploies C O B, so !

W E L L. Indeed, sister, to aske how hee imploies C O B,  
 is a necessarie question for you, that are his wife, and a  
 thing not very easie for you to be satisfied in : but this Ile  
 95 assure you, C O B's wife is an excellent bawd, sister, and,  
 often-times, your husband hants her house, mary, to what  
 end, I cannot altogether accuse him, imagine you what you  
 thinke conuenient. But, I haue knowne, faire hides haue  
 foule hearts, e'er now, sister.

100 D A M E. Neuer said you truer then that, brother, so  
 much I can tell you for your learning. T H O M A S, fetch  
 your cloke, and goe with me, Ile after him presently : I  
 would to fortune, I could take him there, ifaith. Il'd  
 returne him his owne, I warrant him.

105 W E L L. So, let 'hem goe : this may make sport anon.



Now, my faire sister in-law, that you knew, but how happie a thing it were to be faire, and beautifull ?

B R I D. That touches not me, brother.

W E L L. That's true ; that's euen the fault of it : for, indeede, beautie stands a woman in no stead, vnlesse it procure her touching. But, sister, whether it touch you, or no, it touches your beauties ; and, I am sure, they will abide the touch ; an' they doe not, a plague of all ceruse, say I : and, it touches mee to in part, though not in the— Well, there's a deare and respected friend of mine, sister, stands very strongly, and worthily affected toward you, and hath vow'd to inflame whole bone-fires of zeale, at his heart, in honor of your perfections. I haue alreadie engag'd my promise to bring you, where you shall heare him confirme much more. N E D K N O'W E L L is the man, sister. There's no exception against the partie. You are ripe for a husband ; and a minutes losse to such an occasion, is a great trespasse in a wise beautie. What say you, sister ? On my soule hee loues you. Will you gieve him the meeting ?

125

B R I D. Faith, I had very little confidence in mine owne constancie, brother, if I durst not meet a man : but this motion of yours, sauours of an old knight-aduenturers seruant, a little too much, me thinkes.

W E L L. What's that, sister ?

130

B R I D. Mary, of the squire.

W E L L. No matter if it did, I would be such an one for my friend, but see ! who is return'd to hinder vs ?

K I T E. What villanie is this ? call'd out on a false message ? This was some plot ! I was not sent for. B R I D G E T, Where's your sister ? B R I D. I thinke shee be gone forth, sir.

135

K I T E. How ! is my wife gone forth ? whether for gods sake ?

B R I D. Shee's gone abroad with T H O M A S.

iv. viii. 110 for,] for F2 112 and,] and F2 118 honor] honour  
F2 130-1 One line in F2 137 whether] whither F2



- KITE. Abroad with THOMAS? oh, that villaine dors me.
- 140 He hath discover'd all vnto my wife !  
 Beast that I was, to trust him : whither, I pray you,  
 Went shee? BRID. I know not, sir. WELL. Ile tell you,  
 brother,  
 Whither I suspect shee's gone. KITE. Whither, good  
 brother?
- WELL. To COBS house, I beleue : but, keepe my  
 145 counsaile.
- KITE. I will, I will : to COBS house? doth shee hant  
 COBS?
- Shee's gone a' purpose, now, to cuckold me,  
 With that lewd raskall, who, to win her fauour,  
 Hath told her all. WELL. Come, hee's once more gone.
- 150 Sister, let's loose no time ; th'affaire is worth it.

*Act III. Scene IX.*

MATTHEW, BOBADIL, BRAYNE-WORME.

[To them]

[DOWNERIGHT.]

I Wonder, Captayne, what they will say of my going away?  
 ha?

BOB Why, what should they say? but as of a discreet  
 gentleman? quick, warie, respectfull of natures faire linea-  
 5 ments : and that's all?

MAT. Why, so ! but what can they say of your beating?

BOB. A rude part, a touch with soft wood, a kind of  
 grosse batterrie vs'd, laid on strongly, borne most patiently :  
 and that's all.

10 MAT. I, but, would any man haue offered it in *Venice*?  
 as you say?

BOB. Tut, I assure you, no : you shall haue there your

IV VIII 141-3 *Whalley's arrangement* : Beast... went shee? [BRID.  
 . sir | WELL Ile gone | KITE... brother? Ff 145 counsaile.]  
 counsell F2 147 a'] a F2 149 gone | gone, F2 150 loose] lose F2  
 IV IX ] Scene VII.—A Street G BRAYNE-WORME.] BRAYNE-WORME, Ff



*Nobilis*, your *Gentelezza*, come in brauely vpon your *reuerse*, stand you close, stand you firme, stand you faire, saue your *retricato* with his left legge, come to the *assalto* with the 15 right, thrust with braue steele, defie your base wood! But, wherefore doe I awake this remembrance? I was fascinated, by I V P I T E R : fascinated : but I will be vn-witch'd, and reueng'd, by law.

M A T. Doe you heare? ist not best to get a warrant, and 20 haue him arrested, and brought before Iustice C L E M E N T?

B O B. It were not amisse, would we had it.

M A T. Why, here comes his man, let's speake to him.

B O B. Agreed, doe you speake.

M A T. Saue you, sir. 25

B R A Y. With all my heart, sir.

M A T. Sir, there is one D O W N E - R I G H T, hath abus'd this gentleman, and my selfe, and we determine to make our amends by law; now, if you would doe vs the fauour, to procure a warrant, to bring him afore your master, you 30 shall bee well considered, I assure you, sir.

B R A Y. Sir, you know my seruice is my liuing, such fauours as these, gotten of my master, is his only preferment, and therefore, you must consider me, as I may make benefit of my place. 35

M A T. How is that, sir?

B R A Y. Faith sir, the thing is extraordinarie, and the gentleman may be, of great accompt: yet, bee what hee will, if you will lay mee downe a brace of angells, in my hand, you shall haue it, otherwise not. 40

M A T. How shall we doe, Captayne? he askes a brace of angells, you haue no monie?

B O B. Not a crosse, by fortune.

M A T. Nor I, as I am a gentleman, but two pence, left of my two shillings in the morning for wine, and redish: let's 45 find him some pawne.

rv. ix. 25-6 *One line in F2*      25 Saue] 'Save F2      26 sir. F2:  
sir? F1      32 liuing,] living, F2      33 master,] master F2  
36 that, sir?] that? sir. Ff      45 redish] raddish F2



B O B. Pawne? we haue none to the value of his demand.

M A T. O, yes. I'll pawne this iewell in my eare, and you may pawne your silke stockings, and pull vp your  
50 bootes, they will ne're be mist: It must be done, now.

B O B. Well, an' there be no remedie: Ile step aside, and pull 'hem off.

M A T. Doe you heare, sir? wee haue no store of monie at this time, but you shall haue good pawnes: looke you,  
55 sir, this iewell, and that gentlemans silke stockings, because we would haue it dispatcht, e're we went to our chambers.

B R A Y. I am content, sir; I will get you the warrant presently, what's his name, say you? D O W N E - R I G H T?

M A T. I, I, G E O R G E D O W N E - R I G H T.

60 B R A Y. What manner of man is he?

M A T. A tall bigge man, sir; hee goes in a cloke, most commonly, of silke russet, laid about with russet lace.

B R A Y. 'Tis very good, sir.

M A T. Here sir, hcre's my iewell.

65 B O B. And, here, are stockings.

B R A Y. Well, gentlemen, Ile procure you this warrant presently, but, who will you haue to serue it?

M A T. That's true, Captaine: that must be consider'd.

B O B. Bodie o'me, I know not! 'tis seruice of danger!

70 B R A Y. Why, you were best get one o' the varlets o' the citie, a serieant. Ile appoint you one, if you please.

M A T. Will you, sir? why, we can wish no better.

B O B. Wee'll leaue it to you, sir.

B R A Y. This is rare! now, will I goe pawne this cloke  
75 of the Iustice's mans, at the brokers, for a varlets sute, and be the varlet my selfe; and get either more pawnes, or more monie of D O W N E - R I G H T, for the arrest.

iv. ix. 49, 55 silke stockings] silke-stockings F2  
silke-russet F2 64 iewell ] iewell? Ff  
stockings W 67 presently,] presently, F2  
danger? Fr 71 serieant.] serjeant, F2

62 silke russet]  
65 stockings] my  
69 danger! F2:



Act III. Scene x.

KNO'WEL, TIB, CASH, DAME KITELY,  
KITELY, COB.

O H, here it is, I am glad : I haue found it now.  
Ho ? who is within, here ?

TIB. I am within sir, what's your pleasure ?

KNO. To know, who is within, besides your selfe.

TIB. Why, sir, you are no constable, I hope ? 5

KNO. O ! feare you the constable ? then, I doubt not,  
You haue some guests within, deserue that feare,  
Ile fetch him straight. TIB. O' gods name, sir.

KNO. Goe to. Come, tell me, Is not yong KNO'WEL,  
here ?

TIB. Yong KNO'WEL ? I know none such, sir, o' mine io  
honestie !

KNO. Your honestie ? dame, it flies too lightly from you :  
There is no way, but, fetch the constable.

TIB. The constable ? the man is mad, I thinke.

CAS. Ho, who keepest house, here ?

KNO. O, this is the female copes-mate of my sonne ? 15  
Now shall I meet him straight. DAME. Knock,

THOMAS, hard.

CAS. Ho, good wife ? TIB. Why, what's the matter  
with you ?

DAME. Why, woman, grieues it you to ope' your doore ?  
Belike, you get something, to keepe it shut.

TIB. What meane these questions, 'pray yee ?

DAME. So strange you make it ? is not my husband,  
here ?

KNO. Her husband ! DAME. My tryed husband,  
master KITELY.

TIB. I hope, he needes not to be tryed, here.

iv. x ] Scene viii.—The Lane before Cob's House. G 6 not, Q :  
not Ff 9, 10 yong] young F2 10 KNO'WEL F2 : KNO-WEL Ff  
18 ope'] ope F2 19 something,] something F2 22 Two lines in Ff



- DAME. No, dame : he do's it not for need, but pleasure.
- 25 TIB. Neither for need, nor pleasure, is he here.  
KNO. This is but a deuice, to balke me withall.  
Soft, who is this ? 'Tis not my sonne, disguisd ?
- Shee spies  
her hus-  
band come:  
and  
runnes  
to him* DAME. O, sir, haue I fore-stald your honest market ?  
Found your close walkes ? you stand amaz'd, now, doe  
you ?  
I faith (I am glad) I have smokt you yet at last !
- 31 What is your iewell trow ? In : come, lets see her ;  
(Fetch forth your huswife, dame) if shee be fairer,  
In any honest iudgement, then my selfe,  
Ile be content with it : but, shee is change,
- 35 Shee feedes you fat, shee soothes your appetite,  
And you are well ? your wife, an honest woman,  
Is meat twice sod to you, sir ? O, you trecher !  
KNO. Shee cannot counterfeit thus palpably.  
KITE. Out on thy more then strumpets impudence !
- 40 Steal'st thou thus to thy haunts ? and, haue I taken  
Thy bawd, and thee, and thy companion,  
*Pointing  
to old  
Kno'well.* This horie-headed letcher, this old goat,  
Close at your villanie, and would'st thou 'scuse it,
- 44 With this stale harlots iest, accusing me ?  
*To him.* O, old incontinent, do'st not thou shame,  
When all thy powers in chastitie is spent,  
To haue a mind so hot ? and to entice,  
And feede th'enticements of a lustfull woman ?
- DAME. Out, I defie thee, I, dissembling wretch.
- By  
Thomas.* 50 KITE. Defie me, strumpet ? aske thy pandar, here,  
Can he denie it ? or that wicked elder ?  
KNO. Why, heare you, sir. KITE. Tut, tut, tut :  
neuer speake.  
Thy guiltie conscience will discouer thee.  
KNO. What lunacie is this, that hants this man ?
- 55 KITE. Well, good-wife BA'D, COBS wife ; and you,

iv. x. 28 stage dir. *come* : ] *come*, F2 33, 39 then] *than* F2 39  
strumpets] strumpet F2 46 is] *are* W 54 hants] *haunts* F2  
55 wife ; and] *wife, and* F2



That make your husband such a hoddie-doddie ;  
And you, yong apple-squire ; and old cuckold-maker ;  
Ile ha' you euery one before a Iustice :  
Nay, you shall answer it, I charge you goe.

KNO. Marie, with all my heart, sir : I goe willingly. 60  
Though I doe tast this as a trick, put on me,  
To punish my impertinent search ; and iustly :  
And halfe forgiue my sonne, for the deuice.

KITE. Come, will you goe ? DAME. Goe ? to thy  
shame, beleue it.

COB. Why, what's the matter, here ? What's here to doe ? 65

KITE. O, COB, art thou come ? I haue beene abus'd,  
And i' thy house. Neuer was man so, wrong'd !

COB. Slid, in my house ? my master KITELY ? Who  
wrongs you in my house ?

KITE. Marie, yong lust in old ; and old in yong, here : 70  
Thy wife's their bawd, here haue I taken 'hem.

COB. How ? bawd ? Is my house come to that ? Am I *He falls*  
prefer'd thether ? Did I charge you to keepe your dores shut, *upon his*  
I'SBEL ? and doe you let 'hem lie open for all commers ? *wife and*  
*beates her.*

KNO. Friend, know some cause, before thou beat'st thy 75  
wife,

This's madnesse, in thee. COB. Why ? is there no cause ?

KITE. Yes, Ile shew cause before the Iustice, COB :  
Come, let her goe with me. COB. Nay, shee shall goe.

TIB. Nay, I will goe. Ile see, an' you may bee allow'd to  
make a bundle o' hempe, o' your right and lawfull wife thus, 80  
at euery cuckoldly knaues pleasure. Why doe you not  
goe ?

KITE. A bitter queane. Come, wee'll ha' you tam'd.

iv. x. 75, 70, yong] young F2  
madnesse,] madnesse F2

73 thether] thither F2

76



*Act III. Scene XI.*

BRAYNE-WORME, MATTHEW, BOBADIL,  
STEPHEN, DOWNE-RIGHT.

WELL, of all my disguises, yet, now am I most like my selfe : being in this Serjeants gowne. A man of my present profession, neuer counterfeits, till hee layes hold vpon a debter, and sayes, he rests him, for then hee brings  
5 him to all manner of vnrest. A kinde of little kings wee are, bearing the diminutiue of a mace, made like a yong artichocke, that alwayes carries pepper and salt, in it selfe. Well, I know not what danger I vnder-goe, by this exploit, pray heauen, I come well of.

10 MAT. See, I thinke, yonder is the varlet, by his gowne.  
BOB. Let's goe, in quest of him.

MAT. 'Saue you, friend, are not you here, by appointment of Iustice CLEMENTS man?

BRAY. Yes, an't please you, sir : he told me two gentle-  
15 men had will'd him to procure a warrant from his master (which I haue about me) to be seru'd on one DOWNE-RIGHT.

MAT. It is honestly done of you both; and sec, where the partie comes, you must arrest : serue it vpon him, quickly,  
20 afore hee bee aware——

BOB. Beare backe, master MATTHEW.

BRAY. Master DOWNE-RIGHT, I arrest you, i' the queenes name, and must carry you afore a Iustice, by vertue of this warrant.

25 STEP. Mee, friend? I am no DOWNE-RIGHT, I. I-am master STEPHEN, you doe not well, to arrest me, I tell you, truely : I am in nobodies bonds, nor bookes, I, <I> would you should know it. A plague on you heartily, for making mee thus afraid afore my time.

30 BRAY. Why, now are you deceiued, gentlemen?

iv xi.] Scene ix.—A Street. G 6 yong| young F2 12 friend,]  
friend; F2 13 man? F2. man. F1



B O B. He weares such a cloke, and that deceiued vs :  
But see, here a comes, indeed ! this is he, officer.

D O W N. Why, how now, signior gull ! are you turn'd  
fitcher of late ? come, deliuer my cloke.

S T E P. Your cloke, sir ? I bought it, euen now, in open 35  
market.

B R A Y. Master D O W N E - R I G H T, I haue a warrant  
I must serue vpon you, procur'd by these two gentlemen.

D O W N. These gentlemen ? these rascals ?

B R A Y. Keepe the peace, I charge you, in her Maiesties 40  
name.

D O W N. I obey thee What must I doe, officer ?

B R A Y. Goe before master Iustice C L E M E N T, to  
answere what they can object against you, sir. I will vse  
you kindly, sir. 45

M A T T. Come, let's before, and make the Iustice,  
Captaine—

B O B. The varlet's a tall man ! afore heauen !

D O W N. Gull, you'll gi'me my cloke ?

S T E P. Sir, I bought it, and Ile keepe it. 50

D O W N. You will.

S T E P. I, that I will.

D O W N. Officer, there's thy fee, arrest him.

B R A Y. Master S T E P H E N, I must arrest you.

S T E P. Arrest mee, I scorne it. There, take your cloke, 55  
I'le none on't.

D O W N. Nay, that shall not serue your turne, now, sir.  
Officer, I'le goe with thee, to the Iustices : bring him along.

S T E P. Why, is not here your cloke ? what would you  
haue ? 60

D O W N. I'le ha' you answere it, sir.

B R A Y. Sir, Ile take your word ; and this gentlemans,  
too : for his apparance.

D O W N. I'le ha' no words taken. Bring him along.

iv. xi 32 a comes] acomes, F2 40 you,] you F2 43 before  
F2 . before, F1 44 you, sir.] you sir, some copies of F2 50 Ile]  
Ile some copies of F2 51-2 One line in Ff 55 mee,] mee ! F2  
63 apparance] appearance F2



- 65 B R A Y. Sir, I may choose, to doe that: I may take bayle.  
D O W N. 'Tis true, you may take baile, and choose; at  
another time: but you shall not, now, varlet. Bring him  
along, or I'll swinge you.  
B R A Y. Sir, I pittie the gentlemans case. Here's your  
70 money againe.  
D O W N. 'Sdeynes, tell not me of my money, bring him  
away, I say.  
B R A Y. I warrant you he will goe with you of himselfe,  
sir.  
75 D O W N. Yet more adoe?  
B R A Y. I haue made a faire mash on't.  
S T E P. Must I goe?  
B R A Y. I know no remedie, master S T E P H E N.  
D O W N. Come along, afore mee, here. I doe not loue  
80 your hanging looke behind.  
S T E P. Why, sir. I hope you cannot hang mee for it.  
Can hee, fellow?  
B R A Y. I thinke not, sir. It is but a whipping matter,  
sure!  
85 S T E P. Why, then, let him doe his worst, I am resolute.

*Act v. Scene I.*

C L E M E N T, K N O' W E L, K I T E L Y, D A M E  
K I T E L Y, T I B, C A S H, C O B, S E R V A N T S.

N Ay, but stay, stay, giue me leaue: my chaire, sirrha.  
You, master K N O' W E L L, say you went thither to  
meet your sonne.

K N O. I, sir.

5 •C L E M. But, who directed you, thither?

K N O. That did mine owne man, sir.

C L E M. Where is he?

K N O. Nay, I know not, now; I left him with your  
clarke: and appointed him, to stay here for me.

v. i.] Colman Street.—A Hall in Justice Clement's House. C  
And Ff: in Ff beginning a new line, as if verse



CLEM. My clarke? about what time, was this? 10

KNO. Mary, betweene one and two, as I take it.

CLEM. And, what time came my man with the false message to you, master KITELY?

KITE. After two, sir.

CLEM. Very good: but, mistris KITELY, how that 15 you were at COBS? ha?

DAME. An' please you, sir, Ile tell you: my brother, WEL-BRED, told me, that COBS house, was a suspected place——

CLEM. So it appeares, me thinkes: but, on. 20

DAME. And that my husband vs'd thither, daily.

CLEM. No matter, so he vs'd himselfe well, mistris.

DAME. True sir, but you know, what growes, by such hants, often-times.

CLEM. I see, ranke fruits of a iealous braine, mistris 25 KITELY: but, did you find your husband there, in that case, as you suspected?

KITE. I found her there, sir.

CLEM. Did you so? that alters the case. Who gave you knowledge, of your wiues being there? 30

KITE. Marie, that did my brother WEL-BRED.

CLEM. How? WEL-BRED first tell her? then tell you, after? where is WEL-BRED?

KITE. Gone with my sister, sir, I know not whither.

CLEM. Why, this is a meere trick, a deuce; you are 35 gull'd in this most grosly, all! alas, poore wench, wert thou beaten for this?

TIB. Yes, most pitifully, and't please you.

COB. And worthily, I hope: if it shall proue so.

CLEM. I, that's like, and a piece of a sentence. How 40 now, sir? what's the matter?

SER. Sir, there's a gentleman, i'the court without, desires to speake with your worship.

CLEM. A gentleman? what's he?

SER. A souldier, sir, he saies. 45



CLEM. A souldier? take downe my armor, my sword,  
quickly: a souldier speake with me! why, when knaues?  
*He armes himselfe* come on, come on, hold my cap there, so; giue me my gor-  
get, my sword: stand by, I will end your matters, anon—  
50 Let the souldier enter, now, sir, what ha' you to say to me?

*Act v. Scene II.*

&lt;To them&gt;

BOBADILL, MATTHEW.

BY your worships fauour—  
CLEM. Nay, keepe out, sir, I know not your pretence,  
you send me word, sir, you are a souldier. why, sir, you  
shall bee answer'd, here, here be them haue beene amongst  
5 souldiers. Sir, your pleasure.

BOB. Faith, sir, so it is, this gentleman, and my selfe,  
haue beene most vnciuilly wrong'd, and beaten, by one  
DOWNERIGHT, a course fellow, about the towne, here,  
and for mine owne part, I protest, being a man, in no sort,  
10 giuen to this filthie humour of quarrelling, he hath assaulted  
mee in the way of my peace; dispoil'd mee of mine honor;  
dis-arm'd mee of my weapons; and rudely, laid me along,  
in the open streets: when, I not so much as once offer'd to  
resist him.

15 CLEM. O, gods precious! is this the souldier? here, take  
my armour of quickly, 'twill make him swoone, I feare;  
hee is not fit to looke on't, that will put vp a blow.

MATT. An't please your worship, he was bound to the  
peace.

20 CLEM. Why, and he were, sir, his hands were not bound,  
were they?

SER. There's one of the varlets of the citie, sir, ha's  
brought two gentlemen, here, one, vpon your worships  
warrant.

v 1 46 armor] armuor F2 47 with] wirh F2 48 s. d. *himselfe* ]  
*himselfe*, F2 50 enter,] enter; F2 v. ii. (margin) *To them* F2  
6 selfe,] selfe F2 9 man,] man F2 sort,] sort F2 11 honor]  
honour F2 16 of] off F2 23 here,] here; F2



CLEM. My warrant? 25  
 SER. Yes, sir. The officer say's, procur'd by these two.  
 CLEM. Bid him, come in. Set by this picture. What,  
 M<sup>r</sup>. DOWNER-RIGHT! are you brought at M<sup>r</sup>. FRESH-  
 WATERS suite, here!

Act v. Scene III.

DOWNER-RIGHT, STEPHEN, BRAYNE-WORME. *<To them.>*

I Faith, sir. And here's another brought at my suite.

CLEM. What are you, sir?

STEP. A gentleman, sir. ô, vncle!

CLEM. Vncle? who? master KN O'WELL?

KN O. I, sir! this is a wise kinsman of mine. 5

STEP. God's my wnesse, vncle, I am wrong'd here  
 monstrously, hee charges me with stealing of his cloke, and  
 would I might neuer stirre, if I did not find it in the street,  
 by chance.

D O W. O, did you find it, now? you said, you bought it, 10  
 erewhile.

STEP. And, you said, I stole it; nay, now my vncle is  
 here, I'll doe well enough, with you.

CLEM. Well, let this breath a while; you, that haue  
 cause to complaine, there, stand forth: had you my 15  
 warrant for this gentlemans apprehension?

B O B. I, an't please your worship.

CLEM. Nay, doe not speake in passion so: where had  
 you it?

B O B. Of your clarke, sir. 20

CLEM. That's well! an' my clarke can make warrant<sup>^</sup>,  
 and my hand not at'hem! Where is the warrant? Officer,  
 haue you it?

B R A Y. No, sir, your worship's man, master F O R M A L,

v. 11. 25 warrant!] warrant? F2 v 111. (margin) To them. F2 3  
 sir.] sir? Ff 6 here] here, F2 10 find it,] find it F2 said,] said  
 F2 14 a while] awhile F2 17 I,] I F2 20 sir. F2: sir? FI



25 bid mee doe it, for these gentlemen, and he would be my discharge.

CLEM. Why, master DOWNE-RIGHT, are you such a nouice, to bee seru'd, and neuer see the warrant ?

DOW. Sir. He did not serue it on me.

30 CLEM. No ? how then ?

DOW. Mary, sir, hee came to mee, and said, hee must serue it, and hee would vse me kindly, and so——

CLEM. O, gods pittie, was it so, sir ? he must serue it ?  
34 giue me my long-sword there, and helpe me of ; so. Come on, sir varlet, I must cut off your legs, sirrha : nay, stand vp, Ile vse you kindly ; I must cut off your legs, I say.

*He  
flourishes  
ouer him  
with his  
long-  
sword.*

BRAY. O, good sir, I beseech you ; nay, good master Iustice.

CLEM. I must doe it ; there is no remedie. I must cut  
40 off your legs, sirrha, I must cut off your eares, you rascall, I must doe it ; I must cut off your nose, I must cut off your head.

BRAY. O, good your worship.

CLEM. Well, rise, how doest thou doe, now ? doest thou  
45 feele thy selfe well ? hast thou no harme ?

BRAY. No, I thanke your good worship, sir.

CLEM. Why, so ! I said, I must cut off thy legs, and I must cut off thy armes, and I must cut off thy head ; but, I did not doe it : so, you said, you must serue this gentleman,  
50 with my warrant, but, you did not serue him. You knaue, you slaue, you rogue, doe you say you must ? sirrha, away with him, to the iayle, Ile teach you a trick, for your must, sir.

BRAY. Good sir, I beseech you, be good to me.

55 • CLEM. Tell him he shall to the iayle, away with him, I say.

BRAY. Nay, sir, if you will commit mee, it shall bee for committing more then this : I will not loose, by my trauaile, any graine of my fame certaine.

v. iii. 34 long-sword] long sword F<sub>2</sub> of] off F<sub>2</sub> 35 st. dir not in some copies of F<sub>2</sub> long-sword] long sword F<sub>2</sub> 37 beseech] heseech F<sub>1</sub> 53 must,] musi F<sub>2</sub> 57 then] than F<sub>2</sub> loose] lose F<sub>2</sub> 58 fame] fame, F<sub>3</sub>



CLEM. How is this!

KNO. My man, BRAYNE-WORME! 60

STEP. O yes, vncl. BRAYNE-WORME ha's beene with my cossen EDWARD, and I, all this day.

CLEM. I told you all, there was some deuice!

BRAY. Nay, excellent Iustice, since I haue laid my selfe thus open to you; now, stand strong for mee: both with 65 your sword, and your ballance.

CLEM. Bodie o' me, a merry knaue! Giue me a bowle of sack: If hee belong to you, master KNOWELL, I bespeake your patience.

BRAY. That is it, I haue most need of. Sir, if you'll 70 pardon me, only; I'll glorie in all the rest, of my exploits.

KNO. Sir, you know, I loue not to haue my fauours come hard, from me. You haue your pardon: though I suspect you shrewdly for being of counsell with my sonne, against me. 75

BRAY. Yes, faith, I haue, sir; though you retain'd me doubly this morning, for your selfe: first, as BRAYNE-WORME; after, as FITZ-SWORD. I was your reform'd souldier, sir. 'Twas I sent you to COBS, vpon the errand, without end. 80

KNO. Is it possible! or that thou should'st disguise thy language so, as I should not know thee?

BRAY. O, sir, this ha's beene the day of my *metamorphosis*! It is not that shape alone, that I haue runne through, to day. I brought this gentleman, master 85 KITLEY, a message too, in the forme of master Iustices man, here, to draw him out o' the way, as well as your worship: while master WELLBRED might make a conueiance of mistris BRIDGET, to my yong master. -

KITE. How! my sister stolne away? 90

KNO. My sonne is not married, I hope!

BRAY. Faith, sir, they are both as sure as loue, a priest, and three thousand pound (which is her portion) can make

v. iii 59-60 *One line in F2* 62 cossen] coussen F2 74 counsell] counsell F2 79 errand,] errand F2 83-4 metamorphosis! *Fi originally; corrected to italic, and so in F2*



'hem : and by this time are readie to bespeake their wedding  
 95 supper at the wind-mill, except some friend, here, preuent  
 'hem, and inuite 'hem home.

C L E M. Marie, that will I (I thanke thee, for putting me  
 in mind on't.) Sirrah, goe you, and fetch 'hem hither, vpon  
 my warrant. Neithers friends haue cause to be sorrie, if  
 100 I know the yong couple, aright. Here, I drinke to thee, for  
 thy good newes. But, I pray thee, what hast thou done  
 with my man F O R M A L L ?

B R A Y. Faith, sir, after some ceremonie past, as making  
 him drunke, first with storie, and then with wine (but all in  
 105 kindnesse) and stripping him to his shirt : I left him in that  
 coole vaine, departed, sold your worships warrant to these  
 two, pawn'd his liuerie for that varlets gowne, to serue it in ;  
 and thus haue brought my selfe, by my actiuitie, to your  
 worships consideration.

110 C L E M. And I will consider thee, in another cup of sack.  
 Here's to thee, which hauing drunke of, this is my sentence.  
 Pledge me. Thou hast done, or assisted to nothing, in my  
 iudgement, but deserues to bee pardon'd for the wit o' the  
 offence. If thy master, or anie man, here, be angrie with  
 115 thee, I shall suspect his ingine, while I know him for't.  
 How now ? what noise is that !

S E R. Sir, it is R O G E R is come home.

C L E M. Bring him in, bring him in. What ! drunke in  
 armes, against me ? Your reason, your reason for this.

### *Act V. Scene IIII*

*To them*

F O R M A L L.

I Beseech your worship to pardon me ; I happen'd into ill  
 I companie by chance, that cast me into a sleepe, and stript  
 me of all my clothes——

C L E M. Well, tell him, I am Iustice C L E M E N T, and

v. iii. 97 thee,] thee *F2* 102 FORMALL ?] FORMALL. *Ff* 116  
 now ? now ! *F2* that !] that ? *F2*



doe pardon him : but, what is this to your armour ! what  
may that signifie ?

FORM. And't please you, sir, it hung vp i' the roome,  
where I was stript ; and I borrow'd it of one o' the drawers,  
to come home in, because I was loth, to doe penance through  
the street, i' my shirt. 10

CLEM. Well, stand by a while. Who be these ? O, the  
yong companie, welcome, welcome. Gi' you ioy. Nay,  
mistris BRIDGET, blush not ; you are not so fresh a  
bride, but the newes of it is come hither afore you. Master  
Bridegroom, I ha' made your peace, giue mee your hand : 15  
so will I for all the rest, ere you forsake my rooffe.

Act v. Scene v.

ED. KNO'WEL, WEL-BRED, BRIDGET. To them

WE are the more bound to your humanitie, sir.

CLEM. Only these two, haue so little of man in  
'hem, they are no part of my care.

WELL. Yes, sir, let mee pray you for this gentleman,  
hee belongs, to my sister, the bride. 5

CLEM. In what place, sir ?

WELL. Of her delight, sir, below the staires, and in  
publike : her poet, sir.

CLEM. A poet ? I will challenge him my selfe, presently,  
at extempore. 10

*Mount vp thy Phlegon muse, and testifie,  
How SATVRNE, sitting in an ebon cloud,  
Disrob'd his podex white as iuorie,  
And, through the welkin, thundred all aloud.*

WELL. Hee is not for extempore, sir. Hee is all for the 15  
pocket-muse, please you command a sight of it.

CLEM. Yes, yes, search him for a tast of his veine.

v. iv. 7 And't] An't F2      12 yong] young F2      v. v. (margin)  
them.] Them F2      10, 15 extempore] ex tempore F2      14 And.] And F2



WEL. You must not denie the Queenes Iustice, Sir,  
vnder a writ o' rebellion.

20 CLEM. What! all this verse? Bodie o' me, he carries  
a whole realme, a common-wealth of paper, in's hose! let's  
see some of his subiects!

*Vnto the boundlesse Ocean of thy face,*

*Runnes this poore riuer charg'd with streames of eyes.*

25 How? this is stolne!

E. KN. A *Parodie*! a *parodie*! with a kind of miraculous  
gift, to make it absurder then it was.

CLEM. Is all the rest, of this batch? Bring me a torch;  
lay it together, and giue fire. Clense the airc. Here was  
30 enough to haue infected, the whole citie, if it had not beene  
taken in time! See, see, how our *Poets* glorie shines!  
brighter, and brighter! still it increases! ô, now, it's at  
the highest: and, now, it declines as fast. You may see.  
*Sic transit gloria mundi.*

35 KNO. There's an *embleme* for you, sonne, and your  
studies!

CLEM. Nay, no speech, or act of mine be drawne against  
such, as professe it worthily. They are not borne euerie  
yeere, as an Alderman. There goes more to the making of  
40 a good *Poet*, then a Sheriffe, M<sup>r</sup>. KITELY. You looke  
vpon me! though, I liue i' the citie here, amongst you, I  
will doe more reuerence, to him, when I meet him, then I  
will to the Major, out of his yeere. But, these paper-pedlers!  
these inke-dablers! They cannot expect reprehension, or  
45 reproch. They haue it with the fact.

E. KN. Sir, you haue sau'd me the labour of a defence.

CLEM. It shall be discourse for supper; betweene your  
father and me, if he dare vnder-take me. But, to dispatch  
away these, you signe o'the Souldier, and picture o' the  
50 *Poet* (but, both so false, I will not ha' you hang'd out at my  
dore till midnight) while we are at supper, you two shall

v v 21 realme,] realme F<sub>2</sub> 27, 40, 42 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 33 and,]  
& F<sub>2</sub> 35 There's] There's, F<sub>2</sub> 45 reproch] reproach F<sub>2</sub> 49  
you] you, F<sub>2</sub> (cf. iv. ii. 99) Souldier] *Souldier* F<sub>2</sub>



penitently fast it out in my court, without ; and, if you will, you may pray there, that we may be so merrie within, as to forgiue, or forget you, when we come out. Here's a third, because, we tender your safetie, shall watch you, he is 55 prouided for the purpose. Looke to your charge, sir.

STEP. And what shall I doe ?

CLEM. O ! I had lost a sheepe, an he had not bleated ! Why, sir, you shall giue Mr. DOWNERIGHT his cloke : and I will intreat him to take it. A trencher, and a napkin, 60 you shall haue, i' the buttrie, and keepe COB, and his wife companie, here ; whom, I will intreat first to bee reconcil'd : and you to endeouour with your wit, to keepe 'hem so.

STEP. Ile doe my best.

COB. Why, now I see thou art honest, TIB, I receiue 65 thee as my deare, and mortall wife, againe.

TIB. And, I you, as my louing, and obedient husband.

CLEM. Good complement ! It will bee their bridale night too. They are married anew. Come, I coniure the rest, to put of all discontent. You, Mr. DOWNERIGHT, 70 your anger ; you, master KNOWELL, your cares ; master KITELY, and his wife, their iealousie.

For, I must tell you both, while that is fed, Hornes i' the mind are worse then o' the head.

KITE. Sir, thus they goe from me, kisse me, sweet heart. 75

*See, what a droue of hornes flye, in the ayre,  
Wing'd with my clensed, and my credulous breath !  
Watch 'hem, suspicious eyes, watch, where they fall.  
See, see ! on heads, that thinke th'haue none at all !  
O, what a plenteous world of this, will come ! 80  
When ayre raynes hornes, all may be sure of some.*

I ha' learned so much verse out of a iealous mans part, in a play.

CLEM. 'Tis well, 'tis well ! This night wee'll dedicate to friendship, loue, and laughter. Master bride-groome, 85 take your bride, and leade ; euery one, a fellow. Here is my

v v. 74 then] than F2      75 from me,] from me ; F2      sweet  
heart] sweet-heart F2      81 some Q, F2 : fame F1      86 leade ;]  
leade F2



mistris. BRAYNE-WORME! to whom all my addresses  
of courtship shall haue their reference. Whose aduentures,  
this day, when our grand-children shall heare to be made a  
90 fable, I doubt not, but it shall find both spectators, and  
applause.

---

THE END.

---



This Comoedie was first  
 Acted, in the yeere  
 1598.

*By the then* L. CHAMBERLAYNE  
*his Seruants.*

The principall Comœdians were.

WILL. SHAKESPEARE.	}	RIC. BYRBADGE.
AVG. PHILIPS.		IOH. HEMINGS.
HEN. CONDEL.		THO. POPE.
WILL. SLYE.		CHR. BEESTON.
WILL. KEMPE.		IOH. DVKE.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS.*

*F2 prints this notice on the back of the title-page after 'The Scene London' in slightly different form first, 'The principall Comedians were Will Shakespeare . . . John Duke'; then 'First Acted in the yeare 1598, with allowance of the Master of REVELLS', the reference to the 'Lord Chamberlayne' is omitted*







## THE TEXT.

THE play of *Every Man out of his Humour* was entered in the Stationers' Register by its first publisher, William Holme, on April 8, 1600. The entry is as follows :

8 Aprilis.

William holme    Enterd for his copie vnder the handes of  
master Harsnet. and master wyndet warden.  
A Comicall Satyre of euey man out of his  
humour. vjd.

Arber, *Transcript*, III. 159.

The tangled history of this publication has been brilliantly elucidated by Dr. W. W. Greg in an article in *The Library* for December 1920, vol. i, pp. 153-160, and in two supplementary notes in vol. ii, p. 49, and vol. iii, p. 57. He was the first to distinguish between the first and second Quartos.

Holme issued the first Quarto in 1600. The collation, A to R in fours, is in detail—Blank leaf A. Title-page A ij. The names of the actors A ij verso. The Characters A ij to A iv verso. The play B to R iv, with the original conclusion R iij to R iv. 'Strictly speaking', says Dr. Greg, 'only signatures H, P, Q, R are proper quarto, the rest being of that puzzling size (it might be called "bastard quarto") which is commonly folded in fours, and agrees in size and shape with a normal quarto, but according to wire and water marks should be an octavo.'

The printer was probably Adam Islip. Mr. F. S. Ferguson (quoted by Dr. Greg) has pointed out that the head-piece before the Characters and the Induction on signatures A 3 and B 1 was used by Islip near the date of the present play, for instance in Holland's *Pliny* in 1601. The device on the title-page, which ought to settle the question, unfortunately is not identified. In the centre is a vase of flowers. Flanking it on either side like heraldic supporters are two satyr-like figures, apparently male and female, with pairs of butterfly wings on each shoulder, amply sprouting tails,



and feet that curl into huge tendrils. The whole breathes a hazy suggestion of the *Metamorphoses*.

Three copies are known: one in the British Museum (C. 34. i. 29), wanting the preliminary blank leaf and the two leaves of the original ending; a fine copy wanting only the preliminary leaf in the library of Mr. Henry E. Huntington; and a complete copy with the head-lines cropt in the Public Library of Boston in America. A scholarly reprint by Mr. F. P. Wilson and Dr. Greg was issued by the Malone Society in 1920.

This was the first Humour play which Jonson committed to the press. His new venture in drama was appreciated, for the edition sold out within the year and Holme had the play reprinted at once. The title-page of this second Quarto, verbally reproducing that of its predecessor, has been a snare to bibliographers. When the British Museum acquired its copy of the first Quarto in 1908, the difference between the two texts was not recognized.

The collation of the second Quarto, A to Q in fours, is in detail—Title-page A. The Characters A ij to A iij. The play A iij verso to Q iij ('FINIS'). The original conclusion is on Q iij verso to Q iv verso. The reprint is on the whole very exact, but it shows traces of being set up in a hurry. We may assume that Holme's stock of the first edition was running low or that he had actually sold out. Two compositors, who used slightly different founts of type, worked simultaneously on the reprint, the first setting up sheets A to H, the second sheets I to Q. By dint of various economies, minutely tabulated by Dr. Greg, they saved a sheet. The first compositor set up the title-page on signature A, and thus saved two pages at the start by dropping the preliminary blank leaf of the first edition. He saved another page over the Characters, compressing them into three pages. Up to the end of sheet E he printed thirty-seven lines to a page where the original had thirty-six lines. By saving one line in thirty-six successive pages he had then caught up the original and was two leaves to the good. So he 'followed



copy' with thirty-six lines to the end of sheet H. As the last page of the original was blank, the second compositor had only to save three pages. He did it by small economies where the original was lavish over printing headings and stage directions, and by tucking in lines which had been turned over. By the end of M 3 verso he had saved his first page; he saved his second by the end of O 1, and his third by the end of Q 2. The rest of the original he re-produced page for page.

The printer was Peter Short, whose device is on the title-page. It is a book surrounded by beams of light; above it two outspread wings rest on a background of cloud, and at the top is a figure pointing downwards to the book. The motto, taken from Psalm lvi. 11, 'Et vsque ad nubes veritas tua', is on the frame, and below are the initials 'P.S.'<sup>1</sup>

Of this edition two copies have been used: one in the Bodleian (Malone 229), and one in the Dyce collection at South Kensington. An exact reprint by Professor W. Bang and Dr. W. W. Greg was issued in Professor Bang's *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas*, Band xvi, in 1907.

The third Quarto, also dated 1600, was printed for Nicholas Ling. It follows the second Quarto page for page and line for line, except that by a printer's error sheet N is wrongly imposed, so that two pages of the text of Act v, scene 1 have changed places.<sup>2</sup> This Quarto is merely a bad reprint of its predecessor. It copies such obvious errors of the earlier text as 'Pastidius' (Characters, 35), 'makes' for 'wakes' (ibid., 54), 'sleeps' for 'steeps' (Induction, 167), 'after' for 'alter' (ibid., 277), 'gard' for 'regard' (II. i. 49), 'world' for 'word' (III. iv. 86), and adds numerous mistakes of its own—'Frenchfield' for 'Frenche-fied' (I. iii. 195), 'ratifide' for 'rarefi'd' (II. iii. 84), 'rogue' for 'tongue' (II. iii. 219). It ventures occasionally on a correction, as in deleting the repeated 'one and twentieth'

<sup>1</sup> No. 278 in McKerrow's *Printers' and Publishers' Devices*.

<sup>2</sup> See the critical apparatus at v. 1. 21.



of i. iii. 50, 51, substituting 'inward' for 'innated' in ii. iii. 55, and 'Shotmakers' for 'Shotmarkes' in v. iv. 1. The last is ingenious; it assumes that the letter *r* was misplaced, but here the correct reading is 'Shot-sharkes'. None of the special errors here noted are found in the first Quarto.

Ling's device is on the title-page, a ling entwined in the tendrils of a honeysuckle, the whole set in a fancy border. On either side below are the initials 'N. L.'<sup>1</sup>

A reprint by Professor Bang and Dr. Greg was issued in the *Materialien*, Band xvii.

The play next appeared in the Folio of 1616. From this edition in its corrected form the present text is taken. The editor's own copy has been collated with the two copies in the British Museum and the two copies in Bodley. The title-page appears in two forms, one in an ornamental border and one in plain type. The imprint varies in both forms. The fuller imprint is

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY  
for Iohn Smithwicke

M. DC. XVI.

But Smethwick's name is not in all copies. Thus, the plain title-page of the Grenville copy in the British Museum and the title-page with ornamental border of the Douce copy in Bodley have simply 'London, Printed by William Stansby, M. DC. XVI.'

The curt imprint of the third Quarto, 'London, Printed for Nicholas Ling, 1600', resembles that of the famous (or infamous) group of Shakespeare Quartos printed in 1619. A normal imprint at this date specifies the printer and the

<sup>1</sup> McKerrow's *Devices*, 301.



publisher, and the publisher's address; or it gives at least the publisher and his address, as in Holme's first Quarto—'Printed for *William Holme*, and are to be sold at his Shop at Sarjeants Inne gate in Fleetstreet. 1600.' Was Ling's Quarto authorized, and was it correctly dated? There is no record in the Stationers' Register of any transfer of copy-right by Holme to Ling, and Ling continued in business till 1607, Holme till 1615. The date '1600' on the imprint makes one a little uneasy. It is not impossible in view of the literary importance of the play, but, if Holme had sold out two issues, why did he boggle at a third? There is a gap in the evidence here—*hiatus valde deflendus*. The full imprint of the play in the 1616 Folio states that it was 'Printed by William Stansby for Iohn Smithwicke'. On November 19 1607 Ling's copyrights were transferred to Smethwick. Sixteen books are specified; they include works by Drayton, Lodge, Greene, Shakespeare, Nashe and Munday, but not *Every Man out of his Humour*. In 1638 Smethwick assigned the copyright of the play to Richard Bishop, who published it in the 1640 Folio. The entry runs:

28<sup>o</sup> Aprilis 1638

Master Bishop. Assigned ouer vnto him by vertue of a note vnder the hand and seale of master Smethw*<i>*cke and subscribed by Master Bourne warden all the Right and interest in a play called *Euery man out of his humour* by Ben: Johnson. vjd

Arber, *Transcript*, iv. 417.

The text of the Folio of 1616 was set up from a copy of the carefully printed first Quarto. A few passages are decisive on this point. The Folio follows the first Quarto in reading in iii. vi. 89, 90, 'hauing no better a cloke for it, then he has neither'; in iv. vii. 82, 'bee still a fashion behinde with the world'; in v. iv. 1, where Buffone, entering the tavern, calls for the drawers, 'where be these shot-sharkes?' and in v. viii. 49, 50, Fallace's contemptuous question to Macilente, 'Your intents? why, what may your intents bee, for gods



sake?' In these passages the second and third Quartos<sup>1</sup> read 'hauing no better a cloake than he has for it neither'; 'be still a Fashion behind the world'; 'where be these Shotmarkes?' (Quarto 2), 'where be these Shotmakers?' (Quarto 3); and 'what may your intent be for Gods sake?'

Textually this play is of great importance. It is the first play of which we have parallel texts, Quarto and Folio, and both were scrupulously edited. An exceptionally full collation has therefore been recorded in the critical apparatus, even at the risk of overloading it, to show how minutely Jonson worked over his 'copy' in his anxiety to produce it in a form which satisfied his fastidious judgement. In our reprint of the remaining plays included in the 1616 Folio the critical apparatus will be shortened. But we regard this Folio as authoritative for all the texts contained in it, and the proof that this is so is given once for all.

The most important changes are, of course, the actual alterations of the text. Perhaps the most interesting example occurs in the flattering address to Queen Elizabeth which rounded off the '*Catastrophe* or Conclusion, at the first Playing'. In the Quarto, printed during the last years of the Queen's life, Macilente, who came to the Court 'with a purpos'd resolution . . . to maligne at any thing that should front him', was suddenly, 'against expectation, and all steele of his Malice', struck dumb by the wonder of Elizabeth's presence.

In her *Graces*

All my malicious Powers haue lost their stings :  
*Enuie* is fled my Soule at sight of her.

Giving a new turn to the old convention of praying for the sovereign at the end of a play, Jonson makes him say on his knees,

I implore,  
 O *Heauen* : that Shee (whose *Figure* hath effected  
 This change in me) may neuer suffer Change  
 In her Admir'd and happie *Gouernment*.

<sup>1</sup> Minute variations of spelling are not noticed here and in later examples. The text is quoted from the earlier Quarto.



Public opinion forced Jonson to cancel this hyperbole, but he printed it characteristically as an appendix. To have retained it in this form in print thirteen years after her death would have been grotesque. In the Folio 'may neuer suffer Change' was softened to 'may suffer most late change', echoing the prayer of Horace to the god on earth, Augustus :

Serus in caelum redeas diuque  
Laetus intersis populo Quirini.<sup>1</sup>

These textual changes are improvements, with perhaps two exceptions. Puntarvolo says in the Quarto at II. iii. 243-4, 'I doe entend this yeere of *Iubile* to trauaile': the date of performance is 1598, and this periphrasis for '1600' suits the speaker. The text of 1616, instead of simply cutting out the words 'of *Iubile*', reads very perversely 'this yeere of *Iubile*, comming on'. One of Fallace's outbursts has the point completely blunted. Originally she said, 'By the Bible of heauen (beast that I am to say it) I haue not one friend i' the world besides my husband' (IV. i. 19-21). This is attenuated to 'By the faith of a Gentlewoman (beast that I am to say it).' The mincing oaths of 'a comfit-maker's wife', which was the City standard of good breeding, excited the contempt of Hotspur, who demanded 'good mouth-filling' terms from Lady Percy.<sup>2</sup> The revision makes Fallace insipid and silly: perhaps, for that very reason, she is true to type. But the context calls for something stronger.

In a few passages the verse is readjusted by filling in incomplete lines. Thus in Act II, scene iv, ll. 17, 18, the Quartos read :

*Del.* Dispatch, take heed your mistresse see you not.  
*Fido.* I warrant you sir. *Exit Fido.*

The Folio completes the second line with 'He steale by her softly'. In line 26 'What meanes this Signior *Deliro*?' becomes 'What meanes this, signior *DELIRO*? all this

<sup>1</sup> *Odes*, I. II. 45-6.

<sup>2</sup> *Henry IV*, Part I, III. I. 250-60.



censing?' A speech of Fallace in the Quartos (II. iv. 146-50) has an irregular line :

Alas, you'r simple, you : you cannot change,  
 Looke pale at pleasure, and then red with Wonder :  
 No, no, not you : I did but cast an amorous eye e'en  
                   now  
 Vpon a paire of Gloues that somewhat likt me, . . .

The Folio emends :

No, no, not you ! 'tis pittie o' your naturalls.  
 I did but cast an amorous eye, e'en now, . . .

And in II. v. 44 Macilente's 'Good Heauen giue me patience' becomes

Good heauen, giue me patience, patience, patience.

Corrections such as these might have been made by any careful reviser when they caught his eye on the printed page. But Jonson went much farther. He worked over the entire text with microscopic care, systematically revising spelling, type, and punctuation. He substituted capitals for italic in the names of the characters and of persons mentioned in the text ; he cut down the lavish use of italic for peculiar words, and the still more lavish use of initial capitals. He replaced the light stopping of the Quartos by an elaborate system of punctuation, designed to mark clearly the structure of the sentence. Noteworthy points in it, as compared with the laxer pointing of the Quartos, are the enclosing of adverbial phrases within commas, the use of the interjection (as in IV. i. 29-41) and the hyphen : Jonson affects such spellings as 'out-side', 'vn-did', 'fore-head', 'holy-day', 'in-auspicious'.

Two short passages are added for comparison : Act III, scene v, ll. 8-15, and Act IV, scene viii, ll. 16-25.

*Quarto I*

*Fast.* Why do you see sir?  
 they say I am Phantastical :  
 why true, I know it, & I pur-  
 sue my Humor stil in con-

*Folio I*

*FAST.* Why, doe you see,  
 sir ? they say I am phantas-  
 ticall : why, true, I know it,  
 and I pursue my humour



tempt of this *censorious* age: S'light & a man should do nothing but what a sort of stale iudgements about this town wil approue in him, he were a sweet Asse, Il'd beg him yfaith: I ne're knew any more find fault with a fashion, then they that knew not how to put themselues into't.

still, in contempt of this censorious age. S'light, and a man should doe nothing, but what a sort of stale iudgements about this towne will approue in him, he were a sweet asse: Il'd beg him yfaith. I ne're knew any more find fault with a fashion, then they that knew not how to put themselues in to't.

*Fasti.* O, the most *Celestiall*, and full of wonder and delight that can bee imagin'd Signior, beyond all thought and apprehension of Pleasure. A man liues there in that deuine *Rapture*, that he will thinke himselfe i' the third Heauen for the time, and loose all sence of Mortalitie whatsoever; when hee shall behold such glorious (and almost immortal) beauties, heare such Angelicall and Harmonious voices, discourse with such flowing and *Ambrosian* spirits, whose wits assuddaine as Lightning, and humorous as *Nectar*; Oh: it makes a man all *Quintessence* and *Flame*, . . .

FAST. O, the most celestiall, and full of wonder, and delight, that can be imagin'd, signior, beyond all thought, and apprehension of pleasure! A man liues there, in that diuine rapture, that hee will thinke himselfe i' the ninth heauen for the time, and lose all sense of mortalitie whatsoever; when he shall behold such glorious (and almost immortal) beauties, heare such angelicall and harmonious voyces, discourse with such flowing and *ambrosian* spirits, whose wits are as suddaine as lightning, and humorous as *nectar*; Oh: it makes a man al *quintessence*, and *flame*, . . .

In the critical apparatus, therefore, typographical peculiarities of the Quarto texts, such as the modern use of 'u' and 'v', 'i' and 'j', are recorded, and most of the variations in spelling and punctuation.

Finishing touches of correction were added while the Folio was passing through the press. They prove beyond question that Jonson supervised the printing. They include all possible forms of correction—punctuation, the use of special type, and changes in the text. The first eight



pages of the Induction (ll. 1-292)—a portion of the play which, in Jonson's eyes, would be specially important for its exposition of the doctrine of the humours—yield a number of these final corrections. Thus, in lines 62-4 the printer had set up :

Let envious Censors with their broadest eyes  
 Looke through and through me ; I pursue no fauour.  
 Onely vouchsafe me your attentions, . . .

Jonson corrected to 'censors, with their broadest eyes,' and quickened the actor's delivery of the following line by substituting commas after 'me' and 'fauour'. He adjusted the use of italics, using them for '*Metaphore*' and '*Counters*' (ibid., 103, 45). He bracketed the parenthetic clause '(vnderstand you?)' in iv. iii. 36. He altered 'howerly' to 'hourely' in the Induction, 34, because 'houre' is there a monosyllable.

One change on pages 82 and 83 of the Folio (containing lines 18-60, 61-102) corrected a printer's error in the setting up of the verse. Jonson liked his lines to be marshalled in even column, and he kept strictly to the verse-arrangement when a speech did not begin the line. Originally the printer set up line 76 :

Nay doe not turne, but answer.  
 M I T. Answer? what?

When this was adjusted to a single line, the page was a line short (with 43 lines) and did not balance the opposite page (with 44 lines). To secure uniformity, a stage direction between lines 50 and 51, '*Here hee makes adresse to the People*', was cancelled. Even so a second error remained at line 86 on page 83, and this had to wait for correction till the reprint of 1640.

Jonson also revised a few readings :

my *soule*  
 Was neuer ground into such oyly colours,  
 To flatter vice and daube iniquitic:  
 (Ind., 13-15)



was improved by reading 'my language'; 'you doe me some wrong to make *that* publike, which I imparted to you in priuate' (iv. vi. 36-8) was changed to 'make occasions publike'; and the curious verb 'to manfrede' was wisely dropped for 'to vndertake' in iv. viii. 110. In iv. ii. 90-2 the Folio read originally, as the Quartos did, 'and give him warning of my husbands intent': Jonson inserted in proof 'malitious' before 'intent', and the printer, in order to adjust the spacing, altered 'and tell' and 'heuens' to '& tel' and 'heuens'. A significant change was made at the end of the dedication to the Court: 'By your true Honorer, BEN. IONSON' became 'By your Honorer'.

The play was not printed again till the 1640 Folio appeared after Jonson's death. This edition follows the text of 1616, but does not reproduce all its press corrections.<sup>1</sup> This is the clearest evidence we have that there was more than one state of the 1616 proofs. Some minor variants from the earlier text are not without significance. Such a correction as the following must be Jonson's: in ii. iv. 33, 34 the 1616 Folio states that no living man

I doe not say, is not,  
But cannot possibly be worth her kindnesse!

The comma inserted after 'But,' in 1640 to put the emphasis on 'cannot' is clearly not a printer's correction. The 1616 Folio greatly modified the oaths of the Quartos;<sup>2</sup> the 1640 Folio carries this practice farther by changing 'S'heart' or 'S'blood' to a mild 'Why' or 'What' or 'Oh' (as in i. ii. 32, 186, 197) or by omitting them altogether (ibid., 133). The two chief alterations in the text are in the Induction, 114, where the line 'O, 'tis more then most ridiculous' is given its full ten syllables by reading 'O, it is more', and in ii. iv. 2, 3—

<sup>1</sup> Thus, p. 145 of the First Folio, including iv. iv. 110—v. 23, was uncorrected in the copy used.

<sup>2</sup> For example, in the Characters, 29, 'Dam him' for 'God dam me'.



Welcome (good MACILENTE) to my house,  
To sojourne euen for euer,

where the last line appears in the confused form 'To sojourne at my house for ever'.

For the text of 1640 two copies in the possession of the editor—one a large-paper copy with a few final press-corrections—have been collated with the copies in Bodley and the British Museum.



*The Comickall Satyre of*  
**EVERY MAN**  
**OUT OF HIS**  
**HUMOR.**

*AS IT WAS FIRST COMPOSED*  
by the AUTHOR B. I.

*Containing more than hath been Publickely Spoken or Acted.*

With the severall Character of every Person.

*Non aliena neco pressi pede | \* si propius fles*  
*Te sapient magis | \* & decus repetita placebunt.*

LONDON,



*The Comica!l Satyre of*  
**EVERY MAN**  
**OUT OF HIS**  
**HVMOR.**

AS IT WAS FIRST COMPOSED  
by the Author B. I.

*Containing more than hath been publickely Spo-  
ken or Acted.*

With the severall Character of euery Person.

*Non aliena me oppressi pede | \* si propius stes  
Te capient magis | \* & decies repetita placebunt.*

**LONDON,**  
Printed for *William Hakme*, and are to be sold at his shoppe  
at Saricants Inne gate in Fleetstreet.  
1600.



*The comickall Satyre of*  
**EVERY MAN**  
**OV T OF HIS**  
**HVMOR.**

As it was first composed by the Author B. I.

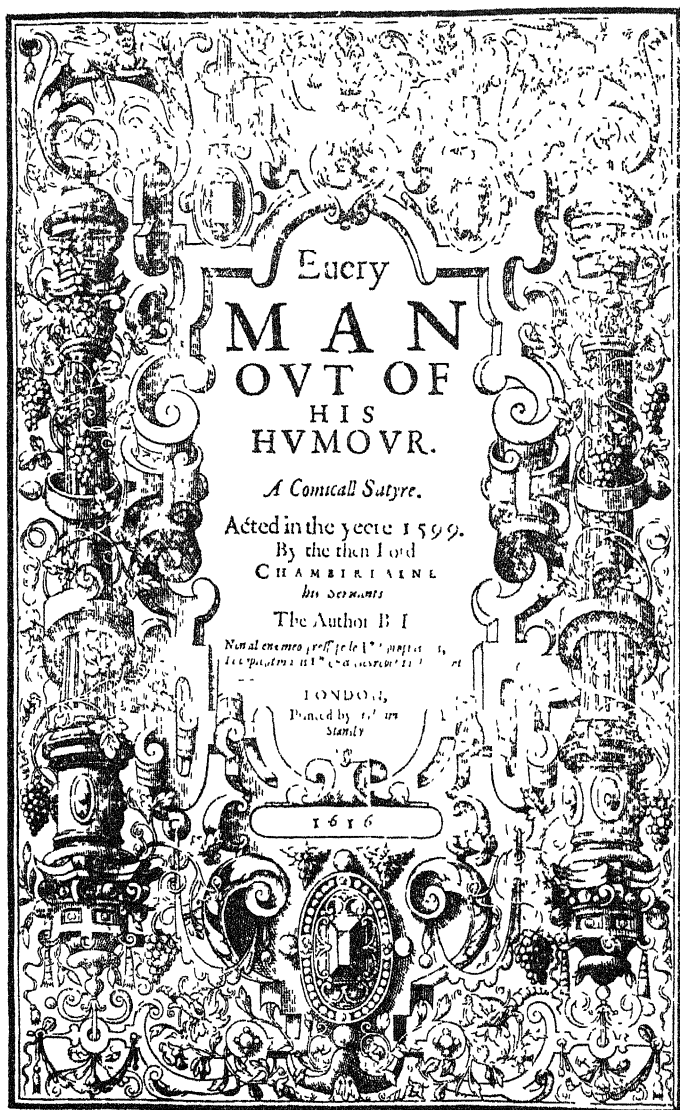
*Containing more then hath been publicly  
spoken or acted.*

With the feuerall Character of euery person.

*Non aliena meo pressi pede | \* si propius stes  
Te capient magis | & decies repetita placebunt.*

LONDON,  
Printed for Nicholas Ling.  
1600.





Title-page of the 1616 Folio, with ornamental border



Euery  
MAN OVT  
OF HIS  
HVMOR.

*A Comickall Satyre.*

Acted in the yeere 1599. By the then  
Lord Chamberlaine his  
Seruants.

The Author B. I.

*Non aliena meo pressa pede | \* si propius fies,  
Te capient magis | \* & decies repetita placebunt.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANBY  
for Iohn Smithwicke.

---

M. DC. XVI.



# EVERY MAN OUT OF HIS HUMOUR.

A Comickall Satyre.

First Acted in the yeere 1599. By the then  
Lord CHAMBERLAINE his Servants:  
With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. I.

H O R.

*Non aliena meo pressi pede | \* si propius fies,  
Te capient magis | \* & decies repetita placebunt.*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP

---

M. DC. XL.



TO THE NOBLEST  
NOVRGERIES OF HVMA-  
NITY, AND LIBERTY,  
IN THE KINGDOME:

The Innes of Court.

5

*I* Vnderstand you, Gentlemen, not your houses :  
and a worthy succession of you, to all time, as  
being borne the Iudges of these studies. When I  
wrote this Poeme, I had friendship with diuers in  
your societies ; who, as they were great Names in <sup>10</sup>  
learning, so they were no lesse Examples of luing.  
Of them, and then (that I say no more) it was not  
despis'd. Now that the Printer, by a doubled charge,  
thinkes it worthy a longer life, then commonly the  
ayre of such things doth promise ; I am carefull to <sup>15</sup>  
put it a seruant to their pleasures, who are the inheri-  
ters of the first fauour borne it. Yet, I command, it  
lye not in the way of your more noble, and vse-full  
studies to the publike. For so I shall suffer for it :  
But, when the gowne and cap is off, and the Lord of <sup>20</sup>  
liberty raignes ; then, to take it in your hands, per-  
haps may make some Bencher, tinted with humanity,  
reade : and not repent him.

By your Honorer,

BEN. IONSON. <sup>25</sup>

DEDICATION. *Not in Qq* 2 NOVRGERIES] NURSERIES F3 6  
you] You F2 9 Poeme] Poeme F2 14 then] than F2 24  
Honorer, corr F1. true Honorer Ff



# The Names of the Actors.

ASPER, The Presenter.

MACILENTE.		SAVIOLINA.					
5	PVNTARVOLO.	{	His Lady.	SORDIDO. His Hine.			
			Waiting-Gent.				
			Huntsman.	RVSTICI.			
			Seruingmen, two.				
			<Notary.>				
		{	Dog and Cat.				
CARLO BVFFONE.		FVNGOSO. { Taylor.		20			
			Haber-				
			dasher.				
			{ Shomaker.				
10	FASTID. BRISKE.	{	CINEDO,	SOGLIARDO.			
			his				
			Page.	SHIFT.			
	DELIRO.	{	FIDO,	{ A Groome.	25		
			their			Drawers.	
			Seruant.			Constable,	
15	FALLACE.	{	Musicians.	and	Officers.		
		ORENGE.					
GREX.				30			
CORDATVS.		MITIS.					

---

THE NAMES OF THE ACTORS In Qq. ASPER, The Presenter is followed by MACILENTE. SAVIOLINA. SORDIDO His Hind in one line; afterwards they differ only in the use of type 5 PVNTARVOLO, Large paper Fz, Qq · PVNTARVOLO Ff 6 Seruingmen, two corr. Fz : Seruingmen 2. Ff, Qq 7 Notary add G 10-11 CINEDO, his corr. Fz · Cinedo his Ff, Qq 13 FIDO, their Seruant corr. Fz : Fido their Seruant Ff, Qq 17 Hine corr Fz : Hinde Ff · Hind Qq, Fz 18 RVSTICI corr. Fz in Qq, Ff ' Rustici ' ranged with SHIFT at the head of A Groome &c.



ASPER his Character.

HE is of an ingenious and free spirit, eager and constant in reproofe, without feare controuling the worlds abuses. One, whom no seruile hope of gaine, or frosty apprehension of danger, can make to be a Parasite, either to time, place, or opinion.

MACILENTE.

A Man well parted, a sufficient Scholler, and trauail'd; who (wanting that place in the worlds account, which he thinks his merit capable of) falls into such an enuious apoplexie, with which his iudgement is so dazeled, and distasted, that he growes violently impatient of any opposite happinesse in another.

PVNTARVOLO.

A Vaine-glorious Knight, ouer-Englishing his trauels, and wholly consecrated to singularity; the very Iacobs staffe of complement: a Sir, that hath liu'd to see the reuolution of time in most of his apparell. Of presence good ynough, but so palpably affected to his owne praise, that (for want of flatterers) he commends himselfe, to the floutage of his owne family. He deales vpon returnes, and strange performances, resolving (in despiht of publike derision) to sticke to his owne particular fashion, phrase, and gesture.

CARLO BVFFONE.

A Publike, scurrilous, and prophane Iester; that (more swift then Circe) with absurd simile's will transforme any person into deformity. A good Feast-hound, or Banket-

1-116 Headed by W THE CHARACTER OF THE PERSONS. In Q3 the body of the type is roman 2 ingenious] ingenuous Q1 eager, Q3 3 fea. e, F2 3-4 abuses. One] abuses, One Qq 5 danger] Daunger Q1 either] ether F2 (corr. in Large paper) 10 enuious] envious Q1 11 dazeled,] dazeled Qq 12 violently] violently Q2 14 PVNTARVOLO] PUNTERVOLO F2 (corr. in L. p) 17 Sir,] Sir Qq reuolution] revolution Q1 18 ynough] enough F2, F3 19 palpably] palpable F2, F3 20 himselfe, Ff. himself Q1: himselfe Qq 2, 3 24 BVFFONE] BUFFONE F2 25 Publike, scurrilous] Publick, scurrulous Q1, with the comma ill-pointed: hence Publik-scurrulous Qq 2, 3 26 then] than Qq, F2 (so in 32, 51) absurd] obsurd Q3



beagell, that will sent you out a supper some three mile off, and sweare to his Patrons (Dam him) hee came in Oares, when  
 30 hee was but wafted ouer in a Sculler. A slaue, that hath an extraordinary gift in pleasing his palat, and will swell up more sacke at a sitting, then would make all the Guard a posset. His religion his rayling, and his discourse ribaldry. They stand highest in his respect, whom he studies most to reproch.

35

## FASTIDIVS BRISKE.

A Neat, spruce, affecting Courtier, one that weares clothes  
 well, and in fashion; practiseth by his glasse how to  
 salute; speakes good remnants (notwithstanding the Base-violl  
 and Tabacco :) sweares tersely, and with variety; cares not  
 40 what Ladies fauour he belyes, or great Mans familiarity:  
 a good property to perfume the boot of a coach. Hee will borrow another mans horse to praise, and backs him as his owne. Or, for a neede, on foot can post himselfe into credit with his marchant, only with the gingle of his spurre, and the  
 45 jerke of his wand.

## DELIRO.

A Good doting Citizen, who (it is thought) might be of the  
 common Councell for his wealth: a fellow sincerely be-  
 sotted on his owne wife, and so rapt with a conceit of her per-  
 50 fections, that he simply holds himselfe unworthy of her. And in that hood-winkt humour, liues more like a suter then a husband; standing in as true dread of her displeasure, as when he first made loue to her. He doth sacrifice two-pence in iuniper to her, euery morning, before shee rises, and wakes her,  
 55 with villanous-out-of-tune musick, which shee out of her contempt (though not out of her iudgement) is sure to dislike.

28 mile] miles F2, F3 29 Dam him Ff: God dam me Qq Oares, Ff: Oares, Q3: Oars Qq 1, 2 30 slaue,] slaue Qq 32, 51 then] than Qq, F2 35 FASTIDIVS] FASTIDIUS Q1 PASTIDIVS Qq 2, 3; FASTIDIOUS G(et passim) 39 variety,] varietie, Qq 40 fauour] fauor Qq 1, 2 42 another] an other Q3 horse om. Q3 43 Or, for a neede,] Or for a need (neede Q2) Qq 44 marchant F1: merchant F2: Merchant Qq, F3 45 jerke] Ierke Qq 1, 2: ierke Q3 48 common] Common Qq1, 2, F3 51 humour] humor Q3 suter] sulet F2 54 her, euery morning,] her euery morning Qq wakes] makes Qq 2, 3 her, Ff: her Qq 1, 3: hr Q2



FALLACE.

**D**Eliro's wife and Idoll: a proud mincing Peat, and as peruerse as he is officious. Shee dotes as perfectly vpon the Courtier, as her husband doth on her, and only wants the 60 face to be dishonest.

SAVIOLINA.

**A**Court Lady, whose weightiest praise is a light wit, admir'd by her selfe, and one more, her seruant Briske.

SORDIDO.

65

**A**Wretched hob-nail'd Chuffe, whose recreation, is reading of Almanacks; and felicity, foule weather. One that neuer pray'd, but for a leane dearth, and euer wept in a fat haruest.

FVNGOSO.

70

**T**He sonne of Sordido, and a student: one that has reuel'd in his time, and followes the fashion a farre off, like a spie. He makes it the whole bent of his endeouours, to wring sufficient meanes from his wretched father, to put him in the Courtiers cut: at which he earnestly aimes, but so unluckily, that he still 75 lights short a sute.

SOGLIARDO.

**A**N essentiall Clowne, brother to Sordido, yet so enamour'd of the name of a Gentleman, that he will haue it, though he buyes it. He comes vp euery Terme to learne to take Tabacco, 80 and see new Motions. He is in his kingdome when he can get himselfe into company, where he may be well laught at.

59 Idoll:] Idoll, Qq 59 officious. Shee] officious, shee Qq 64  
 selfe,] selfe Qq 72 off,] off Qq 73 endeouours,] endeouours Qq 79  
 haue it,] haue it Qq 80 Tabacco,] Tabacco Qq r, 2



## SHIFT.

85 **A** Thred-bare Sharke. One that neuer was Souldier, yet  
 Aliues vpon lendings. His profession is skeldring and  
 odling, his banke Poules, and his ware-house Pict-hatch.  
 Takes vp single testons vpon othes, till Doomes day. Falls  
 vnder executions of three shillings, and enters into fue-groat  
 bonds. He way-layes the reports of seruices, and connes them  
 90 without booke, damming himselfe he came new from them, when  
 all the while he was taking the dyet in a bawdy house, or lay  
 pawn'd in his chamber for rent, and victuals. He is of that  
 admirable and happy memory, that he will salute one for an old  
 acquaintance, that he neuer saw in his life before. He vsurps  
 95 vpon cheats, quarrels, and robberies, which he neuer did, only  
 to get him a name. His chiefe exercises are, taking the Whiffe,  
 squiring a Cockatrice, and making priuy searches for Im-  
 parters.

## CLOVE, and ORANGE.

100 **A**N inseparable case of Coxcombs, City-borne; The Gemini  
 or Twins of foppery: that like a paire of wooden foyles,  
 are fit for nothing, but to be practis'd vpon. Being well  
 flatter'd, they'le lend money, and repent when they ha' done.  
 Their glory is to inuite Plaiers, and make suppers. And in  
 105 company of better ranke (to auoide the suspect of insufficiency)  
 will inforce their ignorance, most desperately, to set vpon the  
 vnderstanding of any thing. Orange is the more humorous  
 of the two (whose small portion of iuyce being squeez'd out)  
 Cloue serues to sticke him, with commendations.

84 *Souldier*] *Soldior* Qq 1, 2 : *Souldior* Q3      86 *Poules*] *Pauls* F2,  
 F3      87 *oths*, Ff: *Oths* Qq 1, 2 : *Othes* Q3      90 *damming*] *damning*  
 Qq, F3      92 *pawn'd*] *paw'd* Q3      *rent*,] *rent* Qq      96 *are*,] *are*  
 Qq      99 *CLOVE*,] *CLOVE* Qq      *ORANGE*] *ORANGE* Qq (so in 107)  
 104 *inuite*] *feast* Qq      106 *inforce*] *enforce* Qq      *ignorance*,] *Ignorance*  
 Qq      108 *being*] (*being* Qq      *squeez'd out*] (*squeez'd out*) Q2 : *squeez'd*  
 out :) Q3      109 *him*,] *him* Qq



C O R D A T V S.

110

**T**He Authors friend ; A man inly acquainted with the scope  
and drift of his Plot : Of a discreet, and understanding  
iudgement ; and has the place of a Moderator.

M I T I S.

**I**S a person of no action, and therefore we haue reason to 115  
affoord him no Character.

<sup>112</sup> *discreet,*] *discreet* Qq    <sup>115</sup> *reason*] REASON Qq    <sup>116</sup> *affoord*] *affoord* Qq 1, 2 : *afforde* Q3 : *afford* F2    After 116 Qq add It was not neere his thoughts (*thought* Q3) that hath publisht (*published* Qq 2, 3) this, either to traduce the Authour ; or to make vulgar and cheape, any the peculiar and sufficient deserts of the Actors ; but rather (whereas many Censures flutter'd about it) to giue all leaue, and leisure, to iudge with Distinction



# EVERY MAN OVT OF HIS HVMOVR.

*After the second Sounding.*

G R E X.

C O R D A T V S, A S P E R, M I T I S.

N Ay, my deare A S P E R,  
M I T. Stay your mind :

A S P. Away.

- Who is so patient of this impious world,  
5 That he can checke his spirit, or reine his tongue ?  
Or who hath such a dead vnfeeling sense,  
That heauens horrid thunders cannot wake ?  
To see the earth, crackt with the weight of sinne,  
Hell gaping vnder vs, and o're our heads  
10 Blacke rau'nous ruine, with her saile-stretcht wings,  
Ready to sinke vs downe, and couer vs.  
Who can behold such prodigies as these,  
And haue his lips seal'd vp ? not I : my language  
Was neuer ground into such oyly colours,  
15 To flatter vice and daube iniquitie :  
But (with an armed, and resolued hand)  
He strip the ragged follies of the time,  
Naked, as at their birth : C o r. (Be not too bold.

Title] HVMOVR Ff: Humor Qq (so in the running title) Induction.  
After . . . Sounding] Inductio, sono secundo Qq: The Stage After . . .  
sounding G C O R D A T V S, A S P E R] Asper, Cordatus Qq 1 Nay,] Cord.  
Nay Qq 2 mind: Fr: mind, Qq: mind. F2 7 heauens] heanens  
Q3 10 ruine,] Ruine Qq 11 downe,] downe Qq 13 language  
corr Fr: soule Qq, Ff 17 time,] time Qq 18 Naked,] Naked Qq  
(Be] Be Qq bold,] bold, Qq r, 2



A S P. You trouble me) and with a whip of steele,  
 Print wounding lashes in their yron ribs. 20  
 I feare no mood stamp't in a priuate brow,  
 When I am pleas'd t'vnmaske a publicke vice.  
 I feare no strumpets drugs, nor ruffians stab,  
 Should I detect their hatefull luxuries :  
 No brokers, vsurers, or lawyers gripe, 25  
 Were I dispos'd to say, they're all corrupt.  
 I feare no courtiers frowne, should I applaud  
 The easie flexure of his supple hammes.  
 Tut, these are so innate, and popular,  
 That drunken custome would not shame to laugh 30  
 (In scorne) at him, that should but dare to taxe 'hem.  
 And yet, not one of these but knowes his workes,  
 Knowes what damnation is, the deuill, and hell,  
 Yet, hourelly they persist, grow ranke in sinne,  
 Puffing their soules away in perj'rous aire, 35  
 To cherish their extortion, pride, or lusts.

M I T. Forbeare, good A S P E R, be not like your name.

A S P. O, but to such, whose faces are all zeale,  
 And (with the words of H E R C V L E S) invade  
 Such crimes as these ! that will not smell of sinne, 40  
 But seeme as they were made of sanctitie !  
 Religion in their garments, and their haire  
 Cut shorter then their eye-browes ! when the conscience  
 Is vaster then the ocean, and deuoures  
 More wretches then the *Counters*. M I T. Gentle A S P E R, 45  
 Containe your spirit in more stricter bounds,  
 And be not thus transported with the violence

Ind. 19 me)] me, Qq steele,] steele Qq 21 priuate] private  
 Qr 23 vice ] vice, Qq 2, 3 24 luxuries : corr. Fr : luxuries ; Q4,  
 Ff 28 hammes ] hammes : Qq 29 innate,] innate Qq 31 but]  
 not F2, F3 'hem.] 'hem : Qq ('em F3 *passim*) 34 Yet,] Yet Qq  
 hourelly corr. Fr, F2 : howelery Qq, F1 35 perj'rous] peri'rous Qq 2,  
 3 37 Forbeare,] Forbeare Qq 39 invade] inuade Qq 2, 3 40  
 these ] these ; Qq 41 sanctitie ! corr. Fr : Sanctitie ! Ff : Sanctitie ;  
 Qq 43, 45 then] than Qq, Ff (but see 44) 43 eye-browes ! Ff :  
 eie-browes ; Qq 1, 2 : eie-browes, Q3 44 then corr Fr : than Qq,  
 Ff ocean corr. Fr : Ocean Qq, Ff 45 *Counters* Qq, corr. Fr, F2 :  
 Counters Fr



430 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

Of your strong thoughts. C O R. Vnlesse your breath had  
power

To melt the world, and mould it new againe,

50 It is in vaine, to spend it in these moods.

A S P. I not obseru'd this thronged round till now.

Gracious, and kind spectators, you are welcome,

A P O L L O, and the M V S E S feast your eyes

With gracefull obiects, and may our M I N E R V A

55 Answer your hopes, vnto their largest straine.

Yet here, mistake me not, iudicious friends.

I doe not this, to begge your patience,

Or seruilely to fawne on your applause,

Like some drie braine, despairing in his merit :

60 Let me be censur'd, by th'austerest brow,

Where I want arte, or iudgement, taxe me freely :

Let envious censors, with their broadest eyes,

Looke through and through me, I pursue no fauour,

Onely vouchsafe me your attentions,

65 And I will giue you musicke worth your cares.

O, how I hate the monstrosnesse of time,

Where euery seruile imitating spirit,

(Plagu'd with an itching leprosic of wit)

In a meere halting fury, striues to fling

70 His vlc'rous body in the *Thespian* spring,

And streight leap's forth a Poet ! but as lame

As V U L C A N, or the founder of *Cripple-gate*.

M I T. In faith, this Humour will come ill to some,

You will be thought to be too peremptorie.

Ind. 50 vaine,] vaine Qq Between 50 and 51 Fr originally inserted  
a stage-direction 'Here hee makes adresse to the People', but it was can-  
celled : see p 416 51 now] now : Qq 52 Gracious] Gracious F2  
54 obiects,] obiects ; Qq MINERVA] Minerva Q1 : Menerva Q3  
56 not,] not Qq iudicious] judicious Qr friends] friends Qq  
57 this,] this Qq 59 merit :] merit. F2 61 iudgement] judgement  
Qr 62 envious] enuious Qq 2, 3 censors, corr. Fr, F2 : Censors  
Fr : Critiques Qq eyes, corr. Fr, F2 : eies Qq. eyes Fr 63 me,  
corr. Fr, F2 : me ; Qq, Fr fauour, corr. Fr, F2 : fauour Fr : fauor :  
Qq 66 O,] O Qq 67 seruile] servile Qr 71 Poet !] Poet ; Qq  
72 Cripple-gate corr Fr, F2 : Cripple-gate Fr : Crippegate Qq 73  
faith,] faith Qq Humour] Humor Qq and so usually, but in 75 Q1  
prints first 'Humor' and then 'Humour' 74 peremptorie Qq, corr.  
Fr, F2 : peremptory Fr



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 431

A S P. This Humour? good; and why this Humour, 75  
M I T I S?

Nay, doe not turne, but answer. M I T. Answer? what?

A S P. I will not stirre your patience, pardon me,  
I vrg'd it for some reasons, and the rather  
To giue these ignorant well-spoken dayes,  
Some taste of their abuse of this word Humour. 80

C O R D. O, doe not let your purpose fall, good A S P E R,  
It cannot but arriue most acceptable,  
Chieflly to such, as haue the happinesse,  
Daily to see how the poore innocent word  
Is rackt, and tortur'd. M I T. I, I pray you proceede. 85

A S P. Ha? what? what is't? C O R. For the abuse  
of Humour.

A S P. O, I craue pardon, I had lost my thoughts.  
Why, Humour (as 'tis *ens*) we thus define it  
To be a quality of aire or water,  
And in it selfe holds these two properties, 90  
Moisture, and fluxure: As, for demonstration,  
Powre water on this floore, 'twill wet and runne:  
Likewise the aire (forc't through a horne, or trumpet)  
Flowes instantly away, and leaues behind  
A kind of dew; and hence we doe conclude, 95  
That what soe're hath fluxure, and humiditie,  
As wanting power to containe it selfe,  
Is Humour. So in euery humane body  
The choller, melancholy, flegme, and bloud,  
By reason that they flow continually 100  
In some one part, and are not continent,

Ind. 76 Nay, *corr. Fr, F2*: Nay *Qq, Fr* M I T. . . . what? *So ranged*  
*in corr. Fr, F2*; a separate line in *Fr* 79 dayes,] daies *Qq* 80  
Humour] *Humor Qq* 81 O, *corr. Fr, F2*. O *Qq, Fr* 83 such,]  
such *Qq* happinesse,] *happinesse Qq* 85 I, I *Q3, corr. Fr, F2*: I; I *Qq 1, 2, Fr* 86 Cor. . . . Humour. *So ranged in F2*,  
a separate line in *Fr* Humour] *Humor Qq* 88 Why, *corr. Fr, F2*: Why *Qq, Fr* Humour] *Humor Qq* it] it, *F2* 89 aire]  
ayre, *F2* 91 Moisture, *corr. Fr, F2*. Moisture *Qq, Fr* As,] As  
*Qq* 93 horne, *corr. Fr, F2*: horne *Qq, Fr* 94 leaues] leaves *Qr*  
96 fluxure,] fluxure *Qq* 98 Humour. *So corr. Fr, F2*: *Humor*: so  
*Qq*: Humour: so *Fr*



Receiue the name of Humours. Now thus farre

It may, by *Metaphore*, apply it selfe

Vnto the generall disposition :

105 As when some one peculiar quality

Doth so possesse a man, that it doth draw

All his affects, his spirits, and his powers,

In their confluxions, all to runne one way,

This may be truly said to be a Humour.

110 But that a rooke, in wearing a pyed feather,

The cable hat-band, or the three-pild ruffe,

A yard of shooetye, or the *Switzers* knot

On his *French* garters, should affect a Humour !

O, 'tis more then most ridiculous.

115 C O R D. He speakes pure truth now, if an Idiot

Haue but an apish, or phantasticke straine,

It is his Humour. A S P. Well I will scourge those apes ;

And to these courtceous eyes oppose a mirrour,

As large as is the stage, whereon we act :

120 Where they shall see the times deformitie

Anatomiz'd in euery nerue, and sinnew,

With constant courage, and contempt of feare.

M I T. A S P E R, (I vrge it as your friend) take heed,

The dayes are dangerous, full of exception,

125 And men are growne impatient of reproofe. A S P. Ha, ha :

You might as well haue told me, yond' is heauen,

Ind. 102 Humours] Humors Qq 103 may,] may Qq *Metaphore*,  
 corr F1, F2: *Metaphore*, F1: *Metaphore* Qq 104 disposition:]  
 disposition, Qq 107 powers,] powers Qq 108 confluxions,] con-  
 fluxions Qq 109 Humour,] Humor, Qq 110 rooke, corr. F1:  
 Rooke, F1: Rooke Qq: rooke F2 in] by F2, F3 112 shooetye corr  
 F1: shoe-tie Qq 1, 2: shooe-tie Q3: shoo-tye F2 113 Humour!]  
 Humour, Q1: Humor, Qq 2, 3 114 'tis] it is F2, F3 then]  
 than Qq, F2 115 truth now, corr. F1, F2: truth: now Q1, F1:  
 truth: Now Q2: trueth: Now Q3 Idiot] Ideot Qq 116  
 Haue] Have Q1 apish,] Apish Qq 117 Humour] Humor Qq 2, 3  
 Well,] Well Qq apes; corr. F1, F2: Apes; F1: apes, Qq 1, 2:  
 Apes, Q3 118 mirrour, Ff: mirror Qq 1, 2; mirror, Q3 119  
 stage,] stage Qq act:] act, Qq 120 deformitie corr F1, F2: de-  
 formitie, Q1: deformity, Qq 2, 3, F1 121 Anatomiz'd) Anotamiz'd  
 Qq 2, 3 nerue,] Nerue Q1: Nerue Qq 2, 3 123 ASPER, F2.  
 ASPER. corr. F1: ASPER F1 originally: Asper Qq vrge] urge Q1  
 125 ASP Ha, ha: a separate line in Qq 126 yond'] yound F2



This earth, these men ; and all had mou'd alike.  
 Doe not I know the times condition ?  
 Yes, M I T T S, and their soules, and who they be,  
 That eyther will, or can except against me. 130  
 None, but a sort of fooles, so sicke in taste,  
 That they contemne all phisicke of the mind,  
 And, like gald camels, kicke at euery touch.  
 Good men, and vertuous spirits, that lothe their vices,  
 Will cherish my free labours, loue my lines, 135  
 And with the feruour of their shining grace,  
 Make my braine fruitfull to bring forth more obiects,  
 Worthy their serious, and intentiue eyes.  
 But why enforce I this ? as fainting ? No.  
 If any, here, chance to behold himselfe, 140  
 Let him not dare to challenge me of wrong,  
 For, if he shame to haue his follies knowne,  
 First he should shame to act 'hem : my strict hand  
 Was made to ceaze on vice, and with a gripe  
 Squeeze out the humour of such spongie natures, 145  
 As likke vp euery idle vanitie.

CORD. Why this is right *Furor Poeticus* !  
 Kind gentlemen, we hope your patience  
 Will yet conceiue the best, or entertaine  
 This supposition, that a mad-man speakes. 150  
 A S P. What ? are you ready there ? M I T T S sit  
 downe :  
 And my C O R D A T V S. Sound hough, and begin.

Ind 127 men;] men, F2 129 Yes, corr. Fr, F2: Yes Qq, Fr  
 M I T T S,] *Mitis*; Qq 1, 2. *Mitis*, Q3 be, corr. Fr, F2: be Qq, Fr 130  
 eyther corr Fr: either Qq, Ff will,] will Qq, F2 against] 'gainst  
 F2 me] me. Qq 131 None,] None Qq 133 And, . . . camels,  
 corr. Fr, F2: And . . . camels (Camels Qq) Qq, Fr touch,] touch, Qq 2, 3 135 loue] love Qq 136 feruour] fervor  
 Qq feruor Qq 2, 3 137 obiects,] obiects Qq 138 serious,] serious  
 Qq 139 this ? corr. Fr, F2: this, Qq, Fr No, corr. Fr, F2. no.  
 Fr: no: Qq 140 any, here, corr. Fr, F2. any here Qq, Fr 142  
 For, corr. Fr, F2: For Qq, Fr haue] have Qq 144 ceaze]  
 sieze F2 vice,] vice, Qq 145 Squeeze corr. Fr, F2: Crush  
 Qq, Fr humour] Humor Qq natures corr. Fr, F2: soules Qq,  
 Fr 147 Why] Why, F2 *Poeticus*] *Poeticus*: Qq 151  
 downe.] downe; Qq 152 hough] hoe Qq begin.] begin: Qq



- I leaue you two, as censors, to sit here :  
 Obserue what I present, and liberally  
 155 Speake your opinions, vpon euery *Scene*,  
 As it shall passe the view of these spectators.  
 Nay, now, y'are tedious Sirs, for shame begin.  
 And M I T I S, note me, if in all this front,  
 You can espy a gallant of this marke,  
 160 Who (to be thought one of the iudicious)  
 Sits with his armes thus wreath'd, his hat pull'd here,  
 Cryes meaw, and nods, then shakes his empty head,  
 Will shew more seuerall motions in his face,  
 Then the new *London, Rome, or Ninieue*,  
 165 And (now and then) breakes a dric bisquet iest,  
 Which that it may more easily be chew'd,  
 He steeps in his owne laughter. C O R D. Why? will that  
 Make it be sooner swallow'd? A S P. O, assure you.  
 Or if it did not, yet as H O R A C E sings,  
 170 "*Ieiunus raro stomachus vulgaria temnit*,  
 " Meane cates are welcome still to hungry guests.  
 C O R D. 'Tis true, but why should we obserue 'hem,  
 A S P E R?  
 A S P. O I would know 'hem, for in such assemblies,  
 Th'are more infectious then the pestilence :  
 175 And therefore I would giue them pills to purge,  
 And make 'hem fit for faire societies.  
 How monstrous, and detested is't, to see  
 A fellow, that has neither arte, nor braine,  
 Sit like an A R I S T A R C H V S, or starke-asse,  
 180 Taking mens lines, with a tabacco face,  
 In snuffe, still spitting, vsing his wryed lookes

\* Ind. 153 leaue] leave Qr two, as censors,] two as censors (Censors Qq) Qq, F2 here.] here, Qq 156 spectators.] Spectators, Qq 157 Nay,] Nay Qq begin.] begin: Qq, 158 And] And, F2 me,] me Qq 160 iudicious] iudicious Qr 163 face,] face Qq 164 Then] Than Qq, F2 165 bisquet iest] bisket jest Qq: bisquet-iest F2 167 steeps] sleeps Qq 2, 3 168 swallow'd] swallowed F2 you.] you: Qq 169 sings,] sings: Qq 172 'hem,] 'hem Qq 174 then] than Qq, F2 pestilence:] Pestilence, Qq 177 monstrous, . . is't,] monstrous . . is't Qq 178 fellow, . . . arte,] fellow . . . art Qq 179 starke-asse] starke asse Qq 180 lines, . . . face,] lines . . . face Qq



(In nature of a vice) to wrest, and turne  
The good aspect of those that shall sit neere him,  
From what they doe behold ! O, 'tis most vile.

M I T. Nay, A S P E R.

185

A S P. Peace, M I T I S, I doe know your thought.

You'le say, your guests here will except at this :

Pish, you are too timorous, and full of doubt.

Then, he, a patient, shall reiect all physicke,

'Cause the physicion tels him, you are sicke :

190

Or, if I say, That he is vicious,

You will not heare of vertue. Come, y'are fond.

Shall I be so extrauagant to thinke,

That happy iudgements, and composed spirits,

Will challenge me for taxing such as these ?

195

I am asham'd. C O R D. Nay, but good pardon vs :

We must not beare this peremptorie saile,

But vse our best endeouours how to please.

A S P. Why, therein I commend your carefull thoughts,

And I will mixe with you in industrie

200

To please, but whom ? attentiuē auditors,

Such as will ioynē their profit with their pleasure,

And come to feed their vnderstanding parts :

For these, Ile prodigally spend my selfe,

And speake away my spirit into ayre ;

205

For these, Ile melt my braine into inuention,

Coinē new conceits, and hang my richest words

As polisht jewels in their bounteous eares.

But stay, I loose my selfe, and wrong their patience ;

If I dwell here, they'le not begin, I see :

210

Ind. 182 wrest,] wrest Qq 184 behold ! O,] behold ? O Qq 185  
Nay,] Nay Qq 186 Peace,] Peace Qq thought,] thought. Qq,  
187 guests here] audience Qq this ' this ? Qq 188 Pish,] Pish.  
Qq 1, 2 doubt ] doubt : Qq 189 he,] he Qq physicke,]  
Physicke Qr : Physicke Qq 2, 3 190 physicion] physitian Qq 1, 2 :  
Physitian Q3 him,] him Qq 191 say,] say Qq 192 vertue Come,]  
vertue. come, Qq (Come F2) 193 extrauagant] extravagant Qr  
thinke,] thinke Qq 194 iudgements,] iudgements Qr : iudgements  
Qq 2, 3 spirits,] spirits Qq 198 endeouours] endeouours Qr 199  
Why,] Why Qq 1, 2 201 please,] please ; Qq attentiuē] attentive  
Qr 202 ioynē] joine Qr 206 these,] these F2 inuention] in-  
vention Qr 208 jewels] iewels Qq 2, 3



- Friends sit you still, and entertaine this troupe  
 With some familiar, and by-conference,  
 Ile haste them sound. Now gentlemen, I goe  
 To turne an actor, and a Humorist,  
 215 Where (ere I doe resume my present person)  
 We hope to make the circles of your eyes  
 Flow with distilled laughter : if we faile,  
 We must impute it to this onely chance,  
 " *Arte* hath an enemy cal'd *Ignorance*.  
 220 C O R D. How doe you like his spirit, M I T I S ?  
 M I T. I should like it much better, if he were lesse  
 confident.  
 C O R D. Why, doe you suspect his merit ?  
 M I T. No, but I feare this will procure him much enuie.  
 225 C O R D. O, that sets the stronger scale on his desert, if  
 he had no enemies, I should esteeme his fortunes most  
 wretched at this instant.  
 M I T. You haue scene his play, C O R D A T V S ? pray  
 you, how is't ?  
 230 C O R D. Faith sir, I must refraine to iudge, only this  
 I can say of it, 'tis strange, and of a particular kind by it  
 selfe, somewhat like *Vetus Comædia* : a worke that hath  
 bounteously pleased me, how it will answere the generall  
 expectation, I know not.  
 235 M I T. Does he obserue all the lawes of *Comedie* in it ?  
 C O R D. What lawes meane you ?  
 M I T. Why, the equall diuision of it into *Acts*, and *Scenes*,  
 according to the *Terentian* manner, his true number of  
 Actors ; the furnishing of the *Scene* with G R E X, or  
 240 C H O R V S, and that the whole Argument fall within  
 compasse of a dayes busnesse.

Ind. 212 familiar,] familiar Qq 213 sound. Now gentlemen,]  
 sound : now gentlemen (Gentlemen Q3) Qq 219 Exit. add Qq: Exit  
*Asper.* add F2, F3 224 enuie] envie Qr 225 desert,] desert,  
 F2 228 haue] have Qr play,] play Qq pray you,] pray you ; Qq  
 230 iudge] judge Qr 231 particular] particular Qq 232 somewhat]  
 some what F2 235 obserue] observe Qr 237 Why,] Why Qq  
 diuision] deuision Qq Acts,] Acts Qq 239 GREX,] Grex Qq 241  
 busnesse] efficiencie Qq



C O R D. O no, these are too nice observations.

M I T. They are such as must be receiued, by your fauour, or it cannot be authentique.

C O R D. Troth, I can discerne no such necessity. 245

M I T. No ?

C O R D. No, I assure you, Signior. If those lawes you speake of, had beene deliuered vs, *ab initio*, and in their present vertue and perfection, there had beene some reason of obeying their powers : but 'tis extant, that that which 250 we call *Comædia*, was at first nothing but a simple, and continued *Song*, sung by one only person, till S V S A R I O inuented a second, after him E P I C H A R M V S a third ; P H O R M V S, and C H I O N I D E S deuised to haue foure Actors, with a *Prologue* and *Chorus* ; to which C R A - 255 T I N V S (long after) added a fift, and sixt ; E V P O L I S more ; A R I S T O P H A N E S more then they : euery man in the dignitie of his spirit and iudgement, supplied something. And (though that in him this kinde of *Poeme* appeared absolute, and fully perfected) yet how is the face 260 of it chang'd since, in M E N A N D E R, P H I L E M O N, C E C I L I V S, P L A V T V S, and the rest ; who haue vtterly excluded the *Chorus*, altered the property of the persons, their names, and natures, and augmented it with all liberty, according to the elegancie and disposition of those times, 265 wherein they wrote ? I see not then, but we should enioy the same licence, or free power, to illustrate and heighten our inuention as they did ; and not bee tyed to those strict and regular formes, which the nicenesse of a few (who are nothing but forme) would thrust vpon vs. 270

Ind. 242 observations] observations Qr 243 receiued,] received Qr : receiued Qq 2, 3 245 Troth,] Troth Qq 247 you, Signior. If] you signior ; if Qq 248 *initio*,] *initio*, Qq 251 simple,] simple Qq, F2 252 *Song*] *Satyre* Qq 253 inuented] invented Qr third ;] third, Qq 254 deuised] deuised Qr 254, 262 haue] have Qr 256 fift, Ff : fift Qq : Fifth F3 sixt] Sixth F3 257 more ;] more, Qq then] than Qq 2, 3, F2 euery] every Qr 258 iudgement] judgement Qr 258-9 some thing Fr, copyng the kyphen of Qr, where the word is diuided at the end of a line. something Q3. colon in Qq 259 And] and Qq 265 times,] times Qq 266 then,] then Qq enioy] enjoy Qr 267 licence,] *Licentia* Qq 268 inuention] invention Qr did ;] did : Q3 bee] to be Q3



438 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

M I T. Well, we will not dispute of this now : but what's his *Scene*?

C O R. Marry, *Insula Fortunata*, Sir.

M I T. O, the fortunate Iland? masse, he has bound  
275 himselfe to a strict law there.

C O R. Why so?

M I T. He cannot lightly alter the *Scene*, without crossing the seas.

C O R. He needs not, hauing a whole Iland to run through,  
280 I thinke.

M I T. No? how comes it then, that in some one Play we see so many seas, countries, and kingdoms, past ouer with such admirable dexteritie?

C O R. O, that but shewes how well the Authors can  
285 trauaile in their vocation, and out-run the apprehension of their auditorie. But leauing this, I would they would begin once : this protraction is able to sowre the best-settled patience in the Theatre

M I T. They haue answered your wish Sir . they sound.

290 C O R D. O, here comes the *Prologue* : Now sir! if you had staid a little longer, I meant to haue spoke your prologue for you, I faith.

*The third sounding.*

P R O L O G V E.

P, R O L. Mary, with all my heart, Sir, you shall doe it yet, and I thanke you.

295 C O R D. Nay, nay, stay, stay, heare you?

P R O L. You could not haue studied to ha' done me

Ind. 273 Marry,] Mary Qq 274 masse,] masse Qq has] was  
Qq 2, 3 277 alter] after Qq 2, 3 Scene,] Scenc Qq 279 hauing]  
having Qr 282 ouer] over Qr 285 trauaile] trauaile Qr: travel  
F3 apprehension] apprehention Q3 286 leauing] leauing Qr  
287 sowre] sowrer Qq Between 289 and 290 Qq. haue ' Sound the third  
time. | ENTER PROLOGVE'. 290 sir! If: sir, Q1: sirre, Qq 2, 3  
After 292] The third . . PROLOGVE not in Qq 293 Mary,] Mary  
Qq 1, 3: Marry Q2 heart,] heart Qq 1, 2: haie Q3



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 439

a greater benefit at the instant, for I protest to you, I am vnperfect, and (had I spoke it) I must of necessity haue beene out.

C O R D. Why, but doe you speake this seriously? 300

P R O L. Seriously! I (wit's my helpe doe I) and esteeme my selfe indebted to your kindnesse for it.

C O R D. For what?

P R O L. Why, for vndertaking the prologue for me.

C O R D. How? did I vndertake it for you?

P R O L. Did you! I appeale to all these gentlemen, 305 whether you did or no? Come, it pleases you to cast a strange looke on't now; but 'twill not serue.

C O R D. 'Fore me, but it must serue: and therefore speake your prologue.

P R O L. And I doe, let me die poyson'd with some 310 venomous hisse, and neuer lue to looke as high as the two-penny roome againe.

M I T. He has put you to it, sir.

C O R. Sdeath, what a humorous fellow is this? Gentle- 315 men, good faith I can speake no prologue, howsoeuer his weake wit has had the fortune to make this strong vse of me, here before you: but I protest——

C A R L O B V F F O N E.

C A R L. Come, come, leaue these fustian protestations: *He enters with a boy, and wine.* away, come, I cannot abide these gray-headed ceremonies. Boy, fetch me a glasse, quickly, I may bid these gentlemen 321 welcome; giue 'hem a health here. I mar'le whose wit 'twas to put a prologue in yond' sack-butts mouth: they

Ind. 298 haue] have Qr 300, 304 Why.] Why Qq 301 wit's]  
God's Qq helpe] help, F2 306 gentlemen, Ff: gentlemen Qr:  
Gentlemen Qq 2, 3 307 Come.] Come, come, F2, F3 309 me,]  
God Qq 313 roome] roome, Qq 2, 3 againe ] againe. Exit. Q1:  
in Q2 'game. Exit' as the first line of sig B vv, 'a-', only in the catch-  
word on sig B iij verso Q3 omits this line. 315 Sdeath, om F2, F3  
317 me,] me Q1: mee Qq 2, 3 318 protest——] protest; Qq CARLO  
Bvffone.] Enter Carlo Buffone, with a Boy Qq (boy Q1) (margin)  
Stage direction not in Qq 319 leaue] leave Qr 322 'hem] him Q3  
mar'le] Qq 2, 3. mar'le Qr, Ff 323 yond'] yon'd Qq, Ff



might well thinke hee'd be out of tune, and yet you'd play  
325 vpon him too.

C O R D. Hang him, dull blocke.

C A R L. O good words, good words, a well-timberd fellow,  
he would ha' made a good columnne, and he had beene  
thought on, when the house was a building. O, art thou  
330 come? well said; giue mee boy, fill, so. Here's a cup of  
wine sparkles like a diamond. Gentlewomen (I am sworne  
to put them in first) and Gentlemen, a round, in place of  
a bad prologue, I drinke this good draught to your health  
here, *Canarie*, the very *Elixir* and spirit of wine This is  
335 that our *Poet* calls *Castalian* liquor, when hee comes abroad  
(now and then) once in a fortnight, and makes a good meale  
among Players, where he has *Caninum appetitum*: mary,  
at home he keepes a good philosophicall diet, beanes and  
butter milke: an honest pure Rogue, hee will take you off  
340 three, foure, fiew of these, one after another, and looke  
vilanously when he has done, like a one-headed C E R-  
B E R V S (he do' not heare me I hope) and then (when his  
belly is well ballac't, and his braine rigg'd a little) he sailes  
away withall, as though he would worke wonders when  
345 he comes home. He has made a Play here, and he calls it,  
*Euery Man out of his humour*: Sbloud, and he get me out  
of the humour hee has put mee in, Ile trust none of his  
Tribe againe, while I liue. Gentles, all I can say for him,  
is, you are welcome. I could wish my bottle here amongst  
350 you: but there's an old rule, *No pledging your owne health*.

Ind. 325 *Exit Boy* (boy Q1) add Qq 326 him,] him Qq 327  
well-timberd] well-timbred F2 328 columnne,] columnne Qq and]  
an' F2, F3 329 on,] on Qq O,] O Qq *Enter Boy with a glasse*.  
(boy Q1: *Bois drinks*) inset in Qq after 'O art thou' 330 mee boy] me,  
boy Qq 1, 2: me, Boy Q3 so. Here's] so: here's Qq 331  
Gentlewomen] Gentlewomen, Q1 334 *Elixir*] *Elixer* F2 (large paper)  
spirit of] (*He drinks*) inset in Qq wine. This] wine: this Qq  
(Wine Q3) 337 mary,] mary Qq 340 these,] these Qq 342  
do' not] do's not F2, F3 344 withall] with all F2, F3 345 home.  
He] home: he (hee Qq 2, 3) Qq it,] it; Qq 346 *humour*:]  
*Humor*. Q1: *humour* Q2: *Humor* Q3 Sbloud, and Fr: Sblood  
and Qq: But an' F2, F3 347 *humour*] *humor* Qq 1, 3 trust]  
ne're trust Qq 348 liue.] liue: Qr Gentles, all] Gentles all, Q3:  
Gentles, all F2. Genteels, all F3 350 rule,] rule; Qq *health*.]  
*health*: Qq



Mary, if any here be thirsty for it, their best way (that I know) is, sit still, seale vp their lips, and drinke so much of the play, in at their eares. *Exit.*

*GREX.*

MIT. What may this fellow be, CORDATVS?

COR. Faith, if the time will suffer his description, Ile giue it you. He is one, the Author calls him CARLO BVFFONE, an impudent common iester, a violent rayler, and an incomprehensible *Epicure*; one, whose company is desir'd of all men, but belou'd of none; hee will sooner lose his soule then a iest, and prophane euen the most holy things, to excite laughter: no honorable or reuerend personage whatsoever, can come within the reach of his eye, but is turn'd into all manner of varietie, by his adult'rate *smile's*.

MIT. You paint forth a monster. 365

COR. He will preferre all Countries before his natue, and thinkes he can neuer sufficiently, or with admiration enough, deliuer his affectionate conceit of forraine Atheistical policies: but stay—Obserue these, hee'le appeare himselfe anon. 370

MIT. O, this is your enuious man (MACILENTE) I thinke.

COR. The same, sir.

Ind. 351 Mary,] marye Q1: marie Q2: marie Q3 thirsty] thristy  
F2 353 play,] play Qq After 353] GREX add Ff 355 de-  
scription] discription Q3 356 you He] you . he Qq one,] one;  
Q3 357 iester] jester Qr 358 *Epicure*,] *Epicure*: Qq 360  
lose] loose Qq then] than Qq, F2 iest, Q2, Ff: jest, Q1: iest; Q3  
361 honorable] honourable Qq, F2 363 into] inro Q3 364  
*smile's*] *simele's* Q3 368 forraine] forrein Qq 369 stay—  
Obserue] stay, obserue Qq After 370] Enter *Macilente, solus.* Qq



## Act I. Scene I.

MACILENTE.

**V***Iri est, fortunæ cæcitatem facile ferre.*  
 Tis true ; but, Stoique, where (in the vast world)  
 Doth that man breathe, that can so much command  
 His blood, and his affection ? well · I see,  
 5 I striue in vaine to cure my wounded soule ;  
 For euery cordiall that my thoughts apply,  
 Turnes to a cor'siue, and doth cate it farder.  
 There is no taste in this Philosophie,  
 Tis like a potion that a man should drinke,  
 10 But turnes his stomacke with the sight of it.  
 I am no such pild *Cinique*, to belecue  
 That beggery is the onely happinesse ;  
 Or (with a number of these patient fooles)  
 To sing : *My minde to me a kingdome is*,  
 15 When the lanke hungrie belly barkes for foode.  
 I looke into the world, and there I meet  
 With obiects, that doe strike my blood-shot eyes  
 Into my braine : where, when I view my selfe ;  
 Hauing before obseru'd, this man is great,  
 20 Mighty, and fear'd : that, lou'd, and highly fauour'd :  
 A third, thought wise and learned : a fourth, rich,  
 And therefore honor'd · a fifth, rarely featur'd :  
 A sixth, admir'd for his nuptiall fortunes :  
 When I see these (I say) and view my selfe,  
 25 I wish the organs of my sight were crackt ;

<sup>1</sup> i.] Act . . . MACILENTE ] ACTVS PRIMVS. SCENA PRIMA. Qq . ACT I.  
 SCENE I.—*The Country. Enter Macilente, with a book.* G 1 *Viri*  
*Mac. Viri* Qq *facile*] *facile* Qq *ferre.*] *ferre* · Qq 2 *Stoique,*  
*Stoique:* Qr: *Stoique,* Qq 2, 3 3 *breathe*] *breath* Qq *command*  
*command* Qr 4 *blood,*] *blood* Qr: *blood* Qq 2, 3 6 *apply,*  
*apply* Qr: *applie* Qq 2, 3 7 *farder*] *farther* F3 15 *foode* ]  
*food.* Qr: *foode:* Qq 2, 3 18 *braine:*] *braine;* Qq 2, 3 *selfe;*  
*selfe,* Q3 19 *Hauing*] *Having* Qr *obseru'd,*] *obseru'd:* Qq 1, 2  
 20 *lou'd,* *corr. Fr, F2* · *lou'd* Qq, Fr 22 *honor'd*] *honour'd* Qq, F2  
 25 *the organs of my sight*] *my Optique instruments* Qq (*Oblique* Q3)



---

*Euery Man out of his Humour* 443

---

And that the engine of my grieffe could cast  
Mine eye-balls, like two globes of wild-fire, forth,  
To melt this vnproportion'd frame of nature.  
Oh, they are thoughts that haue transfixt my heart,  
And often (i' the strength of apprehension) 30  
Made my cold passion stand vpon my face,  
Like drops of dew on a stiffe cake of yce.

*G R E X.*

C O R. This alludes well to that of the Poet,  
*Inuidus suspirat, gemit, incutitq; dentes,*  
*Sudat frigidus, intuens quod odit.* 35  
M I T. O peace, you breake the *Scene*.

M A C I. Soft, who be these ?  
I'le lay me downe a while till they be past.

*G R E X.*

C O R. Signior, note this gallant, I pray you.  
M I T. What is he ? 40  
C O R. A tame Rooke, youle take him presently : List.

*Act I. Scene II.*

SOGLIARDO, CARLO BVFFONE,  
MACILENTE.

NAY looke you CARLO: this is my Humour now !  
I haue land and money, my friends left me well, and  
I will be a Gentleman, whatsoeuer it cost me.

C A R. A most gentleman-like resolution.

1. 1. 27 -balls,] -balls Q1: -bals Qq 2, 3 -fire, corr F1, F2. -fire  
Qq, F1 forth] forth Q3 32 dew] sweate Qq 34 incutitq; corr.  
F1: incutitq; F1: incutitque Qq, F2 35 quod odit] quododit Q2  
After 36] Enter Soghardo, with Carlo Buffone | SCENA SEC. Qq 39  
gallant,] gallant Qq 1, 2 1. ii Act. . MACILENTE not in Qq CARLO]  
CARLO, F2 1 Nay,] Nay F2: Sog. Nay Qq you,] you Qq now !] now;  
Qq 1, 2. now: Q3 3 Gentleman, corr F1: gentleman Qq 1, 2:  
Gentleman Q3, F1, F2 whatsoeuer] whatsoever Q1 4 CAR...  
resolution.] Missing in some copies of F1, in which these words should  
end page 90.



5 S O G. Tut, and I take an humour of a thing once, I am like your taylors needle, I goe through · but, for my name, Signior, how thinke you ? will it not serue for a gentlemans name, when the Signior is put to it ? Ha ?

C A R. Let me heare : how is't ?

10 S O G. *Signior Insulso Sogliardo* · me thinkes it sounds well.

C A R. O excellent ! tut, and all fitted to your name, you might very well stand for a gentleman : I know many *Sogliardos* gentlemen.

15 S O G. Why, and for my wealth I might be a Iustice of Peace.

C A R. I, and a Constable for your wit.

S O G. All this is my Lordship you see here, and those Farmes you came by.

20 C A R. Good steps to gentility too, mary : but S O G L I - A R D O, if you affect to be a gentleman indeede, you must obserue all the rare qualities, humours, and complements of a gentleman.

S O G. I know it, Signior, and if you please to instruct, 25 I am not too good to learne, Ile assure you.

C A R. Inough sir : Ile make admirable vse i'the proiection of my medicine vpon this lumpe of copper here. Ile bethinke me, for you sir.

S O G. Signior, I will both pay you, and pray you, and 30 thanke you, and thinke on you.

# G R E X.

C O R D. Is not this purely good ?

M A C I L. Sbloud, why should such a prick-eard hine as this,

1. 11. 5 humour] humor Qq 2, 3 6 name,] name Qq 12 excellent !  
tut,] excellent: tut Qq 15 Why,] Why Qq 22 obserue] observe  
Qr: obserne Q3 humours] humors Qq 24 it,] it Qq Signior  
Qq 2, 3, corr. F1, F2: signior Q1, F1 26 make] maks F2 28 me, Fj:  
me Qr: mee Qq 2, 3 29 pay you,] pay you Qq 30 thanke you,]  
thanke you Qq 1, 2 32 Sbloud] Why F2, F3 hine] Hind Qq  
this,] this Qq



Be rich? Ha? a foole? such a transparent gull  
That may be seene through? wherefore should he haue  
land,

Houses, and lordships? O, I could eate my entrailes, 35  
And sinke my soule into the earth with sorrow.

C A R. First (to be an accomlisht gentleman, that is,  
a gentleman of the time) you must giue o're house-keeping  
in the countrey, and liue altogether in the city amongst  
gallants; where, at your first apparance, 'twere good you 40  
turn'd foure or fiue hundred acres of your best land into  
two or three trunks of apparel (you may doe it without going  
to a coniurer) and be sure, you mixe your selfe stil, with such  
as flourish in the spring of the fashion, and are least  
popular; studie their carriage, and behauiour in all; learne 45  
to play at *Primero* and *Passage*, and (euer when you lose)  
ha' two or three peculiar othes to sweare by, that no man  
else sweares: but aboue all, protest in your play, and  
affirme, *Vpon your credit; As you are a true gentleman* (at  
euery cast) you may doe it with a safe conscience, I warrant 50  
you.

S o G. O admirable rare! he cannot choose but be  
a gentleman, that ha's these excellent gifts: more, more, I  
beseech you.

C A R. You must endeuour to feede cleanly at your 55  
Ordinarie, sit melancholy, and picke your teeth when  
you cannot speake: and when you come to Playes, be  
humorous, looke with a good startch't face, and ruffle your  
brow like a new boot; laugh at nothing but your owne  
iests, or else as the Noblemen laugh. That's a speciall grace 60  
you must obserue.

i. 11 35 entrailes] intrailes F2 37 gentleman, that] Gentleman,  
that Q3 40 apparance] appearance F2 42 apparel (you] apparell,  
you Qq 1, 2: apparell, you Q3 43 coniurer)] Coniurer: Qq sure,]  
sure Qq 45 carriage, Ff. carriage Q1: cariage Qq 2, 3 behauiour]  
behavior Qq 1, 2 all; corr. F1, F2: all. Qq, F1 46 lose] loose  
Qq 47 peculiar] peeuiliar Q1 48 all,] all, Q2 49 true om  
Qq 2, 3 50 cast)] cast:) Qq 52 choose] chuse Qq, F2 55 en-  
deuour] endeavour Q1 59 boot,] boot, Qq 1, 2, F2 60 iests] jests  
Q1 laugh. That's] laugh, that's Qq



S o G. I warrant you, sir.

C A R. I, and sit o'the stage, and flout : prouided, you haue a good suit

65 S o G. O, I'll haue a suit only for that, sir.

C A R. You must talke much of your kinred, and allies

S o G. Lies ! no Signior, I shall not neede to doe so, I haue kinred i'the city to talke of . I haue a ncece is a marchants wife ; and a nephew, my brother S o R D I D O s  
70 sonne, of the Innes of Court.

C A R. O, but you must pretend alliance with Courtiers and great persons : and euer when you are to dine or suppe in any strange presence, hire a fellow with a great chaine (though it be copper it's no matter) to bring you letters,  
75 feign'd from such a Noble man, or such a Knight, or such a Ladie, *To their worshipfull, right rare, and noble qualified friend or kinsman, Signior Insulso Sogliardo*, giue your selfe stile enough. And there (while you intend circumstances of newes, or enquiry of their health, or so) one of your  
80 familiars (whom you must carry about you still) breakes it vp (as 'twere in a iest) and reades it publikey at the table : at which, you must seeme to take as vnardonable offence, as if he had torne your Mistris colours, or breath'd vpon her picture ; and pursue it with that hot grace, as if  
85 you would aduance a challenge vpon it presently.

S o G. Stay, I doe not like that humour of challenge, it may be accepted ; but I'll tell you what's my humour now : I will doe this. I will take occasion of sending one of my suites to the Taylors to haue the pocket repaired, or so ;  
90 and there such a letter, as you talke of (broke open and

I. 11. 63 flout] flout Q2 65 O.] O Qq that,] that Qq 66  
kinred,] kinred Qr : kindred Qq 2, 3, F2, F3 68 I haue] I haue  
Q2 : I'll haue Q3 kinred Qr, Fr : kindred Qq 2, 3, F2, F3 69  
marchants Fr : merchants Qr : Merchants Qq 2, 3, F2, F3 71 O.] O  
Qq Courtiers] Courtiours Qr 74 copper] copper, F2 76 noble]  
nobly F2, F3 77 Sogliardo,] Sogliardo ; Qq 79 enquiry] enquire  
Q3 81 iest] iest Qr 83 offence,] offence Qq Mistris] mis-  
tresse Qq 1, 2 : Mistrisse Q3 : Mistresses F2, F3 breath'd] breat'd Q3  
85 aduance] enforce Qq 86 humour] humor Qq 1, 2 : Humor Q3  
87 accepted :] accepted : Qq humour] humor Qq 88 thus.] this,  
Qq, F2 90 letter,] letter Qq oi] off Q3



all) shall be left : O, the Taylor will presently giue out what I am, vpon the reading of it, worth twentie of your Gallants.

CAR. But then you must put on an extreme face of discontentment at your mans negligence.

SO G. O, so I will, and beat him too : I'll haue a man<sup>95</sup> for the purpose.

MACIL. You may ; you haue land and crownes : O partiall fate !

CARL. Masse well remembred, you must keepe your men gallant, at the first, fine pyed liueries, laid with good<sup>100</sup> gold lace, there's no losse in it, they may rip't off and pawne it, when they lacke victuals.

SO G. By'r Ladie, that is chargeable Signior, 'twill bring a man in debt.

CAR. Debt ? why, that's the more for your credit sir :<sup>105</sup> it's an excellent policy to owe much in these daies, if you note it.

SO G. As how good Signior ? I would faine be a Polititian.

CAR O ! looke where you are indebted any great<sup>110</sup> summe, your creditor obserues you with no lesse regard, then if hee were bound to you for some huge benefit, and will quake to giue you the least cause of offence, lest he loose his money. I assure you (in these times) no man has his seruant more obsequious and pliant, then gentlemen<sup>115</sup> their creditors : to whom if (at any time) you pay but a moitie, or a fourth part, it comes more acceptedly, then if you gave 'hem a new-yeares gift.

SO G. I perceiue you, sir : I will take vp, and bring my selfe in credit sure.

CAR. Mary this, alwaies beware you commerce not with<sup>120</sup>

1. ii. 92 am,] am Qq it,] it : Qq 1, 2 100 liueres,] Liueres Qq  
103 By'r] Byr Qq 1, 2 : Bur Q3 Ladie,] Ladie Qq 1, 3 : Lady Q2  
110 O!] O, Qq 111 obserues] observes Q1 112, 115, 117 then]  
than Qq 1, 2, F2 bound] bouud Q3 113 lest] least Qq 114  
loose] lose F2 money.] money . Qq 1, 2 115 seruant] servant Q1  
116 creditors] creditours F2 if (at) (if at Qq, Ff 117 moitie,]  
moitie Qq 1, 2 : moietie Q3 acceptedly] acceptably F3 119 you,  
sir .] you sir, Qq vp] up Q1 121 this,] this , Qq 1, 2



bankrupts, or poore needie *Ludgathians* : they are impudent creatures, turbulent spirits, they care not what violent tragedie they stirre, nor how they play fast and loose with  
 125 a poore gentlemans fortunes, to get their owne. Mary, these rich fellowes (that ha' the world, or the better part of it, sleeping in their counting-houses) they are ten times more placable, they ; either feare, hope, or modestie, restraines them from offering any outrages : but this is nothing to  
 130 your followers, you shall not run a penny more in arrerage for them, and you list your selfe.

S O G. No ? how should I keepe 'hem then ?

C A R. Keepe 'hem ? Sbloud let them keepe themselues, they are no sheepe, are they ? What ? you shall come in  
 135 houses, where plate, apparrell, iewels, and diuers other pretie commodities lye negligently scattered, and I would ha' those *Mercuries* follow me (I trow) should remember they had not their fingers for nothing.

S O G. That's not so good, me thinkes.

140 C A R. Why, after you haue kept 'hem a fortnight, or so, and shew'd 'hem ynough to the world, you may turne 'hem away, and keepe no more but a boy, it's ynough.

S O G. Nay, my humour is not for boyes, Ile keepe men, and I keepe any ; and Ile giue coats, that's my humour :  
 145 but I lacke a cullisen.

C A R. Why, now you ride to the citie, you may buy one, Ile bring you where you shall ha' your choise for money.

S O G. Can you, sir ?

C A R. O, I : you shall haue one take measure of you,  
 150 and 'make you a *Coat of armes*, to fit you of what fashion you will.

\*T. ii. 122 bankrupts] Bankroutes Q3 125 fortunes,] fortunes Qq  
 owne. Mary,] owne : marry, Qq 128 placable] peacable Q3 they ;  
 they : Qq feare,] feare F2 131 and] an' F2, F3 133  
 Sbloud om. F2, F3 themselues] themselves Qr 135 diuers]  
 diuers Qr 136 negligently] negligently Q3 139 good,] good Qq  
 140, 146 Why,] Why Qq haue] haue Qr kept' hem] kept them Q3  
 fortnight,] fortnight Qr : fortnight Qq 2, 3 142 ynough] y enough  
 Q3 143 Nay,] Nay Qq humour] humor Qq 144 that's] rhat's  
 Q3 humour] humor Qq 2, 3 148 you,] you Qq, F2 149 O,]  
 O Qq 150 and] an' F2 armes,] armes Qq



S O G. By word of mouth, I thanke you, Signior ; Ile be once a little prodigall in a humour, i'faith, and haue a most prodigious coat.

M A C I. Torment and death ! breake head and braine 155  
at once,

To be deliuer'd of your fighting issue.

Who can endure to see blinde *Fortune* dote thus ?

To be enamour'd on this dustie turfe ?

This clod ? a whorson puck-fist ? O god, god, god, god, &c.

I could runne wild with grieve now, to behold 160

The ranknesse of her bounties, that doth breed

Such bull-rushes ; these mushrompe gentlemen,

That shoot vp in a night to place, and worship.

C A R. Let him alone, some stray, some stray.

S O G. Nay, I will examine him before I goe, sure. 165

C A R. The Lord of the soile ha's al wefts, and straies  
here ? ha's he not ?

S O G. Yes, sir.

C A R. Faith, then I pittie the poore fellow, he's falne into  
a fooles hands. 170

S O G. Sirrah, who gaue you commission to lye in my  
lordship ?

M A C I. Your lordship ?

S O G. How ? my lordship ? doe you know me, sir ?

M A C I. I doe know you, sir. 175

C A R. S'heart, he answeres him like an *eccho*.

S O G. Why, who am I, Sir ?

M A C I. One of those that fortune fauours.

C A R. The *Periphrasis* of a foole ; Ile obserue this better.

S O G. That fortune fauours ? how meane you that, 180  
friend ?

1.ii. 152 mouth,] mouth Qq you,] you Qq 153 humour,  
1'faith] Humor in faith Qq 155 death,] death, Qq once,] once  
Qq 1, 2 159 god, .. god,] God, .. God, Qq 160 now,] now  
Qq 163 place,] place Qq 165 Nay,] Nay Qq goe,] goe Qq  
166 wefts,] wefts Qq 168 Yes,] Yes Qq, F2 169 Faith,] Faith  
Qq, F2 174 me,] me Qq 175 you,] you Qq 176 S'heart, om  
F2, F3 177 I,] I Qq 178, 180 fauours] fauours Qq 180 that,]  
that Qq



450 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

M A C I. I meane simply. That you are one that liues not by your wits.

S O G. By my wits? No sir, I scorne to liue by my wits,  
185 I. I haue better meanes, I tell thee, then to take such base courses, as to liue by my wits. Sbloud, doest thou thinke I liue by my wits?

M A C I. Me thinkes, Iester, you should not relish this well.

190 C A R. Ha? does he know me?

M A C I. Though yours bee the worst vse a man can put his wit to, of thousands, to prostitute it at euery tauerne and ordinarie; yet (mee thinkes) you should haue turn'd your broad side at this, and haue beene readie with an  
195 *Apologie*, able to sinke this hulke of ignorance into the bottome, and depth of his contempt.

C A R. Sbloud 'tis M A C I L E N T E! Signior, you are well encountred, how is't? O, we must not regard what hee saies man, a trout, a shallow foole, he ha's no more braine  
200 then a butter-flie, a meere stuft suit, he looks like a mustie bottle, new wickerd, his head's the corke, light, light. I am glad to see you so well return'd, Signior.

M A C I. You are? Gramercie, good I A N V S.

S O G. Is he one of your acquaintance? I loue him the  
205 better for that.

C A R. Gods precious, come away man, what doe you meane? and you knew him as I doe, you'd shun him, as you'd doe the plague?

S O G. Why, sir?

210 C A R. O, hee's a black fellow, take heed on him.

S O G. Is he a Scholler, or a Souldier?

C A R. Both, both; a leane mungrell, he lookes as if he

i. ii. 182 simply ] simply; Qq 185 I. I] I; I Qq meanes,]  
meanes Qq then] than Qq, F2 (So in 200, 217) 186 Sbloud, Fr:  
Sbloud Qq 1, 2: Sbloud Q3: What F2, F3 188 thinkes,] thinkes  
Qq 192 to,] too Qq 195 hulke] bulk F3 197 Sbloud Q1, Fr:  
Sbloud Q2: Sbloud Q3: Oh F2, F3 MACILENTE ] Macilente: Qq  
198 O,] O Qq 202 return'd,] return'd Qq 203 Gramercie,] Gramercie Qq 207 and] an' F2 209 Why,] Why Qq 211 Scholler,]  
Scholler Qq



were chap-falne, with barking at other mens good fortunes :  
'ware how you offend him, he carries oile and fire in his pen,  
will scald where it drops : his spirit's like powder, quick, 215  
violent : hee'le blow a man vp with a jest : I feare him  
worse then a rotten wall do's the cannon, shake an houre  
after, at the report. Away, come not neere him.

S O G. For Gods sake let's be gone, and he be a Scholler,  
you know I cannot abide him, I had as leeuie see a Cocka- 220  
trice, specially as cockatrices goe now.

C A R. What, you'le stay, signior ? this gentleman  
S O G L I A R D O, and I, are to visit the knight P V N T A R -  
V O L O, and from thence to the citie, wee shall meet there.

M A C I. I, when I cannot shun you, we will meet. 225

'Tis strange ! of all the creatures I haue seene,  
I enuie not this B V F F O N, for indeede  
Neither his fortunes, nor his parts deserue it :  
But I doe hate him, as I hate the deuill,  
Or that brasse-visag'd monster *Barbarisme*. 230

O, 'tis an open-throated, black-mouth'd curre,  
That bites at all, but eates on those that feed him.  
A slaue, that to your face will (serpent-like)  
Creepe on the ground, as he would eate the dust ;  
And to your backe will turne the taile, and sting 235  
More deadly then a scorpion : Stay, who's this ?  
Now for my soule, another minion  
Of the old lady *Chance's* : I'll obserue him.

I 11 213 chap-falne, *F1* : chap-falne *Qq* : chop-falne, *F2* : Chop-  
fal'n, *F3* 215 drops :] drops, *Qq* 216 jest] iest *Qq* 2, 3 217  
houre after,] hower after *Qq* 218 report Away] report : away *Qq*  
219 and] an' *F2* 220 him,] him *F2* 222 stay,] stay *Qq* 223  
S O G L I A R D O, and I,] *Soghardo* and I *Qq* P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* *Q1*  
224 *Exeunt Car. and Sog.* add *Qq* 226 strange!] strange : *Qq* 228  
fortunes,] fortunes *Qq*, *F2* it :] it ; *Qq* 229 him,] him *Qq* 232  
on] not *F3* him ] him, *Qq* 1, 2 : him . *Q3* 235 taile,] taile *Qq*  
236 then] than *Qq*, *F2* 237 soule,] soule *F2*



*Act I. Scene III.*

SORDIDO, MACILENTE, HINE.

O Rare ! good, good, good, good, good ! I thanke my  
Starres, I thanke my Starres for it.

MACI. Said I not true ? doth not his passion speake  
Out of my diuination ? O my senses,  
5 Why loose you not your powers, and become  
Dull'd, if not deadded with this spectacle ?  
I know him, 'tis SORDIDO, the farmer,  
A Boore, and brother to that swine was here.

SORD. Excellent, excellent, excellent ! as I would wish,  
10 as I would wish.

MACI. See how the strumpet *Fortune* tickles him,  
And makes him swoune with laughter, ô, ô, ô.

SORD. Ha, ha, ha, I will not sow my grounds this  
yeere. Let mee see, what haruest shall we haue ? *Iune,*  
15 *Iuly, August ?*

MACI. What is't, a Prognostication rap's him so ?

SORD. The xx, xxi, xxij, daies, raine and winde, O good,  
good ! the xxiiij, and xxiiij, raine and some winde, good !  
the xxv, raine, good still ! xxvi, xxvij, xxviij, winde and  
20 some raine ; would it had beene raine and some winde :  
well 'tis good (when it can be no better) xxix, inclining to  
raine : inclining to raine ? that's not so good now. xxx,  
and xxxi, winde and no raine : no raine ? S'lid stay ; this  
is worse and worse : what saies he of *S. Swithins* ? turne  
25 back, looke, *S. Swithins* : no raine ?

MACI. O, here's a precious durty damned rogue,

1 iii.] *Enter Sordido with a Prognostication* | SCENA TER. Qq 1 O  
Rare !] *Sord.* O rare, Qq good ! I] good, I Qq 2 Starres] Christ Qq  
5 loose] lose F2, F3 6 Dull'd, if not deadded] Dead, dull, and  
blunted Qq 7 'tis] it is G 8 Boore] Boar F3 9 excellent ! as]  
excellent, as Qq 14 yeere.] yeere, Qq 1, 3 : yeere, Q2 see.] see  
Q3, F2 15 *Iuly, August ?*] *Iulie ?* Qq 1, 3 : *Iuly ?* Q2 16 What  
is't.] What is't Qq. What, is't G 17 xx, xxi, xxij.] xx. xxi xxij.  
Qq, and so throughout except 'xxviiij' (19) daies.] dayes F2 18  
good !] good ; Qq 1, 2 : good : Q3 19 still !] still ; Qq 1, 2 : still :  
Q3 26 O.] O Qq here's] there's Q3 durty] filthy Qq



That fatts himselfe with expectation  
Of rotten weather, and vnseason'd howers ;  
And he is rich for it, an elder brother !  
His barnes are full ! his reekes, and mowes well trod ! 30  
His garners cracke with store ! O, tis well ; ha, ha, ha :  
A plague consume thee, and thy house.

SORD. O here, *S. Swithins*, the xv day, variable  
weather, for the most part raine, good ; for the most part  
raine : Why, it should raine fortie daies after, now, more 35  
or lesse, it was a rule held, afore I was able to hold a plough,  
and yet here are two daies, no raine ; ha ? it makes me  
muse. Weele see how the next moneth begins, if that bee  
better. *September*, first, second, third, and fourth daies,  
rainy, and blustering ; this is well now : fift, sixt, seuenth, 40  
eight, and ninth, rainy, with some thunder ; I mary, this  
is excellent ; the other was false printed sure : the tenth,  
and eleuenth, great store of raine ; O good, good, good,  
good, good ! the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth daies,  
raine ; good still : fifteenth, and sixteenth, raine ; good 45  
still : seuenteenth, and eighteenth, raine, good still ; nine-  
teenth, and twentieth, good still, good still, good still,  
good still, good still ! one and twentieth, some raine ,  
some raine ? well, we must be patient, and attend the  
heauens pleasure, would it were more though : the one and 50  
twentieth, two and twentieth, three and twentieth, great  
tempest of raine, thunder, and lightning.

O good againe, past expectation good !

1. iii 28 howers] houres *F2* 29 an] and *Q3, F3* brother ]  
brother, *Qq* 30 tull ] full, *Qq* reekes,] reekes *F2* trod ] trod, *Qq*  
31 store ] store. *Qq* 32 thee,] thee *Qq* 33 xv] xv *Qq* 35 Why,]  
Why *Qq* after,] after *Qq* 36 held,] held *Qq* 1, 2. helde *Q3* 38  
moneth] month *Qq* 39 *September*, first] August August, first *Qq*  
40 fift, sixt] fifth, sixth *F2* seuenth] seventh *Q1* 41 eight] eighth  
*F2* rainy] raine *Qq* 42 tenth, ] tenth *Qq* 1, 2 44 good ]  
good ; *Qq* 1, 2 : good : *Q3* twelfth *F1* : twelfth *Q1* twelfth *Qq* 2, 3,  
*F2, F3* 45 fifteenth,] fifteenth *Qq* 46 seuenteenth,] seuenteenth  
*Qq* 1, 2 nineteenth,] nineteenth *Qq* 1, 2 : nineteenth *Q3* 47  
twentieth, good] twentieth, Good *Qq* 48 still ! one] still ; one  
*Qq* 1, 2 : still : one *Q3* 50 one and twentieth, *om. Q2, G* 51  
twentieth] twentieth *Qq* 1, 2 (*three times*) 52 tempest] tempests *F2*,  
*F3* 53 good !] good . *Qq*



I thanke my blessed angell ; neuer, neuer,  
 55 Laid I penny better out, then this,  
 To purchase this deare booke : not deare for price,  
 And yet of me as dearly priz'd as life,  
 Since in it, is contain'd the very life,  
 Bloud, strength, and sinnewes of my happinesse.  
 60 Blest be the houre, wherein I bought this booke,  
 His studies happy, that compos'd the booke,  
 And the man fortunate, that sold the booke.  
 Sleepe with this charme, and be as true to me,  
 As I am ioy'd, and confident in thee.

*The Hine enters with a paper.* M A C I. Ha, ha, ha ? I'not this good ? Is't not pleasing  
 this ?  
 Ha, ha, ha ! God pardon me ! ha, ha !

Is't possible that such a spacious villaine  
 Should liue, and not be plagu'd ? or lies he hid  
 Within the wrinkled bosome of the world,  
 70 Where heauen cannot see him ? Sbloud (me thinkes)  
 'Tis rare, and strange, that he should breathe, and walke,  
 Feede with digestion, sleepe, enjoy his health,  
 And (like a boist'rous whale, swallowing the poore)  
 Still swimme in wealth, and pleasure ! is't not strange ?  
 75 Vnlesse his house, and skin were thunder-proofe,  
 I wonder at it ! Me thinkes, now, the hecticke,  
 Gout, leprosie, or some such loth'd disease  
 Might light vpon him ; or that fire (from heauen)  
 Might fall vpon his barnes ; or mice, and rats  
 80 Eate vp his graine ; or else that it might rot

i iii. 55 out,] out Qq then] than Qq 1, 2, F2 58 it,] it Qq 59  
 happinesse.] happinesse : Qq 60 houre,] houre Qq 61 happy,]  
 happy Qq 1, 3 . happie Q2 62 fortunate,] fortunate Qq booke ]  
 booke . Qq 63 me,] me Qq 1, 2 64 ioy'd,] ioy'd Q1 . ioy'd Qq 2, 3  
 65 stage-dir Enter a Hind to Sordido with a paper Qq in text after 64  
 Hine] Hind Qq : Hinde F2, F3 I'not . . . Is't] Is not . . . Is it Q3  
 66 Ha, ha . . . ha, ha !] ha, ha ? Gods ha ? Qq add to l. 65 (query, Gods  
 precious ha ?) 68 liue,] liue Qq 70 Sbloud] why F2, F3 71  
 rare,] rare Qq strange] admirable Qq breathe,] breath Qq 72 en-  
 joy] enioy Qq 2, 3 73 whale,] Whale Qq 1, 2 74 wealth,] wealth  
 Qq pleasure !] pleasure : Qq is't] is it Q3 75 house,] house Qq  
 76 it !] it. Qq thinkes,] thinkes Qq 79 vpon] upon Q1 mice,]  
 mice Qq



Within the hoary reekes, e'ne as it stands :  
 Me thinkes this might be well ; and after all  
 The deuill might come and fetch him. I, 'tis true !  
 Meane time he surfets in prosperitie,  
 And thou (in enuie of him) gnaw'st thy selfe, 85  
 Peace, foole, get hence, and tell thy vexed spirit,  
 " Wealth in this age will scarcely looke on merit.  
 S O R D. Who brought this same, sirha ?  
 H I N E. Mary, sir, one of the Iustices men, he saies 'tis  
 a precept, and all their hands be at it : 90  
 S O R D. I, and the prints of them sticke in my flesh,  
 Deeper then i' their letters : They haue sent me  
 Pils wrapt in paper here, that should I take 'hem,  
 Would poison all the sweetnesse of my booke,  
 And turne my honey into hemlocke iuyce. 95  
 But I am wiser then to serue their precepts,  
 Or follow their prescriptions. Here's a deuice,  
 To charge me bring my graine vnto the markets :  
 I, much, when I haue neither barne nor garner,  
 Nor earth to hide it in, I'le bring it ; till then, 100  
 Ech corne I send shall be as big as *Paules*.  
 O, but (say some) the poore are like to starue.  
 Why let 'hem starue, what's that to me ? are bees  
 Bound to keepe life in drones, and idle moths ? no :  
 Why such are these (that terme themselues the poore, 105  
 Only because they would be pittied,  
 But are indeed a sort of lazie beggers)  
 Licencious rogues, and sturdie vagabonds,  
 Bred (by the sloth of a fat plentious yeere)

1 iii. 83 deuill] diuell Q3 him] him: Qq true!] true Qq 85  
 enuie] envie Q1 86 Peace.] Peace Qq 87 italicized, and 'Exit.'  
 added in Qq 88 same.] same Qq 89 (and in the headings to speeches  
 114, 116, 124) HINE] Hine Qq Mary, sir.] Marry sir Qq 1, 2. Marrie  
 sir Q3 Iustices] justices Q1 90 it.] it. Qq 2, 3 91 flesh,]  
 flesh Qq 92 then] than Qq 1, 2, F2 93 paper] a paper Q3 95  
 iuyce.] iuyce. Q1: iuyce Qq 2, 3 96 then] than Qq, F2 to serue]  
 t'observe W. conj. 97 prescriptions] prescriptions: Qq 98 vnto]  
 into Qq 2, 3 100 till] but till Qq 102, 103 starue] sterue Qq  
 104 drones,] Drones Qq 106 pittied,] pittied) Qq 107 beggers)]  
 Beggers, Qq 108 rogues,] Rogues Qq 1, 2



456 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

- 110 Like snakes, in heat of summer, out of dung,  
 And this is all that these cheape times are good for :  
 Whereas a holsome, and penurious dearth  
 Purges the soile of such vile excrements,  
 And kills the vipers vp. H I N E. O, but master,  
 115 Take heed they heare you not. S O R D. Why so ?  
 H I N E. They will exclaime against you. S O R D. I,  
 their exclaimes  
 Moue me as much, as thy breath moues a mountaine !  
 Poore wormes, they hisse at me, whilst I at home  
 Can be contented to applaud my selfe,  
 120 To sit and clap my hands, and laugh, and leape,  
 Knocking my head against my rooffe, with ioy  
 To see how plumpe my bags are, and my barnes.  
 Sirrah, goe, hie you home, and bid your fellowes,  
 Get all their flailcs readie, again' I come. H I N E. I will,  
 Sir.  
 125 S O R D. I'll instantly set all my hines to thrashing  
 Of a whole reeke of corne, which I will hide  
 Vnder the ground ; and with the straw thereof  
 I'll stuffe the out-sides of my other mowes :  
 That done, I'll haue 'hem emptie all my garners,  
 130 And i' the friendly earth bury my store,  
 That, when the searchers come, they may suppose  
 All's spent, and that my fortunes were belied.  
 And, to lend more opinion to my want,  
 And stop that many-mouthed vulgar dog,  
 135 (Which else would still be baying at my dore)  
 Each market day, I will be seene to buy  
 Part of the purest wheat, as for my houshold :  
 Where when it comes, it shall encrease my heapes,

1. iii 110 snakes,] snakes Qq, F2 summer,] summer Qq 112  
 Whereas] Where as Qq holsome,] holsome Qr: holesome Qq 2, 3  
 114 O,] O Qq, F2 master] maister Qq 117 mountaine!] Moun-  
 taine; Qq 120 laugh,] laugh Qq 121 ioy] joy Qr 123 fellowes,]  
 fellowes Qq 124 readie, again'] readie againe Qq will,] will Qq  
 Exit Hind. Qq add to 124. 125 hines] hinds Qq 1, 2: hinds Q3  
 128 out-sides] outsides Qq 131 That,] That Qq come,] come Qq 1, 2  
 133 And,] And Qq 135 baying] bayting Q3 138 encrease] increase  
 F2, F3



Twill yeeld me treble gaine, at this deare time,  
 Promisd in this deare booke : I haue cast all. 140  
 Till then I will not sell an eare, I'le hang first.  
 O, I shall make my prizes as I list,  
 My house and I can feed on pease, and barley,  
 What though a world of wretches starue the while ?  
 " He that will thriue, must thinke no courses vile. 145

G R E X.

C O R. Now, Signior, how approue you this ? haue the  
 Humorists exprest themselues truly or no ?

M I T. Yes (if it be well prosecuted) 'tis hitherto happy  
 ynough : but me thinks, M A C I L E N T E went hence too  
 soone, hee might haue beene made to stay, and speake 150  
 somewhat in reproofe of S O R D I D O's wretchednesse, now  
 at the last.

C O R. O, no, that had beene extremely improper,  
 besides, he had continued the *Scene* too long with him, as't  
 was, being in no more action. 155

M I T. You may enforce the length, as a necessary  
 reason ; but for propriety, the *Scene* would very well haue  
 borne it, in my iudgement.

C O R. O, worst of both : why, you mistake his Humour  
 vtterly then. 160

M I T. How ? doe I mistake it ? is't not enuie ?

C O R. Yes, but you must vnderstand, Signior, he enuies  
 him not as he is a villaine, a wolfe i' the common-wealth,  
 but as he is rich, and fortunate ; for the true condition of  
 enuie is, *Dolor alienæ felicitatis*, to haue our eyes con- 165

1. in 139 gaine,] gaine Qq 140 all.] all, Qq 142 O,] O Qq 143  
 pease,] Pease Qr. Peas Qq 2, 3 barley,] barley; F2 144 starue]  
 sterue Qq 145 Exit add Qq 146 Now,] Now Qq 149  
 thinks,] thinks Qq 150 stay,] stay Qq 1, 2 153 O,] O Qq beene]  
 bin Qq improper,] improper; F2, F3 154 besides,] besides Qq  
 him,] him Qq 156 length,] length Qq 157 propriety,] propriety Qq  
 would] wold Qq 158 iudgement] judgement Qr 159 O,] O Qq  
 why,] why Qq Humour] Humor Qr : humor Qq 2, 3 161 is't] is  
 it Q3 enuie] Envie Qq 162 vnderstand,] vnderstand Qq 163  
 i'] in Q3 164 rich,] rich Qq 165 enuie] envie, Qr : enuy, Qq 2, 3  
 is,] is Qq *felicitatis*] *felicitatis* Qq



tinually fixt vpon another mans prosperitie, that is, his  
chiefe happinesse, and to grieue at that. Whereas, if we  
make his monstrous, and abhord actions our obiect, the  
griefe (we take then) comes neerer the nature of hate, then  
170 enuie, as being bred out of a kinde of contempt and lothing,  
in our selues.

M I T. So you'll infer it had beene hate, not enuie in him,  
to reprehend the humour of S O R D I D O ?

C O R D. Right, for what a man truly enuies in another,  
175 he could alwaies loue, and cherish in himselfe : but no man  
truly reprehends in another, what he loues in himselfe ;  
therefore reprehension is out of his hate. And this dis-  
tinction hath he himselfe made in a speech there (if you  
markt it) where he saies, *I enuie not this B V F F O N, but I*  
180 *hate him.*

M I T. Stay, sir . *I enuie not this B V F F O N, but I hate*  
*him* : why might he not as well haue hated S O R D I D O ,  
as him ?

C O R. No, sir, there was subiect for his enuie in  
185 S O R D I D O ; his wealth : So was there not in the other.  
He stood possesst of no one eminent gift, but a most odious,  
and fiend-like disposition, that would turne charitie it selfe  
into hate, much more enuie, for the present.

M I T. You haue satisfied mee, sir ; O, here comes the  
190 Foole and the Iester, againe, methinkes.

C O R. 'Twere pittie they should be parted, sir.

M I T. What bright-shining gallant's that with them ?  
the knight they went to ?

1. iii 166 is.] 15 Qq 167 Whereas,] Whereas Qq, F2 168 mon-  
strous,] monstrous Qq actions] actions, Qq obiect] object Qr  
169 hate,] Hate Qq . hate F2 then] than Qq, F2 170 lothing,]  
lothing Qq 172 enuie] Envie Qr 173 humour] humor Qq 175  
himselfe :] himselfe ; Qq x, 2 176 another,] another Qq himselfe,]  
himselfe, Qq 179 markt] marke Qq 2, 3 181 Stay,] Stay Qq  
*I enuie]* *envie* L.p. F2 (the *I* not catching the ink) 182 SORDIDO,]  
*Sordido* Qq 184 No,] No Qq subiect] subject Qr enuie] envie  
Qr 185 other. He] other, he Qq (hee Qq 2, 3) 186 odious,]  
odious Qq 187 fiend-like] friend-like Q3 188 enuie,] Envie Qr :  
Enuie Qq 2, 3 After 188 Qq add *Enter Carlo Buffone, Sogliardo,*  
*Fastidius Briske, Cinedo.* | ACTVS SECVNDVS, SCENA PRIMA. (ACTVS  
SECUNDVS, Qr) 189 mee, sir ; O,] me sir, O Qq 190 Iester,  
againe,] *Iester* againe Qq 191 parted,] parted Qq x, 2 : patted Q3



COR. No, sir, this is one Monsieur FASTIDIVS BRISKE, otherwise cal'd the fresh Frenchefied courtier. 195

MIT. A humorist too?

COR. As humorous as quick-siluer, doe but obserue him, the *Scene* is the country still, remember.

*Act II. Scene I.*

FAST. BRISKE, CINEDO, CARLO BVFFONE,  
SOGLIARDO.

CINEDO, watch when the knight comes, and giue vs word.

CINE. I will, sir.

FAST. How lik'st thou my boy, CARLO?

CAR. O, well, well. He lookes like a colonell of the *Pigmies* horse, or one of these motions, in a great antique clock. he would shew well vpon a habberdashers stall, at a corner shop, rarely.

FAST. S'heart, what a damn'd witty rogue's this? how he confounds with his *simile's*? 10

CARL. Better with *simile's*, then smiles: and whither were you riding now, Signior?

FAST. Who, I? what a silly iest's that? whither should I ride, but to the court?

CARL. O, pardon me, sir, twentie places more: your 15 hot-house, or your whore-house——

FAST. By the vertue of my soule, this knight dwels in *Elizium*, here.

I. in 194 No,] No Qq 195 Frenchefied] Frenchfield Q3 II. i.]  
ACT II, SCENE I.—The Country before Puntarvolo's House G 1  
CINEDO] Fast. Cinedo Qq 3 will,] will Qq Exit. add Qq 1; 2  
5 O,] O Qq well. He] wel, he Qq 1, 3 wel he Q2 a colonell of  
the] the colonel of a Qq 2, 3 6 motions,] motions Qq antique]  
antique Q3 8 shop,] shop Qq 9 S'heart, om F2, F3 10  
*simile's*] *similes* Q3 11 *simile's*,] *simile's* Qq 1, 2. *similes* Q3  
then] than Qq, F2 whither] whether Q3, F3 12 now,] now Qq  
13 Who,] Who Qq iest's] iest's Q1 whither] whether F3 14  
ride,] ride Qq 15 O,] O Qq me,] me Qq 16 your whore-  
house——] your—— Qq 17 soule,] soule Qq 1, 2 18 *Elizium*,]  
*Elizium* Qq 1, 2: *Elizium* Q3



CARL. Hee's gone now, I thought he would flie out  
 20 presently. These be our nimble-spirited *Catso's*, that ha'  
 their euasions at pleasure, will run ouer a bog like your  
 wild *Irish* : no sooner started, but they'le leape from  
 one thing to another, like a squirrell, heigh : dance ! and  
 doe tricks i' their discourse, from fire to water, from water  
 25 to aire, from aire to earth, as if their tongues did but e'en  
 likke the foure elements ouer, and away.

F A S T. Sirrha, CARLO, thou neuer saw'st my grey-hobbie  
 yet, didst thou ?

CARL. No : ha' you such a one ?

30 F A S T. The best in *Europe* (my good villaine) thoul't say,  
 when thou seest him.

CARL. But when shall I see him ?

F A S T. There was a noble man i' the court offered me  
 100. pound for him, by this light : a fine little fiery slaue,  
 35 he runs like a (oh) excellent, excellent ! with the very sound  
 of the spurre.

CARL. How ? the sound of the spurre ?

F A S T. O, it's your only humour now extant, sir : a good  
 gingle, a good gingle.

40 CARL. Sbloud, you shall see him turne morris-dancer,  
 he ha's got him bels, a good sute, and a hobby-horse.

S O G L. Signior, now you talke of a hobby-horse, I know  
 where one is, will not be guen for a brace of angels.

F A S T. How is that, Sir ?

45 S O G L. Mary, sir, I am telling this gentleman of a hobby-  
 horse, it was my fathers indeed, and (though I say it ———

CARL. That should not say it) on, on.

S O G L. He did dance in it, with as good humour, and as

<sup>11</sup> i. 20 -spirited *Catso's*,] -sprighted *Catso's* Qq 21 their] there Qr  
 22 *Irish* :] Irish ; Qq 1, 2 23 another,] another Qq heigh :  
 dance !] heigh ; Daunce, Qq 24 i'] in Q3 25 e'en] eu'n Q2 : euen  
 Q3 27 Sirrha,] Sirra Qq 1, 3 : Sirrah Q2 28 yet,] yet F2  
 29 No :] No Q2 . No, Q3 34 him,] hum Qq slaue] slave Qr 35  
 runs] turnes Q3 excellent !] excellent, Qq 38 humour] humor  
 Qq extant,] extant Qq 40 Sbloud, F1 : Sbloud Qq 1, 2 : Sbloud  
 Q3 : om. F2, F3 44 that,] that Qq 45 Mary, sir,] Mary sir  
 Qq 1, 2 : Mary sir, Q3 46 it —] it Qq 48 it,] it Qq humour,  
 Q3, Ff : humour Qq 1, 2. So Qq spell here and in 51



---

*Euery Man out of his Humour* 461

---

good regard, as any man of his degree whatsoeuer, being no gentleman : I haue danc't in it my selfe too. 50

C A R L. Not since the humour of gentilitie was vpon you? did you?

S O G L. Yes, once ; mary, that was but to shew what a gentleman might doe, in a humour.

C A R L. O, very good. 55

*G R E X.*

M I T. Why, this fellowes discourse were nothing, but for the word Humour.

C o R. O, beare with him, and he should lacke matter, and words too, 'twere pittifull.

S o G. Nay, looke you, sir, there's ne're a gentleman 60 i' the countrey has the like humours, for the hobby-horse, as I haue ; I haue the method for the threeding of the needle and all, the———

C A R. How, the method?

S o G. I, the leigeritie for that, and the wigh-hie, and the 65 daggers in the nose, and the trauels of the egge from finger to finger, all the humours incident to the quality. The horse hangs at home in my parlor. I'le keepe it for a monument, as long as I liue, sure.

C A R. Doe so ; and when you die, 'twill be an excellent 70 trophee, to hang ouer your tombe.

S o G. Masse, and I'le haue a tombe (now I thinke on't) 'tis but so much charges.

C A R. Best build it in your life time then, your heires may hap to forget it else. 75

II. 1. 49 regard,] regard Qr : gard Qq 2, 3 53 Yes,] Yes Qq 54  
doe,] doe Qq humour] Humor Qq (so 57) 55. 58 O,] O Qq 56  
Why,] Why Qq nothing,] nothing Qq 58 and] an' F2, F3 matter,]  
matter Qq 60 Nay,] Nay Qq you,] you Qq 61 humours,]  
humors Qq -horse,] horse Qq 62 haue,] haue ? Qq 2, 3 63  
and all not in Qq 64 How,] How Qq method ? F2 : method. F1 :  
Methode. Qq 1, 2 Methode ? Q3 65 leigeritie] Leigeritie, Qq 2, 3  
67 humours] humors Qr : Humors Qq 2, 3 68 parlor] parlor, Qq  
69 liue,] liue Qq 71 trophee,] Trophee Qq 75 may om. F3



S o G. Nay, I meane so, Ile not trust to them.

C A R. No, for heires, and executors, are growne damnably carelesse, specially, since the ghosts of testators left walking : how like you him, Signior ?

80 F A S T. 'Fore heauens, his humour arrides me exceedingly

C A R. Arrides you ?

F A S T. I, pleases me (a pox on't) I am so haunted at the court, and at my lodging, with your refin'd choise spirits, 85 that it makes me cleane of another garbe, another sheafe, I know not how ! I cannot frame me to your harsh vulgar phrase, 'tis against my *genius*.

S o G. Signior C A R L O.

### G R E X.

C O R. This is right to that of H O R A C E, *Dum vitant* 90 *stulti vitia, in contraria currunt* : so this gallant, labouring to auoid popularitie, fals into a habit of affectation, ten thousand times hatefuller then the former.

C A R. Who, hee ? a gull, a foole, no salt in him i' the earth, man : hee looks like a fresh salmon kept in a tub, 95 hee'le be spent shortly. His braine's lighter then his feather already, and his tongue more subiect to lie, then that's to wag : he sleepes with a muske-cat euery night, and walkes all day hang'd in pomander chaines for penance : he ha's his skin tan'd in ciuet, to make his complexion 100 strong, and the sweetnesse of his youth lasting in the sense

II. 1 76 Nay,] Nay Qq 77 heires,] heirs Q1 : heires Q2, F2 :  
Heires Q3 executors,] executors Qq 1, 2 : Executors, Q3 damn-  
ably] damnable Q2. damnable Q3 78 specially,] specially Qq 1,  
3 : speciallie Q2 79 him,] him Qq 80 heauens,] heauens Qq  
humour] Humor Q1 : humor Qq 2, 3 84 court,] court Q1 : Court  
Qq 2, 3 lodging,] lodging Qq 85 sheafe] straine Qq 86 how !]  
how ; Qq 1, 2 : how. Q3 88 CARLO] Carla Qq 2, 3 90 vitia,] vitia  
Qq currunt] currant Q3 gallant,] gallant Qq 91 affectation,]  
Affectation Qq 1, 2 92 hatefuller] more hatefull Qq then] than  
Qq, F2 (so 95-6) 93 Who,] Who Qq gull, a foole,] gull ? a foole ?  
Qq 94 earth,] earth Qq tub,] tub ; Qq 1 : tubbe : Q2, 3 95  
shortly. His] shortly, his Qq 96 subiect] subject Q1 99 in om. Q3



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 463

of his sweet lady. A good emptie puffe, he loues you well,  
Signior.

S O G L. There shall be no loue lost, sir, I'll assure you.

F A S T. Nay, C A R L O, I am not happy i' thy loue,  
I see: pr'y thee suffer me to enioy thy company a little <sup>105</sup>  
(sweet *mischiefe*) by this aire, I shall enuy this gentlemans  
place in thy affections, if you be thus priuate, yfaith. How  
now? is the knight arriu'd?

C I N E D O.

C I N E. No, sir, but 'tis guest he will arriue presently, by  
his fore-runners. 110

F A S T. His hounds! by M I N E R V A an excellent  
figure; a good boy.

C A R L. You should giue him a french crowne for it:  
the boy would finde two better figures i' that, and a good  
figure of your bounty beside. 115

F A S T. Tut, the boy wants no crownes.

C A R L. No crowne: speake i' the singular number, and  
wee'le beleuee you.

F A S T. Nay, thou art so capriciously conceited now.  
Sirra (*damnation*) I haue heard this knight P V N T A R- <sup>120</sup>  
v o l o, reported to bee a gentleman of exceeding good  
humour; thou know'st him: pr'ythee, how is his dis-  
position? I ne're was so fauour'd of my starres, as to see  
him yet. Boy, doe you looke to the hobby?

C I N E. I, sir, the groome has set him vp. 125

F A S T. 'Tis well: I rid out of my way of intent to visit  
him, and take knowledge of his—Nay, good *wickednesse*,  
his humour, his humour.

II. i 101 lady. A] Ladie, A Qq 2, 3: lady: a F2 well,] well Qq  
103 lost,] lost Qq 104 Nay,] Nay Qq CARLO] Carl Qq 2, 3 11  
in Q3 loue,] loue Qq 105 see:] see, Qq enioy] enjoy Qr  
106 enuy] envie Qr 107 priuate, yfaith How] priuate I faith: how  
Qq After 108 CINEDO.] Enter Cinedo Qq 109 No,] No Qq guest]  
gest Qq 114 figures] figutes F2 i'] in Q3 117 i'] in Q3 119  
now.] now: Qr: nowe: Qq 2, 3 120 PVNTARVOLO] Puntarvolo Qr:  
Puntaruallo Q3: PUNTARVOIO F2 122 humour,] humour: Qq  
him:] him; Qq 1, 2 123 starres,] starres Qq 125 I,] I Qq  
127 his—Nay,] his: Nay Qq 128 humour... humour] humor...  
humor Qr



CARL. Why, he loues dogs, and hawkes, and his wife,  
 130 well : he has a good riding face, and he can sit a great horse ;  
 hee will taint a staffe well at tilt : when he is mounted, he  
 lookes like the signe of the *George*, that's all I know ; saue,  
 that in stead of a dragon, he will brandish against a tree,  
 and breake his sword as confidently vpon the knottie barke,  
 135 as the other did vpon the skales of the beast.

FAS T. O, but this is nothing to that's deliuerd of him.  
 They say he has dialogues, and discourses betweene his  
 horse, himselfe, and his dogge : and that he will court his  
 owne lady, as shee were a stranger neuer encounter'd before.

140 CARL. I, that he will, and make fresh loue to her euery  
 morning : this gentleman has beene a spectator of it,  
*Signior Insulso*.

*Hee leapes  
 from whis-  
 pring  
 with the  
 boy.*

S O G L. I am resolute to keepe a page : say you sir ?

CARL. You haue seene *Signior Puntaruolo* accost his  
 lady ?

146 S O G L. O, I sir.

FAS T. And how is the manner of it, pr'ythee, good  
 Signior ?

S O G L. Faith sir, in very good sort, he has his humours  
 150 for it, sir : as first, (suppose he were now to come from  
 riding, or hunting, or so) he has his trumpet to sound, and  
 then the waiting gentlewoman, shee lookes out, and then  
 hee speakes, and then shee speakes—very pretty yfaith,  
 gentlemen.

155 FAS T. Why, but doe you remember no particulars,  
 Signior ?

S O G L. O, yes sir : first, the gentlewoman, shee lookes  
 out at the window.

v II. 1 129 Why,] Why *Qq* wife,] wife *Qq*. Wife: *F3* 130 well:]  
 well; *F3* can] ean *Q3* 132 saue,] saue *Qq* 133 dragon,] Dragon  
*Qq* 1, 2 136 that's deliuerd] that is deliuered *Qq* 2, 3 him. They]  
 him. they *Qq* 138 dogge:] dogge; *Qr*: Dogge; *Q2*: Dogge: *Q3*  
 139 encounter'd] encountred *Q3* before.] before, *Qq* 1, 2 143 st.  
 dir not in *Qq* 144 *Puntaruolo*] *Puntaruolo* *Q1* 146 I om. *Q3*  
 147 it, pr'ythee,] it pr'ythee *Qq* 149 sir,] sir *Qq* sort,] sort; *Qq*  
 humours] humors *Qr* 150 it,] it *Qq* 152 out,] out; *Qq* 153  
 shee speakes—] shee speakes: *Qq* yfaith,] I faith *Qq* 157 gentle-  
 woman,] Gentlewoman *Qr*: gentlewoman *Qq* 2, 3



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 465

C A R L. After the trumpet has summon'd a parle? not before? 160

S O G L. No, sir, not before : and then saies he—ha, ha, ha, ha, &c

C A R L. What saies he? be not rapt so.

S O G L. Saies he—ha, ha, ha, ha, &c.

F A S T. Nay, speake, speake. 165

S O G L. Ha, ha, ha, saies he : God saue you, saies he : ha, ha, &c.

C A R L. Was this the ridiculous motiue to all this passion?

S O G L. Nay, that, that comes after, is—ha, ha, ha, ha, &c.

C A R L. Doubtlesse, he apprehends more then he vtters, 170 this fellow : or else.

S O G L. List, list, they are come from hunting : stand by, *A cry of hounds within* close vnder this tarras, and you shall see it done, better then I can shew it.

C A R L. So it had need, 'twill scarce poize the obseruation 175 else.

S O G L. Faith I remember all, but the manner of it is quite out of my head.

F A S T. O, with-draw, with-draw, it cannot bee but a most pleasing obiect. 180

*Act II. Scene II.*

P V N T A R V O L O, H V N T S M A N, G E N T L E-

W O M A N.

*To the rest.*

F O r r e s t e r, giue winde to thy horne. Inough, by this, the sound hath toucht the eares of the enclosed : Depart, leaue the dogge, and take with thee what thou hast deseru'd, the horne, and thanks.

II. i 161 No,] No Qq 161, 164 he—Fr. he; Qq : he, F2 165, 169 Nay,] Nay Qq 166 ha, saies Qq, corr. Fr, F2. ha, Saies Fr you, saies he:] you, Qq 169 after,] after Qq is—Fr : is : Qq : is, F2 170 Doubtlesse,] Doubtlesse Qq then] then Qq, F2 (so 174) 173 done,] done Qq 179 O, with-draw, with-draw] O withdraw, withdraw Qq 180 obiect] object Qr II i i Act. . GENTLEWOMAN.] Enter Puntaruolo, a Huntsman with a greyhound. (Puntaruolo Q1, Grayhound Qq 2, 3) Qq, without change of scene. To the rest. add Ff 1 Forrester] Pun. Forrester Qq Inough, Fr : Inough; Qq 1, 2 Inough : Q3 : Enough; F2 this,] this Qq 2 enclosed] inclosed F2 3 deseru'd,] deseru'd; Qq 1, 2



466 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

5 C A R L. I, mary, there's some taste in this.

F A S T. Is't not good ?

S O G L. Ah, peace, now aboue, now aboue !

*The gentle-*  
*woman*  
*appears*  
*at the win-*  
*dow.* P V N T. Stay . mine eye hath (on the instant) through  
the bountie of the window, receiu'd the forme of a *Nymph*.  
I will step forward three pases : of the which, I will barely

11 retire one ; and (after some little flexure of the knee) with  
an erected grace salute her (one, two, and three.) Sweet  
lady, God sauc you

G E N T. No, forsooth : I am but the waiting gentle-  
15 woman.

C A R L. He knew that before.

P V N T. Pardon me . *Humanum est errare*.

C A R L. He learn'd that of his chaplaine

P V N T. To the perfection of complement (which is the  
20 Diall of the thought, and guided by the Sunne of your  
beauties) are requir'd these three specials : the *gnomon*, the  
*puntilio*'s, and the *superficies* : the *superficies*, is that we  
call, place ; the *puntilio*'s, circumstance ; and the *gnomon*,  
ceremony : in either of which, for a stranger to erre, 'tis  
25 easie and facile, and such am I.

C A R L. True, not knowing her *horizon*, he must needes  
erre : which I feare, he knowes too well.

P V N T. What call you the lord of the castle ? sweet face.

G E N T. The lord of the castle is a knight, sir ; Signior  
30 P V N T A R V O L O.

P V N T. P V N T A R V O L O ? O.

C A R L. Now must he ruminatc.

F A S T. Does the wench know him all this while, then ?

C A R L. O, doe you know me, man ? why, therein lies

ii. ii 5 I.] I Qq 7 Ah.] Ah Qq aboue ! corr Fr, F2 . aboue Qq,  
Fr 8 st. dir.] *The waiting Gentlewoman appears at the window (wayi-*  
*ing Gentlewomen appeare Q3) Qq in text after 7. 10 pases] paces Qq,*  
*F2 12 her (one, two, and three.)] her: 1, 2, and 3. Qq 14 No.]*  
*No Qq the] a Q3 18 his chaplaine] a Puritane Qq 21 specials]*  
*Projects Qr : Projects Qq 2, 3 23 call.] call Qq 25 facile.] facile ;*  
*Qq 26 horizon] Horizon Q1 : Horison Qq 2, 3 29 knight.]*  
*knight Qq 30 P V N T A R V O L O] Puntarvolo Q1 (so 31) 33 while.]*  
*while Qq 34 me.] me Qq why.] why Qq lies] lies Qr*



the sirrup of the iest ; it's a proiect, a designement of his  
owne, a thing studied, and rehearst as ordinarily at his  
comming from hawking, or hunting, as a jigge after a  
play.

S O G L. I, e'en like your jigge, sir.

P V N T. 'Tis a most sumptuous and stately edifice ! of  
what yeeres is the knight, faire damsell ?

G E N T. Faith, much about your yeeres, sir.

P V N T. What complexion, or what stature beares he ?

G E N T. Of your stature, and very neere vpon your  
complexion. 45

P V N T. Mine is melancholy :

C A R L. So is the dogges, iust.

P V N T. And doth argue constancie, chiefly in loue.  
What are his endowments ? Is he courteous ?

G E N T. O, the most courteous knight in Christian land, 50  
sir.

P V N T. Is he magnanimous ?

G E N T. As the skin betweene your browes, sir.

P V N T. Is he bountifull ?

C A R L. 'Slud, he takes an inuenty of his owne good 55  
parts.

G E N T. Bountifull ? I, sir, I would you should know  
it ; the poore are seru'd at his gate, early, and late, sir.

P V N T. Is he learned ?

G E N T. O, I sir, he can speake the *French*, and *Italian*. 60

P V N T. Then he is trauail'd ?

G E N T. I, forsooth, he hath beene beyond-sea, once, or  
twise.

11. 11 35 iest] jeast Qr proiect] Project Qr 37 hawking,] hawk-  
ing Qq 1, 3 jigge] ligge Qq 2, 3 39 jigge,] jigge Qr : ligge Qq 2, 3  
40 edifice !] corr. F1, F2 : edifice , Qq 1, 2, F1 ; edifice Q3 of not in  
Qq 42 Faith,] Faith Qq yeeres,] yeeres Qr : yeares Qq 2, 3 46  
melancholy : F1 : Melancholly : Qq 1, 2 : Melancholly. Q3 melancholy.  
F2 47 iust] iust Qr 50 O,] O Qq in Christian land,] vpon  
Gods earth Qq 53 browes,] browes Qq 55 'Slud] Sbloud Qq  
57 I, sir,] I sir Qq 58 gate,] gate Qq 1, 2 early, and late,] early  
and late Qq 60 I om. Q3 French,] French Qq 62 -sea,] -sea  
Qq 1, 2 -seas, F2, F3 once,] once Qq



468 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

C A R L. As far as *Paris*, to fetch ouer a fashion, and come  
65 back againe.

P V N T. Is he religious ?

G E N T. Religious ? I know not what you call religious,  
but hee goes to church, I am sure.

F A S T. S'lid, me thinkes, these answeres should offend  
70 him.

C A R L. Tut, no, he knowes they are excellent, and to  
her capacity, that speakes 'hem.

P V N T. Would I might see his face.

C A R L. Shee should let down a glasse from the window  
75 at that word, and request him to looke in't.

P V N T. Doubtlesse, the gentleman is most exact, and  
absolutely qualified ? doth the castle containe him ?

G E N T. No, sir, he is from home, but his lady is within.

P V N T. His lady ? what, is shee faire ? splendidious ?  
80 and amiable ?

G E N T. O, Lord, sir !

P V N T. Pr'y thee, deare *Nymph*, intreat her beauties to  
shine on this side of the building.

C A R L. That he may erect a new dyall of complement,  
with his *gnomons*, and his *puntilio's*.

*Gent*  
*caues*  
*the win-*  
*dow.* 86 F A S T. Nay, thou art such another *Cinique* now, a man  
had need walke vprightly before thee.

C A R L. Heart, can any man walke more vpright then  
hee does ? Looke, looke ; as if he went in a frame, or had  
90 a sute of wancscot on : and the dogge watching him, lest  
he should leape out on't.

F A S T. O, villaine !

C A R L. Well, and e'er I meet him in the city, I'll ha'

\* II. II. 64 fashion,] fashion Qq 1, 2 68 church,] Church Qq 69  
S'lid,] S'lid Qq 1, 2 thinkes,] thinkes Qq 71 Tut,] Tut Qq no,]  
no: Q3 72 capacity,] capacite Qq 1, 3: capacity Q2 speakes 'hem]  
speake them Q3 73 see] but see Q3 75 in't] in it Q3 78  
No,] No Qq 79 PVNT.] Punt. Q1 what,] what Qq 81 O, Lord,]  
O Iesu Qq 82 Pr'y thee,] Pr'y thee Qq 1, 2. Prythee Q3 84  
st. dir.] Exit Gent. from the window (Exit. Qq 2, 3) Qq in text after 83  
85 puntilio's] Puntolios Q3 86 another] an other Q3 Cinique]  
Cynique F2, F3 88 then Q3, F1: than Qq 1, 2, F2 90 him,] him  
Qq lest] least Qq 92 O,] O Qq 93 e'er] euer Q3 ha'] haue Q3



him ioynted, I'll pawne him in east-cheape, among the butchers else.

95

F A S T. Peace, who be these, C A R L O ?

*Act II. Scene III.*

S O R D I D O, F V N G O S O, L A D Y.

*To the rest.*

Y O N D E R's your god-father ; doe your duty to him, sonne.

S O G. This, sir ? a poore elder brother of mine, sir, a yeoman, may dispend some seuen or eight hundred a yeere : that's his son, my nephew, there.

P V N T. You are not ill-come, neighbour S O R D I D O, though I haue not yet said, well-come : what, my god-sonne is growne a great *proficient* by this ?

S O R D. I hope he will grow great one day, sir.

F A S T. What does he studie ? the law ?

S O G L. I sir, he is a gentleman, though his father be but a yeoman.

C A R L. What call you your nephew, signior ?

S O G L. Mary, his name is F V N G O S O.

C A R L. F V N G O S O ? O, he lookt somewhat like a sponge in that pinckt yellow doublet, me thought : well, make much of him ; I see he was neuer borne to ride vpon a moile.

G E N T. My lady will come presently, sir.

*Returnd  
aboue.*

S O G L. O, now, now.

P V N T. Stand by, retire your selues a space : nay, pray you, forget not the vse of your hat ; the aire is piercing.

*Sordido &  
Fungoso  
withdraw  
to the  
other part  
of the  
stage,  
while the  
lady is  
come to  
the win-  
dow.*

11 11 94 ioynted] ioynted Qr east-cheape,] East-cheape Qq . East-  
cheape, F2 the butchers] butchers Qq 11 11 Act . . . LADY]  
Enter Sordido, with his sonne Fungoso Qq without change of scene To  
the rest. add Ff 1 Yonder's] Sord. Yonders Qr Sord Yonders Qq 2,  
3 him,] hum Qq 2 This,] This Qq mine,] mine Qq 4 nephew,]  
nephew Qq 5 ill-come,] ill-come Qr: il-come Qq 2, 3 6 said,] said  
Qq well-come] welcom Qr: welcome Qq 2, 3 13 Mary,] Mary Qq  
15 yellow not in Qq doublet,] doublet Qq 18 presently,] presently  
Qq st. dir. Returnd aboue.] Enter Gent aboue. add Qq 19 O,]  
O Qq 20 st. dir.] Sordido and Fungoso withdraw at the other part of  
the stage, meane time the Ladie is come to the window. (tune, . . . Lady Q3)  
Qq in text after 21



470 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

F A S T. What ? will not their presence preuaile against  
the current of his humour ?

C A R L. O, no : it's a meere flood, a torrent, carries all  
25 afore it.

P V N T. *What more then heauenly pulchritude is this ?  
What magazine, or treasure of blisse ?  
Dazle, you organs to my optique sense,  
To view a creature of such eminence :  
30 O, I am planet-strooke, and in yond sphere,  
A brighter starre then V E N V S doth appeare !*

F A S T. How ? in verse !

C A R L. An extasie, an extasie, man.

L A D Y. Is your desire to speake with me, sir knight ?

35 C A R L. He will tell you that anon ; neither his braine,  
nor his body, are yet moulded for an answer.

P V N T. Most debonaire, and luculent lady, I decline mee  
low, as the *basis* of your altitude.

G R E X.

C O R D. He makes congies to his wife in geometricall  
40 proportions

M I T. Is't possible there should be any such Humorist ?

C O R D. Very easily possible, Sir, you see there is.

P V N T. I haue scarce collected my spirits, but lately  
scatter'd in the admiration of your forme ; to which (if the  
45 bounties of your minde be any way responsible) I doubt not,  
but my desires shall finde a smooth, and secure passage.  
I am a poore knight errant (lady) that hunting in the  
adjacent forrest, was by aduventure in the pursuit of a hart,  
brought to this place ; which hart (deare Madame) escaped  
50 by enchantment : the euening approaching (my selfe, and  
seruant wearied) my suit is, to enter your faire castle, and  
refresh me.

II. iii. 23 humour] humor Qq 24 O,] O Qq 26, 31 then] than Qq, F<sup>2</sup>  
28 you] your Q3 optique] oblique Q3 30 O,] O Q1 31 appeare!]   
appeare. Qq 32 verse!] verse ? Qq 38 low,] as low Qq 45 not,]   
not Qq 46 smooth,] smooth Qq 47 knight errant] Knighterrant Qq   
48 adjacent] adjacent Qq 2, 3 50 selfe,] selfe Qq 51 enter om F<sup>3</sup>



LADY. Sir knight, albeit it be not vsuall with me (chiefly in the absense of a husband) to admit any entrance to strangers, yet in the true regard of those innated vertues, 55 and faire parts, which so strue to expresse themselues, in you; I am resolu'd to entertaine you to the best of my vnworthy power: which I acknowledge to bee nothing, valew'd with what so worthy a person may deserue. Please you but stay, while I descend. 60

PVNT. Most admir'd lady, you astonish me!

CARL. What? with speaking a speech of your owne penning? *Shee departs. Puntaruolo falls in with Sordido, and his sonne*

FAST. Nay, looke; pr'y thee peace.

CARL. Pox on't. I am impatient of such fopperie.

FAST. O, let's heare the rest.

CARL. What? a tedious chapter of courtship, after 67 sir LANCELOT, and queene GVEVENER? away. I mar'le in what dull cold nooke he found this lady out? that (being a woman) shee was blest with no more copie 70 of wit, but to serue his humour thus. 'Slud, I thinke he feeds her with porridge, I: shee could ne're haue such a thick braine else.

SOGL. Why, is porridge so hurtfull, signior?

CARL. O, nothing vnder heauen more preiudiciall to 75 those ascending subtile powers, or doth sooner abate that which we call, *acumen ingenij*, then your grosse fare: why, I'll make you an instance: your city wiues, but obserue 'hem, you ha' not more perfect true fooles i' the world bred, then they are generally; and yet you see (by the finenesse 80 and delicacy of their diet, diuing into the fat capons, drinking your rich wines, feeding on larkes, sparrows,

11 in 55 innated] inward Q3 56 parts,] parts Qq 1, 3. partes Q2  
 themselues,] themselues Qq 57 entertaine] enterteine Q1 - 58  
 power:] power, Qq 1, 2 61 st. dir.] *She departs: and Puntaruolo*  
*... sonne (Puntaruolo Q1) Qq in text after 60 61 me 'I me. Qq*  
 64 Nay,] Nay Qq looke, Q3 66 O,] O Qq 68 GVEVENER  
 F1: Gueuener Q1, F3: Gueuener Qq 2, 3: GVEVENER F2. Guenever G  
 away.] away: Qq 1, 3: awaie: Q2 71 humour] Humor Q1 'Slud]  
 Sblood Qq 72 porridge,] porridge. F2, F3 74 Why,] Why Qq 75  
 preiudiciall] preiudiciall Q1 77, 80 then] than Qq, F2 77 why,] why  
 Qq 79 i'the] i'rhe Q2: in the Q3 bred,] bred Qq 1, 2: bredde, Q3



potato-pies, and such good vinctuous meats) how their wits are refin'd, and rarefi'd ! and sometimes a very *quintessence* 85 of conceit flowes from 'hem, able to drowne a weake apprehension.

F A S T. Peace, here comes the lady.

*Lady with her gent descended, seeing them, turnes in againe.* L A D Y. Gods me, here's company . turne in againe.

F A S T. S'light, our presence has cut off the conuoy of the iest.

C A R L. All the better ; I am glad on't : for the issue was very perspicuous. Come, let's discouer, and salute the 93 knight.

*Carlo, and the other two, step forth* P V N T. Stay : who be these that addresse themselues towards vs ? what, C A R L O ? now, by the sincerity of my 96 soule, welcome ; welcome gentlemen : and how doest thou, thou grand scourge ; or, second *vntrusse* of the time ?

C A R L. Faith, spending my mettall, in this reeling world (here and there) as the sway of my affection carries me, and 100 perhaps stumble vpon a yeoman pheuterer, as I doe now ; or one of *Fortunes* moiles, laden with treasure, and an empty cloke-bagge following him, gaping when a bagge will vntie.

P V N T. Peace, you, ban-dogge, peace : what briske *Ninfadoro* is that in the white virgin boot there ?

105 C A R L. Mary, sir, one, that I must entreat you take a very particular knowledge of, and with more then ordinary respect : Monsieur F A S T I D I V S.

P V N T. Sir, I could wish that for the time of your vouchsaft abiding here, and more reall entertainment, this 110 my house stood on the *Muses* hill ; and these my orchards were those of the *Hesperide's*.

ii. iii. 83 potato-pies] Potato pyes Qq 84 refin'd,] refin'd Qq 1, 2 .  
refinde Q3 rarefi'd !] rarefi'd : Qq 1, 2 : ratifide : Q3 85 'hem] them Q3 85 apprehension.] Apprehension, Q2 88 st. dir.] Enter *Lathe with her Gent. and seeing them, turnes in againe.* (*Lady* Q3 . *turnes* Q2) Qq in text after 87 90 iest] iest Qr 94 st. dir.] *Carlo and the other two, step forth to Punt.* Qq in text after 93 95 what,] what Qq now,] now Qq 97 grand . . . time] *Grand Scourge ; or, Second Vntrusse of the time* Qq (*Scourge, or* Qq 2, 3) 98 Faith,] Faith Qq mettall,] mettall Qq 101 moiles,] Moyles Qq 103 Peace, you, ban-dogge,] Peace you bandogge Qq (*Bandogge* Qr) 105 Mary,] Mary Qq take] to take Q3 106 then] than Qq (so 114, 118) 109 reall] Reall Qq



F A S T. I possesse as much in your wish, sir, as if I were made lord of the *Indies*; and I pray you, beleuee it.

C A R L. I haue a better opinion of his faith, then to thinke it will be so corrupted. 115

S O G L. Come, brother, I'lle bring you acquainted with gentlemen, and good fellowes, such as shall doe you more grace, then——

S O R D. Brother, I hunger not for such acquaintance: *Carlo is com̄ing to-ward them.*  
Doe you take heede, lest——

S O G L. Husht: my brother, sir, for want of education, sir, somewhat nodding to the boore, the clowne: but 122  
I request you in priuate, sir.

F V N G. By heauen, it's a very fine sute of clothes!

### G R E X.

C O R. Doe you obserue that, signior? there's another 125  
humour has new crackt the shell.

M I T. What? he is enamour'd of the fashion, is he?

C O R. O, you forestall the iest.

F V N. I mar'le what it might stand him in!

S O G. Nephew? 130

F V N. 'Fore mee, it's an excellent sute, and as neatly becomes him. What said you, vncle?

S O G. When saw you my neece?

F V N. Mary, yester-night I supt there. That kinde of boot does very rare too! 135

S O G. And what newes heare you?

F V N. The guilt spurre and all! would I were hang'd, but 'tis exceeding good. Say you, vncle?

11 in 112 wish,] wish Qq 113 you,] you Qq 116 Come,] Come Qq.  
119 stage dir add Qq after 120 120 lest——] least:—— Qq  
121 brother,] Brother Qq education,] education Qq 122 clowne.]  
Clowne; Qq 123 priuate,] priuat Qq 1, 2: priuate Q3 124  
heauen] Iesu Qq it's] it is Q3 clothes ]] cloathes. Qq 126 humour]  
humor Qq 2, 3 128 O.] O Qq iest] jeast Q1 129 mar'le] marl'e  
F2 in ]] in? Qq 131 mee,] mee F2 God Qq it's] it is Q3  
132 you,] you Qq 134 Mary,] Mary Qq 135 too ]] too. Qq 137  
all ]] all: Qq 138 'tis] it is Q3 you, vncle?] you? Qq



S o G. Your minde is carried away with somewhat else :  
 140 I aske what newes you heare ?

F v N. Troth, we heare none. In good faith, I was neuer  
 so pleas'd with a fashion, daies of my life ! O (and I might  
 haue but my wish) I'd aske no more of god now, but such  
 a suit, such a hat, such a band, such a doublet, such a hose,  
 145 such a boot, and such a———

S o G. They say, there's a new Motion of the city of  
*Nimueh*, with I o N A S, and the whale, to be seene at Fleet-  
 bridge ? you can tell, cousin ?

F v N. Here's such a world of question with him, now :  
 150 Yes, I thinke there be such a thing, I saw the picture  
 would he would once be satisfi'd. Let me see, the doublet,  
 say fifty shillings the doublet, and betweene three or foure  
 pound the hose ; then bootes, hat, and band : some ten  
 or eleuen pound would doe it all, and suit me *for the heauens*.

155 S o G. I'll see all those deuices, and I come to *London*  
 once.

F v N. Gods s'lid, and I could compasse it, 'twere rare :  
 harke you, vncke.

S o G. What saies my nephew ?

160 F v N. Faith vncke, I'd ha' desir'd you to haue made  
 a motion for me to my father in a thing, that—walke aside  
 and I'll tell you, sir, no more but this : there's a parcell  
 of law-bookes, (some twenty pounds worth) that lie in a  
 place for little more then halfe the money they cost ; and  
 165 I thinke for some twelue pound, or twenty marke, I could  
 goe neere to redeeme 'hem ; there's P L O W D E N, D I A R,  
 B R O O K E, and F I T Z- H E R B E R T, diuers such, as

11 in 141 Troth,] Troth Qq none In] none in Qq faith,]  
 faith Qq 142 fashion,] fashion Qq life !] life, Qq and] an'  
 F2, F3 143 god] God Qq: good F3 146 say,] say Qq 147  
 IONAS,] IONAS Qq 148 tell,] tell Qq 149 him,] him Qq  
 151 satisfi'd] satisfied F2 153 hat] the Hat Qq 154 would]  
 will F3 for] fore F2, F3 155 and] an' F2, F3 157 Gods s'lid]  
 Gods S'lid Q2: God slid Q3 158 you,] you Qq 161 that—]  
 that, Qq 1, 2: that: Q3 162 you, sir F1: you sir Qq: you; sir F2  
 163 law-bookes] Law books Q1: Lawbooks Q2: Lawe bookes Q3: law  
 ---bookes F1. law---books F2 164 then] than Qq, F2 165  
 pound,] pound Qq 1, 2: pounce Q3 167 F I T Z- H E R B E R T,] Fitz-  
 Herbert: Q1; Fitz Herbert, Q2: Fitz Herbert. Q3 such,] such Qq



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 475

I must haue ere long : and you know, I were as good saue  
fue or sixe pound as not, vncke. I pray you, moue it for me.

S o G. That I will : when would you haue me doe it ? 170  
presently ?

F v N. O, I, I pray you, good vncke : God send mee good  
luck ; Lord (and't be thy will) prosper it : O, my starres,  
now, now, if it take now, I am made for euer.

F a s t. Shall I tell you, sir ? by this aire, I am the most 175  
beholding to that lord, of any gentleman liuing ; hee does  
vse mee the most honorably, and with the greatest respect,  
more indeed, then can be vtter'd with any opinion of truth.

P v N t. Then, haue you the count G R A T I A T O ?

F a s t. As true noble a gentleman too, as any breathes, 180  
I am exceedingly endear'd to his loue : by this hand (I pro-  
test to you, signior, I speake it not gloriously, nor out of  
affectation, but) there's hee, and the count F R V G A L E,  
signior I L L V S T R E, signior L V C V L E N T O, and a sort  
of 'hem ; that (when I am at court) they doe share me 185  
amongst 'hem. Happy is he can enioy me most priuate.  
I doe wish my selfe sometime an vbiquitarie for their loue,  
in good faith.

C A R L. There's ne're a one of these, but might lie a  
weeke on the rack, ere they could bring forth his name ; 190  
and yet he powres them out as familiarly, as if he had seene  
'hem stand by the fire i' the presence, or ta'ne tabacco with  
them, ouer the stage, i' the lords roome.

P v N t. Then you must of necessity know our court-

II III. 168 know,] know Qq 169 vncke.] Vncke . Qq you,] you  
Qq moue] mouue Qr 172 O,] O Qq you,] you Qq 173  
and't] and it Q3 : an't F2, F3 O, my starres,] O Iesu ; Qq 1, 2 : O  
Iesu : Q3 174 take now,] take (O Christ) Qq 175 you, sir ?]  
you sir : Qq aire,] aire Qq 1, 2 176 beholding] beholden F3  
177 honorably] honourably Qq 178 then] than Qq, F2 179 Then,]  
Then Qq you] you, Qq 180 too,] too Qq breathes] breaths  
Qr 181 by this hand] by Iesu, Qq 182 you,] you Qq 185  
'hem ;] them ; Q3 : 'hem, F2 court] the Court Qq 186 'hem]  
them Q3 enioy] enjoy Qr priuate] priuat ; Qq 1, 2 : pri-  
uate ; Q3 189 ne're] neuer Q3 these,] these Qq 190 forth]  
foorth Qq 191 familiarly,] familiarly Qr . familiarlie Q2 192  
'hem] them Q3 193 them,] them Qq stage,] stage Qq 1, 2  
1'] in Q3



# 476 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

195 starre there? that planet of wit, M A D D O N A S A V I O -  
L I N A ?

F A S T. O, lord sir! my mistris.

P V N T. Is shee your mistris?

F A S T. Faith, here be some slight fauours of hers, sir,  
200 that doe speake it, *shee is*: as this scarfe, sir, or this ribband  
in mine care, or so; this feather grew in her sweet fanne  
sometimes, though now it be my poore fortunes to weare  
it, as you see, sir: slight, slight, a foolish toy.

P V N T. Well, shee is the lady of a most exalted, and  
205 ingenious spirit.

F A S T. Did you euer heare any woman speake like her?  
or enricht with a more plentifull discourse?

C A R L. O, villanous! nothing but sound, sound, a  
meere *eccho*; shee speakes as shee goes tir'd, in cob-web  
210 lawne, light, thin: good enough to catch flies withall.

P V N T. O, manage your affections.

F A S T. Well, if thou beest not plagu'd for this blas-  
phemie, one day--

P V N T. Come, regard not a iester: it is in the power of  
215 my purse, to make him speake well, or ill, of me.

F A S T. Sir, I affirme it to you (vpon my credit, and  
iudgement) shee has the most harmonious, and musicall  
straine of wit, that euer tempted a true eare; and yet to  
see, a rude tongue would profane heauen, if it could.

220 P V N T. I am not ignorant of it, sir.

F A S T. Oh, it flowes from her like *nectar*, and shee doth  
giue it, that sweet, quick grace, and exornation in the  
composure, that (by this good aire, as I am an honest man,

II. iii. 195 SAVIOLINA] *Saviolina* Q1 197 O, lord] O Lord Qq  
197, 198 mistris] mistresse Qq 199 hers,] hers Qq 200 is:] is; Qq  
scarfe,] Scarfe Qq 202 fortunes] fortune Qq 2, 3 203 it,] it Qq  
see,] see Qq slight, a] slight; a Qx 205 ingenious] ingenious Qq  
207 enricht] inricht F2, F3 208 O,] O Qq 209 *eccho*,] *Eccho*,  
Qq 2, 3 cob-web] Cobweb Qq 212 blasphemie,] blasphemie Qq  
213 day--] day:-- Qq 1, 3 daie: --- Q 2 214 iester:] iester; Qx:  
iester; Q2: iester: Q3 215 purse,] purse Qq well, or ill,] well or  
ill Qq 216 credit,] Credit Qq 217 harmonious,] Harmonious Qq  
218 true] true Q3 219 tongue] rogue Q3 would] will Qq  
heauen, if it could,] Heauen. Qq 220 it,] it Qq 223 (by this good  
aire,) (*By this good Heauen*) Qq 223-4 as I am . . . but] not in Qq



would I might neuer stirre, sir, but) shee does obserue as pure a phrase, and vse as choise figures in her ordinary<sup>225</sup> conferences, as any be i' the *Arcadia*.

CARL. Or rather in *Greenes* workes, whence she may steale with more security.

SORD. Well, if ten pound will fetch 'hem, you shall haue it, but I'll part with no more. <sup>230</sup>

FVNG. I'll trie what that will doe, if you please.

SORD. Doe so : and when you haue 'hem, studie hard.

FVNG. Yes, sir. And I could studie to get forty shillings more now ! well, I will put my selfe into the fashion, as farre as this will goe presently. <sup>235</sup>

SORD. I wonder it raines not ! the Almanack saies wee should haue store of raine, to day.

PVNT. Why, sir, to morrow I will associate you to court my selfe ; and from thence to the city, about a busnesse, a proiect I haue, I will expose it to you, sir : CARLO, I am <sup>240</sup> sure, has heard of it.

CARL. What's that, sir ?

PVNT. I doe intend, this yeere of *Iubile*, comming on, to trauaile : and (because I will not altogether goe vpon expence) I am determin'd to put forth some fūe thousand <sup>245</sup> pound, to be paid me, fūe for one, vpon the returne of my selfe, my wife, and my dog, from the *Turkes* court in *Constantinople*. If all, or either of vs miscarry in the iourney, 'tis gone : if we be successfull, why, there will be fūe and twenty thousand pound, to entertaine time <sup>250</sup> withall. Nay, goe not neighbour SORDIDO, stay to night, and helpe to make our societie the fuller. Gentlemen, frolick : CARLO ? what ? dull now ?

II iii 233 Yes, sir.] Yes sir. Qq And] and Qq. An' F2, F3 234  
now!] now: Qq 235 goe] goe, Q3 237 raine,] raine Qq 238  
Why.] Why Qq court] the Court Qq 239 a busnesse] busnesse  
Q3 240 proiect] Project Qr haue,] haue: Qq you,] you Qq  
240-1 CARLO, ... sure,] Carlo ... sure Qq 242 that,] that Qq 243  
intend,] intend Qq 243-4 *Iubile*, comming on, to] *Iubile* to Qq 244  
altogether] altogether Qq 246 me,] me Qq 249 iourney] iourney Qr  
250 fūe and twenty] xxv. Qq pound,] pound Qq 1, 2 : pounce Q3  
251 SORDIDO,] *Sordido*; Qq



478 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

CARL. I was thinking on your proiect, sir, and you call  
255 it so : is this the dog goes with you ?

PVNT. This is the dogge, sir.

CARL. He do' not goe bare-foot, does he ?

PVNT. Away, you traitor, away.

CARL. Nay, afore god, I speake simply ; he may pricke  
260 his foot with a thorne, and be as much as the whole venter  
is worth. Besides, for a dog that neuer trauail'd before, it's  
a huge iourney to *Constantinople* : I'll tell you now (and  
he were mine) I'd haue some present conference with  
a physicion, what antidotes were good to giue him, pre-  
265 seruatiues against poison for (assure you) if once your  
money be out, there'll be diuers attempts made against the  
life of the poore *animal*

PVNT. Thou art still dangerous.

FAST. Is signior DELIRO's wife your kinswoman ?

270 SOGL. I, sir, shee is my neece, my brothers daughter  
here, and my nephewes sister.

SORD. Doe you know her, sir ?

FAST. O, God sir, Signior DELIRO, her husband, is  
my marchant.

275 FVNG. I, I haue seene this gentleman there, often.

FAST. I crie you mercy, sir : let me craue your name,  
pray you.

FVNG. FVNGOSO, sir.

FAST. Good signior FVNGOSO, I shall request to  
280 know you better, sir.

FVNG. I am her brother, sir.

FAST. In faire time, sir.

II. iii 254 proiect,] Project Qr : Project Qq 2, 3 and] an' F2, F3  
256 dogge,] Dogge Qq 258 Away,] Away Qq traitor] traytour Qr  
259 Nay,] Nay Qq god] God Qq 260 venter] venture F2, F3  
261 worth] woorth Qq 262 iourney] journey Qr and] an' F2, F3  
264 physicion] Physician Qr : Physician Q2. Physitian Q3 pre-  
seruatiues] and Preseruatiues Qq 266 there'll be] there will be Q3  
(corrected to there will be) 270 I,] I Qq 272 her,] her Qq 273  
O,] O Qq, F2 DELIRO,] Deliro Qq 1, 3 : Diliro Q2 husband,] hus-  
band Qq 274 marchant] Merchant Qq, F3 275 I, I] I, Q3  
276 mercy,] mercie Qq 1, 2 : mercy Q3 278 FVNGOSO,] Fungoso Qq  
280 better,] better Qq 281 brother,] brother Qq 282 time,]  
time Qq



P V N T. Come, gentlemen, I will be your conduct.

F A S T. Nay, pray you, sir; we shall meet at signior  
D E L I R O's often. 285

S O G L. You shall ha' me at the *Heralds* office, sir, for  
some weeke or so, at my first comming vp. Come, C A R L O.

*G R E X.*

M I T. Me thinkes, C O R D A T V S, he dwelt somewhat  
too long on this *Scene*; it hung i' the hand.

C O R. I see not where he could haue insisted lesse, and 290  
t'haue made the humours perspicuous enough.

M I T. True, as his subiect lies: but hee might haue  
altered the shape of his argument, and explicated 'hem  
better in single *Scenes*.

C O R. That had beene single indeed. why? be they not 295  
the same persons in this, as they would haue beene in  
those? and is it not an object of more state, to behold the  
*Scene* full, and relieu'd with varietie of speakers to the end,  
then to see a vast emptie stage, and the actors come in (one  
by one) as if they were dropt downe with a feather, into the 300  
eye of the spectators?

M I T. Nay, you are better traded with these things then  
I, and therefore I'll subscribe to your iudgement; mary,  
you shall giue mee leaue to make obiections.

C O R. O, what else? it's the speciall intent of the 305  
author, you should doe so: for thereby others (that are  
present) may as well be satisfied, who happily would object  
the same you doe.

ii. iii. 283 Come,] Come Qq 284 Nay, . . . you,] Nay. you Qq  
286 *Heralds*] Heralds Q3 office,] office Qq 287 so,] so F2 Come,]  
Come Qq *Exeunt.* add Qq 288 thinkes,] thinks Qq 289 hung]  
hun'g Q2 1'] in Q3 291 t'haue] to haue Q3 humours] Humors  
Qq 292 subiect.] Subject Qr 293 his *not in* Qq 297 object]  
object Qr 299 then Q3, F1: than Qq 1, 2, F2 300 feather,]  
feather Qq 301 spectators] Audience Qq 302 then] than Qq, F2  
303 iudgement] judgement Qr mary,] mary Qq 1, 2: marry Q3  
304 obiections] objections Qr 305 O,] O Qq 306 author,]  
Author Qq 307 happily] haply F3 object] object Qr 308 the]  
the Q3



480 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

M I T. So, sir: but when appeares M A C I L E N T E  
310 againe?

C O R. Mary, hee staies but till our silence giue him leaue:  
here hee comes, and with him signior D E L I R O, a mar-  
chant, at whose house hee is come to sojourne: Make your  
owne obseruation now, onely transferre your thoughts to  
315 the city, with the *Scene*; where, suppose they speake.

*Act II. Scene III.*

D E L I R O, M A C I L E N T E, F I D O,  
F A L L A C E.

I'Le tell you by and by, sir.

I Welcome (good M A C I L E N T E) to my house,  
To sojourne euen for euer: if my best

4 In cates, and euery sort of good intreaty

*Deliro  
censeth.  
His boy  
sinewes  
flowres.*

May moue you stay with me. M A C I. I thanke you, sir:

And yet the muffled *fates* (had it pleas'd them)

Might haue suppli'd me, from their owne full store,

Without this word (I thanke you) to a foole.

I see no reason, why that dog (call'd *Chance*)

10 Should fawne vpon this fellow, more then me:

I am a man, and I haue limmes, flesh, bloud,

Bones, sinewes, and a soule, as well as he:

My parts are euery way as good as his,

If I said better? why, I did not lie.

II. iii. 309 So, sir:] So sir, Qq After 310] Enter Maculente, Deliro,  
*rido, with hearbs and perfumes.* Qq 311 Mary,] Mary Qq 312 him,  
him, Q3 DELIRO,] Deliro Qq marchant,] merchant Qx: Merchant  
Qq 2, 3 313 sojourne] sojourne Qq 2, 3 314 now,] now; Qq 1, 2:  
now: Q3 315 city,] Citie Qq 1, 2: Citie Q3 II. iv. Act... FALLACE.]  
SCENA TERTIA. Qq: SCENE II — The City. A Room in Deliro's House. G  
1 I'le] Deliro. I'le Qq by,] by Qq 3 sojourne] sojourne Qq 2, 3:  
euen] at my house F2, F3 euer:] euer; Qq 1, 2: euer, Q3 4 In  
cates] Incates F2, F3 5 moue] moue Qr you,] you Qq st.  
dir Deliro... flowres.] Deliro turnes to his boy, and falls a strowing of  
flowres. (fals Qq 2, 3) Qq in text after 'me' 7 me, ... store,]  
me ... store Qq 8 (I thanke you)] (I thanke you) Qq 9 reason,]  
reason Qq 10 fellow,] fellow Qq then] than Qq, F2 12 soule,]  
Soule Qq 14 why,] why Qq lie,] lie, Qq 1, 2: lie; Q3



Nath'lesse, his wealth (but nodding on my wants) 15

Must make me bow, and crie : (I thanke you, sir.)

DEL I. Dispatch, take heed your mistris see you not.

F I D O. I warrant you, sir. I'le steale by her softly.

DEL I. Nay, gentle friend, be merry, raise your looks  
Out of your bosome, I protest (by heauen) 20

You are the man most welcome in the world.

M A C I. (I thanke you, sir,) I know my *cue*, I thinke.

F I D O. Where wil you haue 'hem burne, sir? DEL I. *With more*

Here, good F I D O : *perfumes*

What? shee did not see thee? F I D O. No, sir. DEL I. *and*

That's well :

Strew, strew, good F I D O, the freshest flowres, so. 25

M A C I. What meanes this, signior DEL I R O? all this  
censing?

DEL I. Cast in more frankincense, yet more, well said.

O, M A C I L E N T E, I haue such a wife !

So passing faire, so passing farre vnkind,

But of such worth, and right to be vnkind, 30

(Since no man can be worthy of her kindnesse.)

M A C I. What can there not? DEL I. No, that is  
sure as death,

No man aliue ! I doe not say, is not,

But cannot possibly be worth her kindnesse !

Nay, it is certaine, let me doe her right. 35

How, said I? doe her right? as though I could,

As though this dull grosse tongue of mine could vtter

II iv. 15 Nath'lesse,] Nath'lesse Qq 16 (I thanke you, sir)] I  
thanke you Sir. Qq (sir. Q3) 17 mistris] mistresse Qq 18 you,]  
you Qq : sir I'le] Sir, I'll F3 Exit Fido. Qq (after 'sir') I'le...  
softly not in Qq 19 Nay, . . friend,] Nay . . friend Qq 22  
(I . . you, sir,)] I . . you Sir, Qq (sir, Q3) cue,] cue Qq 23  
st dir. With . . herbes.] Enter Fido with two Censors Qq in text after  
22 23-5 F3 divides at sir? | DELI. . see thee? | FIDO No, sir |  
DELI. . . so 23 burne,] burne Qq Here,] Here Qq 24 No,]  
No Qq 25 flowres] flowers Qq 26 this,] this Qq all this censing?  
not in Qq 28 O,] O Qq wife!] wife, Qq 29 farre vnkind] faire  
vnkind Qq : faire! unkind F2, F3 : fair-unkind W 30 But] And  
Qq worth,] worth Qq 33 aliue!] aliue : Qq say, is not,] say  
is not, Qq 1, 2 : say is not. Q3 34 But] But, F2. kindnesse!] kind-  
nesse. Qq 35 Nay,] Nay Qq it] that Qq right.] Right: Qq 36  
How,] How Qq



The rare, the true, the pure, the infinite rights,  
That sit (as high as I can looke) within her !

40 M A C I. This is such dotage, as was neuer heard.

D E L I. Well, this must needs be granted. M A C I.  
Granted, quoth you ?

D E L I. Nay, M A C I L E N T E ; doe not so discredit  
The goodnesse of your iudgement to denie it,  
For I doe speake the very least of her.

45 And I would craue, and beg no more of heauen,  
For all my fortunes here, but to be able  
To vtter first in fit termes, what shee is,  
And then the true ioyes I conceiue in her.

M A C I. Is't possible, shee should deserue so well,  
50 As you pretend ? D E L I. I, and shee knowes so well  
Her owne deserts, that (when I striue t'enioy them)  
Shee weighs the things I doe, with what shee merits :  
And (seeing my worth out-weigh'd so in her graces)  
Shee is so solemne, so precise, so froward,  
55 That no obseruance I can doe to her,  
Can make her kind to me : if shee find fault,  
I mend that fault ; and then shee saies, I faulted,  
That I did mend it. Now, good friend, aduise me,  
How I may temper this strange splene in her.

60 M A C I. You are too amorous, too obsequious,  
And make her too assur'd, shee may command you.  
When women doubt most of their husbands loues,  
They are most louing. Husbands must take heed  
They giue no gluts of kindnesse to their wiues,  
65 But vse them like their horses ; whom they feed  
Not with a manger-full of meat together,

\* II. iv. 38 rights,] Rights Qq 39 sit] sir Q3 her !] her. Qq 40  
dotage,] dotage Qq 41 Granted,] Graunted Qq 1, 3. Granted Q2 42  
Nay,] Nay Qq 43 iudgement,] judgement Q1 45 craue,] craue Qq  
heauen,] heauen Qq 48 ioyes] ioies Q1 49 possible,] possible Qq  
well,] well Qq 1, 3 : wel Q2 51 deserts,] deserts Qq enioy] enjoy Q1  
52 weighs] waies Qq 53 out-weigh'd] outwai'd Qq 57 fault:] fault,  
Qq saies,] saies Qq faulted,] faulted Qq 58 Now, . . . friend,] Now  
. . . Friend Qq me,] me Qq 61 her] her. Qq assur'd,] assur'd Qq  
command] commaund Q1 65 horses ;] Horses, Qq 66 manger-full  
Qq : manger -- full F1 : manger --- full F2 together] together Q3



But halfe a pecke at once : and keepe them so  
 Still with an appetite to that they giue them.  
 He that desires to haue a louing wife,  
 Must bridle all the shew of that desire : 70  
 Be kind, not amorous ; nor bewraying kindnesse,  
 As if loue wrought it, but considerate duty.  
 " Offer no loue-rites, but let wiues still seeke them,  
 " For when they come vnsought, they seldome like them.  
 D E L I. Beleeue me, M A C I L E N T E, this is gospell. 75  
 O, that a man were his owne man so much,  
 To rule himselfe thus. I will striue i' faith,  
 To be more strange and carelesse : yet, I hope  
 I haue now taken such a perfect course,  
 To make her kind to me, and liue contented, 80  
 That I shall find my kindnesse well return'd,  
 And haue no need to fight with my affections.  
 Shee (late) hath found much fault with euery roome  
 Within my house ; one was too big (shee said)  
 Another was not furnisht to her mind, 85  
 And so through all : all which, now, I haue alter'd.  
 Then here, shee hath a place (on my back-side)  
 Wherein shee loues to walke ; and that (shee said)  
 Had some ill smels about it. Now, this walke  
 Haue I (before shee knowes it) thus perfum'd 90  
 With herbes, and flowres, and laid in diuers places,  
 (As 'twere on altars, consecrate to her)  
 Perfumed gloues, and delicate chaines of amber,  
 To keepe the aire in awe of her sweet nostrils :  
 This haue I done, and this I thinke will please her. 95  
 Behold, shee comes. F A L L. Here's a sweet stinke indeed :

II 1v 67 once ] once, Qq 71 amorous,] amorous, Qq 72  
 duty ] Dutie: Qq 1, 3. Duty. Q2 74 seldome] sildome Q3  
 75 me,] me Qq 76 O,] O Qq 77 thus ] thus; Qq 1'faith,] 1'faith  
 Qr. yfaith Qq 2, 3 78 yet,] yet Qq 80 me,] mee F2 86 which,  
 now,] which Qq 87 here,] here Q back-side] backside Qr: back-  
 side Qq 2, 3 88 walke ;] walke, Qq 2, 3 89 Now,] Now Qq 91  
 herbes,] herbes Qq 1, 2: hearbes Q3 flowres] flowers Qq, F2 places,]  
 places Qq 92 altars,] Altars Qq 94 nostrils] nostrils Qq 1, 3:  
 nostrils Q2 96 Behold,] Behold Qq Enter Fallace Qq (after  
 'comes')



What, shall I euer be thus crost, and plagu'd ?  
 And sicke of husband ? O, my head doth ake,  
 As it would cleaue asunder with these sauours,  
 100 All my room's alter'd, and but one poore walke  
 That I delighted in, and that is made  
 So fulsome with perfumes, that I am fear'd  
 (My braine doth sweat so) I haue caught the plague.

DEL I. Why (gentle wife) is now thy walke too sweet ?  
 105 Thou said'st of late, it had sowre aires about it,  
 And found'st much fault, that I did not correct it.

FALL. Why, and I did find fault, sir ? DEL I. Nay,  
 deare wife ;

I know, thou hast said, thou hast lou'd perfumes,  
 No woman better. FALL. I, long since perhaps,  
 110 But now that sense is alter'd : you would haue me  
 (Like to a puddle, or a standing poole)  
 To haue no motion, nor no spirit within me.  
 No, I am like a pure, and sprightly ruer,  
 That moues for euer, and yet still the same ;  
 115 Or fire, that burnes much wood, yet still one flame.

DEL I. But yesterday, I saw thee at our garden,  
 Smelling on roses, and on purple flowres,  
 And since, I hope, the humour of thy sense  
 Is nothing chang'd. FALL. Why, those were growing  
 flowres,

120 And these, within my walke, are cut and strew'd.

DEL I. But yet they haue one sent. FALL. I !  
 haue they so ?

In your grosse iudgement. If you make no difference

ii. iv 97 crost,] crost Qq 98 O,] O Qq ake,] ake Qq 99  
 asunder] asunder, F2 these] those F2, F3 sauours] sauors Qq 1, 2  
 105 late,] late Qq sowre] sower Qq 107 and,] an' F2, F3 fault,]  
 fault Qq Nay,] Nay Qq 108 know, . . . said,] know said Qq  
 111 puddle,] puddle Qq a standing] standing Q3 113 pure,] pure  
 Qq sprightly] sprightfull Q3 115 fire,] fire Qq 116 garden,]  
 garden Qq 117 roses,] Roses Qq flowres] flowers Qq, F2 (so 119,  
 123) 118 since, I hope,] since I hope Qq humour] Humor Qq 119  
 Why,] Why Qq 120 these,] these Qq walke,] walke Qq 121  
 I !] I, Qq 122 iudgement. I] judgement : if Q1 : judgement : if  
 Qq 2, 3



Betwixt the sent of growing flowres, and cut ones,  
 You haue a sense to taste lamp-oile, yfaith.  
 And with such iudgement haue you chang'd the chambers, 125  
 Leauing no roome, that I can ioy to be in,  
 In all your house : and now my walke, and all,  
 You smoke me from, as if I were a foxe,  
 And long, belike, to driue me quite away.

Well, walke you there, and I'll walke where I list. 130

DELI. What shall I doe ? ô, I shall neuer please her,

M A C I. Out on thee, dotard ! what starre rul'd his birth ?  
 That brought him such a starre ? blind *Fortune* still  
 Bestowes her gifts on such as cannot vse them :

How long shall I liue, ere I be so happy, 135

To haue a wife of this exceeding forme ?

DELI. Away, with 'hem, would I had broke a ioynt,  
 When I deuis'd this, that should so dislike her.

*Fido  
 beares al  
 away.*

Away, beare all away. F A L L. I, doe : for feare

Ought that is there should like her. O, this man, 140

How cunningly he can conceale himselfe !

As though he lou'd ? nay, honour'd, and ador'd ?

DELI. Why, my sweet heart ? F A L L. Sweet heart !

ô ! better still !

And asking, why ? wherefore ? and looking strangely,

As if he were as white as innocence. 145

Alas, you'r simple, you : you cannot change,

Looke pale at pleasure, and then red with wonder :

No, no, not you ! 'tis pittie o' your naturalls.

II. iv. 124 -oile,] -oyle F2 125 iudgement] judgement Qr 126  
 roome,] roome Qq 10y] joy Qr 1n.] in Qq 127 walke,] Walke  
 Qq all,] all Qq 129 long, belike,] long belike Qq away,] away : Qq  
 130 Well,] Well Qq 131 ô,] oh Qq her,] her. Qq 132 thee,  
 dotard !] thee dotard, Qq 137 DELI om Qr Away,] Away Qq  
 'hem] them Q3 10ynt] joint Qr 138 st dir. add Qq in text after  
 'away' (l. 139) st dir. beares] beare Q3 this,] this Qq her,]  
 her, Qq 139 I,] I Qq 140 O, this man,] O this man Qq 141  
 himselfe !] himselfe, Qq 142 lou'd ? nay, honour'd,] lou'd ? lou'd ?  
 nay honour'd Qq 143 Two lines in Qq, Ff heart ! ô !] heart ? oh, Qq  
 still !] still : Qq 144 asking,] asking Qq 148 you !] you : Qq  
 'tis pittie o' your naturalls not in Qq, in which 'No, no . . . e'en now'  
 (148-9) makes one line



486 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

I did but cast an amorous eye, e'en now,  
 150 Vpon a paire of gloues, that somewhat lik't me,  
 And straight he noted it, and gaue command,  
 All should be ta'ne away. D E L I. Be they my bane then.  
 What, sirra, F I D O, bring in those gloues againe,  
 You tooke from hence. F A L L. S'boday, sir, but doe not,  
 155 Bring in no gloues, to spite me : if you doe———  
 D E L I. Ay, me, most wretched; how am I misconstru'd?  
 M A C I. O, how shee tempts my heart-strings, with her  
 eye,  
 To knit them to her beauties, or to breake?  
 What mou'd the heauens, that they could not make  
 160 Me such a woman? but a man, a beast,  
 That hath no blisse like to others. Would to heauen  
 (In wreake of my misfortunes) I were turn'd  
 To some faire water-*Nymph*, that (set vpon  
 The deepest whirle-pit of the rau'nous seas,)  
 165 My adamantine eyes might head-long hale  
 This iron world to me, and drowne it all.

G R E X.

C O R. Behold, behold, the translated gallant.  
 M I T. O, he is welcome.

II. iv. 149 amorous eye] amouseye Fr eye,] eye Q1 : eie Qq 2, 3  
 now,] now Qq 150, 155 gloues,] Gloues Qq 151 command,] com-  
 maund Qq 152 then] then: Qq 153 What,] What Qq againe,]  
 againe Qq Enter Fido add Qq 154 S'boday,] S'boday Qq : om. F2, F3  
 sir,] sirra Qq not,] not: Qq 155 you] ye Q3 156 Ay,] Ay Qq  
 157 -strings,] -strings Qq eye,] eye Q1 160 man,] man; Qq  
 161 hath] haath Q3 heauen] God Qq 163 (set] set Qq 164  
 whirle-pit] whirlepit Qq seas,)] Seas, Qq 165 adamantine] ada-  
 mantive F2, F3 head-long] headlong Qq After 166 Enter Fungoso  
*in.Brishes Sute.* add Qq



Act II. Scene v.

FVNGOSO.

To the rest.

SAUE you brother, and sister, saue you, sir; I haue commendations for you out i' the countrey: (I wonder they take no knowledge of my sute :) mine vncle S O G L I A R D O is in towne. Sister, me thinkes, you are melancholy: why are you so sad? I thinke you tooke me for master FASTIDIVS BRISKE (sister) did you not?

FALL. Why should I take you for him?

FVNG. Nay, nothing -- I was lately in master FASTIDIVS his company, and, me thinkes, we are very like.

DELI. You haue a faire sute, brother, 'giue you ioy on't. 10

FVNG. Faith, good ynough to ride in, brother, I made it to ride in.

FALL. O, now I see the cause of his idle demand, was his new suit.

DELI. Pray you good brother, trie, if you can change 15 her mood.

FVNG. I warrant you, let mee alone. I'll put her out of her dumps. Sister, how like you my suit?

FALL. O, you are a gallant in print now, brother.

FVNG. Faith, how like you the fashion? it's the last 20 edition, I assure you.

FALL. I cannot but like it, to the desert.

FVNG. Troth, sister, I was faine to borrow these spurres,

II. v Act . . . FVNGOSO not in Qq, which mark no change of scene. st. dir. To the rest add Ff: 1 Saue . . . saue] Fung. God saue . . . God saue Qq you, sir;] you sir; Qq 1, 2: you sir: Q3 2 (I wonder] I (wonder Qq 2, 3 4 towne] towne; Qq 1, 2: towne: Q3 thinkes,] thinkes Qq 5 master] Maister Q3 6 not? Qq. not. Ff 8 Nay, nothing - -] Nay nothing, Qq master] Maister Qq 1, 3: maister Q2 9 and, me thinkes,] and me thinkes Qq 10 sute,] suit Q1: sute Qq 2, 3 'giue] God gue Qq 10y] joy Q1 11 Faith,] Faith Qq in,] in Qq 13 demand,] demaund Qq 1, 3 15 brother,] Brother; Qq 1, 2 trie,] trie Qq 1, 2: try Q3 19 O,] O Qq now,] now Qq 20 it's] it is Q3 21 edition,] Edition Qq 22 it,] it Qq 23 Troth,] Troth Qq



I ha' left my gowne in gage for 'hem, pray you lend me an  
25 angell.

FALL. Now, beshrow my heart, then.

FVNG. Good truth, I'll pay you againe at my next exhibition · I had but bare ten pound of my father, and it would not reach to put me wholly into the fashion.

30 FALL. I care not.

FVNG. I had spurres of mine owne before, but they were not gingers. Monsieur FASTIDVS will be here anon, sister.

FALL. You iest ?

35 FVNG. Neuer lend me penny more (while you liue then) and that I'd be loth to say, in truth.

FALL. When did you see him ?

FVNG. Yesterday, I came acquainted with him at sir PUNTARVOLO's : nay, sweet sister.

40 MACI. I faine would know of heauen now, why yond foole

Should weare a suit of sattin ? he ? that rooke ?

That painted jay, with such a deale of out-side ?

What is his inside trow ? ha, ha, ha, ha, ha.

Good heauen, giue me patience, patience, patience.

45 A number of these popenjays there are,

Whom, if a man conferre, and but examine

Their inward merit, with such men as want ;

Lord, lord, what things they are !

FALL. Come, when will you pay me againe, now ?

50 FVNG. O god, sister !

MACI. Here comes another.

11 v. 24 'hem] them Q3 26 Now,] Now Qq heart,] heart Qq  
27, truth,] truth Qq 32 anon,] anone Qq 1, 2. anon Q3 34 iest]  
jest Qr 39 PUNTARVOLO'S] Puntarvolo's Q1 nay,] nay Qq 42  
jay,] Iay Qq 1 2 out-side] outside Qq 43 ha, . . . ha ] ha, ha, ha,  
ha Q3 heauen,] Heauen Qq 1, 2 : heauen Q3 patience, patience,  
patience.] patience, Qq 46 Whom,] Whom Qq 48 lord] Lord Qq  
49 againe,] againe Qq 50 god, sister !] God Sister. Qq : good, sister !  
F2, F3 After 50] Enter Fastidius Briske in a new sute (suit. Q1)  
Qq



*Act II. Scene VI.*

FASTIDIVS BRISKE.

*To the rest.*

S<sup>A</sup>ue you, signior DELIRO : how do'st thou, sweet lady ?  
Let mee kisse thee.

FVNG. How ? a new sute ? Ay me.

DELI. And how do's master FASTIDIVS BRISKE ?

FAST. Faith, liue in court, signior DELIRO ; in  
grace, I thanke god, both of the noble masculine, and  
feminine. I must speake with you in priuate, by and by.

DELI. When you please, sir.

FALL. Why looke you so pale, brother ?

FVNG. S'lid, all this money is cast away, now. 10

MACI. I, there's a newer edition come forth.

FVNG. Tis but my hard fortune ! well, I'le haue my  
sute chang'd, I'le goe fetch my taylor presently, but first  
I'le deuise a letter to my father. Ha' you any pen, and inke,  
sister ? 15

FALL. What would you doe withall ?

FVNG. I would vse it. S'light, and it had come but  
foure daies sooner, the fashion.

FAST. There was a countesse gaue me her hand to kisse  
to day, i' the presence : did me more good by that light, 20  
then—and yesternight sent her coach twise to my lodging,  
to intreat mee accompany her, and my sweet mistris, with  
some two, or three nameless ladies more : O, I haue beene

II VI] *Act . . . BRISKE. not in Qq, which mark no change of scene. To the rest add Ff*  
1 Saue you,] *Fast* Saue you *Qq* thou,] thou *Qq*  
4 master] Maister *Qq* 5 Faith,] Faith *Qq* court,] court *Qx* :  
Court *Qq* 2, 3 DELIRO ;] *Deliro*, *Qq* 6 grace,] grace *Qq* god] God  
*Qq* masculine,] Masculine *Qq* 7 priuate,] priuate *Qq* 1, 3. priuat  
*Q2* 8 please,] please *Qq* 9 pale,] pale *Qq* 10 S'lid,] S'lid  
*Qq* 1, 2: Slid *Q3* away,] away *Qq* 12 fortune !] fortune : *Qq*  
14 pen, and inke,] pen and inke *Qq* 17 S'light,] S'light *Qq* and,]  
an' *F2, F3* 18 sooner,] sooner *Qq* *Exit.* add *Qq* 20 day, 1']  
day 1' *Qq* 1, 2 : day in *Q3* did,] did *Qx* : it did *Qq* 2, 3 by that  
light] by lesu *Qq* 21 then—] then, *Qq* : than—*F2, F3* 22 mistris]  
mistresse *Qq*



grac't by 'hem beyond all aime of affection: this's her  
25 garter my dagger hangs in: and they doe so commend, and  
approue my apparell, with my iudicious wearing of it, it's  
about wonder.

FALL. Indeed sir, 'tis a most excellent sute, and you doe  
weare it as extraordinary.

30 FAST. Why, I'll tell you now (in good faith) and by  
this chaire, which (by the grace of god) I intend presently  
to sit in, I had three sutes in one yeere, made three great  
ladies in loue with me. I had other three, vn-did three  
gentlemen in imitation: and other three, gat three other  
35 gentlemen widdowes of three thousand pound a yeere.

DELI. Is't possible?

FAST. O, beleue it, sir; your good face is the witch,  
and your apparell the spells, that bring all the pleasures of  
the world into their circle.

40 FALL. Ah, the sweet grace of a courtier!

MACI. Well, would my father had left mee but a good  
face for my portion yet; though I had shar'd the vnfortu-  
nate wit that goes with it, I had not car'd: I might haue  
past for somewhat i' the world then.

45 FAST. Why, assure you, signior, rich apparell has  
strange vertues: it makes him that hath it without meanes,  
esteemed for an excellent wit: he that enioyes it with  
means, puts the world in remembrance of his means:  
it helps the deformities of nature, and giues lustre to her  
50 beauties; makes continuall holy-day where it shines; sets  
the wits of ladies at worke, that otherwise would be idle:  
furnisheth your two-shilling ordinarie; takes possession of  
your stage at your new play; and enricheth your oares, as  
scorning to goe with your scull.

55 MACI. Pray you, sir, adde this; it giues respect to your

ii. vi. 24 'hem] them, Q3 this's] this' Qr: this is Qq 2, 3 25  
commend,] commend Qq 26 iudicious] judicious Qr 30 Why,]  
Why Qq 31 god] God Qq intend] entend Qq 33 vn-did] vndid  
Qq 34 three,] three F2 35 gentlemen widdowes] Gentlemen,  
Widdowes Qq 1, 2: Gentlewomen, Widdows Q3 37 O,] O Qq 41,] it  
Qq 44 i'] in Q3 45 you,] you Qq 47 enioyes] enjoys Qr 50  
holy-day] Holiday Qq 55 you,] you Qq



fooles, makes many theeues, as many strumpets, and no fewer bankrupts.

FALL. Out, out, vnworthy to speake, where he breatheth.

FAS T. What's he, signior? 60

DELI. A friend of mine, sir.

FAS T. By heauen, I wonder at you, citizens, what kinde of creatures you are!

DELI. Why, sir?

FAS T. That you can consort your selues, with such 65 poore seame-rent fellowes.

FALL. He saies true.

DELI. Sir, I will assure you (how euer you esteeme of him) he's a man worthy of regard.

FAS T. Why? what ha's he in him, of such vertue to be 70 regarded? ha?

DELI. Mary, he is a scholler, sir.

FAS T. Nothing else?

DELI. And he is well trauail'd.

FAS T. He should get him clothes; I would cherish 75 those good parts of trauaile in him, and preferre him to some nobleman of good place.

DELI. Sir, such a benefit should bind me to you for euer (in my friends right) and, I doubt not, but his desert shall more then answere my praise. 80

FAS T. Why, and he had good clothes, I'd carry him to court with me to morrow.

DELI. He shall not want for those, sir, if gold and the whole city will furnish him.

FAS T. You say well, sir: faith, signior DELIRO, I 85 am come to haue you play the *Alchymist* with me, and

II. vi. 57 bankrupts] Bankrups Q3 58 speake,] speake Qq 62  
you,] you Qq 63 are 'I are? Qq 64 Why,] Why Qq 65 selues,]  
selues Qq 68 Sir,] Sir Qq 70 him,] him Qq 72 Mary,] Mary Qr:  
Marry Qq 2, 3 scholler,] Scholler Qq 75, 81 clothes] cloths Qq 1,  
2: clothes Q3 76 trauaile] trauell Qq 79 and, . . . not,] and . . .  
not Qq 80 then] than Qq, F2 81 and] an' F2, F3 82 court]  
the Court Qq 83 those,] those Qq 85 well,] well Qr: wel Qq 2, 3  
faith,] faith Qq



change the *species* of my land, into that mettall you talke of.

DELI. With all my heart, sir, what summe will serue you?

90 FAST. Faith, some three, or foure hundred.

DELI. Troth, sir, I haue promist to meet a gentleman this morning, in *Paules*, but vpon my returne I'll dispatch you.

FAST. I'll accompany you thither.

95 DELI. As you please, sir; but I goe not thither directly.

FAST. 'Tis no matter, I haue no other designement in hand, and therefore as good goe along.

DELI. I were as good haue a quartane feauer follow me now, for I shall ne're bee rid of him: (bring mee a cloke  
100 there, one) Still, vpon his grace at court, am I sure to bee visited; I was a beast to giue him any hope. Well, would I were in, that I am out with him, once, and - - - Come, signior MACILENTE, I must conferre with you, as wee goe. Nay, deare wife, I beseech thee, forsake these moods:  
105 looke not like winter thus. Here, take my keyes, open my counting houses, spread all my wealth before thee, choose any obiect that delights thee: If thou wilt eate the spirit of gold, and drinke dissolu'd pearle in wine, 'tis for thee.

FALL. So, sir.

110 DELI. Nay, my sweet wife.

FALL. Good lord! how you are perfum'd! in your termes, and al! pray you leaue vs.

DELI. Come, gentlemen.

FAST. Adiew, sweet lady.

115 FALL. I, I! Let thy words euer sound in mine eares,

II. vi. 87 change] chaunge *Qq* 1, 3 89 heart,] heart *Qq* 90 Faith,]  
Faith *Qq* three,] three *Qq* foure hundred] fourescore pound *Qq*  
91 Troth, sir,] Troth Sir *Qq* 1, 2: Troth sir, *Q3* 92 morning,] morn-  
ing *Qq* 95 please,] please *Qq* 100 there,] there *Qq* Still,] Still  
*Qq* court,] the Court *Qq* am I] I am *F2, F3* 102 in,] in *Qq* 1, 2  
him,] him *Qq* and - - - Come,] and. - - - Come *Qq* 103 you,] you *Qq*  
104 Nay,] Nay *Qq* thee,] thee *Qq* 105 Here,] Here *Qq* 1, 2, *F2*:  
Heere *Q3* 107 obiect] object *Qr* 109 So,] So *Qq* 110 Nay,]  
Nay *Qq* 111 lord] Lord *Qq* perfum'd! in] perfum'd in *Qq* 112  
termes,] tearmes *Qq* al!] all: *Qq* 113 Come,] Come *Qq* 114  
*Exeunt all but Fallace.* add *Qq* 115 I, I!] I, I, *Qq*



*Euery Man out of his Humour* 493

and thy graces disperse contentment through all my senses !  
O, how happy is that lady aboue other ladies, that enioyes so  
absolute a gentleman to her seruant ! A countesse giue him  
her hand to kisse ? ah, foolish countesse ! hee's a man  
worthy (if a woman may speake of a mans worth) to kisse 120  
the lips of an empresse.

F V N G. What's master F A S T I D I V S gone, sister ? *Returnd*

F A L L. I, brother (he has a face like a *Cherubin* !) *with his*  
*taylor.*

F V N G. Gods me, what lucke's this ? I haue fetcht my  
taylor and all : which way went he, sister ? can you tell ? 125

F A L L. Not I, in good faith (and he has a body like an  
angell !)

F V N G. How long is't since he went ?

F A L L. Why, but e'en now : did you not meet him ?  
(and a tongue able to rauish any woman i'the earth !) 130

F V N G. O, for gods sake (I'll please you for your paines :)  
but e'en now, say you ? Come, good, sir : S'lid, I had forgot  
it too : Sister, if any body aske for mine vncle S O G L I -  
A R D O, they shall ha' him at the *Heralds* office, yonder by  
*Paules*. 135

F A L L. Well, I will not altogether despaire : I haue  
heard of a citizens wife, has beene belou'd of a courtier ;  
and why not I ? heigh, ho : well, I will into my priuate  
chamber, locke the dore to mee, and thinke ouer all his  
good parts, one after another. 140

II vi 116 senses !] senses : Qq 117 enioyes] enioyes Qq 119  
kisse ?] kisse ! Qq ah,] ah Qq countesse !] Countesse ; Qq 120  
worth] woorth Qq 2, 3 122 st dir. *Returnd . . taylor*] *Enter Fun-*  
*goso, with his Taylor.* (Fungoso Q3) Qq in text after 121. 122 master]  
Maister Q3 123 I, brother (he)] I brother: he Qq a *Cherubin* !)]  
*Cherubin* Qq : *Cherubin* !] F2, F3 125 he,] he Qq 126 faith  
(and] faith : and Qq 127 angell !)] Angell Qq 129 Why,] Why  
Qq (and] and Qq 130 i'] in Q3 earth !)] earth. Qq 131  
gods] Gods Qq 132 Come, good,] Come good Qq S'lid,] S'lid Qq,  
F2 133 Sister,] Sister F2 134 office,] Office Qq After 135]  
*Exit, with his Taylor.* (Exit Q3) Qq 136 altogether] altogether Qq  
137 wife,] wife Qq belou'd] beloued Q3 138 heigh,] heigh Qq  
well,] well F2 priuate] priuat Qq 1, 2 140 parts,] parts Qq 1, 3:  
partes Q2 *Exit.* add Qq



G R E X.

M I T. Well, I doubt, this last *Scene* will endure some grieuous torture

C O R. How? you feare 'twill be rackt, by some hard construction?

145 M I T. Doe not you?

C O R. No, in good faith: vnlesse mine eyes could light mee beyond sense. I see no reason, why this should be more liable to the racke, then the rest: you'le say, perhaps, the city will not take it well, that the marchant is made here  
150 to dote so perfectly vpon his wife; and shee againe, to bee so *Fastidiously* affected, as shee is?

M I T. You haue vtter'd my thought, sir, indeed.

C O R. Why (by that proportion) the court might as wel take offence at him we call the courtier, and with much  
155 more pretext, by how much the place transcends, and goes before in dignitie and vertue: but can you imagine that any noble, or true spirit in court (whose sinowie, and altogether vn-affected graces, very worthily expresse him a courtier) will make any exception at the opening of such an emptie  
160 trunk, as this B R I S K E is! or thinke his owne worth empeacht, by beholding his motley inside?

M I T. No sir, I doe not.

C O R. No more, assure you, will any graue, wise citizen, or modest matron, take the obiect of this folly in D E L I R O,  
165 and his wife: but rather apply it as the foile to their owne vertues. For that were to affirme, that a man, writing of

II. vi 141 doubt,] doubt Qq 143 rackt,] rackt Qq 146 No,] No Qq 147 sense,] *Sence*, Qq reason,] reason Qq racke,] Racke Qq 148 then] than Qq, F2 say, perhaps,] say perhaps Qq (saie Q2) 149 marchant Fr. Merchant Qq, F3: merchant F2 150 againe,] againe F2 152 thought,] thought Qq 155 transcends,] transcends Qr: transcends Qq 2, 3 157 noble,] Noble Qq court] the Court Qq sinowie,] Sinowie Qq: snowie, F2, F3 altogether] altogether Qr 160 trunk,] Trunk Qr: Trunk Qq 2, 3 is ] is? Qq, F2 161 empeacht,] empeacht Qq 1, 2: impeacht Q3 163 graue,] graue Qq, F2 164 obiect] object Qr DELIRO,] *Deliro* Qq 165 wife ] Wife; Qq 166 vertues,] vertues: Qq man,] man Qq



NERO, should meane all Emperors: or speaking of MACHIAVEL, comprehend all States-men; or in our SORDIDO, all Farmars; and so of the rest: then which, nothing can be vtter'd more malicious, or absurd. Indeed, 170 there are a sort of these narrow-ey'd decypherers, I confesse, that will extort strange, and abstruse meanings out of any subiect, be it neuer so conspicuous and innocently deliuer'd. But to such (where e're they sit conceal'd) let them know, the author defies them, and their writing-tables; and hopes, 175 no sound or safe iudgement will infect it selfe with their contagious comments, who (indeed) come here only to peruert, and poison the sense of what they heare, and for nought else.

MIT. Stay, what new *Mute* is this, that walkes so 180 suspiciously?

COR. O, mary this is one, for whose better illustration, we must desire you to presuppose the stage, the middle isle in *Paules*; and that, the west end of it.

MIT. So, sir: and what followes? 185

COR. Faith, a whole volume of humour, and worthy the vnclaspings.

MIT. As how? what name doe you giue him first?

COR. He hath shift of names, sir: some call him APPLE IOHN, some Signior WHIFFE, mary, his maine 190 standing name is CAVALIER SHIFT: the rest are but as cleane shirts to his natures.

MIT. And what makes he in *Paules*, now?

COR. Troth, as you see, for the aduancement of a *Siquis*, or two; wherein he has so varied himselfe, that if any one 195

II. vi. 167 Emperors] Emperours Qq 168 MACHIAVEL] Machiavell Q1 169 then] than Qq, F2 170 malicious, or] malicious and Qq  
Indeed,] Indeed Qq 171 decypherers] decypherets F2 172 strange] strange Qq 173 subiect] Subject Q1 175 author] Author Qq  
-tables] -table Q3 176 iudgement] judgement Q1 178 peruert,] pervert Q1: peruert Qq 2, 3 180 this,] this Qq After 181] ACTVS  
TERTIVS, SCENA PRIMA (ACTVS TERTIVS, Q1: TERTIVS Q3) | Enter  
*Cavalier Shift, with two Siquisses in his hand.* (Cavalier Q1) Qq 182  
illustration,] Illustration, Q3 185 So,] So Qq 186 Faith,] Faith  
Qq humour] Humor Qq 189 names,] names Qq 190 mary,]  
marry Qq 191 CAVALIER] Cavalier Q1 192 natures] Natures Qq  
193 *Paules*,] *Paules* Qq 194 Troth,] Troth Qq *Siquis*,] *Siquis* Qq



of 'hem take, he may hull vp and downe i' the humorous world, a litle longer.

M I T. It seemes then, he beares a very changing saile ?

C O R. O, as the wind, sir : here comes more.

*Act III. Scene I.*

S H I F T, O R A N G E, C L O V E.

**T**HIS is rare, I haue set vp my bills, without discouery.

O R A N. What ? Signior W H I F F E ? what fortune has brought you into these west parts ?

S H I F T. Troth, signior, nothing but your rhume ; I  
5 haue beene taking an ounce of tabacco hard by here, with a gentleman, and I am come to spit priuate, in *Paules*. Saue you sir.

O R A N. Adieu, good Signior W H I F F E.

C L O V E. Master A P P L E I O H N ? you are well met :  
10 when shall we sup together, and laugh, and be fat with those good wenches ? ha ?

S H I F T. Faith, sir, I must now leaue you, vpon a few humours, and occasions : but when you please, sir.

C L O V E. Farewell, sweet A P P L E I O H N : I wonder,  
15 there are no more store of gallants here !

II. vi. 196 'hem] them Q3 1' in Q3, F2 197 world,] world  
Qq 199 wind,] wind Qq III. i. Act. . CLOVE.] Act III. SCENE I.—  
*The Middle Aisle of St. Paul's G: Enter Orange Qq. (Qq spell Orange*  
throughout the scene) 1 This] Shift This Qq bills,] bills Qq  
4 Troth,] Troth Qq 5 beene] ben Qr here,] here Qq 1, 2. heere Q3  
6 priuate,] priuate Qq privat F2 7 Saue Fr : 'Save F2 : God  
saue Qq 8 Adieu,] Adieu Qr Adue Qq 2, 3 Enter Cloue add Qq  
9 Master] Maister Qq 10 laugh,] laugh Qq 12 Faith,] Faith Qq  
13 humours,] Humours Qr : Humors Qq 2, 3 please,] please Qq Exit.  
add Qq 14 Farewell,] Farewell Qq 1, 3 : Farewel Q2 wonder,]  
wonder Qq 15 here ] here ? Qq



G R E X.

M I T. What be these two, signior ?

C O R. Mary, a couple sir, that are meere strangers to the whole scope of our play ; only come to walke a turne or two, i' this *Scene* of *Paules*, by chance.

O R A N. Saue you, good master C L O V E.

20

C L O V E. Sweet master O R A N G E.

G R E X.

M I T. How ? C L O V E, and O R A N G E ?

C O R. I, and they are well met, for 'tis as drie an O R A N G E as euer grew : nothing, but *Salutation* ; and, *O god, sir* ; and, *It pleases you to say so, Sir* ; one that can laugh at a iest for company with a most plausible, and extemporall grace ; and some houre after, in priuate, aske you what it was : the other, monsieur C L O V E, is a more spic't youth : he will sit you a whole afternoone sometimes, in a booke-sellers shop, reading the *Greeke, Italian, and Spanish* ; when he vnderstands not a word of either : if he had the tongues, to his sutes, he were an excellent linguist.

C L O V E. Doe you heare this reported, for certainty ?

O R A N. O god, sir.

35

III. i. 17 Mary,] Mary Qq 2, 3 strangers] strangers  
Qq 1, 2 18 two,] two Qq 19 *Paules*,] *Paules* Qq chance]  
chaunce Qq St. dir. after 19] *They walke togither.* Qq 20 Saue]  
'Saue F2 24 nothing,] nothing Qq 24-5 *Salutation* , and, *O god, sir* ;  
and,] *Salutation*, and *O God sir*, and Qq 25 so,] so Qq 26 iest]  
jest Qr 27 after, in priuate,] after in priuate Qq 28 monsieur]  
monsieur F2 32 tongues,] Tongues Qq 34 reported,] reported  
Qq 35 god, sir] good sir Qq: god, sir- F2



*Act III. Scene II.*

P V N T A R V O L O, C A R L O.

Sirrah, take my cloke . and you sir knaue, follow mee closer. If thou locest my dogge, thou shalt die a dogs death ; I will hang thee.

C A R L. Tut, feare him not, hee's a good leane slaue, he 5 loues a dog well, I warrant him ; I see by his looks, I : masse hee's somewhat like him. S'lud poison him, make him away with a crooked pinne, or somewhat, man ; thou maist haue more security of thy life : and so sir, what ? you ha' not put out your whole venter yet ? ha' you ?

10 P V N T. No, I doe want yet some fiftene, or sixtene hundred pounds : but my lady (my wife) is out of her humour ; shee does not now goe.

C A R L. No ? how then ?

P V N T. Mary, I am now enforc't to giue it out, vpon the 15 returne of my selfe, my dogge, and my cat.

C A R L. Your cat ? where is shee ?

P V N T. My squire has her there, in the bag : Sirrah, looke to her . How lik'st thou my change, C A R L O ?

C A R L. Oh, for the better, sir ; your cat has nine liues, 20 and your wife ha' but one.

P V N T. Besides, shee will neuer bee sea-sicke, which will saue mee so much in conserues : when saw you signior S O G L I A R D O ?

C A R L. I came from him but now, he is at the *Heralds* 25 officē yonder : he requested me to goe afore, and take vp a man or two for him in *Paules*, against his cognisance was ready.

\* P V N T. What ? has he purchast armes, then ?

III II *Act . . CARLO ] Enter Puntaruolo, Carlo : two seruungmen following, one leading the Dogge (Puntaruolo, Q1 : seruung men Q1) Qq, with-out change of scene. 1 Sirrah] Punt. Sirrah Qq 2 closer. 1f] closer. 1f Qq locest] loosest Qq 5 well,] well Qq looks] looke Q3 6 S'lud] Sblood Q2 : Sbloud Qq 2, 3 7 somewhat,] somewhat Q2 somewhat Qq 2, 3 9 venter] Venture F3 10 fiftene,] fiftene Qq 12 humour] Humor Qq 2, 3 17 there,] there Qq 19 better,] better Qq 20 ha'] has Qq 2, 3 25 afore,] afore Qq 1, 2 28 What ?] What F2 armes,] aimes Qq*



CARL. I, and rare ones too: of as many colours, as e're you saw any fool's coat in your life. I'll goe looke among 30 yond' bills, and I can fit him with legs to his armes——

PVNT. With legs to his armes! Good I will goe with you, sir. *They goe to looke upon the bills.*

*Act III. Scene III.*

FASTIDIVS, DELIRO, MACILENTE.

COME, let's walke in *Mediterraneo*: I assure you, sir, I am not the least respected among ladies; but let that passe: doe you know how to goe into the presence, sir?

MACI. Why, on my feet, sir.

FAST. No, on your head, sir: for 'tis that must beare you out, I assure you: as thus, sir. You must first haue an especial care so to weare your hat, that it oppresse not confusedly this your predominant, or fore-top; because (when you come at the presence dore) you may, with once or twice stroking vp your fore-head thus, enter, with 10 your predominant perfect: that is, standing vp stiffe.

MACI. As if one were frighted?

FAST. I, sir.

MACI. Which indeed, a true feare of your mistris should doe, rather then gumme water, or whites of egges: 15 is't not so, sir?

FAST. An ingenius obseruation: giue mee leaue to craue your name, Sir.

DELI. His name is, MACILENTE, sir.

FAST. Good signior MACILENTE: if this gentle- 20 man, signior DELIRO, furnish you (as he saies he will) with clothes, I will bring you, to morrow by this time, into

III. ii. 30 saw] say *F2* 31 yond'] yond *Qq 2, 3* and] an *E2*  
armes——] Armes. *Qq* 33 you,] you *Qq* St dir *Qq in text after 33*  
III. iii. Act . . . MACILENTE ] *Enter Fastidius, Deliro, and Macilente. Qq,*  
without change of scene. 1 Come] *Fast Come Qq Mediterraneo]*  
the *Mediterraneum Qq* you,] you *Qq* sir,] sir *Qq 1, 2* 3 presence,]  
Presence *Qq* sir?] sir. *F2* 4 feet,] feet *Qq* sir.] sir? *F2* 5  
head,] head *Qq* 6 thus, sir.] thus sir: *Qq* 8 predominant,] Pre-  
dominant *Qq* 9 may,] may *Qq* 10 fore-head] Forehead *Qq* enter,]  
enter *Qq* 13 I,] I *Qq* 14 mistris] Mistresse *Qq* 15 then] than  
*Qq, F2* 16 so,] so *Qq* 18 name,] name *Qq* 19 is,] is *Qq, F2*  
MACILENTE,] *Macilente Qq* 22 you,] you *Qq* time,] time *Qq 1, 2*



## 500 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

the presence of the most diuine, & acute lady in court :  
 you shall see sweet silent rhetorique, and dumbe eloquence  
 25 speaking in her eye ; but when shee speakes her selfe, such  
 an anatomic of wit, so sinewiz'd and arteriz'd, that 'tis the  
 goodliest modell of pleasure that cuer was, to behold. Oh !  
 shee strikes the world into admiration of her---(ô, ô, ô) I  
 cannot expresse 'hem, beleue me !

30 M A C I. O, your onely admiration is your silence, sir.

P V N T. 'Fore god, C A R L O, this is good ; let's reade  
 'hem againe.

The first  
 bill.

*If there be any lady, or gentlewoman of good carriage,  
 that is desirous to entertaine (to her priuate uses) a  
 35 yong, straight, and vpright gentleman, of the age of fīue,  
 or sixe and twenty at the most : who can scrue in the  
 nature of a gentleman vs her, and hath little legges of  
 purpose, and a blacke satten sute of his owne, to goe  
 before her in : which sute (for the more sweetning)  
 40 now lies in laundery : and can hide his face with her  
 fanne, if neede require : or sit in the cold at the staire  
 foot for her, as well as another gentleman : Let her  
 subscribe her name and place, and diligent respect  
 shall be giuen.*

45 P V N T. This is aboue measure excellent ! ha ?

C A R L. No, this, this ! here's a fine slaue.

The  
 second  
 bill.

*If this city, or the suburbs of the same, doe affoord*

III. 11. 23 diuine,] Diuine Qq acute corr. Fr : acute Qq : acute Fr  
 originally, Fr in] of the Qq 26 anatomic] Anatomic Qq 2, 3  
 27 was, Qq, Fr (but comma fa'nt in some copies) was Fr 2 Oh !] Oh, Qq  
 28 her— corr. Fr : her ; Qq, Fr originally, Fr 29 'hem,] hem Qq  
 me ! corr. Fr : me Qq, Fr, Fr 2 30 admiration corr. Fr, Fr 2 : Ad-  
 miration, Qq. admiration, Fr 31 god,] God Qq 32 againe,]  
 againe Qq 33 margin] The first bill. corr. Fr, Fr 2 : not in Qq, Fr  
 originally. in Fr 3 printed as a heading before 33 35 yong,] young,  
 Qq 1, 2 : young Qq 38 owne,] owne Qq 1, 3 : own Qq 41-2  
 staire foot] staire-foot Fr 42 her,] her Qq another] an other Qq  
 45 P V N T. This corr. Fr, Fr 2 : This Qq, Fr originally (see 66) excellent !]  
 excellent : Qq : excellent ; Qq 2, 3 46 No, this, (this !)] No this,  
 this : Qq 47 margin] The second bill. corr. Fr, Fr 2 : not in Qq, Fr  
 originally, in Fr 3 printed as a heading before 17 If cori. Fr 1, Fr 2 : P V N T.  
 If Qq, Fr originally affoord] affoord Qq 1 : afford Qq 2, Fr 2



any young gentleman, of the first, second, or thirde head,  
more or lesse, whose friends are but lately deceased,  
and whose lands are but new come to his hands, that 50  
(to bee as exactly qualified as the best of our ordinary  
gallants are) is affected to entertaine the most gentle-  
manlike vse of tabacco : as first, to giue it the most  
exquisite perfume : then, to know all the delicate  
sweet formes for the assumption of it : as also the rare 55  
corollarie, and practice of the Cuban ebolition,  
EVRIPVS, and Whiffe ; which hee shall receiue,  
or take in, here at London, and euaporate at  
Vxbridge, or farder, if it please him. If there be any  
such generous spirit, that is truly enamour'd of these 60  
good faculties : May it please him, but (by a note of  
his hand) to specifie the place, or ordinarie where hee  
uses to eate, and lie ; and most sweet attendance, with  
tabacco, and pipes of the best sort, shall be ministred :  
STET QVÆSO CANDIDE LECTOR. 65

PVNT. Why this is without *paralell*, this !

CARL. Well, I'le marke this fellow for SOGLIARDO'S  
vse presently.

PVNT. Or rather, SOGLIARDO, for his vse.

CARL. Faith, either of 'hem will serue, they are both 70  
good properties : I'le designe the other a place too, that we  
may see him.

PVNT. No better place, then the Mitre, that wee may  
bee spectators with you, CARLO. Soft, behold, who enters  
here : Signior SOGLIARDO ! saue you. 75

III. iii. 48 *young* Qq, corr. F1 . *yong* F1 originally, F2 50 *to*] *into*  
F2, F3 54 *then*] *then* Q1 *delicate*] *delicate* Q2 55 *for*] *of* Q3 56  
*corollarie,*] *Corollarie* Q1 : *Corollary* Qq 2, 3 57 *Whiffe* Qq, corr. F1,  
F2 : *whiffe* F1 originally. *receiue,*] *receiue* Qq 58 *in,*] *in* Qq *euap-*  
*orate*] *evaporate* Q1 59 *farder*] *farther* F2 63 *eate,*] *eat* Qq *he,*]  
*Lie,* Q1 : *lie,* Qq 2, 3 *attendance,*] *attendance* Qq 64 *sort,*] *sort* Qq  
66 PVNT. *not in* Qq, *where* *Puntarvolo* reads the bill *Why*] *why* Qq 1, 2  
*without*] *without*, F2 69 SOGLIARDO,] *Sogliardo* Qq : SOGLIARDO F2  
70 Faith,] *Faith* Qq '73 *place,*] *place* Qq *then*] *than* Qq, F2 74 *you,*]  
*you* Qq 75 *saue*] *God saue* Qq *Enter* *Sog* add Qq (*Sogliardo.* Q3)



*Act III. Scene III.**To them.*

SOGLIARDO.

S Aue you, good sir P V N T A R V O L O ; your dogge's  
in health, sir, I see . how now, C A R L O ?

C A R L . Wee haue ta'ne simple paines, to choose you out  
followers here.

5 P V N T . Come hither, signior.

*They shew  
him the  
bills.*

C L O V E . Monsieur O R A N G E , yond' gallants obserue  
vs ; pr'y thee let's talke fustian a little, and gull 'hem :  
make 'hem beleue we are great schollers.

O R A N G . O lord, sir.

10 C L O V E . Nay, pr'y thee let's, beleue me, you haue an  
excellent habit in discourse.

O R A N G . It pleases you to say so, sir.

C L O V E . By this church, you ha' la : nay, come, begin :

A R I S T O T L E in his *Dæmonologia*, approoues S C A L I G E R  
15 for the best Nauigator in his time : and in his *Hypercritiques*,  
he reports him to be *Heautontimorumenos* : you vnderstand  
the Greeke, sir ?

O R A N G . O god, sir.

M A C I L . For societies sake he does. O, here be a couple  
20 of fine tame parrats.

C L O V E . Now, sir, whereas the *Ingenuitie* of the time,  
and the soules *Synderisis* are but *Embrions* in nature, added  
to the panch of *Esquiline*, and the *Inter-vallum* of the  
*Zodiack*, besides the *Eclipticke* line being *opticke*, and not  
25 *mentell*, but by the *contemplatiue* & *theoricke* part thereof,

III. iv. Act . . SOGLIARDO.] *Qq* continue the scene. To them add F1  
1 Saue you,] *Sog* Saue you *Qq* P V N T A R V O L O ] *Puntarvolo* Q1 2 health,  
sir,] health sir *Qq* now,] now *Qq* 3 paines,] paines *Qq* 5 hither,]  
hither *Qq* 6 st dir. in *Qq* in text after 5 Monsieur] Mounsier F2  
O R A N G E ] *Oreng* *Qq* here and throughout the scene obserue] obserues  
*Qq* 1, 2 7 pr'y thee] pray thee *Q3* fustian] fustian F3 little,]  
little *Qq* 9 lord,] Lord *Qq* 10 beleue me,] by Iesu : *Qq* 12 so,]  
so *Qq* 13 church,] Church *Qq* nay,] nay *Qq* 14 *Dæmonologia*,]  
*Dæmonologia* *Qq* approues] approoues *Qq* 16 *Heautontimoru-*  
*menos*] *Heautontimorumenos* *Qq* 17 Greeke,] Greeke *Qq* 18 god,]  
God *Qr* : good *Qq* 2, 3 19 O,] O *Qq* 21 Now,] Now *Qq* whereas]  
Whereas *Qq* 23 -vallum] -uallum *Qq* 1, 3 24 *Eclipticke* line]  
*Ecliptickeline* Q3



doth demonstrate to vs the *vegetable circumference*, and the *ventositie* of the *Tropicks*, and whereas our *intellectuall*, or *mincing capreall* (according to the *Metaphisicks*) as you may reade in P L A T O's *Histriomastix* - - You conceiue me, sir ?

30

O R A N G. O lord, sir.

C L O V E. Then comming to the pretty *Animall*, as *Reason long since is fled to animals*, you know, or indeed for the more *modellizing*, or *enamelling*, or rather *diamondizing* of your *subiect*, you shall perceiue the *Hypothesis*, or *Galaxia* 35 (whereof the *Meteors* long since had their *initia*l *inceptions* and *notions*) to be meerey *Pythagoricall*, *Mathematicall*, and *Aristocraticall* - - For looke you, sir, there is euer a kinde of *concinntie* and *species* - - Let vs turne to our former discourse, for they marke vs not.

40

F A S T. Masse, yonder's the knight P V N T A R V O L O.

D E L I. And my cousin S O G L I A R D O, me thinkes.

M A C I. I, and his familiar that haunts him, the deuill with the shining face.

D E L I. Let 'hem alone, obserue 'hem not

45

S O G L. Nay, I will haue him, I am resolute for that. By this parchment, gentlemen, I haue beene so toil'd among the *Harrots* yonder, you will not beleue, they doe speake i' the strangest language, and giue a man the hardest termes for his money, that euer you knew.

*Soghardo.  
Puntar-  
uolo,  
Carlo,  
walke*

C A R L. But ha' you armes ? ha' you armes ?

S O G L. Yfaith, I thanke them, I can write my selfe 52

III iv. 27 *intellectuall*,] *intellectuall* Qq 1, 3 *intellectual* Q2 28 *cap-  
reall*] *capreall*, Q1 : *capreal*, Q2 29 *Histriomastix* - - ] *Histriomastix*  
Qq 1, 2 : *Histriomastix* : Q3 30 me,] me Qq 31 lord,] Lord Qq  
33 *animals*,] *Animals* Qq 34 *modellizing*,] *modellizing* Qq 1, 2. *model-  
izing* Q3 35 *Hypothesis*,] *Hypothesis* Qq *Galaxia*] *Galaxia*, Qq  
38 *Aristocraticall* - - - For] *Aristocraticall* : for Q1 *Aristocratical* . for  
Q2 : *Astronomicall* : for Q3 you,] you Qq 39 *species* - - ] *Species*  
Qq vs] us Q1 41 P V N T A R V O L O ] *Puntarvolo* Q1 42 S O G L I A R D O,]  
*Soghardo* Qq 44 the shining] a shining Qq 45 'hem . 'hem]  
them . . . them Q3. After 45 *Soghardo*, *Punt. Car walke*. Qq 46  
Nay,] Nay Qq that By] that, by Qq 47 parchment,] Parch-  
ment Q1 . parchment Qq 2, 3 beene] ben Q1 : been Q2 : bene Q3  
48 st. dir. corr F1, F2 : not in Qq walke] walks F2 *Harrots* corr.  
F1, F2 : *Harrots* Qq, F1 1] in Q3 49 strangest] straungest Q1  
52 them, corr F1, F2 : God Qq . God, F1



504 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

gentleman now, here's my pattent, it cost me thirtie pound, by this breath.

55 P V N T. A very faire coat, well charg'd, and full of armorie.

S O G L. Nay, it has as much varietie of colours in it, as you haue seene a coat haue, how like you the crest, sir?

P V N T. I vnderstand it not well, what is't?

60 S O G L. Mary, sir, it is your Bore without a head *Rampant*.

P V N T. A Boore without a head, that's very rare!

C A R L. I, and rampant too: troth, I commend the *Heralds* wit, hee has decyphered him well: A swine with-  
65 out a head, without braine, wit, any thing indeed, ramping to gentilitie. You can blazon the rest, signior? can you not?

S O G L. O, I, I haue it in writing here of purpose, it cost me two shillings the tricking.

70 C A R L. Let's heare, let's heare.

P V N T. It is the most vile, foolish, absurd, palpable, & ridiculous escutcheon, that euer this eye survis'd. Saue you, good monsieur F A S T I D I V S.

*They salute as they meet in the w<sup>ch</sup>ke.*

C A R L. Silence, good knight: on, on.

75 S O G L. G Y R O N Y, of eight *peesces*; A Z V R E and G V L E S, betweene three *plates*; a C H E V ' R O N, *engrailed checkey*, O R, V E R T, and E R M I N E S; on a *cheefe* A R G E N T betweene two A N N ' L E T S, *sables*; a Bores head, *Proper*.

80 C A R L. How's that? on a *cheefe* A R G E N T?

III iv. 53 gentleman] Gentlemen Q3 pound,] pound Qq 55  
charg'd,] charg'd Qq 1, 2: chargde, Q3 58 crest,] Crest Qq 60  
Mary,] Marry Qq Bore corr. F1, F2: Bore Qq, F1 62 PVNT.  
orig. F2, F3 Boore corr. F1: Bore Qq, F1 originally, F2 rare!]  
rare. Qq 63 troth,] troth Qq 64 *Heralds* corr. F1, F2:  
*Heralds* Qq, F1 swine corr. F1, F2: Swine Qq, F1 66 rest,] rest  
Qq 68 O,] O Qq 72 escutcheon,] Escutcheon Qq survis'd  
Q1, Ff. survis'd Q2: survisde Q3 you,] you Qq 73 monsieur]  
Monsieur Q1 st. dir. add Qq after 'FASTIDIVS' 74 Silence,]  
Silence Qq 75 GYRONY,] GYRONY Qq peeces,] peeces. Q1: pieces,  
Qq 2, 3 76 plates.] plates Qq CHEV'RON,] CHEV'RON Qq 77  
VERT,] VERT Qq 78 sables,] sables Qq 79 head,] head Qq  
*Proper* corr. F1, F2: *PROPER* F1 originally: *PROPER* Qq



S O G L. On a *cheefe* A R G E N T, a Bores head *Proper*,  
betweene two A N N ' L E T S *sables*.

C A R L. S'lud, it's a hogs-cheeke, and puddings in a  
pewter field this.

S O G L. How like you 'hem, signior?

P V N T. Let the word bee, *Not without mustard*; your  
crest is very rare, sir.

C A R L. A frying pan, to the crest, had had no fellow.

F A S T. Intreat your poore friend to walke off a little,  
signior, I will salute the knight.

C A R L. Come, lap't vp, lap't vp.

F A S T. You are right well encountred, sir, how do's your  
faire dog?

P V N T. In reasonable state, sir: what citizen is that you  
were consorted with? a marchant of any worth?

F A S T. 'Tis signior D E L I R O, sir.

P V N T. Is it he? Saue you, sir.

D E L I. Good sir P V N T A R V O L O.

M A C I. O, what copie of foole would this place minister,  
to one endew'd with patience, to obserue it?

C A R L. Nay, looke you sir, now you are a gentleman,  
you must carry a more exalted presence, change your mood,  
and habit, to a more austere forme, be exceeding proud,  
stand vpon your gentilitie, and scorne euery man. Speake  
nothing humbly, neuer discourse vnder a nobleman, though  
you ne're saw him but riding to the *Starre-chamber*, it's all  
one. Loue no man. Trust no man. Speake ill of no man

III. iv 81 head *Proper*, corr. F1, F2: head, PROPER F1 originally:  
head PROPER Qq 82 st dir Qq begin at 84 and abbreviate 'Fast'  
'Punt.' 'Carl.' 'Sogh.' ('Car.' 'Del.' Qq 2, 3) Puntaruolo, corr. F1,  
F2: Puntaruolo F1 originally four] foure Qq, F2 83 hogs-cheeke  
corr F1, F2. Hogs-cheeke F1 originally: Hogs Cheeke Qq 85 'hem,  
them Qq 86 word] world Qq 2, 3 mustard,] mustard, Qq 87  
rare,] rare Qq 88 pan, corr. F1, F2: pan Qq, F1 crest Q3, corr.  
F1, F2: crest F1: Crest Qq 1, 2 89 little,] little Qq 92 encoun-  
tred,] encountred Qq 94 state, sir:] state sir, Qq 95 marchant]  
merchant Qq, F2 96 DELIRO,] Deliro Qq 97 you,] you Qq 98  
PVNTARVOLO] Puntaruolo Q1 99 O,] O Qq minister,] minister Qq  
100 patience,] Patience Qq 101 Nay,] Nay Qq, F2 102 mood,]  
mood Qq 103 habit,] habite Qq 106 ne're] neuer Q3 107  
man. Trust] man, Trust Qq man Speake] man, Speake Q2: man,  
speake Q3

Here they  
shift  
Fastidius  
mixes  
with Pun-  
taruolo,  
Carlo,  
and  
Sogharado,  
Deliro,  
and Mact-  
lente,  
Cloue and  
Orange,  
fou<r>  
couple.

Salute.

100

105



506 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

to his face · nor well of any man behind his backe. Salute  
fairely on the front, and wish 'hem hang'd vpon the turne.  
110 Spread your selfe vpon his bosome publikely, whose heart  
you would eate in priuate. These be principles, thinke on  
'hem, I'le come to you againe presently.

P V N T. Sirra, keepe close ; yet not so close . thy breath  
will thaw my ruffle.

115 S O G L. O, good cousin, I am a little busie, how do's my  
necce ? I am to walke with a knight, here

*Act III. Scene v.*

*To them*

F V N G S O. T A Y L O R.

O He is here, looke you sir, that's the gentleman.  
T A I L. What, he i' the blush-colour'd sattin ?

F V N G. I, he sir : though his sute blush, hee blushes not,  
looke you, that's the sute, sir : I would haue mine, such a  
5 sute without difference, such stuffe, such a wing, such a  
sleeue, such a skirt, belly, and all ; therefore, pray you  
obserue it. Haue you a paire of tables ?

F A S T. Why, doe you see, sir ? they say I am phantasti-  
call : why, true, I know it, and I pursue my humour still,  
10 in contempt of this censorious age. S'light, and a man  
should doe nothing, but what a sort of stale iudgements  
about this towne will approue in him, he were a sweet asse :  
I'd beg him yfaith. I ne're knew any more find fault with  
a fashion, then they that knew not how to put themselues

III. iv 108 face.] face, Qq 111 priuate] priuat Qr 112 'hem]  
them F3 After 112 Exit Car. Sogliardo mixes with Punt. and Fast  
Qq 113 close, . . . close:] close, . . . close, Qq 114 thaw] draw  
F3 115 O,] O Qq 116 necce ?] necce, Qq knight,] knight Qq.  
Enter Fung. with his Tailor. add Qq III v Act . . . TAYLOR] Qq  
continue the scene To them. add Ff 1 O] Fung. O Qq 2  
What,] What Qq 3 sir.] sir Qq not,] not Qq 4 sute,] Sute  
Qr : sute Qq 2, 3 6 belly,] Belly Qq 1, 2 : belly Q3 8 Why,]  
Why Qq see,] see Qq 9 why,] why Qq humour,] Humor Qq  
still,] stil Qr : still Qq 2, 3 10 age,] age : Qq S'light,] S'light Qq.  
F2 and] an' F2 11 nothing,] nothing Qq 12 asse:] Asse,  
Qq 13 yfaith] yfaith : Qq fault,] more fault F3 14 then Qq,  
F1: than F2



in to't. For mine owne part, so I please mine owne appetite, 15  
I am carelesse what the fustie world speakes of me. Puh.

F V N G. Doe you marke, how it hangs at the knee there ?

T A I L. I warrant you, sir.

F V N G. For gods sake, doe, note all : doe you see the  
collar, sir ? 20

T A I L. Feare nothing, it shall not differ in a stitch, sir.

F V N G. Pray heau'n, it doe not, you'le make these  
linings serue ? and helpe me to a chapman for the out-side,  
will you ?

T A I L. I'll doe my best, sir : you'le put it off presently ? 25

F V N G. I, goe with mee to my chamber, you shall haue  
it - - but make haste of it, for the loue of a customer, for I'll  
sit i' my old sute, or else lie a bed, and reade the *Arcadia*, till  
you haue done.

C A R L. O, if euer you were strucke with a iest, gallants, 30  
now, now. I doe vsher the most strange peece of militarie  
profession, that euer was discouer'd in *Insula Paulina*

F A S T. Where ? where ?

P V N T. What is he, for a creature ?

C A R L. A pimpe, a pimpe, that I haue obseru'd yonder, 35  
the rarest *superficies* of a humour ; hee comes euery morning  
to emptie his lungs in *Paules* here : and offers vp some fiue,  
or sixe *Hecatomb's* of faces, and sighes, and away againe.  
Here he comes ; nay, walke, walke, be not seene to note him,  
and we shall haue excellent sport. 40

III v. 15 in to't.] into't. Qr, F2. into it Qq 2, 3 16 me Puh.] me,  
puh. Qq 1, 2 : me, puh Q3 17 marke,] marke Qq 18 you,] you  
Qq 19 gods sake,] Gods sake Qq 20 collar,] Coller Qq 21  
stitch,] stitch Qq 22 heau'n,] God Qq 23 for,] to Q3 out-side]  
outside Qq 25 best,] best Qq 26 chamber,] chamber Qq 27  
it - - ] it, Qq a customer] Christ Qq 28 bed,] bed Qq After 29]  
*Exit with tailor. (Tailor Q3) Enter Car. Qq 30 CARL.] Caol Q3*  
*O.] O Qq iest] jest Qr 34 he,] he Qq 36 humour] Humor Qr.*  
*humor Qq 2, 3 37 here:] here, Qq fiue,] fiue Qq 38 faces,]*  
*faces Qq 39 nay,] nay Qq 40 Enter Shift (Shift Q3) | Walkes by,*  
*and uses action to his Rapier add Qq*



## Act III. Scene VI.

To them.

SHIFT.

P V N. S'lid, hee vented a sigh e'ne now, I thought he  
would haue blowne vp the church.

C A R. O, you shall haue him giue a number of those false  
fires ere hee depart.

5 F A S T. See, now he is expostulating with his rapier I  
looke, looke.

C A R L. Did you euer, in your daies, obserue better  
passion ouer a hilt?

P V N T. Except it were in the person of a cutlers boy,  
10 or that the fellow were nothing but vapour, I should thinke  
it impossible.

C A R L. See, againe, he claps his sword o' the head, as  
who should say, well, goe to.

F A S T. O violence! I wonder the blade can containe  
15 it selfe, being so prouokt.

C A R L. *With that, the moody squire thumpt his brest,  
And rear'd his eyen to heauen, for reuenge.*

S O G L. Troth, and you be good gentlemen, let's make  
'hem friends, and take vp the matter, betweene his rapier,  
20 and him.

C A R L. Nay, if you intend that, you must lay downe the  
matter, for this rapier (it seemes) is in the nature of a hanger  
on, and the good gentleman would happily be rid of him.

F A S T. By my faith, and 'tis to be suspected, I'll aske  
25 him.

M A C I. O, here's rich stuffe, for lifes sake, let vs goe.  
A man would wish himselfe a senselesse pillar,  
Rather then view these monstrous prodigies :

III. vi. Act . . SHIFT.] *Qq continue the scene* To them add Ff  
1 S'lid,] S'lid Qq 3 O,] O Qq 5 See,] See Qq rapier! looke]  
Rapier, Looke Qq 7 euer,] euer Qq daies,] daies Qq 1, 2: dayes  
Q3 14 violence!] violence, Qq 17 eyen] Eye F3 heauen,] Heauen  
Q1: heauen Qq 2, 3 18 and] an' F2, F3 good not in Qq 19  
matter,] matter Qq rapier,] Rapier Qq 20 him] he Qq 22  
matter,] matter; F2 26 O,] O Qq lifes] Christ Qq goe.] goe, Qq  
28 then] than Qq, F2



*Nil habet infelix paupertas durius in se,  
Quàm quodd ridiculos homines facit*——

30

F A S T. Signior.

S H I F T. At your seruice.

F A S T. Will you sell your rapier ?

C A R L. Sbloud, he is turn'd wild vpon the question, hee  
lookes as hee had seene a serjeant.

35

S H I F T. Sell my rapier ? now fate blesse me.

P V N T. Amen.

S H I F T. You ask't me, if I would sell my rapier, sir ?

F A S T. I did indeed.

S H I F T. Now, lord haue mercy vpon me.

40

P V N T. Amen, I say still.

S H I F T. S'lud sir, what should you behold in my face,  
sir, that should moue you (as they say, sir) to aske me, sir, if  
I would sell my rapier ?

F A S T. Nay (let me pray you, sir) bee not mou'd : I 45  
protest, I would rather haue beene silent, then any way  
offensiue, had I knowne your nature.

S H I F T. Sell my rapier ? 'ods lid ! Nay, sir (for mine  
owne part) as I am a man that has seru'd in causes, or so, so  
I am not apt to injure any gentleman in the degree of falling 50  
foule, but (sell my rapier ?) I will tell you sir, I haue seru'd  
with this foolish rapier, where some of vs dare not appeare  
in haste, I name no man : but let that passe. (Sell my  
rapier ?) death to my lungs. This rapier, sir, has trauail'd  
by my side, sir, the best part of *France* and the *low Countrey* : 55  
I haue seene *Vlissing*, *Brill*, and the *Haghe*, with this rapier,

III. vi. 29 *infelix* in *felix* Q1 30 *Quàm quodd* *Quam quodd* Qq  
facit——] *facit* Qq Exit, with *Deliro*. add Qq 34 Sbloud,] Sbloud  
Q1 : S'bloud Qq 2, 3 : om. F2 35 serjeant] Serjeant Qq 36 fate]  
God Qq 37 Amen] Amen Qq 38 rapier,] Rapier Qq 40  
Now, lord] Now Lord Qq 41 Amen,] Amen Qq 1, 2 42 S'lud,]  
'Slid F2 face,] face Qq 43 moue] mooue Qq 2, 3 say,] say Qq  
me,] me Qq 45 you,] you Qq mou'd] moou'd Qq 2, 3 46 protest,  
] protest Qq silent,] silent Qq 1, 2 then] than Qq 1, 2, F2 48  
'ods lid ! Nay,] Gods lid : Nay Qq 50 injure] injurie Q2 : iniurie Q3  
51 but (sell my rapier ?)] but : sell my Rapier ? Qq 53 haste,]  
hast, Qq : haste ; F2 passe. (Sell my rapier ?) death] passe ; Sell  
my Rapier ? Death Qq 54 rapier,] Rapier Qq trauail'd] trauel'd  
Q3 55 side,] side Qq *France*] *Fraunce* Qq 1, 2 56 *Haghe*,]  
*Haghe* Qq . *Hague*, F3 rapier.] Rapier Qq 1, 2



510 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

sir, in my lord of *Leysters* time : and (by gods will) he that should offer to disrapier me now, I would—Iooke you sir, you presume to be a gentleman of sort, and so likewise your  
60 friends here, if you haue any disposition to traueell, for the sight of seruice, or so, one, two, or all of you, I can lend you letters to diuers officers and commanders in the *low Countries*, that shall for my cause doe you all the good offices, that shall pertaine or belong to gentlemen of your—Please  
65 you to shew the bountie of your minde, sir, to impart some ten groates, or halfe a crowne to our vse, till our abilitie be of grow'th to returne it, and we shall thinke our selfe—Sbloud ! sell my rapier ?

S O G L. I pray you, what said he, signior, hee's a proper  
70 man.

F A S T. Mary, he tells me, if I please to shew the bountie of my mind, to impart some ten groats to his vse, or so.

P V N T. Breake his head, and giue it him.

C A R L. I thought he had beene playing o' the *Iewes*  
75 trump, I.

S H I F T. My rapier ? no sir . my rapier is my guard, my defence, my reueneue, my honour : (if you cannot impart, be secret, I beseech you) and I will maintaine it, where there is a graine of dust, or a drop of water. (Hard is the choise when  
80 the valiant must eat their armes, or clem :) Sell my rapier ? no, my deare, I will not bee diuorc't from thee, yet, I haue euer found thee true as steele—and (you cannot impart

III. vi 57 sir, om. Q3 gods] Gods Qq 58 would— ] would —  
Qr ' Looke you] Looke y ou Qq 2, 3 59 sort] good sort Qq 60  
11] If Qq 61 seruice,] seruice Qq one] One Qq 62 letters]  
letters, F2 commanders] Commaunders Qq 63 offices,] offices  
Qq 65 minde,] mind Qq 66 groates,] groates Qq 67 selfe—]  
selfe.— Qq. 68 Sbloud!] Sbloud, Qq 1, 2: Sbloud Q3: What, F2  
69 you,] you Qq he,] he Qq signior, Qr, Fr: Signior? Qq 2, 3:  
signior? F2 71 Mary,] Mary Qr: Marie Qq 2, 3: Marry F2 11]  
If Qq 1, 2 72 vse,] vse Qq so,] so— F2 73 head,] head F2  
74 beene] been Qr: ben Q2 bin Q3 o'] on Qq 75 trump,] Trump  
Qq 77 honour] Honor Q3 impart,] impart Qq 1, 2 78 secret,]  
secret Qq and I] and I Qr 79 dust,] dust Qq 1, 2 water.  
(Hard] water: (hard Qq 80 armes,] Armes Qq 81 no,] no Qq  
diuorc't] deuorc't Q3: diuorc'd F2 thee,] thee Qq yet,] yet; F2  
82 steele—] Steele: Qq 1, 2: steele: Q3



sir?) Saue you gentlemen · (neuerthesse if you haue a fancie to it, sir.)

FAST. Pr'y thee away: is Signior DELIRO departed? 85

CAR. Ha'you seene a pimpe out-face his owne wants better?

SO G. I commend him, that can dissemble 'hem so well.

PVNT. True, and hauing no better a cloke for it, then he has neither. 90

FAST. Gods precious, what mischieuous lucke is this! adiew gentlemen.

PVNT. Whither? in such haste, Monsieur FASTIDIVS!

FAST. After my marchant, signior DELIRO, sir. 95

CARL. O hinder him not, hee may hap lose his tide, a good flounder i'faith.

ORAN. Harke you, signior WHIFFE, a word with you.

CARL. How? signior WHIFFE?

ORAN. What was the difference betweene that gallant that's gone, and you, sir? *Orange and Cloue call Shift aside.*

SHIFT. No difference: he would ha' giu'n mee fise pound for my rapier, and I refus'd it; that's all.

CLOVE. O, was't no otherwise? wee thought you had beene vpon some termes. 105

SHIFT. No other then you saw, sir.

CLOVE. Adieu, good Master APPLE-IOHN.

CARL. How? WHIFFE, and APPLE-IOHN too?

III. vi 83 sir ?)] Sir) Qq 1, 2: sir) Q3 Saue] God saue Qq 84  
it,] it Qq 87 better ?] better Qq 1, 2 88 him,] him Qq 2, 3  
can] he can Q3 'hem] them Qq 89-90 for it, then he has Fr: for  
it, than he has Qr, F2 (it Qr). than he has for it Qq 2, 3: (then Q3)  
91 this !] this: Qr. this ? Qq 2, 3 93 FASTIDIVS !] Fastidius ? Qq  
95 marchant] Merchant Qq 1, 2: Marchant Q3: merchant F2 DEL-  
LIRO,] Deliro Qq 96 lose] loose Qq 1, 2 97 Ext. add Qq (for  
95) 98 ORAN.] Oren Qq, who spell 'Orange' up to 101. you,  
signior] you Sig. Qq 99 st. dir. in Qq at 98-9 100 gallant]  
young gallant Qq 101 you,] you Qq sir ? Q3, F2. sir. Qq 1, 2,  
Fr 104 was't] was it Qq 105 beene] ben Qq 106 then]  
than Qq, F2 saw,] saw Qq 107 Adieu,] Adieu Qr: Adiew Qq  
2, 3 APPLE-IOHN] Apple Iohn Qq Exeūt Oren. & Clouc. add  
Qq (Clou Q3) 108 APPLE-IOHN] Apples Iohn Qq 2, 3: Apple  
Iohn Q1



512 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

Heart, what'll you say if this be the *appendix*, or labell to  
110 both yond' indentures?

P V N T. It may be.

C A R L. Resolue vs of it, I A N V S, thou that look'st  
euery way: or thou H E R C V L E S, that hast trauail'd all  
countries.

115 P V N T. Nay, C A R L O, spend not time in inuocations  
now, 'tis late.

C A R L. Signior, here's a gentleman desirous of your  
name, sir.

S H I F T. Sir, my name is C A V A L I E R S H I F T: I  
120 am knowne sufficiently in this walke, sir.

C A R L. S H I F T? I heard your name varied e'en now,  
as I take it.

S H I F T. True, sir, it pleases the world (as I am her  
excellent *Tabbacconist*) to giue me the stile of signior  
125 W H I F F E: as I am a poore esquire about the towne here,  
they call mee Master A P P L E- l O H N. Varietie of good  
names does well, sir.

C A R L. I, and good parts, to make those good names:  
out of which I imagine yond 'bils to be yours.

130 S H I F T. Sir, if I should denie the manuscripts, I were  
worthie to be banisht the middle I'le, for cuer.

C A R L. I take your word, sir: this gentleman has  
subscrib'd to 'hem, and is most desirous to become your  
pupill. Mary you must vse expedition. *Signior Insulso*  
135 *Sogliardo*, this is the professor.

S O G L. In good time, sir; nay, good sir, house your  
head: doe you professe these sleights in tabacco?

III. vi. 109 *appendix*,] *Appendix* Qq 2, 3 111, 112 one line in Qq  
112 it,] it Qq 113 way ' way, Qq 115 Nay,] Nay Qq inuoca-  
tions, now,] Inuocations now; Qr: Inuocation now; Qq 2, 3 118  
name,] name Qq 119 Sir, my] My Qq 2, 3 120 walke,] walke Qq  
123 True,] True Qq 124 *Tabbacconist*] *Tabbacconist* Qq 126 A P P L E-  
l O H N. Varietie] *Apple Iohn*: varietie Qq 1, 2: *Apple Iohn*, varietie Q3  
127 well,] well Qq 130 manuscripts] *Scriptures* Qq 131 I'le,] I'le  
Qr: yle Qq 2, 3: ile, F2 132 word,] word Qq 134 pupill Mary]  
Pupill; mary Qq you] yon Qr expedition.] expedition: Qq 136  
time,] time Qq sir; corr. F1, F2: sir, Qq, F1 nay, good sir,] nay  
good sir Qq 137 head: corr. F1, F2: head, Qq, F1 these Qq, corr.  
F1, F2: those F1



SHIFT. I, doe more then professe, sir, and (if you please to bee a practitioner) I wil vndertake in one fortnight to bring you, that you shal take it plausibly in any ordinarie, 140 theatre, or the tilt-yard, if need be, i' the most popular assembly that is.

PVNT. But you cannot bring him to the *whiffe*, so soone?

SHIFT. Yes, as soone, sir: hee shall receiue the first, 145 second, and third *whiffe*, if it please him, and (vpon the receit) take his horse, drinke his three cups of *Canarie*, and expose one at *Hounslow*, a second at *Stanes*, and a third at *Bagshot*.

CARL. Baw-waw! 150

SOGL. You will not serue mee, sir, will you? I'le giue you more then countenance.

SHIFT. Pardon me, sir, I doe scorne to serue any man.

CARL. Who? he serue? Sbloud he keepes high men, and low men, he; he has a faire liuing at *Fullam*. 155

SHIFT. But in the nature of a fellow, I'le bee your follower, if you please.

SOGL. Sir, you shall stay, and dine with mee, and if wee can agree, wee le not part in haste: I am verie bountifull to men of qualitie. Where shall we goe, signior? 160

PVNT. Your Miter is your best house.

SHIFT. I can make this dogge take as many *whiffes* as I list, and hee shall retaine, or efume them, at my pleasure.

PVNT. By your patience, follow me, fellowes.

SOGL. Sir, PVNTARVOLO! 165

III. VI. 138 I, Ff: I Qq: I, I Ed conj. then Q3, Fr: than Qq x, 2, F2 professe Qq 139 practitioner] practioner Qr 141 -yard,] -yard Qq be, i'] be; Qq x, 2: bee; Q3 143 *whiffe*,] *Whiffe* Qq 145 Yes, as soone,] Yes as soone Qq sir: Q3, corr. Fr, F2: sir; Qr: Sir: Q2: sir, Fr 150 -waw!] waw Qq 151 mee,] me Qq 152 then] than Qq, F2 153 me,] me Qq x, 2; mee Q3 154 Sbloud] he! F2 155 he;] hee? Q2: he? Q3: he! F2 157 follower,] follower Qq 158 Sir,] Sir Qq x, 2 stay,] stay Qq 160 goe,] go Qr: goe Qq 2, 3 signior?] Signior. Qr 161 Miter] Mitre Qq 2, 3 162 *whiffes* corr Fr, F2: whiffes Qq, Fr 163 retaine,] retaine Qq x, 2 efume] refume Qq 2, 3: effume F2 them,] them Qq 164 me,] me Qq x, 2: mee Q3 165 Sir, PVNTARVOLO!] Sir *Puntarvolo*. Qr: Sir *Puntarvolo*. Qq 2, 3



514 *Every Man out of his Humour*

P V N T. Pardon mee, my dogge shall not cate in his companie, for a million.

C A R L. Nay, bee not you amaz'd, signior W H I F F E, what c're that stiffeneckt gentleman say's.

170 S O G L. No, for you doe not know the humour of the dogge, as wee doe : where shall we dine, C A R L O ? I would faine goe to one of these ordinaries, now I am a gentleman.

C A R L. So you may, were you neuer at any yet?

S O G L. No faith, but they say, there resorts your most  
175 choise gallants.

C A R L. True, and the fashion is, when any stranger comes in among'st 'hem, they all stand vp and stare at him, as he were some vnknowne beast, brought out of *Affrick*: but that'll bee help't with a good aduenturous face. You must  
180 be impudent ynough, sit downe, and vse no respect ; when any thing's propounded aboue your capacitie, smile at it, make two or three faces, and 'tis excellent, they'le thinke you haue trauail'd : though you argue, a whole day, in silence thus, & discourse in nothing but laughter, 'twill  
185 passe. Oncly (now and then) giue fire, discharge a good full oth, and offer a great wager, 'twill be admirable.

S O G L. I warrant you, I am resolute : come, good signior, there's a poore french crowne, for your ordinarie.

S H I F T. It comes well, for I had not so much as the least  
190 portcullice of coine before.

III. vi. 166-7 companie,] companie *Qq* 1, 2 : company *Q3*, *F2* 167  
*Exit Puntarvolo with his followers*, add *Qq* (*Punt.* *Qq* 2, 3 : *followers* *Q3*)  
168 Nay,] Nay *Qq* amaz'd,] amaz'd *Qq* 170 humour] *Humor* *Qq*  
171 dogge, *corr.* *F1*, *F2* : Dogge, *F1* : dog *Q1* : Dog *Qq* 2, 3, dine,]  
dine *Qq* 172 ordinaries,] Ordinaries *Qq* 1, 2 173 any] none *Qq*  
174 say,] say *Qq* 1, 2 176 stranger] straunger *Qq* 1, 2 178 beast,]  
beast *Qq* *Affrick* : *corr.* *F1*, *F2* : *Affrick*, *F1* : *Africke*, *Qq* 179  
aduenturous] adventurous *Q1* face. You *corr.* *F1*, *F2* : face, you *Q1*,  
*F1* : face ; you *Qq* 2, 3 180 respect ;] respect, *Q1* : respect : *Qq* 2, 3  
183 trauail'd] trauel'd *Q3* argue, . . . day, *corr.* *F1*, *F2* : argue . . . day  
*Qq*, *F1* 187 resolute : come,] resolute, come *Qq* 188 crowne,]  
crowne *Qq* 190 *Exeunt.* add *Qq*



G R E X.

M I T. I trauell with another obiection, signior, which I feare will bee enforc'd against the author, ere I can be deliuer'd of it.

C O R. What's that, sir ?

M I T. That the argument of his *Comædie* might haue<sup>195</sup> beene of some other nature, as of a duke to be in loue with a countesse, and that countesse to be in loue with the dukes sonne, and the sonne to loue the ladies waiting maid : some such crosse wooing, with a clowne to their seruuingman, better then to be thus neere, and familiarly allied to the<sup>200</sup> time.

C O R. You say well, but I would faine heare one of these *autumne*-judgements define once, *Quid sit Comædia* ? if he cannot, let him content himselfe with C I C E R O S definition (till hee haue strength to propose to himselfe a better) who<sup>205</sup> would haue a *Comædie* to be *Imitatio vitæ, Speculum consuetudinis, Imago veritatis* ; a thing throughout pleasant, and ridiculous, and accommodated to the correction of manners : if the maker haue fail'd in any particle of this, they may worthily taxe him, but if not, why—be you (that<sup>210</sup> are for them) silent, as I will bee for him ; and giue way to the actors.

III vi. 191 obiection,] obiection Qr: obiection Qq 2, 3 194 that,]  
that Qq 195 *Comædie*] *Comedie* Qq, F2 (so 206) 196 beene]  
ben Qr: been Q2: bin Q3 198 waiting maid] waiting-maid F2  
200 then] than Qq, F2 neere,] neere Qq 203 -judgements]-rudge-  
ments Qq 2, 3 *Quid sit* Quid sit Q3 *Comædia*] *Comedia* F2 204  
CICERO'S] CICERO'S F2 207 *veritatis* ;] *veritatis*, Qq pleasant,]  
pleasant Qq 210 him,] him ; F2 why—] why ; Qq



*Act III. Scene VII.*

SORDIDO, HINE.

*With a  
halter  
about his  
necke.*

NAY, gods-precious, if the weather and season bee so respectlesse, that beggars shall lue as well as their betters; and that my hunger, and thirst for riches, shall not make them hunger and thirst with pouertie; that my  
5 sleepes shall be broken, and their hearts not broken; that my coffers shall bee full, and yet care; theirs emptie, and yet merry! Tis time, that a crosse should beare flesh and bloud, since flesh and bloud cannot beare this crosse.

## G R E X.

M I T. What, will he hang himselfe?

10 C O R. Faith I, it seemes his Prognostication has not kept touch with him, and that makes him despaire.

M I T. Beshrow me, he will be out of his humour then, indeed.

S O R. Tut, these star-monger knaues, who would trust  
15 'hem? one saies, darke and rainy, when 'tis as cleere as christall; another saies, tempestuous blasts, and stormes, and 'twas as calme as a milke-bowle; here bee sweet rascals for a man to credit his whole fortunes with: You skie-staring cocks-combs you, you fat braines, out vpon  
20 you; you are good for nothing but to sweat night-caps, and make rug-gownes deare! You learned men, and haue not a legion of deuils, *a vostre service! a vostre service?* by heauen,

III VII Act . . . HINE.] SCENA SECVNDA. | *Enter Sordido with a halter about his necke.* Qq (SECUNDA. Qq 1, 2) 1 st dir not in Qq Nay,] Sord Nay Qq gods-] Gods- Qq 1, 2 : Gods Q3 season] the Season Qq 3 hunger,] hunger Qq 6 theirs] their's l'2 7 merry!] merry: Q1: merrie: Qq 2, 3 time,] time Qq 9 What,] What Qq 12 humour then,] Humor then Qq 17 milke-bowle] Milke bowle Qq (Milk Q3) 19 cocks-combs you,] Cocks combes you: Qq 1, 2 : Cockscombes you: Q3 20 -caps,] caps Qq 21 deare! You] deare: you Qq 22 service /] service. Qq service? by corr. F1: service? By Qq: service! by F1 originally, l'2 heauen,] heauen Qq



I thinke I shall die a better scholler then they ! but soft,  
how now, sirra.

H I N E. Here's a letter come from your sonne, sir. 25

S O R D. From my sonne, sir ? what would my sonne, sir ?  
some good newes, no doubt.

*Sweet, and deare father (desiring you first to send mee your blessing, which is more worth to me then gold, or siluer) I desire you likewise to be aduertised, that this Shrouetide (contrary to custome) we vse alwaies to haue reuels ; which is indeed dancing : and makes an excellent shew, in truth, especially if wee gentlemen bee well attir'd, which our seniors note, and thinke the better of our fathers, the better we are maintain'd, and that they shall know if they come vp, and haue any thing to doe in the law. Therefore, good father, these are (for your owne sake, as well as mine) to re-desire you ; that you let me not want, that which is fit for the setting vp of our name, in the honorable volume of gentilitie : that I may say to our calumniators, with T V L L I E, Ego sum ortus domus meæ, tu occasus tuæ. And thus (not doubting of*

III. vii 23 then] than Qq 1, 2, F2 they ] they, Qq 1, 2 : they : Q3  
24 now,] now Qq sirra.] sirrah. Qq 1, 2 : sirrah ? Q3 Enter a Hind  
with a letter Qq, centred in Q1, appended in Qq 2, 3 25 HINE]  
Hind Qq sonne.] Sonne Qq 1, 2 sonne Q3 (so twice in 26) 27  
newes,] newes Qq 28 margin. The letter ] corr. F1, F2 : not in F1  
originally : in Qq added as a stage direction to 27 : in F3 printed as  
a heading to the letter Sweet, corr. F1 : Sweet Qq, F1 originally,  
F2 father] father, Qq 1, 2 29 then] than Qq, F2 30 gold, corr.  
F1 : Gold Qq 1, 2 : gold Q3, F1 originally, F2 32 dancing : coir F1 :  
Dauncing, Q1 : Dancing, Q2 : dancing, Q3, F1 originally, F2 33 shew,  
in truth, corr F1 : shew in truth : Qq, F1 originally, F2 37 law  
Therefore, corr. F1 Law : therefore Q1 : Law : therefore Qq 2, 3 : law .  
therefore, F1 originally, F2 38 sake, Q3, corr. F1 : sake Qq 1, 2,  
F1 originally, F2 39 you , that] you, that Qq want,] want Qq,  
F2 40 name,] name Qq honorable] honourable Qq 1, 2, F2 41  
gentilitie : corr. F1 : Gentilitie, Qq 1, 2 : Gentility, Q3 : gentilitie, F1  
originally, F2 42 calumniators,] Calumniators Q1 : Columnators Qq 2, 3  
Ego . . . tuæ] EGO . . . TVÆ Qq 43 occasus] OCCASSUS Q2 :  
OCCASSVS Q3



518 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

*your fatherly beneuolence*) *I humbly aske you blessing,*  
45 *and pray god to blesse you.* Yours, if his owne.

How's this! *Yours, if his owne?* is he not my sonne, except  
he be his owne sonne? Belike, this is some new kind of  
subscription the gallants vse. Wel! wherefore doest thou  
stay, knaue? Away goe. Here's a letter indeede! reuels?  
50 and beneuolence? is this a weather to send beneuolence?  
or is this a season to reuell in? Slid the deuil and all takes  
part to vexe me, I thinke! this letter would neuer haue  
come now else, now, now, when the sunne shines, and the  
aire thus cleere. Soule, if this hold, we shall shortly haue  
55 an excellent crop of corne spring out of the high waies: the  
streets, and houses of the towne will be hid with the rank-  
nesse of the fruits, that grow there, in spight of good  
husbandry. Goe to, I'le preuent the sight of it, come as  
quickly as it can, I will preuent the sight of it. I haue this  
60 remedie, heauen. Stay; I'le tise the paine thus a little, ô,  
nothing, nothing. Well now! shall my sonne gaine a  
beneuolence by my death? or any body be the better for my  
gold, or so forth? No. Aliue, I kept it from 'hem, and  
(dead) my ghost shall walke about it, and preserue it;  
65 my son and daughter shall starue ere they touch it: I haue  
hid it as deep as hel, from the sight of heauen, and to it I

*Falls off.* goe now.

III. vii 44 *you*] *your* F3 45 *god*] *God* Qq Yours . . owne *corr.*  
*Fr* Yours . . owne. Qq, F1 originally, F2 in Q1, in F1 originally, in  
F2 a separate line 46 this! *corr* F1, F2: this? Qq, F1 47  
sonne?] Sonne. Qq 1, 2 Belike, *corr* F1: Belike Qq, F1 kind Qq  
1, 2, *corr* F1, F2: kinde Q3, F1 48 Wel!] *corr.* F1, F2. Well, Qq:  
Wel, F1 49 stay,] stay, Qq *Exit. Hind.* add Qq after 'goe': Qq 2,  
3 *begin a new line at* 'Here's'. indeede! *corr.* F1, F2: indeed, Qq,  
F1 50 and beneuolence] and beneuolence Qq 1, 2 52 me, I  
thinke!] me I thinke: Q1: mee I thinke: Qq 2, 3 51 Soule,] Soule  
Q 1 55 waies:] waies, Qq 57 fruits,] fruits Qq there, Q3, *corr*  
F1: there Qq 1, 2, F1 originally, F2 58 to,] to Q1 60 remedie,  
heauen Stay:] remedie Heauen: stay; Qq 61 Well now! *corr.*  
F1, F2: Well now: Qq 1, 2. Wel, now Q3: Well now, F1 originally,  
F2 63 gold,] Gold Qq No. Aliue, Q1, *corr.* F1, F2: No. Aliue  
Qq 2, 3: No, aliue, F1 originally 64 about it,] about it Qq pre-  
serue it; *corr.* F1: preserue it, Qq, F1 originally, F2 65 starue]  
sterue Qq touch it: *corr.* F1: touch it, Qq, F1 originally, F2 66  
hel, *corr.* F1: Hell Qq: hell F1 originally, F2 67 st. dir. add Qq 1, 2:  
*after* 67 in Q1



Act III. Scene VIII.

R V S T I C I.

R V S T. 1. **A**Ye me, what pittifull sight is this! help, *To him.*  
help, help.

R V S T. 2. How now? what's the matter?

R V S T. 1. O, here's a man has hang'd himselfe, helpe to  
get him againe. 5

R V S T. 2. Hang'd himselfe? Slid carry him afore a  
iustice, 'tis *chance medley*, o' my word.

R V S T. 3. How now, what's here to doe?

R V S T. 4. How comes this?

R V S T. 2. One has executed himselfe, contrary to order 10  
of law, and by my consent he shall answer't.

R V S T. 5. Would he were in case, to answer it.

R V S T. 1. Stand by, he recouers, giue him breath.

S O R D. Oh.

R V S T. 5. Masse, 'twas well you went the foot-way, 15  
neighbour.

R V S T. 1. I, and I had not cut the halter.

S O R D. How! cut the halter? Aye me, I am vndone,  
I am vndone.

R V S T. 2. Mary, if you had not beene vndone, you had 20  
beene hang'd, I can tell you.

S O R D. You thred-bare horse-bread-eating rascals, if  
you would needes haue beene meddling, could you not haue  
vntied it, but you must cut it? and in the midst too! Aye  
me. 25

R V S T. 1. Out on me, 'tis the catterpillar S O R D I D O!

III. VIII. Act . . R V S T I C I.] *Enter Rustici, 5 or 6, one after another* (5.  
or 6 Q3) Qq, without change of scene. 1 *To him* corr F1: not in  
Qq, F1 originally. this? Qq 4 O,] O Qq 7 *medley*, o']  
*medley* on Qq 10 himselfe,] himselfe Qq order] the order Qq 12  
case,] case Qq 15 foot-way,] footway Qq 1, 2 foote-way Qq 16  
neighbour] neighbor Q3 17 and] an' F2 18 How! How? Qq  
20 Mary,] Marry Qq 1, 2: Mary Q3 21 hang'd,] hang'd Qq 22  
thred-bare] thredbare Qq -eating] eating Qq 24 too!] too? Qq  
26 SORDIDO!] *Sordido*; Qq



how cursed are the poore, that the viper was blest with this good fortune ?

R v s t. 2. Nay, how accurst art thou, that art cause to  
30 the curse of the poore ?

R v s t. 3. I, and to saue so wretched a caytife ?

R v s t. 4. Curst be thy fingers that loos'd him.

R v s t. 2. Some desperate furie possesse thee, that thou  
maist hang thy selfe too.

35 R v s t. 5 Neuer maist thou be sau'd, that sau'd so  
damn'd a monster.

S O R D I D. What curses breathe these men ! how haue  
my deeds

Made my lookes differ from another mans,  
That they should thus detest, and lothe my life !

40 Out on my wretched humour, it is that

Makes me thus monstrous in true humane eyes.

Pardon me (gentle friends) I'll make faire mends

For my foule errors past, and twenty-fold

Restore to all men, what with wrong I rob'd them :

45 My barnes, and garners shall stand open still

To all the poore that come, and my best graine

Be made almes-bread, to feed halfe-famisht mouthes.

Though hitherto amongst you I haue liu'd,

Like an vnsauourie muck-hill to my selfe,

50 Yet now, my gather'd heapes being spread abroad,

Shall turne to better, and more fruitfull vses.

Blesse then this man, curse him no more for sauing

My life, and soule together. O, how deeply

The bitter curses of the poore doe pierce !

55 I am by wonder chang'd ; come in with me

And witnesse my repentance : now I proue,

" No life is blest, that is not grac't with loue.

III. viii. 29 Nay,] Nay Qq 31 caytife ?] Caytife. Qq 37 breathe]  
breath Qq x, 2 men ']' men ? Qq x, 2 : men, Q3 39 life !] life ? Qq  
40 humour] Humor Qq 45 barnes,] Barnes Qq 47 -bread,] -bread  
Qq x, 2 48 hitherto] hetherto Qq x, 2 liu'd,] liu'd Qq 49  
vnsauourie] vnsauoric Qq selfe,] selfe. Q3 50 now,] now Qq  
53 life,] life Qq O,] O Qq x, 2 : Oh Q3 54 pierce !] In Q3 ' I ' ill-  
printed and in some copis resembles ' I '. 57 Exit. add Qq



R v s r. 2. O miracle ! see when a man ha's grace !

R v s r. 3. Had't not beene pittie, so good a man should  
haue beene cast away ? 60

R v s r. 2. Well, I'le get our clarke put his conuersion  
in the *Acts*, and *Monuments*.

R v s r. 4. Doc, for I warrant him hee's a *Martyr*.

R v s r. O god, how he wept, if you mark't it ! did you  
see how the teares trill'd ? 65

R v s r. 5. Yes, belecue me, like master vicars bowles  
vpon the greene, for all the world.

3. or 4. O neighbour, god's blessing o' your heart, neigh-  
bour, 'twas a good gratefull deed.

# G R E X.

C o r. How now, M i t r i s ? what's that you consider so 70  
seriously ?

M i t. Troth, that which doth essentially please me, the  
warping condition of this greene, and soggy multitude :  
but in good faith, signior, your author hath largely out-  
stript my expectation in this *Scene*, I will liberally confesse 75  
it. For, when I saw S o r d i d o so desperately intended,  
I thought I had had a hand of him, then.

C o r. What ? you suppos'd he should haue hung him-  
selfe, indeed ?

M i t. I did, and had fram'd my obiection to it ready, 80  
which may yet be very fitly vrg'd, and with some necessity :

III viii. 58 grace !] grace Qq 59 pittie,] pitie Qq 60 haue beene]  
haue ben Qq 1, 2 61 conuersion] conversion Q1 62 *Acts*, and  
*Monuments*] Chronicle Qq 63 *Martyr*] vertuous man Qq 64  
Rvst] Rust 2 F2 : the number is accidentally omitted in Qq, F1. god,]  
god Q1 God Qq 2, 3 wept,] wept Qq it !] it. Qq 66 Yes,]  
Yes Qq me,] mee, Qq master] maister Q1 maisters Q2 : masters  
Q3 (corrected to master) 68 god's] God's Qq 2, 3 o' not in Qq  
heart,] heart Qq neighbour] neighbor Q3 69 *Exeunt*. add Qq  
70 now,] now Qq 72 me,] me : Qq 1, 3 : mee : Q2 73 greene,]  
greene Qq, F2 soggy] foggy W. A. Craigie conj s v soggy in N. E. D.  
multitude :] multitude, F2 74 faith,] faith Qq 1, 2 : fayth Q3 out-  
stript] outstript Qq 1, 2 : ouer-shpt Q3 76 For,] For Qq 77  
him,] him Qq 78 himselfe,] himselfe Qq, F2 80 did,] did ; Qq  
obiection] objection Qq 1, 2



for though his purpos'd violence lost th'effect, and extended not to death, yet the intent and horror of the object, was more then the nature of a *Comædie* will in 85 any sort admit.

COR. I? what thinke you of PLAVTVS, in his *Comædie*, called *Cistellaria*, there? where he brings in ALCESIMARCHVS with a drawne sword ready to kill himselfe, and as hee is e'ne fixing his brest vpon it, to bee 90 restrain'd from his resolu'd outrage, by SILENIUM, and the bawd: is not his authoritie of power to giue our *Scene* approbation?

MIR. Sir, I haue this only euasion left me, to say, *I thinke it bee so indeed, your memorie is happier then mine:* 95 but I wonder, what engine hee will vse to bring the rest out of their humours!

COR. That will appeare anon, neuer preoccupie your imagination withall. Let your mind keepe companie with the *Scene* still, which now remoues it selfe from the countrey, 100 to the court. Here comes MACILENTE, and signior BRISKE, freshly suted, lose not your selfe, for now the *Epitasis*, or busie part of our subject, is in act.

III. viii 84 object,] object, Qq 1, 3 object Q2 then Q3, FI. than Qq 1, 2, F2 *Comædie*] *Comedie* Qq 85 admit] allow Qq 86 PLAVTVS,] *Plautus* Qq 1, 2 87 *Comædie*,] *Comedie* Qq *Cistellaria*,] *Cistellaria* Qq 88 sword] sword, Qq 2, 3 90 outrage,] outrage Qq 1, 2 out-rage Q3 SILENIUM,] *Silennium* Qq 93 only] (your only) Qq 94 then] than Qq, F2 95 wonder,] wonder Qq 96 humours!] *Humors* ? Qq 1, 2. *Humois*. Q3 99 countrey,] *Countrie* Qq 1, 2. *Countrie* Q3 100 MACILENTE,] *Macilente* Qq 101 BRISKE,] *Briske* Qq lose] loose Qq 102 *Epitasis*,] *Epitasis* Qq subject,] *Subject* Qq act] *Action* Qq



*Act III. Scene IX.*

MACILENTE, BRISKE, CINEDO,  
SAVIOLINA.

FAST. **W**ELL, now, signior MACILENTE, you are  
not onely welcome to the court, but also to my  
mistris with-drawing chamber: Boy, get me some tabacco,  
I'll but goe in, and shew I am here, and come to you pre-  
sently, sir. 5

MACI. What's that he said? by heauen, I markt him  
not:

My thoughts, and I, were of another world.  
I was admiring mine owne out-side here,  
To thinke what priuiledge, and palme it beares  
Here, in the court! Be a man ne're so vile 10  
In wit, in iudgement, manners, or what else,  
If he can purchase but a silken couer,  
He shall not only passe, but passe regarded:  
Whereas, let him be poore, and meanely clad,  
Though ne're so richly parted; you shall haue 15  
A fellow (that knowes nothing but his beefe,  
Or how to rince his clammy guts in beere)  
Will take him by the shoulders, or the throat,  
And kicke him downe the staires. Such is the state  
Of vertue, in bad clothes! ha, ha, ha, ha, 20  
That raiment should be in such high request!  
How long should I be, ere I should put off

III. IX Act . . SAVIOLINA ] SCENA TERTIA | *Enter Macilente, Briske, Cinedo, with Tabacco* Qq. SCENE III.—*An Apartment at the Court* | *Enter Macilente, Fastidious Briske, both in a new suit, and Cinedo with tobacco.* G MACILENTE, ] MACILENTE F2 1 Well, now, ] Well now Qq 3 mistris ] mistresse Qq 1, 2 with-drawing ] with drawing Qq Boy, ] Boy Qq 4 presently, presently Qq 5 Exit add Qq 6 heauen, ] heauen Qq not, ] not, Qq 7 thoughts, ] thoughts Q3, F2 I, ] I Qq world, ] world; Qq 8 out-side ] outside Qq 9 priuiledge, ] priuiledge Qq 10 Here, ] Here Qq court ] court: Qq 11 iudgement ] So Qq, Ff spell here manners ] in manners Q3 14 Whereas, ] Whereas Qq poore, ] poore Qq 16 beefe, ] Beefe Qq 18 shoulders, ] shoulders Qq 20 vertue, ] vertue Qq clothes ] Cloths, Qq 1, 2 : clothes, Q3 21 request ] request? Qq 22 be, ] be Qq



To the lord *Chancelors* tombe, or the *Shrines* posts ?  
 By heauen (I thinke) a thousand, thousand yeere.  
 25 *Ilis* grauitie, his wisdom, and his faith,  
 To my dread *Soueraigne* (graces that suruiue him)  
 These I could well endure to reuerence,  
 But not his tombe : no more then I'd commend  
 The chappell organ, for the guilt without,  
 30 Or this base violl, for the varnisht face.

**F A S T.** I feare I haue made you stay somewhat long,  
 sir, but is my tabacco readie, boy ?

**C I N E.** I, sir.

**F A S T.** Giue me, my mistris is vpon comming, you shall  
 35 see her presently, sir, (*Tab.*) you'le say you neuer accosted  
 a more piercing wit. This tabacco is not dryed, boy, or else  
 the pipe's defectiue. Oh, your wits of *Italie* are nothing  
 comparable to her ! her braine's a verie quiuer of iests !  
 and she do's dart them abroad with that sweete loose, and  
 40 iudiciall aime, that you would—here she comes sir.

*She is  
 scene and  
 goes in  
 againe.*

**M A C I.** 'Twas time, his inuention had beene bogd else.

**S A V I.** Giue me my fanne there.

**M A C I.** How now, Monsieur **B R I S K E** ?

**F A S T.** A kind of affectionate reuerence strikes mee with  
 45 a cold shiuering (me thinkes.)

**M A C I.** I like such tempers well, as stand before their  
 mistresses with feare and trembling, and before their maker,  
 like impudent mountaines.

**F A S T.** By this hand, I'd spend twentie pound my

m. ix. 23 To the] To my *Qq* *Shrines*] *Sheriffs* *F* 3 24 thousand,]  
 thousand *Qq* yeere | yeare, *Qq* 1, 2 28 tombe ] Tombe, *Qq* 1, 2 .  
 tombe, *Q* 3 then] than *Qq*, *F* 2 I'd] Ie *Q* 1. Ie *Qq* 2, 3 29  
 organ,] Organ *Qq* guilt] gilt *F* 2 30 base] bace *Qq* 1, 2 violl,]  
 Violl *Qq* Enter *Fast* add *Qq* 31 I feare] In faith *Qq* long,] long  
*Qq* 32 sir,] sir; *Q* 3, *F* 2 readie,] readie *Qq* 1, 2 : ready *Q* 3  
 I,] I *Qq* 34 mistris] mistresse *Qq* 35 presently,] presently *Qq*  
 36 dryed,] dried *Qq* 37 pipe's] pipe is *F* 2 38 her !] hei, *Qq*  
 iests !] jests, *Q* 1 : iests, *Qq* 2, 3 39 sweete] sweet, *F* 3 loose,] loose  
*Qq* 40 iudiciall] iudiciall *Qq* aime,] aime *Qq* that you *Qq*,  
*corr. F* 1, *F* 2 : not in *F* 1 originally 41 st. dir. *She* . . . againe.] Enter  
*Sannolina*, and goes in againe. *Qq* in text after 40. 43 now,] now *Qq*  
 Monsieur] Mounsiour *Qq* 1, 2 47 maker,] Maker *Qq* 49 this  
 hand] Iesu *Qq*



vaunting-horse stood here now, she might see me doe but one 50  
tricke ?

M A C I. Why, do's she loue actiuitie ?

C I N E. Or if you had but your long stockings on, to be  
dancing a galliard, as she comes by.

F A S T. I eyther. O, these stirring humours make ladies 55  
mad with desire: shee comes. My good G E N I V S em-  
bolden me, boy, the pipe quickly.

M A C I. What ? will he giue her musicke ?

F A S T. A second good morrow to my faire mistress.

S A V I. Faire seruant, I'll thanke you a day hence, when 60  
the date of your salutation comes forth.

F A S T. How, like you that answere ? is't not admirable ?

M A C I. I were a simple courtier, if I could not admire  
trifles, sir. 64

F A S T. Troth, sweet ladie, I shall (*Tab.*) be prepar'd to *He talks,*  
giue you thanks for those thankes, and (*Tab.*) studie more *and takes*  
officious, and obsequious regards (*Tab.*) to your faire *tabacco be-*  
beauties: (*Tab.*) mend the pipe, boy. *twecne.*

M A C I. I ne're knew tabacco taken as a *parenthesis*,  
before. 70

F A S T. Fore god (sweete ladie) beleuee it, I doe honour  
the meanest rush in this chamber, for your loue.

S A V I. I, you need not tell mee that, sir, I doe thinke,  
you doe prize a rush, before my loue.

M A C I. Is this the wonder of nations ? 75

F A S T. O, by this ayre, pardon me, I said, for your loue,  
by this light: but it is the accustomed sharpness of your

III. ix. 50 vaunting-horse] vaunting Horse Qq: Vaulting-horse F3 51  
tricke ?] trick F2 52 Why,] Why Qq 53 on,] on Qq 54 danc-  
ing] dauncing Qq 1, 2 55 O,] O Qq humours] humors Qq 36  
desire:] desire, Qq 1, 2 57 boy,] Boy Qq Enter Samolima. add Qq  
62 How,] How Qq 64 trifles, sir.] trifles sir Qq 1, 2: trifles. sir. Q3,  
ending the line at 'trifles.' and adding '(sir.' above on noticing the omis-  
sion. 65 Troth,] Troth Qq ladie,] Ladie Qq 1, 2: Lady. Q3  
st. dir not in Qq. 67 officious,] officious Qq 68 beauties: Qq:  
beauties. Ff pipe,] pipe Qq 69 parenthesis,] parenthesis Qq 71  
god] God Qq 72 chamber,] chamber Qq 73 that,] that Qq  
thinke,] think Qq 74 rush,] rush Qq 76 this ayre,] Iesu Qq  
said,] said Qq 77 light:] light; Qq



526 *Every Man out of his Humour*

ingenuitie, sweete mistresse, to—— Masse your violl's new  
79 strung, methinkes.

*He takes  
downe the  
violl, and  
playes be-  
twene.* M A C I. Ingenuitie. I see his ignorance will not suffer  
him to slander her, which he had done most notably, if he  
had said wit, for ingenuitie, as he meant it.

F A S T. By the soule of musicke, ladie (*hum, hum.*)

S A V I. Would we might heare it once.

85 F A S T. I doe more adore, and admire your (*hum, hum*)  
predominant perfections, then (*hum, hum*) euer I shall haue  
power, and facultie to expresse (*hum.*)

S A V I. Vpon the violl *de Gambo*, you meane?

F A S T. It's miserably out of tune, by this hand.

90 S A V I. Nay, rather by the fingers.

M A C I. It makes good harmonic with her wit.

F A S T. Sweet ladie, tune it Boy, some tabacco.

M A C I. Tabacco againe? he do's court his mistresse with  
verie exceeding good changes.

95 F A S T. Signior M A C I L E N T E, you take none, sir?  
(*Tab.*)

M A C I. No, vnlesse I had a Mistresse, signior, it were a  
great indecorum for me to take tabacco.

F A S T. How like you her wit? (*Tab.*)

100 M A C I. Her ingenuitie is excellent, sir.

F A S T. You see the subiect of her sweet fingers, there?  
(*Tab.*) Oh, shee tickles it so, that (*Tab.*) shee makes it laugh  
most diuinely; (*Tab.*) I'll tell you a good iest now, and your  
selfe shall say it's a good one: I haue wisht my selfe to be  
105 that instrument (I thinke) a thousand times, and not so few,  
by heauen (*Tab.*)

III ix. 78 ingenuitie,] Ingenuitie Qq mistresse,] Mistresse Qq 79  
strung,] strung Qq 80 st. dir, *He . . betweene.*] *Takes downe the*  
*Viol* Qq in text after 79. Ingenuitie,] *Ingenuitie*; Qq: Ingenuitie!  
F2 81 her,] her; Qq 82 wit,] *Wit* Qq ingenuitie] *Ingenuitie*  
Qq 83 musicke,] Musicke Qq 85 adore,] adore Qq 86 pre-  
dominant] predominate Q3 perfections,] perfections Qq 1, 2 then  
If: than Qq 87 power,] power Qq 88 *Gambo*,] *Gambo* Qq  
90 Nay,] Nay Qq 1, 2 92 ladie,] Ladie Qq Boy,] Boy Qq 1, 2  
95 none,] none Qq 97 Mistresse,] mistresse Qq 100 excellent,]  
excellent Qq 101 subiect] subject Qq fingers, *corr.* F1, F2: fingers  
Qq, F1 originally 102 Oh,] Oh Qq 103 iest] jest Qq 1, 2: jest  
Q3 106 heauen] Heauens Qq



M A C I. Not vnlike, sir : but how ? to be cas'd vp, and hung by on the wall ?

F A S T. O, no, sir, to be in vse I assure you ; as your iudicious eyes may testific. (*Tab.*) 110

S A V I. Here, seruant, if you will play, come.

F A S T. Instantly, sweet ladie. (*Tab.*) In good faith, here's most diuine tabacco !

S A V I. Nay, I cannot stay to dance after your pipe.

F A S T. Good ! nay, deare ladie, stay : by this sweete 115 smoake, I thinke your wit be all fire. (*Tab.*)

M A C I. And, hee's the *Salamander* belongs to it.

S A V I. Is your tabacco perfum'd, seruant ? that you sweare by the sweet smoke ?

F A S T. Still more excellent ! (before heauen, and these 120 bright lights) I thinke (*Tab.*) you are made of ingenuitie, I. (*Tab.*)

M A C I. True, as your discourse is : ô abominable !

F A S T. Will your ladiship take any ?

S A V I. O, peace I pray you ; I loue not the breath of 125 a woodcockes head.

F A S T. Meaning my head, ladie ?

S A V I. Not altogether so, sir ; but (as it were fatall to their follies that thinke to grace themselues with taking tabacco, when they want better entertainment) you see 130 your pipe beares the true forme of a woodcockes head.

F A S T. O admirable *smile* !

S A V I. 'Tis best leauing of you in admiration, sir.

III ix. 107 vnlike,] vnlike Qq vp,] vp Qq 109 no,] no Qq. 110 iudicious] iudicious Qq 111 Here,] Here Qq 112 Instantly,] Instantly Qr ladie. corr Fr, F2 : Ladie Qq, Fr faith,] faith Qq 1, 2. fayth Q3 113 tabacco !] Tabacco. Qq 114 dance] Daunce Qq 115 Good ! corr. Fr, F2 : Good, Qq, Fr originally nay,] nay Qn : my Qq 2, 3 ladie,] Ladie Qq 116 fire. Qq 2, 3, corr Fr, F2 : fire Qr, Fr originally 117 And, corr Fr, F2 : And Qq, Fr belongs to] that lues by Qq 118 perfum'd,] perfum'd Qq seruant ?] Sir ? Qq 1, 2 : sir, Q3 120 excellent !] excellent Qq (before) before Qq 2, 3 heauen] God Qq 121 lights] Heauens Qq 1, 2 : Heauens, Q3 123 abominable] abominable Qq 1, 2 126 a om. F3 128 altogether] altogether Qq 1, 2 so,] so Qq 132 FAST om. Q3 smile corr. Fr, F2 : Smile Qq, Fr originally 133 of not in Qq 2, 3 Exit *Sauolma*. Qq in text after 133



M A C I. Are these the admired lady-wits, that hauing so  
 135 good a plainc-song, can runne no better diuision vpon it?  
 S'heart, all her iests are of the stampe, (*March* was fiteene  
 yeres ago.) Is this the Comet, Monsieur F A S T I D I V S,  
 that your gallants wonder at so?

F A S T. Hart of a gentleman, to neglect mee afore  
 140 presence thus! Sweet sir, I beseech you be silent in my  
 disgrace. By the *Muses*, I was neuer in so vile a humour  
 in my life, and her wit was at the flood too. Report it  
 not for a million, good sir; let me be so farre endear'd  
 to your loue.

G R E X.

145 M I T. What followes next, signior C O R D A T V S?  
 this gallants humour is almost spent, me thinkes, it ebbes  
 apace, with this contrarie breath of his mistresse.

C O R. O, but it will flow againe for all this, till there  
 come a generall drought of humour among all our actors,  
 150 and then, I feare not but his wil fall as low as any. See,  
 who presents himselfe here!

M I T. What, i' the old case?

C O R. Yfaith, which makes it, the more pittifull, you  
 vnderstand where the *Scene* is?

III. ix. 134 admired] admirable Q3 135 it?] it. Qq 136  
 S'heart, om. F2, F3 iests] jests Qq 1, 3: jeasts Q2 stampe,]  
 stampe Qq 136-7 (*March* ... ago) corr. F1, F2: *March* ... ago. Qq, F1  
 originally 137 Comet, corr. F1, F2: Comet Qq: comet, F1 originally  
 139 gentleman,] Gentleman Qq 140 thus!] thus: Qq 141 dis-  
 grace.] disgrace, Q1: disgrace; Qq 2, 3 the *Muses*] Iesu Qq was  
 neuer] neuer was Qq humour] Humor Qq 142 too.] too, Qq 1, 2:  
 too: Q3 143 million,] million Qq Exeunt. add Qq 145 next,]  
 next Qq 146 humour] Humor Qq 1, 3 spent,] spent Qq 149 hu-  
 mour] Humor Qq 150 then,] then Qq See,] See Qq 151  
 here] here? Qq 153 it,] it Qq pittifull,] pittifull, Qq 2, 3, F2



Act III. Scene I.

FALLACE. FVNGOSO.

Why, are you so melancholy, brother?

FVNG. I am not melancholy, I thanke you, sister.

FALL. Why are you not merrie then? there are but two of vs in all the world, and if wee should not bee comforts one to another, god helpe vs. 5

FVNG. Faith, I cannot tell, sister, but if a man had any true melancholy in him, it would make him melancholy, to see his ycomanly father cut his neighbours throats, to make his sonne a gentleman: and yet when he has cut 'hem, he will see his sonnes throat cut too, ere he make him a true gentleman indeed, before death cut his owne throat. I must bee the first head of our house, and yet he will not giue me the head till I bee made so. Is any man term'd a gentleman that is not alwayes i' the fashion? I would know but that. 15

FALL. If you bee melancholy for that, brother, I thinke I haue as much cause to bee melancholy, as one: for I'le be sworne, I liue as little in the fashion, as any woman in London. By the faith of a Gentlewoman, (beast that I am to say it) I ha' not one friend i' the world besides my husband. When saw you master FASTIDIVS BRISKE, brother? 20

FVNG. But a while since, sister, I thinke: I know not well in truth. By this hand, I could fight with all my heart, me thinkes. 25

IV. i. Act . . . FVNGOSO ] ACTVS QVARTVS, SCENA PRIMA | Enter Fungoso, Fallace following him. Qq (ACTVS QVARTVS Qq 1, 2): ACT IV, SCENE I.—A Room in Deliro's House. G 1 Why,] Fall. Why Qq melancholy,] melancholy Q1: Melancholly Q2 2 melancholy,] melancholy Q1: melancholly Q2. melancholy, Q3 you,] you Qq 4 all om. Q3 5 one to] to one Qq ano-]ther, god corr Fr: ano-] god Fr originally god] God Qq, F2 6 tell,] tell Qq 8 throats,] throats Qq 9 his] is some copies of Q3 13 the head] the head, Qq 16 that,] that Qq 1, 2 17 one:] one: Qq: any one F3 18 sworne,] sworne Qq 19 By . . Gentlewoman,] By the Bible of heauen Qq 20 ha'] haue Qq 21 master] Maister Q1 23 since,] since Qq thinke:] thinke Qq 24 By this hand,] By Gods lid Qq heart,] heart Qq 1, 2



FALL. Nay, good brother, be not resolute.

VNG. I sent him a letter, and he writes me no answer neyther.

FALL. Oh, sweet FASTIDIVS BRISKE! ô fine  
 30 courtier! thou art hee mak'st me sigh, and say, how  
 blessed is that woman that hath a courtier to her husband!  
 and how miserable a dame shee is, that hath neyther  
 husband, nor friend i' the court! O, sweet FASTIDIVS!  
 ô, fine courtier! How comely he bowes him in his court'sie!  
 35 how full hee hits a woman betweene the lips when hee kisses!  
 how vpright hee sits at the table! how daintily he carues!  
 how sweetly he talkes, and tels newes of this lord, and of that  
 lady! how cleanly he wipes his spoone, at euery spoon-  
 full of any whit-meat he eates, and what a neat case of  
 40 pick-tooths he carries about him, still! O, sweet FASTI-  
 DIVS! ô fine courtier!

*Act III. Scene II.*

DELIRO, MUSICIANS, MACILENTE,  
 VNGOSO.

SEE, yonder shee is, gentlemen. Now (as euer you'll beare  
 the name of musicians) touch your instruments sweetly,  
 shee has a delicate care, I tell you: play not a false note, I  
 beseech you.

5 MVSIC. Feare not, signior DELIRO.

iv. i 26 Nay,] Nay Qq 29 Oh,] Oh Qq BRISKE! Briske, Qq  
 30 courtier! Courtier, Qq sigh,] sigh Qq 31 husband!] husband?  
 Qq - 32 is,] is Qq 33 husband,] husband Qq i' corr. Fr, F2:  
 in Qq, Fr court! Court: Qq 1, 2: Court? Q3 O,] O Qq FASTI-  
 DIVS! 6,] Fastidius, O Qq 34 courtier! Courtier. Qq court'sie!  
 corr. Fr, F2: courtesie? Qq, Fr 35 betweene corr. Fr, F2: betwixt  
 Qq, Fr 35-8 kisses! ... table! ... carues! ... lady! corr. Fr, F2:  
 kisses? ... table? (Table? Qr) ... carues? ... Lady? (Ladie? Qr) Qq,  
 Fr 38 spoone, corr. Fr, F2: spoon Qq 1, 2: spoone Q3, Fr 40  
 him, still!] him still? Qq O,] Oh Qr: O Qq 2, 3 FASTIDIVS! Fas-  
 tidius, Qq 41 courtier! Courtier! Qq 1, 2: Courtier. Q3 iv. ii.  
 Act . . . VNGOSO.] Enter Deliro with Musicians. (Musicians, Q3) Qq,  
 without change of scene. i See,] Deli. See, Qq (See Q1) is, gentle-  
 men. Now] is Gentlemen, now Qq you'll corr. Fr, F2: you'le Qq, Fr  
 originally 3 tell you: corr. Fr, F2: tell you, Qq, Fr originally  
 note,] note Qq 5 not,] not Qq 1, 2



DELI. O, begin, some sprightly thing: Lord, how my imagination labours with the successe of it. Well said, good yfaith! heauen grant it please her. I'll not be scene, for then shee'll be sure to dislike it.

FALL. Hey---da! this is excellent! I'll lay my life, this is my husbands dotage. I thought so; nay, neuer play pecke-boe with me, I know, you doe nothing but studie how to anger me, sir.

DELI. Anger thee, sweet wife? why didst thou not send for musicians to supper last night, thy selfe? 15

FALL. To supper, sir? now, come vp to supper, I beseech you: as though there were no difference between supper time, when folkes should be merry, and this time, when they would be melancholy? I would neuer take vpon me to take a wife, if I had no more iudgement to please her. 20

DELI. Be pleas'd, sweet wife, and they shall ha' done: and would to fate, my life were done, if I can neuer please thee.

MACI. Saue you, lady, where is master DELIRO?

DELI. Here, master MACILENTE: you are welcome 25 from court, sir; no doubt you haue beene grac't exceedingly of master BRISKEs Mistris, and the rest of the ladies, for his sake?

MACI. Alas, the poore *phantasticke*! hee's scarce knowne

iv in 6 O,] O Qq thing ] thing; Qq 7 it. Well] it. well Qq  
it! Well F2 8 yfaith! corr. Fr, F2: yfaith, Qq, Fr originally  
grant] graunt Qq her. corr. Fr, F2; her, Qq 1, 2, Fr originally:  
her Q3 10 Hey --- da!] Hey da, Qr: Heyda, Q2: Hayda, Q3  
excellent!] excellent, Qq 1, 2: excellent: Q3 life,] life Qq 11  
dotage] dotage, Qq 1, 2 so; nay,] so, nay Qq 12 pecke-boe]  
boe-peep F2, F3 know,] know Qq 13 me,] me Qq 1, 2. mee Q3  
14 why] why, Qq 2, 3 15 musicians] Musitians Qq 1, 2 night,]  
night Qq 16 supper, sir? now,] Supper sir? now (Sir? Qq 2, 3) Qq  
supper,] Supper Qq 18 time, corr. Fr, F2: time Qq, Fr originally  
19 would] should F2, F3 20 iudgement] indgement some copies  
of Q2 21 pleas'd,] pleas'd Qq done ] done, F2 22 fate,]  
Christ Qq After 23 Exit Musitians Enter Macilente. Qq 24  
Saue you, lady,] God saue you Ladie; Qq 25 you are] you'r Qq  
26 court, corr. Fr, F2: the Court Qq: the court, Fr doubt] boubt F2  
27 Mistris corr. Fr: Mistrisse Qq: mistris Fr originally, F2 ladies,]  
Ladies Qq 29 *phantasticke*] *Phantasticke*, Qq



30 To any lady there ; and those that know him,  
 Know him the simplest man of all they know :  
 Deride, and play vpon his amorous humours,  
 Though he but apishly doth imitate  
 The gallant'st courtiers, kissing ladies pumps,  
 35 Holding the cloth for them, praising their wits,  
 And scrueilely obseruing euery one,  
 May doe them pleasure : fearefull to be seene  
 With any man (though he be ne're so worthy)  
 That's not in grace with some, that are the greatest.  
 40 Thus courtiers doe, and these he counterfeits.  
 But sets not such a sightly carriage  
 Vpon their vanities, as they themselues ;  
 And therefore they despise him : for indeed  
 Hee's like the *Zam*, to a tumbler,

45 That tries tricks after him, to make men laugh

F A L L. Here's an vnthankfull spitefull wretch ! the  
 good gentleman vouchsaft to make him his companion  
 (because my husband put him into a few rags) and now see,  
 how the vnrude rascall back-bites him !

50 D E L L. Is he no more grac't amongst 'hem, then ? say  
 you ?

M A C I. Faith, like a pawne, at *Chesse* : fills vp a roome,  
 that's all.

F A L L. O monster of men ! can the earth beare such  
 55 an enuious caytiffe ?

D E L I. Well, I repent me, I e're credited him so much :  
 but (now I see what he is, and that his masking vizor is off)  
 I'le forbear him no longer. All his lands are mergag'd to

rv. ii 30 there ;] there : Qq 32 humours] Humours Qq 34 gal-  
 lant'st] gallans't Qr. Gallans't Qq 2, 3 36 scrueilely] scrueily Q3  
 37 fearefull corr. Fr, F2 : Fearefull Qq, Fr originally 39 some,]  
 some Qq, F2 40 counterfeits. corr. Fr : counterfeits, Qq, Fr origi-  
 nally, F2 44 the] a Qq Zam, corr. Fr, F2 : Zam Qq, Fr originally  
 45 him,] him Qq 1, 2 46 wretch !] wretch : Qq 48 a few] afew Q3  
 see,] see Qq 49 him ! corr. Fr, F2 : him. Qq, Fr originally 50  
 'hem, corr. Fr : 'hem Qq, Fr originally, F2 52 Faith,] Faith Qq  
 pawne,] pawne Qq, F2 Chesse : corr. Fr, F2 : Chesse, Qq, Fr origi-  
 nally roome] rounne Qq 54 () Qq, corr. Fr, F2 : O, Fr originally  
 56 me, corr. Fr : mee Qr : me Qq 2, 3, Fr originally, F2 58 longer.  
 All] longer : all Qr : longer. all Q2 : longer, al Q3



me, and forfeited : besides, I haue bonds of his in my hand, for the receit of now fifty pound, now a hundred, now two hundred : still, as he has had a fan but wagg'd at him, he would be in a new sute. Well, I'll salute him by a *Sergeant*, the next time I see him, yfaith, I'll sute him.

MACI. Why, you may soone see him, sir, for hee is to meet signior PUNTARVOLO at a *Notaries*, by the *Exchange*, presently : where he meanes to take vp, vpon returne——

FALL. Now, out vpon thee, IVDAS ; canst thou not be content to back-bite thy friend, but thou must betray him ? wilt thou seeke the vndoing of any man ? and of such 70 a man too ? and will you, sir, get your liuing by the counsell of traytors ?

DELI. Deare wife, haue patience.

FALL. The house will fall, the ground will open, and swallow vs : I'll not bide here, for all the gold, and siluer 75 in heauen.

DELI. O, good MACILENTE, let's follow and appease her, or the peace of my life is at an end.

MACI. Now pease, and not peace, feed that life, whose head hangs so heauily ouer a womans manger.

FALL. Helpe me, brother : 'ods body, and you come here, I'll doe my selfe a mischiefe.

DELI. Nay, heare me, sweet wife, vnlesse thou wilt haue mee goe, I will not goe.

iv. ii. 59 hand, *corr. Fr, F2 : hand Qq, Fr originally* 60 fifty] xx Qq a hundred] xxx Qq two hundred] xxv Qq 61 still, *corr. Fr, F2 : still Qq, Fr originally* 63 see him, *corr. Fr, F2 : see him Qq, Fr originally* 64 him,] him Qq 65 PUNTARVOLO] Puntarvolo Qq 1, 2 : PUNTARVOLO, F2 65-6 *Notaries*, by the *Exchange*, presently : *corr. Fr, F2 : Notaries by the Exchange presently, Qq, Fr originally* 66 vp,] vp Qq 67 returne——] returne. Qq 68 Now,] Now Qq thee,] thee Qq 69 back-bite] backbite Qq 1, 2 must] wilt Qq 2, 3 71 you, sir,] you Sir Qq 1, 2 : you sir Q3 75 here, *corr. Fr, F2 : here Qq, Fr originally* gold, *corr. Fr. Gold Qq 1, 2, Fr originally : gold Q3, F2* 76 Exit. add Qq 77 O,] O Qq 78 Exit. add Qq 79 pease] Pease Qq peace,] Peace Qq 80 Exit. add Qq st. dir. Deliro . . . wife. *corr. Fr, F2, not in Fr originally : Enter Fallace running, at another dore, and claps it too (dore, . . . to. Q3) Qq in text : SCENE II —Another Room in the same. Enter Fallace and Fungoso running, she claps to the door G (cf. 103). 81 me,] me Qq 1, 2 'ods body,] Gods body Qq and] an' F2 83 me,] me Qq 84 Within. add Qq*

80  
Deliro  
follow's  
his wife.



85 F A L L. Tut, you shall ne're ha' that vantage of me, to  
say, you are vndone by me: I'll not bid you stay, I.  
Brother, sweet brother, here's foure angels, I'll giue you  
toward your sute: for the loue of gentry, and as euer you  
came of christen creature, make haste to the water side (you  
90 know where Master F A S T I D I V S vses to land) and giue  
him warning of my husbands malicious intent; & tel him  
of that leane rascals trechery: O heuens! how my flesh  
rises at him! nay, sweet brother, make haste: you may say,  
I would haue writ to him, but that the necessitie of the time  
95 would not permit. He cannot choose but take it extra-  
ordinarily from me: and commend me, to him, good  
brother, say, I sent you.

F V N G. Let me see, these foure angels, and then, fortie  
shillings more I can borrow on my gowne in *Fetter-lane*.  
100 Well, I will goe presently, say on my sute, pay as much  
money as I haue, and sweare my selle into credit with my  
taylor, for the rest.

*Deliro,  
and Macilente,  
passe  
ouer the  
stage.*

D E L I. O, on my soule you wrong her, M A C I L E N T E,  
Though shee be froward, yet I know shee is honest.

M A C I. Well, then haue I no iudgement: would any  
woman (but one that were wild in her affections) haue broke  
107 out into that immodest and violent passion against her  
husband? or is't possible——

D E L I. If you loue me, forbear; all the arguments i'  
110 the world shall neuer wrest my heart to beleuee it.

iv. ii. 86 say,] say Qq 88 sute. *corr. Fr, F2*: Sute; Qq: sute;  
*Fr originally* gentry] lesu Qq 89 christen] Christian F3 91  
malicious *corr. Fr, F2*: not in Qq, *Fr originally* & tel *corr. Fr* and  
tell *Fr originally* 92 heuens! *corr. Fr*: lesu, Qq, heuens! *Fr*  
*originally, F2* 93 him? him? Qq brother,] brother Qq haste ]  
hast; Qq 1, 2: haste, Q3 say,] say Qq 95 permit | suffer it. Qq 96  
me,] me Qq him,] him Qq 2, 3 97 brother,] brother: Qq: brother;  
F2 say,] say Qq *Exit. add Qq* 98 see,] see; Qq angels,]  
Angels: Qq then,] then Qq, F2 99 *Fetter-lane*. Well] *Fetter-lane*:  
well Qq 100 say] sey F2 102 taylor,] Taylor Qq *Exit. add Qq*  
103 st dir *Deliro . . . stage.*] SCENA SECUNDA. | Enter *Deliro*, with *Ma-*  
*cilente*, speaking as they passe | *ouer the Stage.* (SECUNDA. Qq 1, 2:  
*Deliro* Q3) Qq SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.* | Enter *Deliro*  
and *Macilente*. G 105 iudgement:] iudgement; Q1: iudgement,  
Q2: iudgement, Q3 108 husband? | husband. F2 110 *Exeunt.*  
add Qq



G R E X.

C O R. How like you the decyphering of his dotage?

M I T. O, strangely! and of the others enuie too, that labours so seriously to set debate betwixt a man, and his wife Stay, here comes the knight aduenturer.

C O R. I, and his scriuener with him. 115

Act III. Scene III.

P V N T A R V O L O, N O T A R I E, C A R L O,  
S E R V A N T S.

I Wonder, Monsieur F A S T I D I V S comes not! but, N O T A R I E, if thou please to draw the indentures the while, I will giue thee thy instructions.

N O T A. With all my heart, sir; and I'll fall in hand with 'hem presently. 5

P V N T. Well then, first, the summe is to be vnderstood.

N O T A. Good, sir.

P V N T. Next, our seuerall appellations, and character of my dog, and cat, must be knowne: shew him the cat, sirrah.

N O T A. So, sir. 10

P V N T. Then, that the intended bound, is the *Turkes* court in *Constantinople*: the time limited for our returne, a yeere: and that if either of vs miscarry, the whole venter is lost. These are generall, conceiu'st thou? or if either of vs turne *Turke*. 15

N O T A. I, sir.

P V N T. Now for particulars: That I may make my

iv. ii. 112 strangely! 113 labours] labors Q1  
man,] man Qq, F2 iv 111 Act. . SERVANTS] SCENA TERTIA. | Enter  
Puntaruolo, Notarie, with Seruingmen (Puntaruolo Qq 1, 2: Seruing-  
men Q1) Qq: SCENE IV.—Puntaruolo's Lodgings. | Enter Puntaruolo,  
Notary, and Servants with the dog and cat. G 1 I wonder,] Punt 1  
wonder Qq Monsieur] Mounsieur F2 but,] but Qq 3 thy in-  
structions] the Theorie Qq 4 heart,] heart Qq 5 with'hem Fr  
presently] prseently F2 6 first,] first, Qq 7 Good,] Good Q1  
9 dog,] Dog Qq 1, 2, F2: Dogge Q3 cat,] Cat Qq cat,] Cat Qq  
cat F2 10 So,] So Qq 11 bound] Point Qq 13 venter] Ven-  
ture F3 14 generall,] Generall, Qq 16 I,] I Qq



trauails by sea or land, to my best liking : and that (hyring  
a coach for my selfe) it shall bee lawfull for my dog, or cat,  
20 or both, to ride with me in the said coach.

N o t. Very good, sir.

P v n. That I may choose to giue my dogge, or cat fish,  
for feare of bones : or any other nutriment, that (by the  
iudgement of the most autenticall physicians, where I  
25 trauaile) shall be thought dangerous.

N o t. Well, sir.

P v n. That (after the reccit of his monie) he shall  
neyther in his own person, nor any other, eyther by direct  
or indirect meanes, as magicke, witchcraft, or other such  
30 exoticke artes, attempt, practise, or complot anie thing, to  
the preiudice of mee, my dogge, or my cat : Neyther shall I  
vse the helpe of any such sorceries, or enchantments, as  
vnctions, to make our skinnes impenetrable, or to trauaile  
inuisible by vertue of a powder, or a ring, or to hang any  
35 three-forked charme about my dogges necke, secretly  
conuey'd into his collar : (vnderstand you ?) but that all be  
performed, sincerely, without fraud, or imposture.

N o t. So, sir.

P v n. That (for testimonie of the performance) my selfe  
40 am to bring thence a *Turkes* mustachio, my dogge a  
*Græcian* hares lip, and my cat the traine, or taile of a  
*Thracian* rat.

N o t. 'Tis done, sir.

iv. iii. 18 trauails] travels *F2* land,] *Land Qq* to] for *Qq* 2, 3  
19-20 dog, or cat, or both,] Dog and Cat *Q1* : Cat and Dog *Qq* 2, 3 21  
good,] good *Qq* 22 dogge,] Dog *Q1* · Dogge *Qq* 2, 3 cat *corr.*  
*Fr*, *F2* · Cat *Qq* : cat, *Fr* originally 23 bones :] Bones, *Qq* 1, 2 :  
bones, *Q3* 24 iudgement] judgement *Qq* 1, 2 autenticall] au-  
thenticall *F2* physicians, *corr. Fr* · *Physicians Qq* 1, 2 : *Physicians Q3*  
physicians *Fr* originally : physitions, *F2* 25 trauaile] travell *F2*  
26 Well,] Well *Qq* 28 nor] or *Q3* 29 meanes, *corr. Fr*, *F2* : meanes,  
*Qq*, *Fr* originally magicke, *corr. Fr*, *F2* : *Magique*, *Qq* 1, 2 : *Magicke*,  
*Q3* · magicke *Fr* originally 30 thing,] thing *F2* 31 preiudice]  
preiudice *Qq* 1, 2 32 sorceries,] Sorceries *Qq* : sorceries *F2* enchant-  
ments, *corr. Fr* : Enchantments ; *Qq* · enchantments ; *Fr* originally :  
enchantments, *F2* 36 (vnderstand you ?) *corr. Fr*, *F2* : vnderstand  
you ? *Qq*, *Fr* originally be *Q1*, *corr. Fr*, *F2* : bee *Qq* 2, 3, *Fr* origi-  
nally 37 fraud, *corr. Fr* : fraud *Qq*, *Fr* originally, *F2* 38 So,] So  
*Qq* 41 *Græcian* not in *Qq* traine, *corr. Fr* : trane *Qq*, *Fr*  
originally, *F2* 42 *Thracian* not in *Qq* 43 done,] done *Qq*



P V N. 'Tis said, sir, not done, sir: but forward. That vpon my retorne, and landing on the Tower-wharfe, with 45 the aforesaid testimonie, I am to receiue fue for one, according to the proportion of the summes put forth.

N O T. Well, sir.

P V N. Prouided, that if before our departure, or setting forth, either my selfe, or these be visited with sicknesse, or 50 any other casuall cuent, so that the whole course of the aduenture bee hindered, thereby; that then, he is to retorne, and I am to receiue the prenominated proportion, vpon faire and equall termes.

N O T. Verie good, sir, is this all? 55

P V N. It is all, sir: and dispatch them, good N O T A R I E.

N O T. As fast as is possible, sir.

P V N. O, C A R L O! welcome: saw you Monsieur B R I S K E?

C A R. Not I: did he appoint you, to meet here? 60

P V N. I, and I muse he should be so tardie: hee is to take an hundred pounds of mee in venter, if he maintaine his promise.

C A R. Is his houre past?

P V N. Not yet, but it comes on apace. 65

C A R. Tut, be not iealous of him: he will sooner breake all the commandements, then his houre, vpon my life, in such a case trust him.

P V N. Me thinkes, C A R L O, you looke verie smooth! ha?

rv. iii 44 said, sir, *corr.* F1, F2: said Sir, Qq: said, sir. *Fr originally* done, sir:] done sir, Qq 2, 3 45 retorne,] retorne Qq Tower-wharfe,] Tower wharfe Qq 1, 2: Towre wharfe, Q3 48 Well,] Well Qq . 49 P V N ] Puue. Q1 that Qq 2, 3, *corr.* F1, F2 . That Q1, *Fr originally* departure, *corr.* F1, F2: departure Qq, *Fr originally* 52 hindered, *corr.* F1 . hundred Qq: hindered F1 *originally*, F2 55 good,] good Qq sir, *corr.* F1, F2 . sir, Qq, *Fr originally* 56 all,] all Qq sir:] Sir; Q2: sir; Q3 them,] them Qq 57 possible,] pds-  
sible Qq *Exit. Enter Carlo.* add Qq 58 O,] O Qq, F2 C A R L O! *corr.* F1, F2: Carlo, Qq: C A R L O, *Fr originally* Monsieur] Mounsier Q3: Mounsieur F2 60 you,] you Qq 62 venter] venture Q3: Venture F3 66 iealous] jealous Qq 1, 2 him: *corr.* F1, F2: him, Qq, *Fr originally* 67 the commandements] the ten Commaundements Q1: the ten Commaundements Q2: the tenne Commandements Q3 then] than Qq, F2 houre, *corr.* F1: Houre; Qq: houre; *Fr originally*, F2 life,] life Qq 69 thinkes,] thinkes Qq smooth! *corr.* F1, F2: smooth? Qq 1, 2, *Fr originally*: smoothe: Q3



538 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

70 C A R. Why, I come but now from a hot-house, I must needes looke smooth.

P V N. From a hot-house!

C A R. I, doo you make a wonder ou't? why it's your only physicke Let a man sweate once a weeke in a hot-  
75 house, and be well rub'd, and froted, with a good plumpe juicic wench, and sweet linnen: hee shall ne're ha' the poxe.

P V N T. What, the *French* poxe?

C A R L. The *French* poxe! our poxe. S'bloud we haue 'hem in as good forme as they, man: what?

80 P V N T. Let mee perish, but thou art a salt one! was your new-created gallant there with you? S O G L I A R D O?

C A R L. O, porpuse! hang him, no: hee's a lieger at *Hornes* ordinarie yonder: his villanous G A N I M E D E, and he ha' beene droning a tabacco pipe there, euer sin' yester-  
85 day noone.

P V N T. Who? signior T R I P A R T I T E, that would giue my dogge the *Whiffe*?

C A R L. I, hee. They haue hir'd a chamber, and all priuate to practise in, for the making of the *Patoun*, the  
90 *Receit reciprocally*, and a number of other mysteries, not yet extant. I brought some dozen, or twentie gallants this morning to view 'hem (as you'd doe a peece of *Perspectiue*) in at a key-hole: and there wee might see S O G L I A R D O sit in a chaire, holding his snowt vp like a sow vnder an  
95 apple-tree, while th' other open'd his nostrils with a poking-sticke, to giue the smoke a more free deliuerie. They had spit some three, or fourescore ounces betweene 'hem, afore we carlie away.

iv. iii. 70 Why,] Why *Qq* 1, 2, *F*2 72 hot-house!] Hothouse? *Qq* 1, 2: Hot-house? *Q*3 75 rub'd,] rubd *Qq* froted,] froted *Qq* 76 juicic] iucic *Q*3 linnen:] linnen, *Q*1. Linnen, *Qq* 2, 3 ha'] ha *F*2 77 What,] What? *Qq* 78 our poxe.] our Poxe: *Qq* S'bloud om. *F*2 79 they,] they *Qq* 80 salt one!] Villaine *Qq* 81 your] your *Q*1 82 O, porpuse!] O *Porpuse*, *Qq* 83 GANIMEDE,] *Ganimede* *Qq*: GANIMEDE *F*2 84 beene] been *Q*1: ben *Q*2: bin *Q*3 88 hee. They] hee: they *Qq* 1, 2: he: they *Q*3 chamber, corr. *F*1, *F*2: chamber *Qq*, *F*1 originally 89 priuate] priuat *Qq* 1, 2 91 dozen,] dosen *Qq* 93 -hole:] -hole; *Qq* 97, 99 three,] three *Qq*, *F*2 98 away. *Qq*, corr. *F*1, *F*2: awaie *F*1 originally



P V N T. How? spit three, or fourescore ounces?

C A R L. I, and preseru'd it in porrengers, as a barber does 100  
his blood, when he opens a veine.

P V N T. Out, *Pagan*: how dost thou open the veine of  
thy friend?

C A R L. Friend? Is there any such foolish thing i'the  
world? ha? S'h'd I ne're rellisht it yet. 105

P V N T. Thy humour is the more dangerous.

C A R L. No, not a whit, Signior: Tut, a man must keepe  
time in all. I can oyle my tongue when I meet him next, and  
looke with a good slicke fore-head; 'twill take away all  
soyle of suspicion, and that's ynough: what L Y N C E V S 110  
can see my heart? Pish, the title of a friend, it's a vaine idle  
thing, only venerable among fooles: you shall not haue one  
that has any opinion of wit affect it.

*Act IIII. Scene IIII.*

DELIRO, MACILENTE.

*To them.*

S Aue you, good sir P V N T A R V O L O.

P V N T. Signior DELIRO! welcome.

DELI. Pray you, sir, did you see Master F A S T I D I V S  
B R I S K E? I heard he was to meet your worship here.

P V N T. You heard no figment, sir, I doe expect him at 5  
euery pulse of my watch.

DELI. In good time, sir.

C A R L. There's a fellow now, lookes like one of the *Pa-*  
*tricians* of *Sparta*, mary his wit's after tenne i' the hundred.

iv. iii 99 How? *corr* *Fr*: How! *Qq*, *Fr*, *F2* 101 blood,] Blood  
*Qq* 1, 2 opens] pricks *Qq* 102 Out, *Pagan*.] Out *Pagan*; *Qq*  
open] pricke *Qq* 106 humour] Humor *Qq* dangerous] daungerous  
*Qq* 1, 2 107 No,] No *Qq* whit,] whit *Qq* 108 all] all. *Qq*  
next,] next, *F2* 109 fore-head] forehead *Qq* iv. iv Act. . . MA-  
CILENTE] Enter *Deliro*, and *Macilente*. (*Deliro* *Qq* 2, 3) *Qq*, without  
change of scene *Q1* after, *Qq* 2, 3 add to, iii. 113 *To them* not in *Qq*  
1 Saue you,] *Del.* Saue you *Qq* P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* *Qq* 3  
you,] you *Qq* 5 P V N T.] *Punt.* *Q1* figment,] Figment *Qq* 5-6  
at euery . . watch] euery minute my Watch strikes *Qq* 7 time,]  
time *Qq* 9 hundred] hundred . *F2*



10 A good bloud-hound, a close-mouth'd dogge, he follows the  
 sent well, mary he's at a fault now, me thinkes.

P V N T. I should wonder at that creature is free from  
 the danger of thy tongue.

C A R L. O, I cannot abide these limmes of sattin, or  
 15 rather *Sathan* indeed, that'll walke (like the children of  
 darknesse) all day in a melancholy shop, with their pockets  
 full of blankes, readie to swallow vp as manie poore vn-  
 thrifts, as come within the verge.

P V N T. So! and what hast thou for him that is with  
 20 him, now?

C A R L. O, (dam' mee) *Immortalitie*! I'll not meddle  
 with him, the pure element of fire, all spirit, extraction.

P V N T. How, C A R L O? ha, what is he, man?

C A R L. A scholler, M A C I L E N T E, doe you not know  
 25 him? a lanke raw-bon'd anatomic, he walkes vp and  
 downe like a charg'd musket, no man dares encounter him:  
 that's his rest there.

P V N T. His rest? why has he a forked head?

C A R L. Pardon me, that's to be suspended, you are too  
 30 quicke, too apprehensiue.

D E L I. Troth (now I thinke on't) I'll deferre it till  
 some other time.

M A C I. Not, by any meanes, signior, you shall not lose  
 this opportunitie, he will be here presently now.

35 D E L I. Yes faith, M A C I L E N T E, 'tis best. For looke  
 you, sir, I shall so exceedingly offend my wife in't, that——

M A C I. Your wife? now for shame lose these thoughts,  
 and become the master of your owne spirits. Should  
 I (if I had a wife) suffer my selfe to be thus passionately  
 40 carried (to and fro) with the streame of her humour? and

iv. 1v. 10 A] a F2 close-mouth'd] close mouth'd Qq 11 now,] now  
 Qq 13 danger] daunger Qq 1, 2 14 O,] O Qq 19 So!] So' Qq  
 20 him,] him Qq 21 O, (dam') O (Damne Qq *Immortalitie*] *Im-*  
*mortalitie*, Qq 23 How,] How Qq he,] he Qq 1, 2: hee Q3 25  
 raw-bon'd] rawbon'd Qr 33 Not,] Gods-pretious, not Qq 1, 2:  
 Gods precious, not Q3 meanes,] meanes Qq lose] loose Qq 1, 2  
 35 faith,] faith Qq 36 you,] you Qq offend my] offendmy Q3  
 37 lose] loose Qq 40 humour] Humor Qq



neglect my deepest affaires, to serue her affections ? S'light I would geld my selfe first.

DEL I. O but, signior, had you such a wife as mine is, you would—

M A C I. Such a wife ? Now hate mee, sir, if euer I dis- 45  
cern'd any wonder in your wife, yet, with all the speculation I haue : I haue seene some that ha' beene thought fairer then she, in my time ; and I haue seene those, ha' not been altogether so tall, esteem'd properer women ; and I haue seen lesse noses grow vpon sweeter faces, that haue done 50  
verie well too, in my iudgement : but in good faith, signior, for all this, the gentlewoman is a good pretie proud hard-fauour'd thing, mary not so peerelessly to bee doted vpon, I must confesse : nay, be not angrie.

DEL I. Well, sir, (how euer you please to forget your 55  
selfe) I haue not deseru'd to bee thus plai'd vpon, but henceforth, pray you forbear my house, for I can but faintly endure the sauour of his breath at my table, that shall thus iade me for my courtesies.

M A C I. Nay, then, signior, let me tell you, your wife is 60  
no proper woman, and, by my life, I suspect her honestie, that's more, which you may likewise suspect (if you please :) doe you see ? Ile vrge you to nothing, against your appetite, but if you please, you may suspect it.

DEL I. Good, sir. 65

M A C I. Good sir ? Now horne vpon horne pursue thee, thou blinde egregious dotard.

C A R L. O, you shall heare him speake like enuie. Signior

iv. iv 41 S'light] Sbloud Qq 43 but,] but Qq 44 would] wold Qq 45 hate mee,] God hate mee Qq 46 wife,] wife Qq 47 beene] ben Q2 : bin Q3 48 then] than Qq, F2 49 properer] proper Qq 50 noses] Roses F3, owing to imperfect printing of the n in F2 51 too,] too Qq iudgement] judgement Qq 1, 2 52 faith, signior,] faith Signior Qq 53 peerelessly] peerelesse Q3 54 nay,] nay Qq 1, 2 55 Well,] Well Qq sir,] sir Qq 1, 2 56 vpon,] vpon. F2 (a misprinted colon ?) : vpon ; F3 58 sauour] saour Qq 59 iade] jade Qq 60 Nay, then,] Nay then Qq 61 woman, and, by my life,] woman by Iesu, and Qq 63 nothing,] nothing Qq 65 Good,] Good Qq Exit. add Qq 68 O,] O Qq enuie] ennie Fx



542 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

MACILENTE, you saw monsieur BRISKE lately?  
70 I heard you were with him at court.

MACI. I, BVFFONE, I was with him.

CARL. And how is he respected there? (I know youle  
deale ingenuously with vs) is he made of amongst the  
sweeter sort of gallants?

75 MACI. Faith I, his ciuet and his casting-glasse,  
Haue helpt him to a place amongst the rest:  
And there, his *Seniors* giue him good sleight lookes,  
After their garbe, smile, and salute in *French*  
With some new complement.

80 CARL. What, is this all?

MACI. Why say, that they should shew the frothie foole,  
Such grace, as they pretend comes from the heart,  
He had a mightie wind-fall out of doubt.

Why, all their *Graces* are not to doe grace

85 To vertue, or desert: but to ride both  
With their guilt spurres quite breathlesse, from themselues  
'Tis now esteem'd *Precisianisme* in wit;  
And a disease in nature, to be kind  
Toward desert, to loue, or seeke good names:

90 Who feeds with a good name? who thriues with louing?  
Who can prouide feast for his owne desires,  
With seruing others? ha, ha, ha:  
'Tis folly, by our wisest worldlings prou'd,  
(If not to gaine by loue) to be belou'd.

95 CARL. How like you him? is't not a good spitefull slaue?  
ha?

PVNT. Shrewd, shrewd.

CARL. Dam'me, I could eat his flesh now: diuine  
sweet villaine!

IV. iv. 69 MACILENTE,] *Macilente* Qq 2, 3 monsieur] Mounsieur Qq  
1, 2 70 court] the Court Qq 71 I,] I Qq 73 ingenuously] in-  
geniously Qq. ingeniously F3 76 rest:] rest, Qq 77 there,] there  
Qq 80 What,] What Qq 82 grace,] grace Qq 84 Why,] Why Qq  
86 breathlesse,] breathlesse Qq 87 wit:] wit, F2 88 disease]  
Disease Qq 2, 3 nature,] *Nature* Qq 89 names.] names. l'2 90  
louing] longing Qq 2, 3 93 folly,] follic Qq 1, 2: folly Q3 prou'd,]  
prou'd Qq 98 Dam'me] Damme me Q1: Dam me Q2: Damme me Q3  
diuine] Deuine Qq 1, 2 99 villaine!] villaine. Q1: villain. Qq 2, 3



M A C I. Nay, pr'y thee leaue : what's he there ? 100

C A R L. Who ? this i'the starcht beard ? it's the dull  
stiffe knight P V N T A R V O L O, man ; hee's to trauaile now  
presently : hee has a good knottie wit, marry he carries  
little o't out of the land, with him.

M A C I. How then ? 105

C A R L. He puts it forth in venter, as hee does his monie ;  
vpon the returne of a dogge, and cat.

M A C I. Is this he ?

C A R L. I, this is hee ; a good tough gentleman : hee  
lookes like a shield of brawne, at *Shrouetide*, out of date, and 110  
readie to take his leaue · or a drie poule of ling vpon *Easter-  
eue*, that has furnisht the table, all *Lent*, as he has done the  
citie this last vacation.

M A C I. Come, you'le neuer leaue your stabbing *simle's* ·  
I shall ha' you ayming at me with 'hem by and by, but—— 115

C A R L. O, renounce me then : pure, honest, good *deuill*,  
I loue thee aboute the loue of women : I could e'en melt in  
admiration of thee, now ! gods so, looke here, man ; Sir  
D A G O N E T, and his squire !

*Act III. Scene v.*

*To them.*

SOGLIARDO, SHIFT.

S Aue you, my deare *Gallanto's* : nay, come approach,  
S good C A V A L I E R : pr'y thee (sweet knight) know this  
gentleman, hee's one that it pleases mee to vse as my good  
friend, and companion ; and therefore doe him good offices :  
I beseech you, gentles, know him, know him all ouer. 5

IV. IV. 102 P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntaruolo* Qq 1, 2. *Puntaruolo* Q3 104  
o't] on't Qq land,] land Qq 106 venter] venture, Q3, F3  
107 dogge,] Dog Qq 110 shield] Chine Qq brawne,] Brawne Qq  
111 vpon] npon F2 112 table, corr. F1 · Table Qq 1, 2 : table Q3, F1  
*originally, F2* 115 'hem] hem Q2 118 thee, now !] thee now : Qq  
gods so] Gods so' Qq here,] here Qq 119 DAGONET,] *Dagonet* Qq  
squire !] Squire Qq 1, 2 Esquire Q3 IV. V Act . . . SHIFT ] *Enter*  
*Sog and Shift* Qq add to IV. 119, without change of scene. *To them*  
add F1 1 Saue you,] *Sog. Saue you Qq Gallanto's Qq, corr F1 :*  
GALLANTO'S *F1 originally, F2* approach] approach Qq, F2 4  
friend,] friend Qq 5 you,] you Qq gentles] Gentiles F3 know  
him all ouer *not in Qq*



P V N T. Sir (for signior S O G L I A R D O's sake) let it suffice, I know you.

S O G L. Why (as I am true gentleman) I thanke you, knight, and it shall suffice. Harke you, sir P V N T A R -  
10 V O L O, you'd lttle thinke it ; he's as resolute a peece of flesh, as any is i' the world.

P V N T. Indeed, sir ?

S O G L. Vpon my gentilitie, sir : C A R L O, a word with you. Doe you see that same fellow, there ?

15 C A R L. What ? C A V A L I E R S H I F T ?

S O G L. O, you know him, crie you mercy : before me, I thinke him the tallest man, living within the walls of *Europe*.

C A R L. The walls of *Europe* ! take heed what you say, 20 signior, *Europe's* a huge thing within the walls.

S O G L. Tut, (and 'twere as huge againe) I'd iustifie what I speake. S'lid, he swagger'd c'en now in a place, where we were : I neuer saw a man doe it more resolute.

C A R L. Nay, indecede swaggering is a good argument of 25 resolution. Doe you heare this, signior ?

M A C R. I, to my griefe. O, that such muddy flags,  
For euery drunken flourish, should atchieue  
The name of manhood : whil'st true perfect valour  
(Hating to shew it selfe) goes by despis'd !  
30 Heart, I doe know now (in a faire iust cause)  
I dare doe more then he, a thousand times :  
Why should not they take knowledge of this ? ha ?  
And giue my worth allowance before his ?

iv. v<sup>c</sup> 8 (as I am true gentleman) *Fr* : (as I am a gentleman) *F2, F3* :  
by Iesu, *Qq* 8, 9 you,] you *Qq* 9 P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo Qq* 1, 2  
11 flesh,] flesh *Qq* any is *corr. Fr* : any's *Qq, Fr originally* : any *F2*  
12 Indeed,] Indeed *Qq* 1, 2 : Indecede *Q3* 13 gentilitie,] Gentilitie *Qq*  
14 you. *corr. Fr* : you ; *Qq, Fr originally, F2* fellow,] fellow *Qq*  
16 O,] O *Q3* him, *corr. Fr* : him ; *Qq, Fr originally, F2* me]  
God *Qq* 17 man,] man *Qq* 19 say,] say *Qq* 21 and,] an *F2*  
iustifie] iustifie *Qq* 1, 2 22 S'lid,] S'lid *Qq* 1, 2 place, *corr. Fr* :  
place *Qq, Fr originally, F2* 24 Nay,] Nay *Qq* 1, 2 26 O,] O *Qq*  
flags,] Flags *Qq* 27 flourish] flourish *Qr* 28 manhood : *corr.*  
*Fr* : *Manhood* ; *Qq* : manhood ; *Fr originally, F2* 29 despis'd !]  
despis'd *Qq* 30 Heart] Sbloud *Qq* iust] just *Qq* 1, 2 31 then]  
than *Qq* 1, 2, *F2* he,] hee ; *Qq* 1, 2 : hee *Q3*



Because I cannot swagger ! Now the poxe

Light on your *Pickt-hatch* prowesses

35

S O G L. Why, I tell you, sir, he has beene the only *Bid-stand* that euer kept *New-market*, *Salisbury-plaine*, *Hockley* i' the hole, *Gads-Hill* ; all the high places of any request : he has had his mares and his geldings, he, ha' been worth fortie, threescore, a hundred pound a horse, would ha' 40 sprung you ouer hedge, and ditch, like your grey-hound, he has done fūe hundred robberies in his time, more or lesse, I assure you.

P V N T. What ? and scapt ?

S O G L. Scapt ! yfaith I : he has broken the jayle when 45 he has beene in yrons, and yrons ; and beene out, and in againe ; and out, and in ; fortie times, and not so few, he.

M A C I. A fit trumpet, to proclaime such a person.

C A R L. But can this be possible ?

S H I F T. Why, 'tis nothing, sir, when a man giues his 50 affections to it.

S O G L. Good P Y L A D E S, discourse a robberie, or two, to satisfie these gentlemen of thy worth.

S H I F T. Pardon me, my deare O R E S T E S : Causes haue their *quiddits*, and 'tis ill iesting with bell-ropes. 55

C A R L. How ? P Y L A D E S, and O R E S T E S ?

S O G L. I, he is my P Y L A D E S, and I am his O R E S T E S : how like you the conceit ?

C A R L. O, it's an old stale enterlude deuice. No, I'le giue you names my selfe, looke you, he shall be your I V D A S, 60 and you shall bee his Elder tree, to hang on.

M A C I. Nay, rather, let him be capitaine P O D, and this his *Motion* ; for he does nothing but shew him.

iv. v. 34 swagger !] swagger Qq 36 Why,] Why Qq you,] yOu  
Qq 36-7 *Bid-stand*] *Bidstand* Qq 2, 3 37 euer] euer was,  
Qq *Salisbury-plaine*] *Salisbury Plaine* Qq 39 geldings,] Geld-  
ings Qq 41 hedge, and ditch,] hedge and ditch Qq grey-hound,]  
Greyhound : Qq : grey-hound, F2 45 jayle] iayle Q3 47 times,]  
times Qq 48 trumpet,] Trumpet Qq 50 Why,] why Q1 : Why  
Q2 nothing,] nothing Qq 52, 56 P Y L A D E S,] *Pylades* Qq rob-  
berie,] Robberie Qq 54 me,] me Qq 1, 3 . mee Q2 55 iesting]  
jesting Qq 1, 2 60 selfe,] selfe. Qq 61 tree,] tree Qq 62 Nay,]  
Nay Qq 1, 2



546 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

CARL Excellent: or thus, you shall bee HOLDEN,  
65 and hee your Camel

SHIFT. You doe not meane to ride, gentlemen?

PVNT. Faith, let me end it for you, gallants: you shall  
be his *Countenance*, and he your *Resolution*.

SOGL. Troth, that's pretty: how say you, *Cavalier*,  
70 shalt be so?

CARL. I, I, most voices.

SHIFT. Faith, I am easily yeelding to any good im-  
pressions.

SOGL. Then giue hands, good *Resolution*.

75 CARL. Masse, he cannot say, good *Countenance*, now  
(properly) to him againe.

PVNT. Yes, by an *irony*

MACI. O, sir, the countenance of *Resolution* should, as  
he is, be altogether grim, and vnpleasant.

*Act III. Scene VI.*

*To them.*

FASTIDIVS BRISKE.

Good houres make musicke with your mirth, gentlemen,  
and keepe time to your humours: how now, CARLO?

PVNT. Monsieur BRISKE! many a long looke haue  
I extended for you, sir.

5 FAST. Good faith, I must craue pardon; I was inuited  
this morning ere I was out of my bed, by a beuie of ladies, to  
a banquet: whence it was almost one of HERCVLES  
labours for me, to come away, but that the respect of my  
promise did so preuaile with me. I know they'le take it very

iv. v. 64 thus;] thus; Qq 66 ride,] ride Qq 67 Faith,] Faith Qq  
you,] you Qq 69 Troth,] Troth Qq you,] you Qq 72 Faith,]  
Faith Qq easily] eas'ly Qq 1, 2 74 hands,] hands Qq 75  
Masse,] Masse Qq say,] say Qq *Countenance*,] *Countenance* Qq  
78 O,] O Qq 79 he is, be] hee's Qq altogether] altogether Qq grim,]  
grim Qq iv. vi *Act* . . . BRISKE.] *Enter Briske.* Qq, added to  
v. 79 without change of scene *To them.* corr. F1, F2: not in Qq, F1  
originally 1 Good] *Fast* Good Qq houres] houres, F2 mirth,]  
mirth Qq 2 time] times Qq 2, 3 humours] humors Qq now,] now  
Qq 4 you,] you Qq 5 faith,] faith Qq 8 labours] Labors Qq 1, 2  
me,] me Qq 1, 2: mee Qq 9 me.] me: Qq



ill, especially one, that gaue me this bracelet of her haire 10  
but ouer-night, and this pearle another gaue me from her  
fore-head, mary, shee——what ? are the writings ready ?

P V N T. I will send my man to know. Sirrah, goe you to  
the *Notaries*, and learne if he be readie : leaue the dog, sir.

F A S T. And how does my rare qualified friend, S O G L I-  
A R D O ? oh, signior M A C I L E N T E ! by these eyes, I saw  
you not, I had saluted you sooner else, o' my troth : I hope,  
sir, I may presume vpon you, that you will not diuulge my  
late checke, or disgrace (indeed) sir.

M A C I. You may, sir 20

C A R L. S'heart, he knowes some notorious iest by this  
gull, that hee hath him so obsequious.

S O G L. Monsieur F A S T I D I V S, doe you see this  
fellow there ? does he not looke like a clowne ? would you  
thinke there were any thing in him ? 25

F A S T. Any thing in him ? beshrow me, I : the fellow  
hath a good ingenious face.

S O G L. By this element, he is as ingenious a tal man, as  
euer swagger'd about *London* : he, and I, call *Countenance*,  
and *Resolution*, but his name is C A V A L I E R S H I F T. 30

P V N T. C A V A L I E R, you knew signior C L O G, that  
was hang'd for the robbery, at *Harrow* o' the hill ?

S O G L. Knew him, sir ! why, 'twas hee gaue all the  
directions for the action.

P V N T. How ? was it your proiect, sir ? 35

S H I F T. Pardon me, *Countenance*, you doe me some

iv. vi. 10 one,] one Qq of] off Q3 11 ouer-night] ouer night Qq  
12 fore-head, mary,] forehead, Mary Qq the] these Q3 14 dog,] Dog  
Qq After 14 Exit *Seruingman* (*Seruing-man*. Q1) Qq 15 friend,]  
friend Qq 16 oh,] oh Qq eyes,] eyes Qq 17 else, o'] else on Qq  
17-18 hope, sir,] hope sir Qq 18 you,] you Qq diuulge] divulge Qq  
19 disgrace (indeed) corr. F1, F2 : disgrace indeed (indeede Q3) Qq : dis-  
grace, indeed, F1 originally 20 may,] may Qq 21 S'heart,] S'heart  
Qq : om. F2 iest] jest Qq 23 Monsieur] Mounsieur Q2 25 there  
were corr. F1, F2 : there's Qq, F1 originally 26 beshrow] beshrew  
Q3 I : corr. F1, F2 : I ; Qq, F1 originally 28 as ingenious a corr.  
F1, F2 : an ingenious Qq, F1 originally man,] man Qq 29 he,  
and I,] hee and I Qq *Countenance*,] *Countenance* Qq 32 robbery,  
corr. F1, F2 : robbery Qq : robbery F1 originally o'] on Qq 33  
him,] him Qq why,] why Qq 35 was it corr. F1, F2 : was't Qq,  
F1 originally proiect,] Project Qq 36 me,] me Q1 : mee Qq 2, 3



wrong to make occasions publike, which I imparted to you in priuate.

S O G L. Gods will ! here are none but friends, *Resolution*.  
 40 S H I F T. That's all one ; things of consequence must haue their respects . where, how, and to whom. Yes, sir, hee shewed himselfe a true C L O G in the coherence of that affaire, sir : for, if he had manag'd matters as they were corroborated to him, it had beene better for him by a fortie,  
 45 or fiftie score of pounds, sir, and he himselfe might ha' liu'd (in despight of fates) to haue fed on wood-cocks, with the rest : but it was his heaue fortune to sinke, poore C L O G, and therefore talke no more of him.

P V N T. Why, had he more aiders, then ?

50 S O G L. O god, sir ! I, there were some present there, that were the nine *Worthies* to him, yfaith.

S H I F T. I, sir, I can satisfie you at more conuenient conference . but (for mine owne part) I haue now reconcil'd my selfe to other courses, and professe a liuing out of my  
 55 other qualities.

S O G L. Nay, he has left all now (I assure you) and is able to liue like a gentleman, by his quality. By this dogge, hee has the most rare gift in tabacco, that euer you knew.

C A R L. S'heart, hee keepees more adoe with this monster,  
 60 then euer B A N K E S did with his horse, or the fellow with the elephant.

M A C I. He will hang out his picture shortly, in a cloth, you shall see.

S O G L. O, hee do's manage a quarrell, the best that euer  
 65 you sâw, for termes, and circumstances.

iv. vi 37 occasions *corr. FI, F2 : that Qq, FI originally.* 38 pri-  
 uate] priuat *Qq 1, 2* 39 will ] will *Qq 2, 3* friends,] friends *Qq 41*  
 respects:] respects, *Qq* Yes,] Yes *Qq 43* affaire,] affaire *Qq* for,  
*corr. FI, F2 : for Qq, FI originally* 44 fortie,] fortie *Qq 45*  
 pounds,] pounds *Qq 46* fates] Fate *Qq* wood-cocks,] *Woodcocks*  
*Qq 1, 2. Woodcocks Q3* 47 fortune] fortunes *Qq* sinke,] sinke *Qq*  
 49 Why] why *Q1* more] no more *Q3* aiders,] Agents *Qq 50*  
 god, sir ] God sir ; *Qq 51* him,] him *Qq 52* I, sir] I sir *Qq 53*  
 reconcil'd] reconcil'd *Q3 57* gentleman,] Gentleman *Qq* quality]  
 qualities *F2 58* tabacco,] *Tabacco Qq 59* S'heart, *om. F2 60*  
 then] than *Qq, F2 62* shortly,] shortly *Qq* cloth] cloath *Qq 1, 2*  
 64 quarrell,] quarrell *Qq 65* termes,] Termes *Qq 1, 2 : termes Q3, F2*



F A S T. Good faith, signior, (now you speake of a quarrell)  
I'll acquaint you with a difference, that happened betweene  
a gallant, and my selfe—sir P V N T A R V O L O, you know  
him if I should name him, signior L V C V L E N T O.

P V N T. L V C V L E N T O! what in-auspicious chance 70  
interpos'd it selfe to your two loues?

F A S T. Faith, sir, the same that sundred A G A M E M -  
N O N, and great T H E T I S sonne; but let the cause escape,  
sir: Hee sent mee a challenge (mixt with some few braues)  
which I restor'd, and in fine we met. Now indeed, sir, (I 75  
must tell you) he did offer at first very desperately, but with-  
out iudgement: for looke you, sir. I cast my selfe into this  
figure: now he, comes violently on, and withall aduancing  
his rapier to strike, I thought to haue tooke his arme (for  
he had left his whole body to my election, and I was sure 80  
he could not recouer his guard) Sir, I mist my purpose in his  
arme, rasht his doublet sleeue, ran him close by the left  
cheek, and through his haire. He againe, lights me here  
(I had on, a gold cable hatband, then new come vp, which  
I wore about a murrey *French* hat I had) cuts my hatband 85  
(and yet it was massie, gold-smithes worke) cuts my  
brimmes, which by good fortune (being thicke embrodered  
with gold-twist, and spangles) disappointed the force of the  
blow: Neuerthelesse, it graz'd on my shoulder, takes me  
away sixe purles of an *Italian* cut-worke band I wore (cost 90  
me three pound in the exchange, but three daies before.)

iv. vi. 66 faith,] faith Qq signior,] Signior Qq 1, 2 67 differ-  
ence,] difference Qq 68 gallant,] Gallant Qq selfe—sir] selfe: sir  
Qq: selfe-sir F1: selfe; sir F2 P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* Qq 1, 2  
69 name him,] name him; Qq 70 in-auspicious] inauspicious Qq  
chance] chaunce Qq 1, 2 71 to] betwixt Qq 72 Faith,] Faith Qq  
A G A M E M N O N,] *Agamemnon* Qq 73 escape,] escape Qq 75 indeed,  
sir,] indeed Sir Qq 1, 2: indeede sir Q3 76 desperately] desperatly  
Q1, F2 77 iudgement] judgement Qq 1, 2 you,] you Qq sir I]  
sir, I Q3: sir; I F2 78 aduancing] aduancing Qq 1, 2: aduancing Q3  
83 haire,] haire: Qq againe,] againe Q1: againe Qq 2, 3 83-4 here  
(I had on,] here, I had a Qq 84 hatband,] hatband Qq 1, 2 which]  
(which Qq 87 embrodered] embroydered F2 88 gold-twist] gold  
twist Qq 89 Neuerthelesse,] Neuerthelesse Qq shoulder] shoulders  
Qq 2, 3 90 wore [cost] wore, cost Qq 91 pound] pounds Qq  
exchange,] exchaunge Q1: Exchange Qq 2, 3 before)] before. Qq



P V N T. This was a strange encounter !

F A S T. Nay, you shall heare, sir : with this wee both  
fell out, and breath'd. Now (vpon the second signe of his  
95 assault) I betooke me to the former manner of my defence ;  
he (on the other side) abandon'd his body to the same danger,  
as before, and followes me still with blowes : But I (being  
loth to take the deadly aduantage that lay before mee of his  
left side) made a kind of *stramazoun*, ranne him vp to the  
100 hilts, through the doublet, through the shirt, and yet mist  
the skin. Hee (making a reuerse blow) falls vpon my  
emboss'd girdle (I had throwne off the hangers a little  
before) strikes off a skirt of a thick-lac't sattin doublet I had  
(lin'd with some foure taffataes) cuts off two panes, em-  
105 brodered with pearle, rends through the drawings out of  
tisew, enters the linings, and skips the flesh.

C A R L. I wonder he speakes not of his wrought shirt !

F A S T. Here (in the opinion of mutuall dammage) wee  
paus'd : but (ere I proceed) I must tell you, signior, that  
110 (in this last encounter) not hauing leisure to put off my  
siluer spurres, one of the rowels catcht hold of the ruffle of  
my boot, and (being *Spanish* leather, and subiect to teare)  
ouerthrowes me, rends me two paire of silke stockings (that  
I put on, being somewhat a raw morning, a peach colour and  
115 another) and strikes me some halfe inch deepe into the side  
of the calfe ; Hee (seeing the bloud come) presently takes  
horse, and away. I (hauing bound vp my wound with a  
peece of my wrought shirt)——

C A R L. O ! comes it in there ?

120 F A S T. Rid after him, and (lighting at the court-gate,

IV vi. 92 strange] straunge Qq 1, 2 encounter!] encounter. Qq  
93 Nay,] Nay Qq heare, sir :] heare sir, Qq 94 out,] out Qq  
breath'd] breath'd : Qq 96 danger,] daunger Qq 97 blowes:]  
blowes. Qq 98 aduantage] aduantage Q1 103 thick-lac't] thick  
lac't Qq : thick---lac't F1 : thick-lac't F2 104 some om. F2  
off] of Q1 panes,] panes Qq embrodered] embroydered F2 105  
pearle] Pearles Q3 rends] rents Qq 107 shirt!] Shirt. Qq 1, 2 :  
shirt. Q3 109 you,] you Qq 112 subiect] subject Q1 114 on,]  
on Qq 116 presently] presenly F2 117 horse,] horse Qq 1, 2  
118 shirt)——] Shirt) Qq 1, 2 : shirt) Q3 119 O!] O Qq in not  
120 court-gate,] court gate Q1 Court gate Qq 2, 3



both together) embrac'd, and marcht hand in hand vp into the presence : was not this businesse well carried ?

M A C I. Well ? yes, and by this we can gesse what apparell the gentleman wore.

P V N T. 'Fore valour, it was a designement begun with 125 much resolution, maintain'd with as much prowesse, and ended with more humanitie. How now, what saies the *Notarie* ?

S E R V. He saies, he is ready, sir, he staies but your worships pleasure. 130

P V N T. Come, we will goe to him, Monsieur. Gentlemen, shall we entreat you to be witnesses ?

S O G L. You shall entreat me, sir : come *Resolution*.

S H I F T. I follow you, good *Countenance*.

C A R L. Come, signior, come, come. 135

M A C I. O, that there should be fortune  
To clothe these men, so naked in desert !  
And that the iust storme of a wretched life,  
Beats 'hem not ragged, for their wretched soules,  
And, since as fruitless, euen as black as coales ! 140

## G R E X.

M I T. Why, but signior, how comes it, that F V N G O S O appear'd not with his sisters intelligence, to B R I S K E ?

C O R. Mary, long of the euill angels that she gaue him, who haue indeed tempted the good simple youth, to follow

iv. vi 121 together] together Q2 embrac'd,] embrac'd Qq 1, 2  
122 presence.] Presence Qq was not . . carried ? not in Qq 123  
Well ? yes, and by] Well, by Qq 125 valour,] God Qq 127-8 the  
*Notarie*] he Qq 1, 2 : hee Q3 After 128 *His seruuingman enters.* (*Seru-*  
*mgman* Q1) Qq 129 He] The *Notarie* Qq saies,] saies Qq 1, 2 :  
sayes Q3 ready,] readie Q1 : ready Qq 2, 3 131 Come,] Come Q1  
him,] him Qq Monsieur Q1 Gentlemen,] Gentlemen Q1  
132 witnesses ?] witnesses Qq 133 me, sir.] mee sir, Qq 1, 2 : me  
sir, Q3 134 you,] you Qq 135 Come,] Come Qq 137 desert !]  
desert, Qq 139 ragged,] ragged Qq 140 And,] And Qq coales !]  
coales. Q1 : coles. Qq 2, 3 After 140 *Exeunt* Q1 . Qq 2, 3 add 'Exit'  
to 140. All three fail to mark any exit at 134 141 Why,] Why Qq  
it,] it Qq 142 intelligence,] intelligence Qq BRISKE ?] *Briske*  
Qq 143 Mary,] Mary Q1 . Marrie Q2 Marie Q3 144 youth,]  
youth Qq



145 the taile of the fashion, and neglect the imposition of his friends. Behold, here hee comes, very worshipfully attended and with good varietie.

*Act III. Scene VII.*

FVNGOSO, TAYLOR, SHOO-MAKER,  
HABERDASHER.

G Ramercie, good shoo-maker, I'le put to strings my selfe. Now, sir, let me see, what must you haue for this hat ?

HABER. Here's the bill, sir.

FVNG. How does't become me ? well ?

5 TAIL. Excellent, sir, as euer you had any hat in your life.

FVNG. Nay, you'll say so, all.

HABE. In faith, sir, the hat's as good as any man i' this towne can serue you ; and will maintayne fashion as long : ne're trust me for a groat else.

10 FVNG. Do's it apply well to my sute ?

TAIL. Exceeding well, sir.

FVNG. How lik'st thou my sute, haberdasher ?

HABE. By my troth, sir, 'tis very rarely well made, I neuer saw a sute sit better, I can tell, on.

15 TAIL. Nay, we haue no arte to please our friends, we.

FVNG. Here, haberdasher, tell this same.

HABE. Good faith, sir, it makes you haue an excellent body.

iv. vi. 146 Behold,] Behold *Qr* attended] attended, *Qq*, *F2*  
iv. vii *Act* . . HABERDASHER.] SCENA QVARTA. | *Enter Fungoso with Taylor, Shoe-maker, and Haberdasher* (QUARTA. *Qq* 1, 2 : *Fungoso*, *Q3*)  
*Qq*. SCENE V.—*A Room in Deliro's House* | *Enter Fungoso in a new suit, followed by his Tailor, Shoemaker, and Haberdasher.* G 1 Gramercie,] *Fung* Gramercie *Qq* shoo-maker] Shoe-maker *Qq* put to strings] put too strings *Qq* 1, 2. put Strings to *F3* *Exit Shoe-maker.* *Qq* after ' selfe,' beginning a new line at ' Now, sir ' 2 Now,] Now *Qq* 4 does't] doest *Qq* 1, 2 me ?] me *Qq* 1, 2 5 Excellent,] Excellent *Qq* 6 not in *Qq* 7 In faith,] Nay faith *Qq* 8 you ; and] you. And *Qq* 1, 2 : you, And *Q3* long :] long, *Qq* 9 trust me for a groat else] trustme for a groatelse *F2* 11 well,] well *Qq* 12 sute,] suit *Qr* Sute *Q2* : sute *Q3* 13 troth, sir,] troth sir *Qq* 14 better,] better *Qq* tell,] tell *Qq* 16 Here,] Here *Qq* haberdasher,] Haberdasher *Qr* 17 faith,] faith *Qq*



F V N G. Nay (beleue me) I thinke I haue as good a body  
in clothes, as another. 20

T A I L. You lack points, to bring your apparell together,  
sir

F V N G. I'le haue points anon : how now ? is't right ?

H A B E. Faith, sir, 'tis too little, but vpon farther hopes  
— Good morrow to you, sir. 25

F V N G. Farewell, good haberdasher. Well, now master  
S N I P, let mee see your bill.

### G R E X.

M I T. Me thinkes he discharges his followers too thicke.

C O R. O, therein he saucily imitates some great man.  
I warrant you, though he turnes off them, he keeps this 30  
taylor, in place of a page, to follow him still.

F V N G. This bill is very reasonable, in faith (harke you,  
master S N I P) Troth, sir, I am not altogether so well  
furnisht at this present, as I could wish I were, but—If  
you'le doe mee the fauour to take part in hand, you shall 35  
haue all I haue, by this hand—

T A I L. Sir—

F V N G. And, but giue mee credit for the rest, till the  
beginning of the next terme.

T A I L. O lord, sir— 40

F V N G. 'Fore god, and by this light, I'le pay you to the

iv. vii. 20 clothes,] cloths Qr : cloaths Q2 : clothes Q3 21 points,]  
points Qq 21-2 together, sir.] together Qq 1, 3 : together. Q2 24  
Faith, sir,] Faith sir Qq hopes—] hopes Qq 25 you,] you  
Qq After 25 Exit Haberdasher. Q1 Qq 2, 3 add to 25 26 Fare-  
well,] Farewell Qq haberdasher.] Haberdasher, Qr Haberdasher :  
Qq 2, 3 Well,] well Qq master] maister Qr 27 SNIP,] Snip Qq  
29 O,] O Qr 30 you,] you Qq 31 taylor, . page,] Taylor . .  
Page Qq still om. Qq 2, 3 32 reasonable,] reasonable Qq faith  
(harke you,] faith, harke you Qr : faith hearke you Q2 : fayth :  
Hearke you Q3 33 master] maister Qr SNIP,] Snip. Q1 . Snip,  
Qq 2, 3 Troth, sir,] Troth sir Qq altogether] altogether Q2 34  
were,] were : Qq 36 haue,] haue Qq this hand—] Iesu. Qq 38  
And,] And Qq 40 lord,] Lord Qq 41 god,] God Qq light,]  
light Qq



554 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

vtmost, and acknowledge my selfe verie deeply engag'd to you, by the courtesie.

T A I L. Why, how much haue you there, sir ?

45 F V N G. Mary I haue here foure angels, and fiteene shillings of white monie : it's all I haue, as I hope to be blest.

T A I L. You will not faile me, at the next tearme, with the rest.

50 F V N G. No, and I doe, pray heauen, I be hang'd. Let me neuer breathe againe, vpon this mortall stage, as the philosopher cals it. By this aire, and (as I am a gentleman) I'll hold.

G R E X.

C O R D. He were an yron-hearted fellow, in my iudge-  
55 ment, that would not credite him vpon this volley of othes.

T A I L. Well, sir, I'll not sticke with any gentleman for a trifle : you know what 'tis, remains ?

F V N G. I, sir, and I giue you thankses in good faith. O fate ! how happie am I made in this good fortune ! Well,  
60 now I'll goe seeke out Monsieur B R I S K E. 'Ods so, I haue forgot ribband for my shooes, and points. S'lid, what lucke's this ! how shall I doe ? Master S N I P P E, pray let me reduct some two or three shillings for points, and ribband : as I am an honest man, I haue vtterly disfurnisht my selfe,

iv. vii. 42 engag'd] ingag'd F<sub>2</sub> 43 you,] you Q<sub>q</sub> the courtesie]  
this hand Q<sub>q</sub> 44 Why,] Why Q<sub>q</sub> there,] there Q<sub>q</sub> 46 monie:]  
money, Q<sub>q</sub> haue,] haue Q<sub>q</sub> I hope] 'hope Q<sub>q</sub> 47 blest] sau'd Q<sub>q</sub>  
48 me,] mee Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 3 : me Q<sub>2</sub> tearme,] Tearme Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 2 : Terme Q<sub>3</sub>  
50 No,] No Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 2 : No : Q<sub>3</sub> and] an F<sub>2</sub> heauen,] God Q<sub>q</sub> 51  
breathe] breath Q<sub>q</sub> againe,] againe Q<sub>q</sub> 54 fellow,] fellow Q<sub>q</sub>  
iudgement] judgement Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 2 55 this volley of] these monstrous  
Q<sub>q</sub> : his volley of F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 56 Well,] Well Q<sub>q</sub> 57 'tis,] 'tis Q<sub>q</sub>  
58 I,] I Q<sub>q</sub> faith,] faith, Q<sub>r</sub> : faith ; Q<sub>q</sub> 2, 3 59 fate !] God Q<sub>r</sub>.  
God, Q<sub>q</sub> 2, 3 fortune !] fortune Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 2 60 Monsieur] Moun-  
sieur Q<sub>r</sub> 'Ods] Gods Q<sub>q</sub> 61 shooes,] shoes ; Q<sub>r</sub> shoes, Q<sub>2</sub> S'lid,]  
S'lid Q<sub>q</sub> 62 this !] this ? Q<sub>q</sub> I] we Q<sub>3</sub> Master] Maister Q<sub>r</sub>  
63 points,] points Q<sub>r</sub> : Points Q<sub>2</sub> : poynts Q<sub>3</sub> ribband :] Ribband,  
Q<sub>q</sub> 1, 2 : Rybband Q<sub>3</sub> : Ribbands : F<sub>3</sub> 64 as I . . . man,] by Iesu  
Q<sub>q</sub> selfe,] selfe Q<sub>q</sub>



in the default of memorie, pray' le'me be beholding to you, 65  
it shall come home i' the bill, beleue me.

T A I L. Faith, sir, I can hardly depart with ready mony,  
but I'le take vp, and send you some by my boy, presently.  
What colour'd ribband would you haue ?

F V N G. What you shall thinke meet i' your iudgement, 70  
sir, to my sute.

T A I L. Well, I'le send you some presently.

F V N G. And points too, sir ?

T A I L. And points too, sir.

F V N G. Good lord ! how shall I studie to deserue this 75  
kindnesse of you, sir ? Pray, let your youth make haste, for  
I should haue done a businesse an houre since, that I doubt  
I shall come too late. Now, in good faith, I am exceeding  
proud of my sute.

### G R E X.

C O R. Doe you obserue the plunges, that this poore 80  
gallant is put to (signior) to purchase the fashion ?

M I T. I, and to bee still a fashion behinde with the world,  
that's the sport.

C O R. Stay : O here they come, from *seal'd, and deliuer'd*.

iv. vii 65 memorie,] memorie ; Qq 2, 3 pray'] pray, Qq 1, 2 :  
pray Q3 (cf. iv viii 84) 66 bill,] bill Q1 : Bill Qq 2, 3 67 Faith,]  
Faith Qq ready not in Qq 68 vp,] vp Qq 1, 2 boy,] boy Qq  
70 iudgement, sir,] iudgement Sir Qq 1, 2 : iudgement sir Q3 73, 74  
too,] too Qq After 74 *Exit Taylor*. Q1 · Qq 2, 3 add to 74 75  
lord !] Lord Q1 : Lord, Qq 2, 3 76 of you, sir ?] of you sir. Qq 1,  
2 : of you sir ? Q3 Pray,] Pray Qq, F2 77 houre] hower Q1  
78 Now,] Now Qq faith,] truth Qq exceeding] exceedingly Qq 2, 3  
After 79 *Exit* Q1 : Qq add to 78 80 plunges,] plunges Qq 81  
put to] put too Qq fashion ?] Fashion Qq, 1 2 82 with om. Qq  
2, 3 84 come,] come Qq *seal'd,*] *seal'd* Q1 · *Seal'd* Qq 2, 3



*Act III. Scene VIII.*

PVNTARVOLO, FASTIDIVS BRISKE, SERVANTS, CARLO, SOGLIARDO, MACILENTE,  
SHIFT.

*To them.*

FVNGOSO

WELL, now my whole venter is forth I will resolute to depart shortly.

FAST. Faith, sir PVNTARVOLO, goe to the court, and take leaue of the ladies first.

5 PVNT. I care not, if it be this afternoones labour. Where is CARLO?

FAST. Here he comes.

CARL. Faith, gallants, I am perswading this gentleman to turne courtier He is a man of faire reuenué, and his  
10 estate will beare the charge well. Besides, for his other gifts of the minde, or so, why, they are as nature lent him 'hem, pure, simple, without any artificiall drug or mixture of these two thred-bare beggarly qualities, learning, and knowledge, and therefore the more accomodate, and  
15 genuine. Now, for the life it selfe——

FAST. O, the most celestiall, and full of wonder, and delight, that can be imagin'd, signior, beyond all thought, and apprehension of pleasure! A man liues there, in that

IV. viii. Act . . . FVNGOSO.] SCENA QVINTA. | Enter Puntaruolo, Fastidius Briske, scruingmen with the Dog. (QUINTA. Qq 1, 2: Puntaruolo Qq 1, 2) Qq: SCENE VI—Puntaruolo's Lodgings | Enter Puntaruolo, Fastidious Briske in a new suit, and Servants, with the dog. G. To them. not in Qq, F3: F3 runs on the names Shift, Fungoso. 1 Well,] Punt Well Qq venter] venture Q3, F3 3 Faith,] Faith Qq PUNTARVOLO,] Puntaruolo Qq 1, 3: Puntaruolo Q2 5 not,] not Qq labour] labor Qq 2, 3 6 Where] where Qq 2, 3 After 7 Enter Carlo, Sogliardo, Shift, and Macilente. Qq 8 Faith,] Faith Qq 9 courtier. He] Courtier, he Qq 10 well. Besides,] well, besides Qq 12 artificiall] Artificiall Qq 13 thred-bare] thredbare Qq beggarly] beggerly Qq, F2 learning,] Learning Qq 14 knowledge] Knowledge Qq accomodate,] accomodate Qq 15 genuine] Genuine Qq Now,] Now Qq 16 FAST.] Fact. Q3 celestiall] Celestiall Qq wonder,] wonder Q1: woonder Qq 2, 3 17 delight,] delight Qq imagin'd,] imagin'd Qq thought,] thought Qq 18 pleasure!] Pleasure. Qq there,] there Qq



diuine rapture, that hee will thinke himselfe i' the ninth  
heauen for the time, and lose all sense of mortalitie what-  
soever; when he shall behold such glorious (and almost  
immortall) beauties, heare such angelicall and harmonious  
voyces, discourse with such flowing and *ambrosian* spirits,  
whose wits are as suddaine as lightning, and humorous as  
*nectar*; Oh: it makes a man al *quintessence*, and *flame*, & 25  
lifts him vp (in a moment) to the verie christall crowne of  
the skie, where (houering in the strength of his imagination)  
he shall behold all the delights of the H E S P E R I D E S, the  
*Insulæ Fortunatæ*, A D O N I S gardens, *Tempe* or what else  
(confin'd within the amplest verge of *poesie*) to bee meere 30  
*vmbræ*, and imperfect figures, conferr'd with the most  
essentiall felicitie of your court.

M A C I. Well, this *Encomion* was not extemporall, it  
came too perfectly off.

C A R L. Besides, sir, you shall neuer need to goe to a hot-  
house, you shall sweat there with courting your mistresse,  
or losing your monie at *primero*, as well as in all the stoues  
in *Sweden*. Mary this, sir, you must euer be sure to carrie  
a good strong perfume about you, that your mistresse dogge  
may smell you out amongst the rest; and (in making loue 40  
to her) neuer feare to be out: for you may haue a pipe of  
tabacco, or a base violll shall hang o' the wall, of purpose,  
will put you in presently. The trickes your *Resolution* has  
taught you in tabacco, (the *whiffe*, and those sleights) will  
stand you in verie good ornament there. 45

F A S T. I, to some perhaps: but, and hee should come  
to my mistresse with tabacco (this gentleman knowes)

iv. viii. 19 diuine] deuine Qr rapture] Rapture Qq ninth] third  
Qq 20 lose] loose Qq whatsoever;] whatsoever, F2 23 am-  
brosian] Ambrosian Qq, F2: ambrosiam Fr 24 are not in Qq  
lightning, and] lightningand Q3 25 quintessence,] Quintessence Qq  
flame] Flame Qq 1, 2: Fleame Q3 26-7 of the] o' the Qq 27  
imagination] Imaginaton Qq 29 Tempe] Tempe, Qq 31 vmbræ,]  
Vmbræ Qq 2, 3 33 Well,] Wel Qr: Wel, Qq 2, 3 Encomion] EN-  
comron Qq 35 Besides,] Besides Qq 37 losing] loosing Qq 38  
Sweden] Flaunders Qq this,] this Qq 39 mistresse] Mistresses F3  
42 wall,] wall Qq 45 there. corr. Fr, F2. there? Qq, Fr originally.  
46 perhaps] per haps Qq 2, 3 and] an' F2 (so 56)



## 558 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

shee'ld reply vpon him, yfaith. O, (by this bright sunne)  
shee has the most acute, readie, and facetious wit, that—  
50 tut there's no spirit able to stand her. You can report it,  
signior, you haue scene her?

P V N T. Then can hee report no lesse, out of his iudge-  
ment, I assure him.

M A C I. Troth, I like her well enough, but shee's too selfe-  
55 conceited, me thinkes.

F A S T. I indeed, shee's a little too selfe-conceited, and  
'twere not for that humour, she were the most-to-be-  
admir'd ladie in the world.

P V N T. Indeed, it is a humour that takes from her  
60 other excellencies.

M A C I. Why, it may easily be made to forsake her, in my  
thought.

F A S T. Easily, sir? then are all impossibilities easie.

M A C I. You conclude too quicke vpon me, signior, what  
65 will you say, if I make it so perspicuously appeare now,  
that your selfe shall confesse nothing more possible?

F A S T. Mary, I will say, I will both applaud, and admire  
you for it.

69 P V N T. And I will second him, in the admiration.

*They*  
*whisper.* M A C I. Why, I'le shew you, gentlemen. C A R L O, come  
hither.

S O G L. Good faith, I haue a great humor to the court :  
what thinkes my *Resolution*? shall I aduenture?

iv. viii. 48 him,] him Qq O,] Oh, Qr: Oh Qq 2, 3 49-50 that—  
tut] that, 8. tut Q3 50 there's no] there'sno Q3 it,] it Qq 52  
lesse,] lesse Qq iudgement] judgement Qq r, 2 54 Troth,] Troth Qq  
55 -conceited,] -conceited Qq 57, 59 humour] Humor Qq 57 most-  
to-be-admir'd] most to be admir'd Qq 59 Indeed,] Indeed Qq 61  
Why,] Why Qr: why Qq 2, 3 her,] her Qq 63 Easily,] Easily Qq  
64 me,] me Qq signior,] signior, F2 65 say,] say Qq per-  
spicuously] conspicuously Qq 2, 3 66 possible?] possible. Qq 67  
Mary,] Marry Qr: Mary Qq 2, 3 I will... for it. *italicized in Qq*  
applaud] *applaud you* Qq 69 him,] him Qq in the admiration. *not*  
*in Qq* 70 Why,] Why Qq you,] you Qq gentlemen,] Gentlemen,  
Qr: Gentlemen; Qq 2, 3 CARLO,] Carlo Qr 71 hither] hether Qr  
*They whisper.* Macilente, Carlo, Puntarvolo, and Briske, *whisper.* Qq in  
text after 71 72 faith,] faith Qq humor] Humor F2 court:]  
Court, Qq 73 *Resolution*?] *Resolution*, Qq 2, 3



SHIFT. Troth, *Countenance*, as you please ; the place is a place of good reputation, and capacitie. 75

SOGL. O, my trickes in tabacco (as CARLO sayes) will shew excellent there.

SHIFT. Why, you may goe with these gentlemen now, and see fashions : and after, as you shall see correspondence.

SOGL. You say true. You will goe with me, *Resolution* ? 80

SHIFT. I will meet you, *Countenance*, about three or foure of clocke, but, to say to goe with you I cannot, for (as I am APPLE-IOHN) I am to goe before the *Cocatrice* you saw this morning, and therefore pray', present mee excus'd, good *Countenance*. 85

SOGL. Farewell, good *Resolution*, but faile not to meet.

SHIFT. As I liue.

PVNT. Admirably excellent !

MACI. If you can but perswade SOGLIARDO to court, there's all now. 90

CARL. O let me alone, that's my taske.

FAST. Now, by wit, MACILENTE, it's about measure excellent : 'twill be the onely court-exploit that euer prou'd courtier ingenious.

PVNT. Vpon my soule, it puts the ladie quite out of her 95 humour, and we shall laugh with iudgement.

CARL. Come, the gentleman was of himselfe resolu'd to goe with you, afore I mou'd it.

MACI. Why then, gallants, you two, and CARLO, goe afore to prepare the iest : SOGLIARDO, and I will come 100 some while after you.

iv. viii 74 Troth,] Troth Qq 75 reputation,] Reputation Qq 76  
O,] O Qq 2, 3 78 Why,] Why Qq 79 fashions.] fashions; Qq  
80 me,] me Qq 81 you,] you Qq 82 of clocke,] a'clock; F2 can-  
not,] cannot, Qq 2, 3 83 APPLE-IOHN] Apple Iohn Qq 84 pray',  
Ff. pray, Qq 85 excus'd,] excus'd Qq 86 Farewell,] Farewell Qq  
87 Exit Shift add Q1 After 87 They breake silence: Q1. They breake  
silence. Exit Shift Qq 2, 3 88 Admirably] Admirably Fr excel-  
lent !] excellent. Qq 90 court] the Court Qq 92 Now, by wit,]  
Now by Iesu Qq 93 court-exploit] Courtly exploit Qq 94 prou'd]  
prou'd Q2 95 soule,] soule Qq the ladie] my Lady Q3 96  
humour] Humor Qq iudgement] judgement Qq 1, 2 98 mou'd]  
mou'd Q2 99 then,] then Qq two,] two Qq CARLO,] Carlo Qq  
100 iest] jest Q1: jest Q2 SOGLIARDO,] Sogliardo Qq



C A R L. Pardon me, I am not for the court.

P V N T. That's true: C A R L O comes not at court, indeed. Well, you shall leaue it to the facultie of monsieur  
105 B R I S K E, and my selfe, vpon our liues wee will manage it happily. C A R L O shall bespeake supper, at the Mitre, against we come backe: where we will meet, and dimple our cheekes with laughter at the successe.

C A R L. I, but will you all promise to come?

110 P V N T. My selfe shall vndertake for them: he that failes, let his reputation lye vnder the lash of thy tongue.

C A R L. Gods so', looke who comes here!

S O G L. What, nephew!

F V N G. Vncle, god saue you; did you see a gentleman,  
115 one Monsieur B R I S K E? a courtier, he goes in such a sute as I doe.

S O G L. Here is the gentleman, nephew, but not in such a sute.

*He*  
*swounes.* F V N G. Another sute!

S O G L. How now, nephew?

121 F A S T. Would you speake to me, sir?

C A R L. I, when he has recouered himselfe, poore poll.

P V N T. Some *Rosa-solis*.

M A C I. How now, signior?

125 F V N G. I am not well, sir.

M A C I. Why, this it is, to dogge the fashion.

C A R L. Nay, come gentlemen, remember your affaires; his disease is nothing but the *fluxe* of apparell.

rv. viii. 102 the court *corr.* *Fr*, *F2* the Court *Qq*. court *Fr* originally  
103 court, *corr.* *Fr*, *F2*: the Court *Qq*. court *Fr* originally 104  
indeed. [indeed: *Qq* 2, 3 Well] well *Qq* facultie] *faculthe* *Qq* mon-  
sieur] Mounsieur *Qr* 105 selfe,] selfe; *Qq*, *F2* 106 supper,] supper  
*Qr*. Supper *Qq* 2, 3 Mitre, *corr.* *Fr*, *F2*: Miter *Qr*. Mitre *Qq* 2, 3.  
Miter, *Fr* originally 109 come?] come. *Qq* 110 vndertake *corr.*  
*Fr*, *F2*: *manfred* it *Qq*, *Fr* originally. 112 so'] so *F2* here!] here.  
*Qr*: here? *Qq* 2, 3 After 112 Enter *Fungoso* *Qq* 113 nephew!] Nephew? *Qq* 114 god] God *Qq*, *F2* 115 courtier *corr.* *Fr*, *F2*.  
Courtier *Qq*, *Fr* originally 117 gentleman,] Gentleman *Qq* 119  
st dir *swounes*] *Swounes* *Q3* 120 now,] now *Qq* 121 me,] mee  
*Qr*: me *Qq* 2, 3 122 recouered] recouer'd *Qq* 2, 3: recover'd *F2*  
himselfe, *corr.* *Fr*, *F2*: himselfe: *Qq*, *Fr* originally. 124 now,] now  
*Qq* 125 well,] well *Qq* 126 Why,] Why *Qq* dogge] *dodg* *F3*  
127 Nay,] Nay *Qq*



P V N T. Sirs, returne to the lodging, keepe the cat safe :  
I'll be the dogs *Guardian* my selfe. 130

S O G L. Nephew, will you goe to court with vs? these  
gentlemen, and I are for the court : nay, be not so melan-  
choly.

F V N G. By gods lid, I thinke no man in christendome  
has that rascally fortune that I haue. 135

M A C I. Faith, your sute is well enough, signior.

F V N G. Nay, not for that, I protest, but I had an  
errand to Monsieur F A S T I D I V S, and I haue forgot it.

M A C I. Why, goe along to court with vs, and remember  
it, come. Gentlemen, you three take one boat, and So- 140  
G L I A R D O and I will take another : we shall be there  
instantly.

F A S T. Content : good sir, vouchsafe vs your pleasance.

P V N T. Farewell, C A R L O ; remember.

C A R L, I warrant you : would I had one of *Kemps* 145  
shooes to throw after you.

P V N T. Good *Fortune* will close the eyes of our icst, feare  
not : and we shall frolicke.

## G R E X.

M I T. This M A C I L E N T E, signior, begins to bee more  
sociable on a suddaine, mee thinkes, then hee was before : 150  
there's some portent in't, I beleeeue.

C O R. O, hee's a fellow of a strange nature. Now do's hee  
(in this calme of his humour) plot, and store vp a world of  
malicious thoughts in his braine, till hee is so full with 'hem,

IV. viii. 129 safe. *corr* F1, F2. safe; Qq, F1 originally  
*Exeunt Seruingmen* add Qq 131 court] the Court Qq vs? vs, Qq  
132 gentlemen,] Gentlemen Qq nay,] nay Qq 134 gods lid,] Gods  
lid Qq 136 Faith,] Faith Qq enough,] enough Qq 137 that,]  
that Qq protest, *corr*. F1, F2. protest, Qq, F1 originally.  
Why,] Why Qq court] the Court Qq 140 come. Gentlemen] come  
Gentlemen F3 143 sir,] Sir Qq 144 Farewell,] Farewell Qq 147  
jest] jest Qq 148 *Exeunt*. add Qq 149 MACILENTE,] *Macilente* Qq  
signior,] Signior Q1 150 suddaine,] suddaine Qq then] than Qq,  
F2 before.] before, Qq 152 O.] O Qq strange] straunge Qq 2, 3  
153 humour) plot,] Humor) plot Qq 154 with 'hem] with 'him Q3



155 that you shall see the very torrent of his enuie breake forth  
like a land-flood: and, against the course of all their  
affections oppose it selfe so violently, that you will almost  
haue wonder to thinke, how 'tis possible the current of their  
dispositions shall receiue so quick, and strong an alteration

160 M I T. I mary, sir, this is that, on which my expectation  
has dwelt al this while: for I must tel you, signior (though  
I was loth to interrupt the *Scene*) yet I made it a question  
in mine owne priuate discourse, how he should properly call  
it, *Euery man out of his Humour*, when I saw all his actors so  
165 strongly pursue, and continue their humours?

C O R. Why, therein his art appeares most full of lustre,  
and approacheth neerest the life: especially, when in the  
flame, and height of their humours, they are laid flat, it fills  
the eye better, and with more contentment. How tedious  
170 a sight were it to behold a proud exalted tree lopt, and cut  
downe by degrees, when it might bee feld in a moment?  
and to set the axe to it before it came to that pride, and  
fulnesse, were, as not to haue it grow.

M I T. Well, I shall long till I see this fall, you talke of.

175 C O R. To helpe your longing, signior, let your imagina-  
tion be swifter then a paire of oares: and by this, suppose  
P V N T A R V O L O, B R I S K E, F V N G O S O, and the dogge  
arriu'd at the court gate, and going vp to the great chamber.  
M A C I L E N T E, and S O G L I A R D O, wee'le leaue them  
180 on the water, till possibilitie and naturall meanes may land  
'hem. Here come the gallants, now prepare your expecta-  
tion.

iv viii. 155 enuie] Envie Qr forth] forth, Qq 156 like a land-  
flood: not in Qq and,] and Qq 158 wonder] woonder Qq 2, 3  
thinke,] thinke Qq 159 quick,] quicke Qr: quick Qq 2, 3, F2 160  
mary,] marry Qq that,] that Qq 161 you,] you Qq 163 priuate]  
priuat Q2 164 Humour] Humor Qq 165 pursue,] pursue Qq  
humours] Humors Qq 1, 2: humois Q3 166 Why,] Why Qq 167  
life:] life, Qq especially,] especially Qq 168 flame,] flame Qq  
humours,] Humors Qq 170 lopt,] lopt Qq 172 to it,] to it, Qq  
pride,] pride Qq, F2 173 were,] were Qq 174 Well,] Well Qq 1, 2  
fall,] fall Qq 176 then] than Qq 1, 2, F2 oares:] Oares, Qq  
177 P V N T A R V O L O] Puntarvolo Qq 1, 2 dogge] Dog, Qq 178 great]  
great Q3 179 M A C I L E N T E,] Macilente Qq 180 water,] water Qq  
till] till Q3 181 the om. Q3 expectation] Expectation Q3



*Act v. Scene 1.*

PVNTARVOLO, FASTIDIUS BRISKE, FUN-  
GOSO, GROOME, MACILENTE,  
SOGLIARDO.

Come, gentles. Signior, you are sufficiently instructed.  
FAST. Who, I, sir?

PVNT. No, this gentleman. But stay, I take thought  
how to bestow my dogge, he is no competent attendant for  
the presence. 5

FAST. Masse, that's true indeed, knight, you must not  
carrie him into the presence.

PVNT. I know it, and I (like a dull beast) forgot to bring  
one of my cormorants to attend me.

FAST. Why, you were best leaue him at the porters 10  
lodge.

PVNT. Not so: his worth is too well knowne amongst  
them, to bee forth-comming.

FAST. Slight, how'll you doe then?

PVNT. I must leaue him with one, that is ignorant of his 15  
qualitie, if I wil haue him to be safe. And see! Here comes  
one that will carrie soales, *ergo*, will hold my dogge. My  
honest friend, may I commit the tuition of this dogge to thy  
prudent care?

GROO. You may, if you please, sir. 20

PVNT. Pray thee, let me find thee here at my returne:

v. i. Act SOGLIARDO.] ACTVS QVINTVS, SCENA PRIMA. | *Enter Puntarvolo, Fastidius Briske, Fungoso, and the Dog* (ACTUS QUINTUS, Qq 1, 2)  
Qq. ACT V | SCENE 1.—*The Palace Stairs.* | *Enter Puntarvolo, with his dog, followed by Fastidious Brisk and Fungoso* G 1 Come,] Signior  
Punt. Come Qq gentles ] Lordings. Qq Gentile, F3 Signior,] Signior  
Qq 2 Who, I.] Who I Qq 1, 2: Who, I Q3 6 Masse,] Masse Qq  
indeed,] in deed Q1: indeed Qq 2, 3 10 Why,] Why Qq you were  
corr. Fr. you're Qq, Fr originally, F2 15 one,] one Qq 16 sec!]  
see; Qq 1, 2: see: Q3 Here] Heres Q2 17 that] thac Q2 After  
19 *Enter a Groome with a basket.* Qq 20 may,] may Qq please,]  
please Qq 21—93 Q3 transposes *Nix verso* (21 'Punt Pray thee'—57  
'her Fanne, when') and *Nix* (57 'she laughs'—93 'make it appeare').  
See above, p. 409. 21 Pray thee, corr. Fr Pray thee Qq, Fr origi-  
nally, F2



it shall not bee long, till I will ease thee of thy imployment, and please thee. Forth, gentles.

F A S T. Why, but will you leaue him with so slight com-  
25 mand, and infuse no more charge, vpon the fellow?

P V N T. Charge? no, there were no policie in that: that were to let him know the value of the gemme he holds, and so, to tempt fraile nature against her disposition. No, pray thee let thy honestie be sweet, as it shall be short.

30 G R O O. Yes, sir.

P V N T. But harke you gallants, and chiefly Monsieur B R I S K E. When we come in eye-shot, or presence of this ladie, let not other matters carrie vs from our proiect: but (if wee can) single her forth to some place——

35 F A S T. I warrant you.

P V N T. And bee not too suddaine, but let the deuce induce it selfe with good circumstance. On.

F V N G. Is this the way? good truth, here be fine hangings.

G R O O. Honestie sweet, and short? mary it shall, sir,  
40 doubt you not: for euen at this instant if one would giue mee twentie pounds, I would not deliuer him; there's for the sweet: but now, if any man come offer me but two pence, he shall haue him; there's for the short, now. Slid, what a mad humorous gentleman is this to leaue his dogge  
45 with me? I could run away with him now, and hee were worth any thing.

M A C I. Come on, signior, now prepare to court this all-witted ladie, most naturally, and like your selfe.

v. 1 22 ease] Ease *Qq* imployment] employment *Qq* 23 please] Please *Qq* Forth,] Forth *Qq* gentles] Gentiles *F3* 25 charge,] charge *Qq* 26 no, *Qq*, corr. *F1*: no; *F1* originally, *F2* that:] that; *Qq* 28 tempt] temp *Q1* 29 sweet, as it shall be short] sweet and short *Qq* 30 Yes,] Yes *Qq* 1, 2. yes *Q3* 32 BRISKE] *Brisk*. *Q1* (aff ill-printed colon?) *Briske*, *Q2*. *Briske* *Q3* -shot,] -shot *Qq* 33 other] others *Qq* 2, 3 proiect] Project *Qq* 1, 2 34 place——] place. *Qq* 37 circumstance On] Circumstance: on *Qq* 38 truth,] truth *Qq* After 38 *Exeunt Puntaruolo, Briske, Fungoso.* *Qq* 39 Honestie sweet,] Honestie, Sweet *Qq* shall,] shall *Qq* 42 sweet: corr. *F1*: Sweet: *Qq*. sweet; *F1* originally, 1, 2 42-3 two pence] two-pence *Qq* 43 short, corr. *F1*: Short *Qq*, short *F1* originally, *F2* Slid] S'bloud *Qq* 45 me?] me. *Qq* 1, 2 now,] now *Qq* and] an' 1, 2 (so 49) 46 thing,] thing: well, I pray God send him quickly againe | *Enter Macilente and Sogliardo.* *Qq* 47 on,] on *Qq* 48 naturally,] Naturally *Qq*



S O G L. Faith, and you say the word, I'll begin to her in tabacco. 50

M A C I. O, fie on't : no. You shall begin with, *How does my sweet ladie ?* or, *Why are you so melancholy, Madame ?* though shee bee verie merrie, it's all one : be sure to kisse your hand often inough ; pray for her health, and tell her, how *more then most faire* she is. Screw your face at' one side 55 thus, and protest ; let her fleere, and looke a skaunce, and hide her teeth with her fanne, when she laughs a fit, to bring her into more matter, that's nothing : you must talke forward (though it be without sense, so it be without blushing) 'tis most court-like, and well. 60

S O G L. But shall I not vse tabacco at all ?

M A C I. O, by no meanes, 'twill but make your breath suspected, and that you vse it onely to confound the ranke-nesse of that.

S O G L. Nay, I'll be aduis'd, sir, by my friends. 65

M A C I. Gods my life, see, where sir P V N T A R S dog is.

G R O O. I would the gentleman would returne for his follower here, I'll leaue him to his fortunes else.

M A C I. S'heart, 'twere the onely true iest in the world to poison him now : ha ? by this hand, I'll doe it, if I could 70 but get him of the fellow. Signior S O G L I A R D O, walke aside, and thinke vpon some deuice, to entertaine the ladie with.

S O G L. So I doe, sir.

M A C I. How now, mine honest friend ? whose dog- 75 keeper art thou ?

G R O O. Dogge-keeper, sir ? I hope I scorne that yfaith.

v. 1. 49 Faith,] Faith Qq 51 on't ']' on't Q1: on't, Q2: on't Q3  
no. You corr. F1 no. you Qq, F1 originally, F2 52 ladie ?] Laire ;  
Qq you so] youso Q2 melancholy,] melancholly Qq 54 inough]  
enough Qq 55 how Qq, corr. F1: how, F1 originally, F2 then] than  
Qq, F2 is.] is: Qq at' one] a t' one Qq 56 fleere,] fleere Qq  
a skaunce] a scew F2, F3 58 matter,] matter; Qq 60 court-like,]  
Courtlike Qq 63 suspected,] suspected, Qq that you] that that  
you Q3 65 aduis'd, sir,] aduis'd sir Qq 66 see,] see Qq 69  
S'heart, om. F2 iest] jest Qq 1, 2 70 this hand,] Gods will Qq 72  
deuice,] deuise Qq 74 doe,] doe Qq 1, 2: do Q3 Sog walke off,  
meditating add Qq 75 now,] now Qq 77 -keeper] keeper Qq



78 M A C I. Why? do'st thou not keepe a dogge?

*See  
throwes  
off the  
dogge.*  
G R O O. Sir, now I doe, and now I doe not: I thinke this  
be sweet and short. Make me his dogge-keeper?

M A C I. This is excellent, aboue expectation: nay stay,  
sir, you'd bee traauiling; but I'll giue you a dramme shall  
shorten your voyage here. So sir, I'll be bold to take my  
leau of you. Now to the *Turkes* court in the deuils name,  
85 for you shall neuer goe o' gods name. S O G L I A R D O,  
come.

S O G L. I ha' 't yfaith now, will sting it.

M A C I. Take heed you leese it not, signior, ere you come  
there: preserue it.

### G R E X.

90 C O R D. How like you this first exploit of his?

M I T I S. O, a piece of true enuie. but I expect the  
issue of the other deuice.

C O R D. Here they come, will make it appeare.

### *Act v. Scene II.*

SAVIOLINA, P V N T A R V O L O, F A S T I D I V S  
B R I S K E, F V N G O S O,

*to them.*

M A C I L E N T E, S O G L I A R D O.

**W**Hy, I thought, sir P V N T A R V O L O, you had bin  
gone your voyage?

P V N T. Deare, and most amiable ladie, your diuine

v. 1 79 st. dir *Hee . . . dogge.*] *Throwes off the Dogge, & Exit.* (*Throwe  
.. Dog, & . . . exit* Q3) Qq in text after 80 80 short. Make] Short :  
make Qq 81 excellent.] excellent Qq 1, 2 : excellent Q3 stay.] stay  
Qq 82 traauiling] traueiling Q3 : travelling F3 83 here. So]  
here : so Qq 84 you. Now] you now Qq deuils] Deuils Qq 1, 2 :  
diuels Q3 85 o' gods] on Gods Qq After 'name'] [*Kicks him out.*]  
Qq [*Kicks* Q3] 88 not,] not Qq 89 *Exeunt* add Qq 91 en-  
uie :] Enuie, Qq v 11. Act . . . S O G L I A R D O.] SCENA SECVNDA. [*Enter*  
*Puntarvolo, Saviolina, Fastidius Briske, Fungoso* (SECUNDA Qq 1, 2 :  
*Sauolhna* Q3 : *Fastidius* Q3) Qq : SCENE II — *An Apartment in the*  
*Palace.*] *Enter* Saviolina, Puntarvolo, Fastidious Brisk, and Fungoso G  
*To them* add Ff; in F1 ranged with the name of Sogliardo, who enters  
with Macilente at l 62 : in F2 incorrectly ranged with the first line of  
names 1 Why,] *Sau.* Why (Wy Qr) Qq thought,] thought Qq  
P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* Qq bin] been Qq : beene F2



beauties doe bind me to those offices, that I cannot depart when I would.

S A V I. 'Tis most court-like spoken, sir but how might we do to haue a sight of your dogge, and cat ?

F A S T. His dogge is in the court, ladie.

S A V I. And not your cat ? how dare you trust her behind you, sir ?

P V N T. Troth, madame, shee hath sore eyes, and shee doth keepe her chamber : mary I haue left her vnder sufficient guard, there are two of my followers to attend her.

S A V I. I'le giue you some water for her eyes : when doe you goe, sir ?

P V N T. Certes, sweet ladie, I know not.

F A S T. He doth stay the rather, madame, to present your acute iudgement with so courtly, and wel-parted a gentleman, as yet your lady-ship hath neuer seene.

S A V I. What's hee, gentle Monsieur B R I S K E ? not that gentleman ?

F A S T. No ladie, this is a kinsman to iustice *Silence*.

P V N T. Pray' sir, giue me leaue to report him : he's a gentleman (ladie) of that rare and admirable facultie, as (I protest) I know not his like in *Europe* : hee is exceedingly valiant, an excellent scholler, and so exactly trauail'd, that hee is able in discourse, to deliuer you a modell of any princes court in the world : 'speakes the languages with that puritie of phrase, and facilitie of accent, that it breeds astonishment : his wit, the most exuberant, and (aboue wonder) pleasant, of all that euer entred the concaue of this eare.

v. 1 6 court-like spoken, sir.] Courtlke spoken sir; Qq 7 dogge,] Dog Qq 8 FAST.] Fact Q3 dogge is] Dogge's Qq 9 how dare] howdare F2 10 you,] you Qq 11 Troth, madame,] Troth Madame Qq 12 doth] dooth Qq 2, 3 13 guard,] guard : Qq followers] Hinds Qq 15 goe,] goe Qq 1, 2 : go Q3 16 Certes,] Certes Qq 17 FAST.] Fact Q3 rather,] rather Qq 18 acute] Acute Qq iudgement] judgement Qq 1, 2 19 lady-ship] Ladiship Qq 20 Monsieur] Mounsieur Qq 2, 3 22 to] of Qq 23 sir,] sir : Q3 he's corr. F1, F2 : hee's Qq : h's F1 originally 24 facultie] facultie Qq 26 an] and F3 trauail'd] travel'd F3 29 phrase] Phrase Qq 1, 2. Phrase Q3 accent] Accent Qq



F A S T. 'Tis most true, ladie: mary, he is no such excellent proper man.

35 P V N T His trauailes haue chang'd his complexion, madame.

S A V I. O, sir P V N T A R V O L O, you must thinke, euery man was not borne to haue my seruant B R I S K E S feature.

40 P V N T. But that which transcends all, ladie; hee doth so peerelessly imitate any manner of person for gesture, action, passion, or whateuer——

F A S T. I, especially a rusticke, or a clowne, madame, that it is not possible for the sharpest-sighted wit (in the  
45 world) to discerne any sparkes of the gentleman in him, when he does it.

S A V I. O, Monsieur B R I S K E, be not so tyrannous to confine all wits within the compasse of your owne: not find the sparkes of a gentleman in him, if he be a gentleman?

50 F V N G. No in truth (sweet ladie) I belecue you cannot.

S A V I. Doe you belecue so? why, I can find sparkes of a gentleman in you, sir.

P V N T. I, he is a gentleman, madame, and a reueller.

F V N G. Indeed, I thinke I haue scene your ladiship at  
55 our reuels.

S A V I. Like enough, sir: but would I might see this wonder you talke of: may one haue a sight of him, for any reasonable summe?

P V N T. Yes, madame, he will arriue presently.

60 S A V I. What, and shall we see him clowne it?

F A S T. I faith (sweet ladie) that you shall: see; here he comes.

v 11. 33 true, ladie: mary,] true Ladie; mary Qq 35 trauailes] Travels F3 37 O.] O Qq P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* Qq thinke,] thinke Qq 40 doth] dooth Q2 42 whateuer] what euer Qq 43 rusticke, . . . clowne,] Rusticke . . . Clowne Qq 44 wit] with Q3 47 Monsieur] Mounsieur Qq 2, 3 51 why,] why Qq 52 you,] you Qq 53 gentleman,] Gentleman Qq 54 Indeed,] Indeed Qq 56 Like] Lik Q3 enough,] enough Q1: inough Qq 2, 3 57 him,] him Qq 59 Yes,] Yes Qq 61 see,] see Qq After 62 Enter *Macilente* with *Sogliardo*. Qq



P V N T. This is he ! pray obserue him, ladie.

S A V I. Beshrew me, he clownes it properly indeed.

P V N T. Nay, marke his courtship. 65

S O G L. How does my sweet ladie ? hote, and moyst ? beautifull and lustie ? ha ?

S A V I. Beautifull, and it please you, sir, but not lustie.

S O G L. O ho, ladie ; it pleases you to say so in truth : and how does my sweet ladie ? in health ? *Bona roba, quæso, que 70 nouvelles ? que nouvelles ?* sweet creature.

S A V I. O excellent : why gallants, is this hee that cannot bee decipher'd ? they were verie bleare-witted, yfaith, that could not discern the gentleman in him.

P V N T. But, doe you, in earnest, ladie ? 75

S A V I. Doe I, sir ? why, if you had any true court-iudgement in the carriage of his eye, and that inward power that formes his countenance, you might perceiue his counterfeiting as cleere, as the noone-day : Alas——Nay, if you would haue tryed my wit, indeed, you should neuer 80 haue told me he was a gentleman, but presented him for a true clowne indeede ; and then haue seene if I could haue decipher'd him.

F A S T. 'Fore god, her ladiship sayes true (knight .) but does he not affect the clowne most naturally, mistresse ? 85

P V N T. O, shee cannot but affirme that, out of the bountie of her iudgement.

S A V I. Nay, out of doubt hee does well, for a gentleman, to imitate ; but I warrant you, he becomes his natural carriage of the gentleman, much better then his clownerie. 90

v. 11. 63 he ] hee ; Qx . he ; Qq 2, 3 him,] him Qq 66 ladie ?]  
Ladie, Qq 1, 2 : Lady, Q3 hote . lustie ? italicized in Qq hote  
Qq . hot F2 68 Beautifull,] Beautifull Qq and] an' F2 you,]  
you Qq lustie] lustie Qq 69 ho,] ho Qq 70 ladie ?] Ladie, Qq  
1, 2 : Lady ; Q3 quæso,] quæso ? Qq 71 nouvelles ? . . . nouvelles ?]  
Nouvelles ? . . . Nouvelles ? Qq 73-4 -witted, yfaith,] -witted yfaith Qq  
75 But,] But Qq you,] you ; Q2 earnest,] earnest Qq 76 I,] I  
Qq why,] why Qq 77 -iudgement] iudgement Qq 1, 2 79 coun-  
terfeiting] counterfaiing Qq 1, 2 cleere,] cleere Qq noone-day]  
noone day Qq Alas——Nay,] Alas ; Nay Qq 80 wit,] Wit Qq 84  
god] God Qq (knight.)] (knight) F2 88 Nay,] Nay Qq gentle-  
man,] Gentleman Qq 90 then] than Qq, F2



F A S T. 'Tis strange, in truth, her ladiship should see so farre into him !

P V N T. I, is't not ?

S A V I. Faith, as easily as may be : not decipher him,  
95 quoth you ?

F V N G. Good sadnesse, I wonder at it !

M A C I. Why, has she decipher'd him, gentlemen ?

P V N T. O, most miraculously, and beyond admiration !

M A C I. Is't possible ?

100 F A S T. Shee hath gather'd most infallible signes of the gentleman in him, that's certaine.

S A V I. Why, gallants, let mee laugh at you, a little : was this your deuce, to trie my iudgement in a gentleman ?

M A C I. Nay, ladie, doe not scorne vs, though you haue  
105 this gift of perspicacie aboue others : What if hee should bee no gentleman now, but a clowne indeed, ladie ?

P V N T. How thinke you of that ? would not your ladi-  
ship bee out of your humour ?

F A S T. O, but shee knowes it is not so.

110 S A V I. What if he were not a man, yee may as well say ? nay, if your worships could gull me so, indeed, you were wiser then you are taken for.

M A C I. In good faith, ladie, hee is a verie perfect clowne, both by father, and mother : that I'll assure you.

115 S A V I. O, sir, you are verie pleasurable.

M A C I. Nay, doe but looke on his hand, and that shall resolute you : looke you, ladie, what a palme here is.

S O G L. Tut, that was with holding the plough.

M A C I. The plough ! did you discern any such thing  
120 in him, madame ?

v ii. 91 strange,] *straunge Qq 1, 2 : strange Q3* 92 him !] *him. Qq*  
93 not ?] *not. Qq* 94 Faith,] *Faith Qq* 96 it !] *it. Qq* 97 has]  
hath Q3 98 O,] *O Qq* admiration !] *Admiration Qq* 100 gath-  
er'd] *giuen Qq* 102 Why,] *Why Qq 1, 2, F2* you,] *you Qq* 103  
iudgement] *iudgement Qq 1, 2* 104 Nay,] *Nay Qq* 105 perspicacie]  
*Perspicacie Qq* 106 indeed,] *indeed Qq* 108 humour] *Humor Qq*  
2, 3 111 nay,] *nay Qq* so,] *so Qq* 112 then] *than Qq, F2* are]  
were Q3 113 faith,] *faith Qq* 114 father,] *Father Qq* 115 O,]  
O Qq 117 you,] *you Qq* 120 him,] *him Qq 1, 2*



F A S T. Faith no, she saw the gentleman as bright, as at noon-day, she : shee decipher'd him at first.

M A C I. Troth, I am sorrie your ladships sight should be so suddainly strooke.

S A V I. O, you're goodly beagles ! 125

F A S T. What, is she gone ?

S O G L. Nay, stay, sweet ladie, *que nouvelles ? que nouvelles ?*

S A V I. Out, you foole, you.

F V N G. Shee's out of her humour yfaith. 130

F A S T. Nay, let's follow it while 'tis hot, gentlemen.

P V N T. Come, on mine honour wee shall make her blush in the presence : my splene is great with laughter.

M A C I. Your laughter wil be a child of a feeble life, I beleuee, sir. Come, signior, your lookes are too deieted, 135 mee thinkes : why mixe you not mirth with the rest ?

F V N G. By gods will, this sute frets me at the soule. I'le haue it alter'd to morrow, sure.

### *Act v. Scene III.*

#### SHIFT.

F A S T I D I V S, P V N T A R V O L O, S O G L I A R D O, *To him.*

F V N G O S O, M A C I L E N T E.

I Am come to the court, to meet with my *Countenance*  
S O G L I A R D O : poore men must be glad of such countenance, when they can get no better. Wel. Need may insult vpon a man, but it shal neuer make him despaire of

v. ii. 121 the] ths Q3 bright,] bright Qq 122 -day,] -day Qq  
shee] he Qq 123 Troth,] Troth Qq 124 strooke] struck F2 125  
goodly] good Q3 127 Nay, stay,] Nay stay Qq ladie,] Ladie, Qq  
1, 2 : Lady, Q3 *nouelles ?*] *Novelles, Qq* *nouelles ?*] *Novelles Qq*  
1, 2 : *Novelles ?* Q3 129 foole,] foole Qq *Exit Sam.* add Qq  
130 humour] Humor Qq 131 hot,] hot Qq 1, 2 : hote Q3 132 wee  
shall] wee'le Qq 1, 2 : wee le Q3 134 life,] life Qq 135 beleuee,]  
beleuee Qq Come,] Come Qq deieted,] deieted Qq 1, 2 : deieted  
Q3 137 gods will,] Gods will Qq 138 morrow,] morrow Qq *Exeunt.*  
add Qq v. iii Act. . MACILENTE ] *Enter Shift.* Qq, without change  
of scene: SCENE III — *The Palace Stairs* | *Enter Shift.* G *To him.*  
add Ff 1 I] *Shift* I Qq court,] Court Qq 3 Wel.] Wel, Qq



572 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

5 consequence. The world wil say, tis base · tush, base ! 'tis base to liue vnder the earth, not base to liue about it, by any meanes.

F A S T. The poore ladie is most miserably out of her humour, yfaith.

10 P V N T. There was neuer so wittie a iest broken, at the tilt of all the court-wits christen'd.

M A C I. O, this applause taints it, foully.

S O G L. I thinke, I did my part in courting. O ! *Resolution !*

15 P V N T. Aye me, my dogge.

M A C I. Where is hee ?

*He sends way fungoso* F A S T. Gods precious, goc seeke for the fellow, good signior.

P V N T. Here, here I left him.

20 M A C I. Why, none was here when we came in now, but C A V A L I E R S H I F T, enquire of him.

F A S T. Did you see sir P V N T A R V O L O's dogge here, *Cavalier*, since you came ?

S H I F T. His dog sir ? he may looke his dog, sir, I saw 25 none of his dog, sir.

M A C I. Vpon my life, he hath stol'ne your dogge, sir, and beene hir'd to it by some that haue ventur'd with you : you may gesse by his peremptorie answeres.

P V N T. Not vnlike, for he hath beene a notorious 30 thiefe by his owne confession. Sirrah, where is my dogge ?

S H I F T. Charge mee with your dogge, sir ? I ha' none of your dog, sir.

v. iii. 5 consequence.] Consequence: Qq 1, 2 base :] base; Qq 1, 2 : base, Q3 After 7 Enter *Puntarvolo*, *Fastidius*, *Soghardo*, *Fungoso*, *Macilente*. Qq 8 FAST.] *Fost* Q3 9 humour,] Humour Qq 10 iest] jeast Q1 : jest Q2 broken,] broken Qq 11 tilt] Tilt, Qq 12 it,] it Qq foully] fowly Qq 13 thinke,] thinke Qq O !] O Qq 17 st. dir. He . . . *Fungoso* ] *Sends away Fungoso*. (sends Q3) Qq in text after 18. precious] pretious Qq 20 Why,] Why Qq 22 P V N T A R V O L O's] *Puntarvolos* Qq here,] here Qq 23 *Cavalier*] *Cavalier* Qq 24 dog, sir, I] Dog sir ; I Qq saw] see Qq 25 dog,] Dog Qq 26 life,] life Qq hath] has F2 dogge,] Dog Qq 27 beene hir'd] ben hir'd Q2 : benhir,d Q3 you :] you , Qq 30 where is] where's Qq 31 dogge,] Dog Qq ha' none] ha' non Q3 32 dog, sir] Dog Sir Q1 : dog sir Q2 : dogsir Q3



P V N T. Villaine, thou lvest.

S H I F T. Lie, sir? S'bloud, y' are but a man, sir.

P V N T. Rogue, and thiefe, restore him. 35

S O G L. Take heed, sir P V N T A R V O L O, what you doe:  
hee beare no coales, I can tell you (o' my word.)

M A C I. This is rare.

S O G L. It's mar'le hee stabs you not: by this light, he  
hath stab'd forty, for forty times lesse matter, I can tell you, 40  
of my knowledge.

P V N T. I wil make thee stoope, thou abiect.

S O G L. Make him stoop, sir! gentlemen, pacifie him or  
hee'le be kill'd.

M A C I. Is he so tall a man? 45

S O G L. Tall a man? if you loue his life, stand betwixt  
'hem: make him stoope!

P V N T. My dogge, villaine, or I will hang thee: thou  
hast confest robberies, and other felonious acts, to this  
gentleman thy *Countenance*— 50

S O G L. I'le beare no witnesse.

P V N T. And, without my dogge, I will hang thee, for them.

S O G L. What? kneele to thine enemies?

S H I F T. Pardon me, good sir; god is my witnesse, I neuer *Shift*  
did robberie in all my life. *kneeles* 55

F V N G. O, sir P V N T A R V O L O, your dogge lies *Fungoso*  
giuing vp the ghost in the wood-yard. *return'd.*

M A C I. Heart! is he not dead, yet?

P V N T. O, my dog, born to disastrous fortune! pray  
you conduct me, sir. 60

v. iii 34 Lie,] Lie Qq S'bloud,] S'blood Qq: om. F2 man,] man  
Qq 35 Rogue,] Rogue Qq 36 heed,] heed Qq P V N T A R V O L O,  
Puntarvolo Qq doe:] doe; Qq 37 coales,] coales Qq o'] of Qq  
word )] word. Qq 40 forty,] fortie Qq 42 abiect] Abiect Qq 1, 2  
43 stoop,] stoupe Qq gentlemen,] Gentlemen Qq him] him, Qq  
46 life,] life Qq 48 dogge,] Dog Qq: dog Qq 2, 3 49 acts,] acts Qq  
50 Countenance—] Countenance Qq 1: Countenance Qq 2, 3 52 And . . .  
dogge,] And . . . Dog Qq 53 st. dir. Qq in text after 52 enemies]  
enemie Qq 54 me,] me Qq: mee Qq 2, 3 god] God Qq witnesse,]  
Iudge Qq 56 st. dir. Fungoso return'd.] Fungo return'd. F3: Enter  
Fungoso. add Qq at 55 O,] O Qq P V N T A R V O L O] Puntarvolo Qq  
58 Heart!] S'blood Qq: S'bloud Qq 2, 3 dead,] dead Qq 59 dog,]  
Dogge Qq 60 me,] me Qq Exit Punt. with Fung. add Qq



S O G L. How? did you neuer doe any robberie, in your life?

M A C I. O, this is good : so he swore, sir.

S O G L. I, I heard him. And did you sweare true, sir?

S H I F T. I, (as I hope to be forgiuen, sir) I ne're rob'd any  
65 man, I neuer stood by the high-way-side, sir, but only said  
so, because I would get my selfe a name, and be counted a  
tall man.

S O G L. Now out, base *viliaco* : Thou my *Resolution*?  
I thy *Countenance*? By this light, gentlemen, he hath con-  
70 fest to mee the most inexorable companie of robberies, and  
damn'd himselfe that he did 'hem; you neuer heard the like:  
out skoundrell, out, follow me no more, I commaund thee:  
out of my sight, goe, hence, speake not : I wil not heare thee:  
away *camouccio*.

75 M A C I. O, how I doe feed vpon this now, and fat my  
selfe ! here were a couple vnexpectedly dishumour'd : well,  
by this time, I hope, sir P V N T A R V O L O and his dog are  
both out of humour to trauaile. Nay, gentlemen, why doe  
you not seeke out the knight, and comfort him? our supper  
80 at the Mitre must of necessitie hold to night, if you loue your  
reputations.

F A S T. 'Fore god, I am so melancholy for his dogs dis-  
aster, but I'll goe.

S O G L. Faith, and I may goe too, but I know, I shall be  
85 so melancholy.

M A C I. Tush, melancholy? you must forget that now,  
and remember you lie at the mercy of a *furie* : C A R L O  
will racke your sinewes asunder, and raile you to dust, if you  
come not.

v. iii. 61 robberie,] robberie *Qq* 1, 2 · robbery *Q* 3 62 O,] O *Qq*  
swore,] swore *Qq* 63 I, I] I *Q* 3 true,] true *Qq* 64 I hope to be  
forgiuen,] God shall haue part of my soule *Qq* 65 man, I] man I; *Qq*  
high-way-side,] high way side *Qr* · high-way side *Qq* 2, 3 66 name,]  
name *Qq* 1, 2 68 out,] out *Qq* 69 light,] light *Qq* 72 skound-  
drell,] skoundrell *Qq* more,] more *Qq* commaund] command *Q* 3,  
*F* 2 thee:] thee, *Q* 3 73 thee:] thee; *Qq* 76 selfe I] self? *Qr* ·  
selfe? *Qq* 2, 3 dishumour'd] dishumour'd *Qq* 77 time, I hope,] time  
I hope *Qq* P V N T A R V O L O] *Puntarvolo* *Qq* 78 humour] Humor *Qq*  
trauaile,] trauaile: *Qq*: travel. *F* 3 Nay,] nay *Qq* 1, 2: nay, *Q* 3 82  
god,] God *Qq* 84 Faith,] Faith *Qq* know,] know *Qq* 88 dust,]  
dust *Qq* *Exeunt* add *Qq*



G R E X.

M I T. O, then their feare of C A R L O, belike, makes them go hold their meeting.

C O R. I, here he comes: conceiue him but to be enter'd the Mitre, and 'tis enough.

*Act v. Scene IIII.*

C A R L O, D R A W E R, G E O R G E.

Holla: where be these shot-sharkes?

D R A W. By and by: you're welcome, good master B V F F O N E.

C A R L. Where's G E O R G E? cal me G E O R G E hither, quickly. 5

D R A W. What wine please you haue, sir? I'll draw you that's neat, master B V F F O N E.

C A R L. Away N E O P H I T E, do as I bid thee, bring my deare G E O R G E to me: Masse, here he comes.

G E O R. Welcome, master C A R L O. 10

C A R L. What! is supper ready, G E O R G E?

G E O R. I, sir, almost: will you haue the cloth laid, master C A R L O?

C A R L. O, what else? are none of the gallants come, yet?

G E O R. None yet, sir. 15

C A R L. Stay, take mee with you, G E O R G E: let mee haue a good fat loyne of porke laid to the fire, presently.

G E O R. It shall, sir.

C A R L. And withall, heare you? draw me the biggest

v iii. 90 O,] O Qq CARLO,] *Carlo* Qq 93 and 'tis enough. om Q3  
v. iv Act. . GEORGE] SCENA TERTIA | *Enter Carlo* Qq. SCENE IV.—  
*A Room at the Mitre.* | *Enter Carlo* G 1 Holla] *Carl* Holla Qq  
shot-sharkes] Shot-sharkes Q1. Shotmarkes Q2. Shotmakers Q3  
*Enter Drawer* add Qq (*Drawer* Q3) 2 you're] you are Q3 welcome,  
welcome Qq 4 hither,] hither Qq 6 haue,] haue Qq 7 neat,  
neat Qq master om. Q3 8 bid thee,] bid; Qq 9 Masse,] Masse  
Qq *Enter George* add Qq 10 Welcome,] Welcome Qq master]  
Maister Q3 (so 13) 11 What! is] What's Qq 12 I,] I Qq cloth]  
cloath Q1 14 else? else Qq come,] come Qq 15 yet,] yet Qq  
16 you,] you Qq 17 fire,] fire Qq 18 shall,] shall Qq



576 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

20 shaft you haue, out of the butt you wot of : away, you know my meaning, G E O R G E, quicke.

G E O R. Done, sir.

C A R L. I neuer hungred so much for thing in my life, as I doe to know our gallants successe at court. now is that leane  
25 bald-rib M A C I L E N T E, that salt villaine, plotting some mischicuous deuice, and lyes a soking in their frothy humours like a drie crust, till he has drunke 'hem all vp : could the pummise but hold vp his eyes at other mens happiness, in any reasonable proportion. S'lid, the slaue  
30 were to be lou'd next heauen, aboue honour, wealth, rich fare, apparell, wenches, all the delights of the belly, and the groine, whateuer.

G E O R. Here, master C A R L O.

C A R L. Is't right, Boy ?

35 G E O R. I, sir, I assure you 'tis right.

*He puts forth the drawers, and shuts the dore.*

C A R L. Well said, my deare G E O R G E, depart : Come, my small gymblet, you in the false scabberd, away, so. Now to you, sir *Burgomaster*, let's taste of your bountie.

G R E X.

M I T. What, will he deale vpon such quantities of wine,  
40 alone ?

C O R. You will perceiue that, sir.

C A R L. I mary, sir, here's puritie : O, G E O R G E, I could bite off his nose for this, now : Sweet rogue, he has drawne *Nectar*, the very soule of the grape ! I'll wash my

v. 1v 20 haue,] haue Qq 21 meaning,] meaning Qq 22 Done,] Done Qq Exit. add Qq 23 I] S'bloud, I Qq 24 court] the Court Qq. 25 bald-rib] Blad-rib Q3 26 soking] soaking Qr 27 humours] Humors Qq 1, 3 28 pummise] Kecks Qq vp his] vp's Qq 29 happiness,] happinesse Qq proportion:] proportion, Qq S'lid,] S'lid Qq : 'Slid, F2 30 lou'd] loued Qq 32 Enter Geor. add Q1. om Qq 2, 3. 33 Here,] Here Q1 master] maister Q3 35 I,] I Qq 36 st. dir. *He puts*] *Puts* Qq drawers,] Drawer Qq dore ] dore Q3 said,] said Q1 37 away, so | away, so : Qq 38 you,] you Qq 39 What] what Qq 2, 3 wine,] Wine Q1 : wine Qq 41 will] shall Qq that,] that Qq *He drunke.* add Qq 42 mary,] marry Q1 : mary Qq 2, 3 O,] O Qq 43 his] thy Qq this,] this Qq 44 grape!] Grape: Qq



temples with some on't presently, and drinke some halfe a 45  
score draughts ; 'twill heat the braine, kindle my imagina-  
tion, I shall talke nothing but crackers, and fire-worke, to  
night. So, sir ! please you to be here, sir, and I here : So.

*Hee sets  
the two  
cups  
asunder,  
and first  
drinkes  
with the  
one, and  
pledges  
with the  
other*

GREX.

COR. This is worth the obseruation, signior.

CARL. I. *Cup*. Now, sir ; here's to you ; and I present  
you with so much of my loue.

2. *Cup*. I take it kindly from you, sir, and will returne  
you the like proportion : but withall, sir, remembring the  
merry night wee had at the countesses, you know where, sir.

1. By heauen, you put me in minde now of a very neces- 55  
sarie office, which I will propose in your pledge, sir : the  
health of that honorable countesse, and the sweet lady that  
sate by her, sir.

2. I doe vaile to it with reuerence. And now, signior, with  
these ladies, I'll be bold to mixe the health of your diuine 60  
Mistris.

1. Doe you know her, sir ?

2. O lord, sir, I : and in the respectfull memorie and men-  
tion of her, I could wish this wine were the most precious  
druge in the world.

65

1. Good faith, sir, you doe honour me in't exceedingly.

GREX.

MIR. Whom should he personate in this, signior ?

COR. Faith, I know not, sir, obserue, obserue him.

v iv 47 crackers,] Crackers *Qq* -worke,] -worke *Qq* 48 So, sir ]  
So sir ; *Qq* here,] here *Qq* foll. st dir. in text in *Qq* 50 i. *Cup* ]  
i *cup*. *Qq* 1, 2 : i *cap*. *Q3* Now, sir ;] Now sir, *Qq* 52 you, sir, and]  
you Sir. (*Drinks*). And *Q1* : you sir. (*Drinks*). And *Qq* 2, 3 53  
withall,] withall *Qq* 54 countesses,] Countesses ; *Qq* where,] where  
*Qq* 55 heauen,] Iesu *Qq* put] doe put *Qq* 56 pledge,] pledge *Qq*  
58 her,] her *Qq* 59-65 *Qq* print as one paragraph 59 reuerence.  
And] reuerence. (*Drinks*). 2. And *Qq* now,] now *Qq* 61 Mistris]  
Mistresse *Qq* 62 her,] her *Qq* 63 lord, sir, I.] Lord sir, I, *Qq* 64  
precious] pretious *Qq* 66 faith,] faith *Qq* sir,] sir *Q3* honour]  
honor *Qq* (*Drinks*) add *Qq* 68 Faith,] Faith *Qq* not,] not *Qq*  
sir,] sir ; *F2*



578 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

2. If it were the basest filth, or mud that runnes in the  
70 channell, I am bound to pledge it, respectiue, sir. And  
now, sir, here is a replenisht bowle, which I will reciprocally  
turne vpon you, to the health of the count F R V G A L E.

1. The count F R V G A L E S health, sir? I'le pledge it on  
my knees, by this light.

75 2. Will you, sir? I'le drinke it on my knee, then, by the  
light.

G R E X.

M I T. Why, this is strange!

C O R. Ha' you heard a better drunken dialogue?

2. Nay, doe me right, sir.

80 1. So I doe, in good faith.

2. Good faith you doe not; mine was fuller.

1. Why, beleeue me, it was not.

2. Beleeue me, it was: and you doe lie.

1. Lie, sir?

85 2. I, sir.

1. S'wounds!

2. O, come, stab if you haue a mind to it.

1. Stab? dost thou thinke I dare not?

*Speakes in his owne person, and ouerturnes wine, pot, cups, and all.* C A R L. Nay, I beseech you, gentlemen, what meanes  
this? nay, looke, for shame respect your reputations.

v. 1v. 69-76 Qq print as one paragraph 69 filth,] filth Qq 70 it,  
respectiue, sir] it by God sir. (Drinks.) Qq 71 now,] now Qq is] is  
again Qq bowle,] bowle sir, Qq 71-2 reciprocally turne] reciprocally  
returne Qq 72 you,] you Qq 73 health,] health Qq 74 knees,]  
knees Qq by this light] by Iesu Qq 75 you,] you Qq knee,] knees  
Qq by the light] by the Lord (Drinks.) Qq 77 Why,] Why Qq  
strange!] strange. Qq 2, 3 78 heard] hard Qq 79-  
90 Qq print as one paragraph 79 right,] right Qq 80 doe,] doe Qq  
1, 2: do Qq 82 Why, beleeue me,] Why by Iesu Qq 83 Beleeue me,]  
By Iesu Qq was,] was, Qq 84 Lie, sir? Lie sir. Qq 85 I,] I Qq  
86 S'wounds!] S'wounds you Rascall. Qq (rascall. Q3): 'Swounds! F2  
88-9 not? CARL? not? [In his owne person.] Q1: not? [In his owne  
person] Qq 2, 3 89 foll. st. dir. not in Qq you,] you Qq 90 this?]  
this; Qq nay,] nay Qq Ouerturnes Wine, Pot, Cuppes, and all. (Ouer-  
turnes Q1: wine, pot Q3: Cups, Q2, cups, Q3) Qq in text after 90



Act v. Scene v.

MACILENTE, CARLO, GEORGE.

WHy, how now CARLO! what humour's this?

CARL. O, my good *Mischiefe!* art thou come?  
where are the rest? where are the rest?

MACI. Faith, three of our ordinance are burst.

CARL. Burst? how comes that? 5

MACI. Faith, ouer-charg'd, ouer-charg'd.

CARL. But did not the traine hold?

MACI. O, yes, and the poore lady is irreouerably  
blowne vp.

CARL. Why, but which of the munition is miscarried? 10  
ha?

MACI. *Inprimis*, sir PVNTARVOLO: next, the  
COVNTENANCE, and RESOLVTION.

CARL. How? how for the loue of wit?

MACI. Troth, the *Resolution* is prou'd recreant; the 15  
*Countenance* hath chang'd his copie: and the passionate  
knight is shedding funerall teares ouer his departed dogge.

CARL. What's his dogge dead?

MACI. Poison'd, 'tis thought: mary, how, or by whom,  
that's left for some cunning woman here o' the *Banke-side* 20  
to resolute. For my part, I know nothing, more then that  
wee are like to haue an exceeding melancholy supper of it.

CARL. S'life, and I had purpos'd to be extraordinarily  
merry, I had drunke off a good preparatiue of old sacke here:  
but will they come, will they come? 25

MACI. They will assuredly come: mary, CARLO (as

v. v. Act . . GEORGE ] Enter Macilente. Qq, without change of scene  
1 Why,] Mac. Why Qq (Mac. Q1) CARLO ] Carlo; Q1 Carlo, Qq  
2, 3 humour's] Humour's Qq 2 O,] O Qq Mischiefe ] Mischiefe,  
Qq 1, 2: Mischief, Q3 4 Faith,] Faith Qq 6 Faith,] Faith Qq 1, 2  
8 O,] O Qq 12 PVNTARVOLO] Puntarvolo Qq 14 wit] God Qq  
15 Troth,] Troth Qq prou'd] prou'd Qq 16 copie:] Coppie; Qq  
17 knight] Knight, Qq 19 Poison'd,] Poison'd Qq mary,] mary  
Qq: marry Qq 2, 3 21 resolute.] resolute: Qq then] than Qq, F2  
24 merry,] merry: Qq 1, 3. merrie: Q2 26 mary,] marry Qq:  
mary Qq 2, 3



thou lou'st me) run ouer 'hem all freely to night, and especially the knight ; spare no sulphurous iest that may come out of that sweatic forge of thine : but ply 'hem with all  
 30 manner of shot, minion, saker, culverine, or any thing what thou wilt.

CARL. I warrant thee, my deare case of petrionels, so I stand not in dread of thee, but that thou'lt second me.

34 MACI. Why, my good *Germane* tapster, I will.

CARL. What, GEORGE. *Lomtero, Lomtero, &c.*

GEOR. Did you call, master CARLO ?

CARL. More *nectar*, GEORGE : *Lomtero, &c.*

GEOR. Your meat's ready, sir, and your company were come.

40 CARL. Is the loyne of porke enough ?

GEOR. I, sir, it is enough.

MACI. Porke ? heart, what dost thou with such a greasie dish ? I thinke thou dost varnish thy face with the fat on't, it lookes so like a glew-pot.

45 CARL. True, my raw-bon'd-rogue, and if thou would'st farce thy leane ribs with it too, they would not (like ragged lathes) rub out so many doublets as they doe : but thou know'st not a good dish, thou. O, it's the only nourishing meat in the world. No maruaile though that saucie,  
 50 stubborne generation, the *Iewes*, were forbidden it : for what would they ha' done, well pamper'd with fat porke, that durst murmur at their maker out of garlicke, and onions. S'light, fed with it, the whorson strummell-patcht,

v v. 28 sulphurous] *Sulphurious* Qq 2, 3 iest] jest Qr : jeast Qq 2, 3 29 thine ] thine Qq 30 minion, saker, culverine] *Minion, Saker, Culverine* Qq 32 thee,] thee Qq case of petrionels] *Case of Petrionels* Qq 1, 2. *Case of Petrione* Q3 33 I stand] stand I Q3 34 Why,] Why Qq 35 What,] What Qq st dir *He danceth* ] *Dauunceth* add Qq 38 ready,] readie Qq 1, 2. ready Q3 sir,] sir Qr and] an F2 40 of] a Qr 41 I,] I Qq 42 heart,] S'heart Qq 1, 2 : S'heart Q3 dost] doest Qq 2, 3 43 dish ?] Dish ; Qq 1, 2 : Dish . Q3 45 raw-bon'd-rogue,] Raw-bond Rogue : Qq 47 doublets] Doublets Qq 1, 2 : Doublets Q3 49 world ] world : Qq saucie,] saucie Qq 50 generation,] Generation Qq 52 garlicke,] Garlicke Qq : garlicke F2 53 S'light,] S'blood Qq strummell-patcht] strummell patcht Qq 1, 2 : strummell patch Q3 : strummell, patcht Ff : strummell-patched G



goggle-ey'd Grumbledories, would ha' *Gigantomachiz'd*.  
Well said, my sweet G E O R G E, fill, fill. 55

G R E X.

M I T. This sauours too much of prophanation.

C O R. O, *seruetur ad imum, qualis ab incepto processerit*, &  
*sibi constet*. The necessitie of his vaine compels a toleration :  
for, barre this, and dash him out of humour, before his time.

C A R L. 'Tis an *Axiome* in naturall philosophie, *What 60*  
*comes neerest the nature of that it feeds, conuerts quicker to*  
*nourishment, and doth sooner essentiate*. Now nothing in  
flesh, and entrailles, assimilates or resembles man more,  
then a hog, or swine——

M A C I. True ; and hee (to requite their courtesie) often- 65  
times d'offeth his owne nature, and puts on theirs ; as when  
hee becomes as churlish as a hog, or as drunke as a sow :  
but to your conclusion.

C A R L. Mary, I say, nothing resembling man more then  
a swine, it followes, nothing can be more nourishing : for 70  
indeed (but that it abhorres from our nice nature) if we fed  
one vpon another, we should shoot vp a great deale faster,  
and thriue much better : I referre mee to your vsurous  
*Cannibals*, or such like : but since it is so contrary, porke,  
porke, is yqur only feed. 75

M A C I. I take it, your deuill be of the same diet ; he  
would ne're ha' desir'd to beene incorporated into swine else.  
O, herc comes the melancholy messe : vpon 'hem C A R L O,  
charge, charge.

v. v 54 Grumbledories] Grumbledories Q1 55 said,] said Qq 57  
O.] O Qq. O, Ff *seruetur*] *seruetur* Qq *incepto*] *incepto* F2 59 for,]  
for F2 humour,] Humor Qq 62 doth] dooth Q2 63 flesh,] Flesh  
Qq assimilates] assimilates F2 64, 69 then] than Qq, F2 64  
hog,] Hog Qq swine——] Swine. (*Drinkes*) Qq 66 d'offeth]  
d'offeth off Qq 67 drunke as] a drunke ar Q3 68 (*Drinkes*.) add  
Qq 1, 2. (*Drinkes*) add Q3 69 Mary,] Marry Q1 : Mary Qq 2, 3  
73 vsurous] Long-lane Qq 74 it is] 'tis Qq 76 it,] it Qq deuill]  
Deuill Qq 77 to beene] to have been W 78 O,] O Qq melancholy]  
Malancholly Q3 After 79 Enter *Puntarvolo, Fastidius, Soghardo, Fun-*  
*goso.* Qq



80 CARL. 'Fore god, sir PVNTARVOLO, I am sorry  
for your heauiness: body a me, a shrewd mischance!  
why, had you no vnicornes horne, nor bezoars stone about  
you? ha?

*Act V. Scene VI.*

PVNTARVOLO, CARLO, MACILENTE,  
FAST. BRISKE, SOGLIARDO,  
FVNGOSO.

Sir, I would request you, be silent.

MACI. Nay, to him againe.

CARL. Take comfort, good knight, if your cat ha'  
recouered her catarrhe, feare nothing; your dogges mis-  
5 chance may be holpen.

FAST. Say how (sweet CARLO) for so god mend mee,  
the poore knights mones draw mee into fellowship of his mis-  
fortunes. But be not discourag'd, good sir PVNTARVOLO,  
I am content your aduenture shall be perform'd vpon your  
10 cat.

MACI. I belecue you, muske-cod, I belecue you, for  
rather then thou would'st make present repayment, thou  
would'st take it vpon his owne bare returne from *Calice*.

CARL. Nay, 'ds life, hee'd bee content (so hee were well  
15 rid out of his company) to pay him fiae for one, at his next  
meeting him in *Paules*. But for your dogge, sir PVNTAR,  
if hee bee not out-right dead, there is a friend of mine, a  
*quack-saluer*, shall put life in him againe, that's certaine.

FVNG. O, no, that comes too late.

v/v 80 god,] God Qq PVNTARVOLO] *Puntarvolo* Qq 81 heau-  
nesse] heauinesse; Qq 1, 2: heauines Q3 81-2 mischance! why,]  
mischance: why Qq 82 horne] hornes Q3 bezoars] *Bezars* Qq  
v vi. Act . . . FVNGOSO. *not in Qq, which continue the scene* 1 Sir]  
*Punt* Sir Qq you,] you Qq 3 comfort,] comfort Qq 4 catarrhe]  
*Cataract* Qq mischance] mischaunce Q1 5 may] my F2 6  
god] God Qq, F2 8 discourag'd,] discouraged Qq PVNTARVOLO]  
*Puntarvolo* Qq 11 you, muske-cod,] you Muske-cod, Qq 12 then]  
than Qq, F2 13 vpon] vp on Q3 14 Nay, 'ds] Nay Gods Qq  
15 one,] one Qq 16 PVNTAR,] PVNTAR. F2 17 mine,] mine Qq  
18 *quack-saluer*] *Quack-sauer* Q3 19 O,] O Qq



MACI. Gods precious, knight, will you suffer this? 20

PVNT. Drawer, get me a candle, and hard waxe, presently.

SOGL. I, and bring vp supper; for I am so melancholy.

CARL. O, signior, where's your *Resolution*?

SOGL. *Resolution*! hang him rascall: O, CARLO, if 25  
you loue me, doe not mention him.

CARL. Why, how so? how so?

SOGL. O, the arrant'st crocodile that euer Christian was  
acquainted with. By my gentrie, I shall thinke the worse of  
tabacco while I liue, for his sake: I did thinke him to be as 30  
tall a man——

MACI. Nay, BVFFONE, the knight, the knight.

CARL. S'lud, hee lookes like an image carued out of boxe,  
full of knots: his face is (for all the world) like a *dutch* purse,  
with the mouth downeward; his beard the tassels: and hee 35  
walkes (let mee see) as melancholy as one o' the Masters  
side in the *Counter*. Doe you heare, sir PVNTAR?

PVNT. Sir, I doe entreat you no more, but enioyne you  
to silence, as you affect your peace.

CARL. Nay, but deare knight, vnderstand (here are 40  
none but friends, and such as wish you well) I would ha'  
you doe this now; Flea me your dogge presently (but in any  
case keepe the head) and stuffe his skin well with straw, as  
you see these dead monsters at *Bartholmew* faire——

PVNT. I shall be suddaine, I tell you. 45

CARL. Or if you like not that, sir, get me somewhat a  
lesse dog, and clap into the skin; here's a slaue about the  
towne here, a *Iew*, one YOHAN; or a fellow that makes

v vi 20 precious,] pretious Qq 1, 2. precious Q3 21 Drawer,]  
Drawer; Qq candle,] Candle Qq waxe,] waxe Qq 24 O,] Ah  
Qq 25 O,] O Qq 26 me,] me Q1 28 O,] O Qq 29 my  
gentrie] Iesu Qq 30 liue,] liue Qq 32 Nay,] Nay Qq 33  
S'lud] Sblood Qq 34 *dutch*] Dutch Qq purse,] purse Qq 35  
downeward,] downward F2 beard] beard's Qq 37 heare,]  
heare Qq 38 more,] more, Q3 enioyne] enioyne Qq 1, 2 40  
Nay,] Nay Qq knight,] Knight Qq 42 Flea] Fleay Q3 44 you]  
ye Q3 *Bartholmew*] *Bartholomew* F3 faire——] faire. Qq, F2  
45 suddaine,] suddaine Qq 1, 2: sodaaine Q3 46 that,] that get]  
giue Qq 2, 3 47 dog,] dog Qq



perrukes, will glew it on artificially, it shall ne're be discern'd, besides, 'twill be so much the warmer for the hound to trauaile in, you know.

M A C I. Sir P V N T A R V O L O, 'death, can you be so patient?

C A R L. Or thus, sir: you may haue (as you come through *Germany*) a familiar, for little or nothing, shall turne it selfe into the shape of your dogge, or any thing (what you will) for certaine houres——'ods my life, knight, what doe you meane? youle offer no violence, will you? hold, hold.

*The knight beates him.*

P V N T. 'Sdeath, you slaue, you bandog, you.

60 C A R L. As you loue wit, stay the enraged knight, gentlemen.

P V N T. By my knighthood, he that stirres in his rescue, dies. Drawer, be gone.

C A R L. Murder, murder, murder.

65 P V N T. I, are you howling, you wolfe? Gentlemen, as you tender your liues, suffer no man to enter, till my reuenge be perfect. Sirha, B V F F O N E, lie downe; make no exclamations, but downe: downe, you curre, or I will make thy bloud flow on my rapier hilts

70 C A R L. Sweet knight, hold in thy furie, and 'fore heauen, I'lle honour thee more, then the *Turke* do's M A H O M E T.

P V N T. Downe (I say.) Who's there?

*Within.* C O N S. Here's the Constable, open the dores.

C A R L. Good M A C I L E N T E——

75 P V N T. Open no dore, if the A D A L A N T A D O of *Spaine* were here, he should not enter. One helpe me

v. vi. 49-perrukes,] Periwigs *Qq* 1, 2: periwigs *Q3* discern'd,] discern'd; *Qq* 1, 2, discern'd: *Q3* 51 trauaile] travell *Q1*, *F3*: trauell *Qq* 2, 3 in,] in *Qq* 52 P V N T A R V O L O, 'death,] *Puntarvolo*, 'Sdeath *Qq* 54 thus,] thus *Qq* 55 familiar,] familiar *Qq*. familiar *F2* little] a little *Q3* nothing,] nothing *Qq* 1, 2 57 houres——*corr.* *F1*: howers *Qq*: houres: *F1* originally: houres:—*F2* st. dir. not in *Qq* 'ods] Gods *Qq* life,] life *Qq* 59 'Sdeath,] Sbloud *Qq* bandog,] Bandoq *Qq* 60 wit] God *Qq* 63 Drawer,] Drawer *Qq* 65 howling,] howling *Qq* 67 Sirha,] Sirha *Qq* 68 downe: downe,] downe; downe *Qq* 69 hilts,] hilts: *Qq* 70 knight,] knight *Qq* heauen,] God *Qq* 71 more,] more *Qq* then] than *Qq*, *F2* 72 Who's] Whose *Qq* 74 M A C I L E N T E——] *Macilente*. *Qq* 76 enter. One *corr.* *F1*: enter: On, *Qq*, *F1* originally: enter: One *F2*



with the light, gentlemen: you knocke in vaine, sir officer.

CARL. *Et tu Brute!*

PVNT. Sirha, close your lips, or I will drop it in thine 80 eyes, by heauen.

CARL. O, O.

CONS. Open the dore, or I will breake it open.

MACI. Nay, good Constable, haue patience a little, you shall come in presently, we haue almost done.

PVNT. So; now, are you out of your humour, sir? Shift, gentlemen.

*He seales  
vp his  
lips*

85

*They all  
draw, and  
disperse.*

# Act v. Scene vii.

CONSTABLE, OFFICERS,

*To them.*

DRAWERS.

Lay hold vpon this gallant, and pursue the rest.

FAST. Lay hold on me, sir! for what?

CONS. Mary, for your riot here, sir, with the rest of your companions.

FAST. My riot! master Constable, take heed what you 5 doe. CARLO, did I offer any violence?

CONS. O, sir, you see he is not in case to answere you, and that makes you so paramptorie.

FAST. Peremptorie, s'life I appeale to the drawers, if I did him any hard measure.

GEOR. They are all gone, there's none of them will bee laid any hold on.

v. vi. 77 vaine,] vaine Qq 79 Brute 7 Brute Qq 80 Sirha,] Sirha Qq 81 eyes, corr FI eyes Qq, FI originally, F2 82 st dir. *He seales*] *They seale* Qq 84 Nay,] Nay Qq Constable,] Constable Qq 86 humour, sir?] humor sir Q1: humour sir. Qq 2, 3 87 Shift,] Shift Qq st dir *disperse*] *Exeunt.* Qq v. vii. Act. DRAWERS] *Enter Constable with Officers, and stay* Briske Qq, without change of Scene To them] so F2. in F1 at l. 1. not in Qq 1 Lay] Const. Lay Qq 1, 2: Const. Lady Q3 2 me, sir!] me sir! Qq 1, 2: me! Q3 3 Mary,] Mary Qq here,] here Qq 5 master Constable] God's my judge Qq (iudge Q3) 6 doe] doe; Qq CARLO,] Carlo, Q1: Carlo Q2: Carlo. Q3 (as the heading of a speech, the word beginning a new line) 7 O,] O Qq 8 paramptorie Qq 1, 2, FI: peramptorie Q3. peremptorie F2 10 Enter George add Qq 11 there's none] there'snone Q3 12 on.] on, Q3



586 *Every Man out of his Humour*

C O N S. Well, sir, you are like to answer till the rest can be found out.

15 F A S T. Slid, I appeale to G E O R G E, here.

C O N S. Tut, G E O R G E was not here: away with him to the *Counter*, sirs. Come, sir, you were best get your selfe drest somewhere.

G E O R. Good lord, that master C A R L O could not take  
20 heed, and knowing what a gentleman the knight is, if hee bee angrie.

D R A W. A poxe on 'hem, they haue left all the meate on our hands, would they were choakt with it for me.

*Macilente comes backe.* M A C I. What, are they gone, sirs?

G E O R. O, here's master M A C I L E N T E.

26 M A C I. Sirha, G E O R G E, doe you see that concealement there? that napkin vnder the table?

G E O R. Gods so', signior F V N G O S O!

M A C I. Hee's good pawne for the reckoning; bee sure  
30 you keepe him here, and let him not goe away till I come againe, though hee offer to discharge all: He returne presently.

G E O R. Sirrah, we haue a pawne for the reckoning.

D R A W. What? of M A C I L E N T E?

35 G E O R. No, looke vnder the table.

*Looks out vnder the table.* F V N G. I hope, all be quiet now: if I can get but forth of this street, I care not, masters, I pray you tell me, is the Constable gone?

G E O R. What? master F V N G O S O?

40 F V N G. Was't not a good deuice this same of me, sirs?

v. vii 13 Well,] Well Qq 15 Slid,] Sbloud Qq appeale Qq, F2  
appeare F1 GEORGE,] George Qq 16 Tut,] Tut Qq 17 Counter,]  
Counter Qq 1, 2: counter Q3 Come,] Come Qq sir,] sir Qr After  
18 Exeunt Manent two Drawers. Qq 19 lord,] Lord Qr: Lord, Qq  
2, 3 master] maister Qr 20 is,] is Qq 1, 2 24 st. dir Macilente  
comes backe] Enter Macilente. Qq in text after 23 24 What,] What Qr  
gone,] gone Qq sirs?] sirs. Qr 25 O,] O Qq master] maister Qr  
26 Sirha,] Sirha Qr: Sirrah Qq 2, 3 GEORGE,] George Q1 29  
Hee's F2: Hee's a Qq 1, 2: Here's a Q3: Hei's F1 31 all:] all,  
Qq 33 Sirrah,] Sirrah Qq 2, 3 35 No,] No; Qq 36 hope,]  
hope Qq now:] now; Qq 37 not, masters] not. Masters Qq: not;  
masters, F2 38 st. dir. Qq add to 38; in F1 at 39 40 Lookes] He  
looks F3 40 this] the Qq me,] me Qq sirs?] sirs. F2



G E O R. Yes faith ; ha' you beene here all this while ?

F V N G. O god, I. good sir, looke, and the coast be cleere, I'd faine be going.

G E O R. Al's cleere, sir, but the reckoning ; and that you must cleare, and pay before you goe, I assure you. 45

F V N G. I pay ? Slight, I eate not a bit since I came into the house, yet.

D R A W. Why, you may when you please, sir, 'tis all readie below, that was bespoken.

F V N G. Bespoken ? not by me, I hope ? 50

G E O R. By you, sir ? I know not that : but 'twas for you, and your companie, I am sure.

F V N G. My companie ? S'lid, I was an invited guest, so I was.

D R A W. Faith, we haue no thing to doe with that, sir, 55 they're all gone but you, and we must be answer'd ; that's the short and the long on't.

F V N G. Nay, if you will grow to extremities, my masters, then would this pot, cup, and all were in my belly, if I haue a crosse about me. 60

G E O R. What, and haue such apparell ? doe not say so, signior, that mightily discredits your clothes.

F V N G. As I am an honest man, my taylor had all my monie this morning, and yet I must be faine to alter my sute too : good sirs, let me goe, 'tis friday night, and in good 65 truth I haue no stomacke in the world, to eate anie thing.

D R A W. That's no matter, so you pay, sir.

F V N G. Pay ? gods light, with what conscience can you aske me to pay that I neuer dranke for ?

G E O R. Yes, sir, I did see you drinke once. 70

v. vii. 42 god,] God Qq sir,] sirs Qq looke,] looke Qq, F2 and]  
an' F2 44 cleere,] cleere Qr. cleare Qq 2, 3 45 cleare,] please Qq  
47 house,] house Qq 48 Why,] Why Qq r, 2 please,] please Qq  
sir, om F3 49 below,] below Qq 51 By you,] By you Qq for  
you,] for you Qq 53 S'lid,] S'lid Qq 55 Faith,] Faith Qq, F2  
no thing] nothing Qq that,] that Qq 57 the long] they long Q3  
59 then] than F2 63 As I am an honest man, my] By Iesu the Qq  
65 night,] night ; Qq 66 world,] world Qq 67 matter,] matter Qq  
pay,] pay Qq 68 Pay ? om. F3 gods] Gods Qq 70 Yes,]  
Yes Qq



F V N G. By this cup, (which is siluer) but you did not, you doe mee infinite wrong, I look't in the pot once, indeed, but I did not drinke.

D R A W. Well sir, if you can satisfie our master, it shall 75 bee all one to vs. (by and by.)

## G R E X.

C O R D. Lose not your selfe now signior.

*Act v. Scene VIII.*

M A C I L E N T E, D E L I R O, F A L L A C E.

T Vt, sir, you did beare too hard a conceit of me in that, but I will now make my loue to you most transparent, in spite of any dust of suspicion, that may bee rayseed to cloud it : and henceforth, since I see it is so against your humour, 5 I will neuer labour to perswade you.

D E L I. Why, I thanke you, signior, but what's that you tell mee may concerne my peace so much ?

M A C I. Faith, sir, 'tis thus. Your wiues brother, signior F V N G O S O, being at supper to night at a tauerne, with 10 a sort of gallants, there happened some diuision amongst 'hem, and he is left in pawne for the reckoning: now, if euer you looke that time shall present you with a happie occasion to doe your wife some gracious and acceptable seruice, take hold of this opportunitic, and presently goe, and redeeme 15 him ; for, being her brother, and his credit so amply engag'd as now it is, when she shal heare (as hee cannot him selfe,

v. vii. 72 once,] once Qq 74 oul] my Qq master] Maister Qq 1, 3 75 [By and by] By and by One calls George within | Excunt. Qq (calls Q1) 76 Lose] Loose Qq your] you F3 v. viii. Act . . FALLACE.] Enter Macilente and Deliro. Qq, without change of scene SCENE V.—A Room in Deliro's House | Enter Macilente and Deliro. G 1 Tut.] Maci. Tut Qq 3 cloud] dimme Qq 4 henceforth,] henceforth Qq since] since. Q3 humour] Humour Qq 6 Why,) Why Qq you,] you Qq 8 Faith,] Faith Qq sir,] sir Q1 brother,] brother Qq : brothet, F2 signior] seignior F2 9-10 tauerne, . . gallants,] Tauerne . . Gallants : Qq 11 now,] now Qq 12 a] an F3 14 goe,] go Qq 15 for,] for Qq engag'd] engaged Qq



but hee must out of extremitie report it) that you came, and offered your selfe so kindly, and with that respect of his reputation, why, the benefit cannot but make her dote, and grow madde of your affections. 20

DELI. Now, by heauen, MACILENTE, I acknowledge my selfe exceedingly indebted to you, by this kinde tender of your loue; and I am sorrie to remember that I was euer so rude, to neglect a friend of your importance: bring mee shooes, and a cloke there, I was going to bed, if 25  
you had not come, what tauerne is it?

MACI. The Mitre, sir.

DELI. O, why FIDO, my shooes. Good faith it cannot but please her exceedingly.

FALL. Come, I mar'le what peece of nightwork you 30  
haue in hand now, that you call for your cloke, and your shooes! what, is this your Pandar?

DELI. O, sweet wife, speake lower, I would not he should heare thee for a world——

FALL. Hang him rascall, I cannot abide him for his 35  
trecherie, with his wilde quick-set beard there. Whither goe you now with him?

DELI. No whither with him, deare wife, I goe alone to a place, from whence I will returne instantly. Good MACILENTE, acquaint not her with it by any meanes, it may 40  
come so much the more accepted, frame some other answer. I'll come backe immediately.

FALL. Nay, and I be not worthie to know whither you goe, stay, till I take knowledge of your comming backe.

MACI. Heare you, mistresse DELIRO. 45

v viii. 17 out of] of *Qq* 2, 3 came,] came *Qq* 19 why,] Slud *Qq*  
21 Now, . . heauen,] Now . . heauen *Qq* 24 rude,] rude *Qq* im-  
portance .] worth, *Qq* 25 shooes,] shoes *Qq* bed,] bed *Qq* 26  
come,] come; *F2* 27 Mitre,] Miter *Qr*: Mitre *Qq* 2, 3 28 O,] O,  
*Qq* 29 Enter Fallace add *Qq* 30 mar'le] mar'le *Qq* 2, 3 31 your  
cloke,] your cloke *Qr*: your cloake *Qq* 2, 3: a Cloke *F3* 32 shooes!]  
shoes . *Qq* Pandar] Pandor *Qq* 33 O,] O *Qq* wife,] wife *Qq*  
36 Whither] Whether *Qr* 38 whither] whether *Qr* him,] him  
*Qq* 39 MACILENTE,] *Macilente* *Qq* 40 not] nor *F2* 41 answer,]  
answere, *Qq* 42 Exit Deliro add *Qq* 43 and retained here in  
*F2*, *F3* whither] whether *Qr* 44 stay,] stay *Qq* 45 you,]  
you *Qq*



FALL So sir, and what say you?

MACI. Faith ladie, my intents will not deserue this slight respect, when you shall know 'hem.

FALL. Your intents? why, what may your intents bee,  
50 for gods sake?

MACI. Troth, the time allowes no circumstance, ladie, therefore know, this was but a deuice to remoue your husband hence, and bestow him securely, whilest (with more conueniencie) I might report to you a misfortune that hath  
55 happened to Monsieur BRISKE——nay comfort, sweet ladie. This night (being at supper) a sort of young gallants committed a riot, for the which he (onely) is apprehended and carried to the *Counter*, where if your husband, and other creditours should but haue knowledge of him, the poore  
60 gentleman were vndone for euer.

FALL. Aye me! that he were.

MACI. Now therefore, if you can thinke vpon any present meanes for his deliuerie, doe not forslow it. A bribe to the officer that committed him, will doe it.

65 FALL. O god, sir, he shall not want for a bribe: pray you, will you commend me to him, and say I'll visit him presently?

MACI. No, ladie, I shall doe you better seruice, in protracting your husbands returne, that you may goe with  
70 more safetie.

FALL. Good truth, so you may: farewell, good sir. Lord, how a woman may be mistaken in a man? I would haue sworne vpon all the testaments, in the world, he had not lou'd master BRISKE. Bring me my keyes

v. viii. 49 intents bee,] intents be Q1: intent be Qq 2, 3 50 gods]  
Gods Qq, F2 51 Troth,] Troth Qq circumstance,] circumstance  
Qq 52 remoue] remooue Q2 53 whilest] whil'st Qq 2, 3 55  
Monsieur] Mounsieur Q1 BRISKE ——] *Briske*; Qq comfort,]  
comfort Qq 56 supper) Qq, F2: supper F1 58 husband,] Hus-  
band Qq 1, 2: husband Q3 59 creditours] Creditors Qq 61 me!]  
me, Qq 63 forslow] foreslow Q3, F2 65 god,] God Qq bribe: ]  
bribe, Q3, F2 67 presently?] presently Qq, F2 68 No,] No Qq  
seruice,] seruice Qq 70 safetie,] safetie Qq 1, 2 After 70 *Exit*.  
Qq 71 truth,] truth Qq may: farewell,] may; farewell Qq 72  
Lord,] Lord Qq 73 testaments] Testaments Qq world,] world Qq  
74 master] maister Q1



there, maide. Alasse, good gentleman, if all I haue i' this 75  
earthly world will pleasure him, it shall be at his seruice.

G R E X.

M I T. How M A C I L E N T E sweates i' this busines, if  
you marke him.

C O R. I, you shall see the true picture of spight anon :  
here comes the pawne, and his redeemer. 80

*Act v. Scene IX.*

D E L I R O, F V N G O S O, D R A W E R S,  
M A C I L E N T E.

<To them>

C O M E, brother, be not discourag'd for this, man, what ?

F V N G. No truly, I am not discourag'd, but I protest  
to you, brother, I haue done imitating any more gallants  
either in purse or apparell, but as shall become a gentleman,  
for good carriage, or so. 5

D E L I. You say well. This is all, i' the bill here ? is't  
not ?

G E O R. I, sir.

D E L I. There's your monie, tell it : and brother, I am  
glad I met with so good occasion to shew my loue to you. 10

F V N G. I will studie to deserue it in good truth, and I  
liue.

D E L I. What, is't right ?

G E O R. I, sir, and I thanke you.

F V N G. Let me haue a capons legge sau'd, now the 15  
reckoning is paid.

v. viii. 75 there, maide. Alasse,] there maid : Alasse Qq (mayd Q3)  
76 Exit add Qq 78 him.] him ? Qq 1, 2 : him Q3 79 anon :]  
anone, Qr : anon, Qq 2, 3 80 pawne,] Pawne Qq v. ix. Act . . . M A C I -  
LENTE] Enter Deliro, Fungoso, Drawer following them Qq, without  
change of scene : SCENE VI.—A Room at the Mitre | Enter Deliro,  
Fungoso, and George G DELIRO . . . MACILENTE one line in F2 .  
the arrangement in F1 suggests the marginal note 'To them' as in iv. viii,  
v. ii 1 Come,] Deli. Come Qq this,] this Qq man,] man, F2  
2 FVNG.] Drawer. Qq 1, 2 : Draw. Q3 3 you, brother,] you Brother  
Qq 1, 2 4 gentleman,] Gentleman Qq 5 carriage,] carriage Qq  
6 all,] all Qq 8 I,] I Qq 11 and] an' F2 13 What,] What  
Qq 14 I,] I Qq



GEOR. You shall, sir.

MACI. Where's signior DELIRO?

DELI. Here, MACILENTE.

20 MACI. Harke you, sir, ha' you dispatcht this same?

DELI. I marie haue I.

MACI. Well then, I can tell you newes, BRISKE is i' the *Counter*.

DELI. I' the *Counter*?

25 MACI. 'Tis true, sir, committed for the stirre here to night. Now would I haue you send your brother home afore, with the report of this your kindnesse done him, to his sister, which will so pleasingly possesse her, and out of his mouth too, that i' the meane time you may clap your action on

30 BRISKE, and your wife (being in so happie a moode) cannot entertaine it ill, by any meanes.

DELI. 'Tis verie true, she cannot indeed, I thinke.

MACI. Thinke? why 'tis past thought, you shall neuer meet the like opportunitie, I assure you.

35 DELI. I will doe it. Brother, pray you goe home afore, this gentleman, and I haue some priuate businesse; and tell my sweet wife, I'll come presently.

FVNG. I will, brother.

MACI. And, signior, acquaint your sister, how liberally  
40 and out of his bountie, your brother has vs'd you. (Doe you see?) made you a man of good reckoning; redeem'd that you neuer were possesst of, credit; gaue you as 'gentleman-like termes as might be; found no fault with your comming behind the fashion; nor nothing.

45 FVNG. Nay, I am out of those humours now.

MACI. Well, if you be out, keepe your distance, and be not made a shot-clog any more. Come, signior, let's make haste.

v. ix. 17 shall,] shall Qq sir] Sir: Qr Exit. Enter Macilente.  
add Qq (Maci. Qq 2, 3) 19 Here,] Here Qq 20 you,] you Qq  
25 true,] true Qq 27 him,] him Qq 31 ill,] ill Qq 33 why  
'tis] why 'ts Qq 35 Brother,] Brother Qq afore, thus] (afore thus  
F2, an error for 'afore (this' 36 gentleman,] Gent. Qq businesse;]  
businesse) F2 38 will,] will Qq 39 And,] And Qq liberally]  
liberally, F2 42 gentleman-like] Gentlemanlike Qq 45 Nay,]  
Nay Qq humours] humours Qq 47 any] no Qq Come, signior,]  
Come Sig. Qq Exeunt. add Qq



*Act v. Scene x.*

FALLACE, FAST. BRISKE.

O Master FASTIDIVS, what pittie is't to see so sweet  
a man as you are, in so sowre a place?

*G R E X.*

COR. As vpon her lips, do's shee meane?

MIR. O, this is to be imagin'd the *Counter*, belike?

FAST. Troth, faire lady, 'tis first the pleasure of the  
*Fates*, and next of the Constable, to haue it so: but, I am  
patient, and indeed comforted the more in your kind  
visitation.

FALL. Nay, you shall bee comforted in mee, more then  
this, if you please, sir. I sent you word by my brother, sir, 10  
that my husband laid to rest you this morning, I know not  
whether you recciud it, or no.

FAST. No, beleue it, sweet creature, your brother gaue  
me no such intelligence.

FALL. O, the lord! 15

FAST. But has your husband any such purpose?

FALL. O sweet master BRISKE, yes: and therefore  
be presently discharg'd, for if he come with his actions vpon  
you (lord deliuer you) you are in for one halfe a score yeere;  
he kept a poore man in *Ludgate* once, twelue yeere, for six- 20  
teene shillings. Where's your keeper? for loues sake call

v. x. Act . . . BRISKE] *Enter Briske and Fallace.* Qq, without change  
of scene. SCENE VII.—*The Counter.* [Enter Fallace and Fastidious  
Briske G 1 O Master] *Fallace.* O maister Qq 2 are,] are Qq 2, 3  
sowre F1, corr. F2: soure Qq: sower F2 originally. and kisses him.  
(kisse Q3) Qq (after 2 in Q1, added in Qq 2, 3) 3 lips,] lips Qq 4  
*Counter,*] *Counter* Qq 5 Troth,] Troth Qq 6 Constable,] Con-  
stable Qq so:] so, Qq but,] but F2 8 visitation] visit F2 9  
mee,] me Qq then] than Qq, F2 10 please,] please Qq brother,]  
Brother Qq 1, 2: brother Q3 12 no.] no? Qq 13 No.] No Qq  
15 O,] O Qq lord] Lord Qq 17 sweet master] God Maister Qq  
18 discharg'd,] discharg'd; Qq 19 lord] Lord Qq 20 yeere:] year  
Qq 21 keeper?] keeper, Qq loues sake] Gods loue Qq



him, let him take a bribe, and dispatch you. Lord, how my heart trembles ! here are no spies ? are there ?

F A S T. No, sweet mistris, why are you in this passion ?

25 F A L L. O lord, Master F A S T I D I V S, if you knew how I tooke vp my husband to day, when hee said hee would arrest you ; and how I rail'd at him that perswaded him to't, the scholer there, (who on my conscience loues you now) and what care I tooke to send you intelligence by my  
30 brother ; and how I gaue him foure soueraignes for his paines ; and now, how I came running out hither without man or boy with me, so soone as I heard on't ; youl'd say, I were in a passion indeed . your keeper, for gods sake. O, Master B R I S K E (as 'tis in E V P H I V E S) *Hard is the choise,*  
35 *when one is compelled either by silence to die with grieffe, or by speaking to lue with shame.*

F A S T. Faire lady, I conceue you, and may this kisse assure you, that whereaduersitie hath (as it were) contracted, prosperitie shall not———gods me ! your husband.

40 F A L L. O, me !

*Act v. Scene XI.*

DELIRO, MACILENTE, FALLACE,

F A S T. B R I S K E.

I ? is't thus !

M A C I. Why, how now, signior DELIRO ? has the wolfe seene you ? ha ? hath G O R G O N S head made marblē of you ?

5 D E L I. Some *Planet* strike me dead.

M A C I. Why, looke you, sir, I told you, you might haue

v. ix 22 you. Lord,] you, Lord Qq 24 No,] No Qq mistris]  
mistresse Qq passion ?] passion Qq 2, 3 25 lord, Master] Christ  
Maister Qq 31 hither corr F1, F2 : hether Qq, F1 33 keeper,]  
keeper Qq gods] Gods Qq O,] O Qq 34 Master] Maister Qr  
35 one] on Q3 either by Qq, corr. F1, F2 : by F1 originally 37  
lady,] Ladie Qq 39 gods me !] Gods hght Qq 40 O,] O Qq, F2  
v. xi Act . . . B R I S K E.] Enter Deliro, Macilente. (Deliro. Qq 2, 3) Qq,  
without change of scene 1 1 ?] Deli. 1 ? Qq 2 Why,] Why Qq  
now,] now Qq 4 ol] on Qq 6 Why,] Why Qq you, sir] you sir Qq



suspected this long afore, had you pleas'd; and ha' sau'd this labour of admiration now, and passion, and such extremities as this fraile lumpe of flesh is subiect vnto. Nay, why doe you not dote now, signior? Mee thinkes you should say it were some enchantment, *deceptio visus*, or so, ha? if you could perswade your selfe it were a dreame now, 'twere excellent: faith, trie what you can do, signior; it may be your imagination will be brought to it in time, there's nothing impossible. 15

FALL. Sweet husband:

DELI. Out lasciuious strumpet.

MACI. What? did you see, how ill that stale vaine became him afore, of sweet wife, and deare heart? and are you falne iust into the same now? with sweet husband. Away, follow him, goe, keepe state, what? Remember you are a woman, turne impudent: gi' him not the head, though you gi' him the hornes. Away. And yet mee thinkes you should take your leaue of *Enfans-perdus* here, your forlorne hope. How now, Monsieur BRISKE? what? friday night? and in affliction too? and yet your *Pulpamenta*? your delicate morcels? I perceiue the affection of ladies, and gentlewomen, pursues you wheresoeuer you goe, Monsieur. 25

FAS T. Now, in good faith (and as I am gentle) there could not haue come a thing, i' this world, to haue distracted me more, then the wrinkled fortunes of this poore spinster. 30

v. xi. 8 labour] labor Qq 1, 2 passion,] Passion; Q3 10 now,] now Qq 11 enchantment] Enchauntment Q3 12 if you] if you, F2 (probably, this comma was intended for 'faith' in l. 13, and was inserted in the proof-reading: 'you' and 'faith' end two successive lines in Ff) 13 faith, Fr: faith Qq, F2 do,] doe Qq 16 husband: Fr (marking an interrupted speech): Husband? Qq: husband. \* 2 17 Exit Deluo add Qq 18 see,] see Qq 20 iust] just Qq 1, 2 21 state,] state; F2 22 woman,] woman: Qq 23 hornes] horns, Q1: hornes, Qq 2, 3 Exit Fallace Qq, after 'Away', beginning a new line at 'And yet' 24 *Enfans-*] *Infans-* Qq 25 now, Monsieur BRISKE?] now Mounsieur Brisk: Qq 26 night] at night Qq affliction] affection Q3 *Pulpamenta*] *Pulpamemta* F2 27 morcels?] Morsels: Qq 1, 2: morsels: Q3 perceiue] perceiue, F2 Ladies,] Ladies Qq 28-9 goe, Monsieur] goe Mounsieur Qq (go Q3) 30 Now,] Now Qq gentle] gentle F3 31 thing, . . world,] thing . . world Qq 32 more,] more Qq then] than Qq, F2 spinster] Dame Qq



596 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

M A C I. O, yes, sir : I can tell you a thing will distract  
you much better, belecue it. Signior D E L I R O has entred  
35 three actions against you, three actions, Monsieur ; mary,  
one of them (I'll put you in comfort) is but three thousand,  
and the other two, some fūe thousand a peece, trifles, trilles.

F A S T. O, I am vndone.

M A C I. Nay, not altogether so, sir, the knight must haue  
10 his hundred pound repai'd, that'll helpe too, and then sixe-  
score pound for a diamond, you know where. These be  
things will weigh, Monsieur, they will weigh.

F A S T. O, heauen !

M A C I. What, doe you sigh ? this it is to kisse the hand  
45 of a countesse, to haue her coach sent for you, to hang  
poinards in ladies garters, to weare bracelets of their haire,  
and for euery one of these great fauours to giue some slight  
iewell of fūe hundred crownes, or so, why 'tis nothing.  
Now, Monsieur, you see the plague that treads o' the heeles  
50 of your fopperie . well, goe your waies in, remoue your selfe  
to the two-penny ward quickly, to saue charges, and there  
set vp your rest to spend sir P V N T A R S hundred pound for  
him. Away, good pomander, goe.

Why, here's a change ! Now is my soule at peace.

55 I am as emptie of all enuie now,

As they of merit to be enuied at.

My humour (like a flame) no longer lasts

Then it hath stuffe to feed it, and their folly,

v. xi 33 O, yes,] O yes Qq 35 actions, Monsieur ;] Actions Moun-  
sieur : Qq mary,] mary Qx : marry Qq 2, 3 36 thousand] thou-  
sand mark Qq 37 two,] two Qq a peece] pound together Qq  
38 O] O God Qq 39 Nay,] Nay Qq so,] so Qq sir,] sir ; F2  
40-1 sixe-score pound] sixscore pound Qq 1, 2 : sixscore pound Q3 :  
Six-score Pounds F3 41 diamond,] Diamond : Qq where,] where ?  
Qq 42 weigh, Monsieur,] weigh Mounsieur ; Qq 43 O, heauen]  
O Iesu Qq 44 What,] What Qq 45 her] hir Qq 46 pomaids]  
Poniards Q3 49 Now, Monsieur] Now Mounsieur Qq 50 fop-  
perie :] fopperie, Qq in,] in, Qq 51 quickly,] quickly Qq 53  
Away,] Away Qq pomander] Pomardo Q3 Exit Briske. Qq  
(in Q1 after 'Away' : in Q1 2, 3 after 53) 54 Why,] Why Qq  
change !] change : Qq peace,] peace, Qq 55 enuie] Envie Qx  
56 of] om. Q3 enuied] envied Qq 1, 2 at,] at, Qq 1, 2 57  
humour] Humor Qq 8 Then] Than Qq, F2 it,] it ; F2 folly]  
vertue Qq



Being now rak't vp in their repentant ashes,  
Affords no ampler subiect to my spleene. 60  
I am so farre from malicing their states,  
That I begin to pittie 'hem. It grieues me  
To thinke they haue a being. I could wish  
They might turne wise vpon it, and be sau'd now,  
So heauen were pleas'd : but let them vanish, vapors. 65  
Gentlemen, how like you it ? has't not beene tedious ?

*G R E X.*

C O R. Nay, we ha' done censuring, now.

M I T. Yes, faith.

M A C. How so ?

C O R. Mary, because wee'le imitate your actors, and be 70  
out of our Humours. Besides, here are those (round about  
you) of more abilitie in censure then wee, whose iudgements  
can giue it a more satisfying allowance: wee'le refer you to  
them.

M A C. I ? is't e'en so ? Wel, gentlemen, I should haue 75  
gone in, and return'd to you, as I was A S P E R at the first :  
but (by reason the shift would haue beene somewhat long,  
and we are loth to draw your patience farder) wee'le intreat  
you to imagine it. And now (that you may see I will be  
out of humour for companie) I stand wholly to your kind 80  
approbation, and (indeed) am nothing so peremptorie as I  
was in the beginning : Mary, I will not doe as P L A V T V S,

v. xi. 59 their repentant ashes] embers of their Follie Qq (Folly Q3)  
60 Affords no] Affordsno Q3 subiect] Subject Qq 1, 2 spleene]  
Spirit; Qq: speene. F2 62 'hem. It] 'hem: it Qr: them. 14 Qq 2, 3  
grieues] greēues Qq 63 being.] being; Qq 65 vanish,] vanish Qq  
66-87 are Jonson's final recension, the thurd state of the text. The play  
originally ended with an address to Queen Elizabeth, most of which is  
preserved on pp 599-600, and with the final criticism of the Grex, ll 66-87  
above This was cancelled, and a verse address to the audience, continuing  
Asper's speech (ll. 54-65), concluded the play. These alternative endings  
of Qq are printed in Appendix X. 66 Gentlemen,] Macr. How now  
sirs? Qq (Sirs? Qr) beene] ben Qq 1, 2: bene Q3 67 censur-  
ing,] censuring Q3 68 Yes,] Yes Qq 70 Mary,] Mary Qq 71  
Humours] Humors Qq 1, 2: Humors Q3 72 then Q3, Fr: than  
Qq 1, 2, F2 75 Wel,] Wel; Qr 76 you,] you Qq 78 farder]  
any farder Qq 80 humour] Humor Qq: my Humor Q3 82  
Mary,] Mary Qr: Marie Qq 2, 3 PLAVTVS,] Plautus Qq



in his *Amphytrio*, for all this (*Summi Iouis causa*, *Plaudite* :)  
 begge a *Plaudite*, for gods sake ; but if you (out of the  
 85 bountie of your good liking) will bestow it ; why, you may  
 (in time) make leane M A C I L E N T E as fat, as Sir I O H N  
 F A L - S T A F F E.

## THE END.

v. xi. 83 *Amphytrio*,] *Amphytrio* Qq      84 *Plaudite*,] *Plaudite* Qq  
 gods] Gods Qq, F2      86 lat,] lat Qq      87 FAL-STAFFE] *Fallstaffe*  
 Qq 1, 2 : *Fall staffe* Q;      FAL-STAFFE F2      After 87 *Eacunt*. | *Non ego*  
*ventosae plebis suffragia venor*. Qq      THE END add Fj

### *Additional notes.*

- ii. iv. 161 Q3 reads *Would to Cod*
- iii. i. 33 *Lingnist* Q3 *originally*
- v. ii. 75 doe you Qq, F1      you doe F2
- v. xi. 27 *perceine*, *corr.* F1, F2 : *perceine* Qq, F1 *originally*  
                                  ladies *corr.* F1, F2 : Ladies, Qq · ladies, F1 *originally*



Which, in the presentation before

*Queene E. was thus varied,*

BY MACILENTE.

NEuer till now did object greet mine eyes  
 With any light content : but in her graces,  
 All my malicious powers haue lost their stings.  
 Enuie is fled my soule, at sight of her,  
 And shee hath chac'd all black thoughts from my bosome, 5  
 Like as the sunne doth darknesse from the world.  
 My streame of humour is runne out of me.  
 And as our cities torrent (bent t' infect  
 The hallow'd bowels of the siluer *Thames*)  
 Is checkt by strength, and clearnesse of the riuier, 10  
 Till it hath spent it selfe e'ene at the shore ;  
 So, in the ample, and vnmeasur'd floud  
 Of her perfections, are my passions drown'd :  
 And I haue now a spirit as sweet, and cleere,  
 As the most raref'd and subtile aire. 15  
 With which, and with a heart as pure as fire,  
 (Yet humble as the earth) doe I implore,  
 O heauen, that shee (whose presence hath effected  
 This change in me) may suffer most late change  
 In her admir'd and happie gouernement : 20  
 May still this *Il*and be call'd *fortunate*,  
 And rugged treason tremble at the sound  
 When *Fame* shall speake it with an *emphasis*.

Which . . . *varied*,] *not in Qq* : The Epilogue at the presentation  
 before Queene ELIZABETH *F2* By MACILENTE. *not in Qq* 1  
 object] *Obiect* Qq 2 graces,] *Graces* Qq 3 malicious] *malitious* Qq  
 stings.] stings : Qq 4 soule,] *Soule* Qq 7 humour] *Humor* Qq  
 me.] me : Qq 8 as *om*, Q3 10 strength,] *strength* Qq 11 riuier,]  
 Riuer] *Q3* 11 shore,] *shore* ? Q3 12 So,] *So* Qq 13 ample,]  
 ample Qq, *F2* 14 sweet,] *sweet* Qq, *F2* 15 aire.] *Aire* ; Qq 17  
*He kneeles*, add Qq 18 heauen,] *Heauen* : Qq 19 presence] *Figure* Qq  
 19 suffer most late] *neuer suffer* Qq



600 *Euery Man out of his Humour*

- Let forraine politic be dull as lead,  
 25 And pale inuasion come with halfe a heart,  
 When he but lookes vpon her blessed soile.  
 The throat of warre be stopt within her land,  
 And turtle-footed peace dance *sayrie* rings  
 About her court : where, neuer may there come  
 30 Suspect, or danger, but all trust, and safetie :  
 Let flatterie be dumbe, and enuie blind  
 In her dread presence . death himselfe admire her :  
 And may her vertues make him to forget  
 The vse of his ineuitable hand.  
 35 Flie from her age ; Sleepe time before her throne,  
 Our strongest wall falls downe, when shee is gone.

24 politic] *Pollicie* Qq      25 heart,] heart *Qq*      26 soile ] Soile: *Qq*  
 28 dance] daunce *Qq*      29 court . where,] Court ; where *Qq*      30  
 Suspect,] *Suspect* Qq      danger] *Daunger* Qq      trust,] *Trust* Qq      32  
 death] *Death* Qq      Death *F2*      35 age] *Age* Qq . Age *F2*      Sleepe]  
 sleep *F2*      time] *Time* Qq      Time *F2*      36 downe,] downe *Qq*      After  
 36 *Here the Trumpets sound a flourish in which time Mauidene conuerts*  
*himselfe to them that supply the place of GREEN, and speakes (florish,*  
*Q1)* Qq, continuing with ll. 60-87 on pp. 507-8.



This Comickall Satyre was first  
acted in the yeere  
1599.

*By the then Lord Chamberlaine*  
his Seruants.

The principall Comœdians were,

RIC. BYRBADGE.	}	{	IOH. HEMINGS.
AVG. PHILIPS.			HEN. CONDEL.
WIL. SLY.			THO. POPE.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELS.*

*This page was added in F1 In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'The Names of the Actors'.*



## APPENDIX X

### I. THE ORIGINAL CONCLUSION IN THE QUARTOS

The original conclusion was printed in the Quartos with the following preface :—

IT had another *Catastrophe* or Conclusion, at the first Playing; which (Δὲ τὸ πῶς βασιλίσσαν προσωποποιεῖδῃ) many seem'd not to relish it; and therefore 'twas since alter'd: yet that a right-ci'd and solide *Reader* may perceiue it was not so great a part of the Heauen awry, as they would make it; we request him but to looke downe vpon these following Reasons.

- 1 *There hath been President of the like Presentation in diuers Playes: and is yeerely in our Cittie Pageants or shewes of Triumph.*
- 2 *It is to be concein'd, that Macilente being so strongly possest with Enmie, (as the Poet heere makes him) it must bee no sleight or common Object, that should effect so suddaine and straunge a cure vpon him, as the putting him cleane Out of his Humor.*
- 3 *If his Imagination had discours't the whole world ouer for an Object, it could not haue met with a more Proper, Eminent, or worthie Figure, than that of her Maiesties: which his Election (though boldly, yet respectiueley) vs'd to a Morall and Mysterious end.*
- 4 *His greedinesse to catch at any Occasion, that might expresse his affection to his Soucraigne, may worthily plead for him.*
- 5 *There was nothing (in his examin'd Opinion) that could more neare or truly exemplifie the power and strength of her Inualluable Vertues, than the working of so perfect a*

2 Δὲ . . . προσωποποιεῖδῃ Qq 1, 2: DIA TO TEN BASILISSAN PROSO-  
POOESTHAI Q3 4 alter'd] altered Q3 -eid'] -eyd Q3 Reader]  
Reader Q3 13, 17 Object Q3: Object Qq 1, 2 13 suddaine]  
sodaine Q3 14 straunge] strange Q3 Out of his Humor] out  
of his Humour Q3 16 discours't] discours't Q3 21 Occasion] occa-  
sion Q3 23 Opinion] opinion Q3 25 Inualluable] inualluable Q3  
than] then Q3



Miracle on so oppos'd a Spirit, who not only persisted in his Humor, but was now come to the Court with a purpos'd resolution (his Soule as it were new drest in Enuie) to maligne at any thing that should front him ; when sodainly (against expectation, and all steele of his Malice) the verie wonder of 30 her Presence strikes him to the earth dumbe, and astonisht. From whence rising and recouering heart, his Passion thus utters it selfe.

Maci. Blessed, Diuine, Vnblemisht, Sacred, Pure,  
Glorious, Immortall, and indeed Immense ; 35  
O that I had a world of Attributes,  
To lend or adde to this high Maiestie :  
Neuer till now did Obiect greet mine eyes . . .

26 Miracle] *Miracle* Q3 Spirit] *Spirit* Q3 27 Court] *Court*,  
Q3 28 new] *now* Q3 29 him.] *him* : Q3 31 Presence] *Presence*  
Q3 34 Blessed] *Blesse* Q3 35 Glorious, Immortall Qr : Glorious  
immortall Qq 2, 3 38 Followed by the rest of the address to Elizabeth  
(pp. 599-600, ll. 1-36) and by ll. 66-87 of the Folio text (pp. 597-8)

## 2. THE REVISED CONCLUSION IN THE QUARTOS

After cancelling the address to Queen Elizabeth, Jonson concluded the play as follows after 'but let them vanish, vapors' (p. 597, l. 65) :—

And now with *Aspers* tongue (though not his shape)  
Kind *Patrons* of our sports (you that can iudge,  
And with discerning thoughts measure the pace  
Of our strange Muse in this her *Maze* of Humor,  
You, whose true Notions doe confine the formes 5  
And nature of sweet *Poesie*) to you  
I tender solemne and most duteous thankes,  
For your stretcht patience and attentiuie grace.  
We know (and we are pleas'd to know so much)

2 iudge Q3 : judge Qq 1, 2 3 pace Qq 1, 2 : space Q3 4 strange  
Qr : strange Qq 2, 3 7 duteous Qq 1, 2 : durious Q3 8 stretcht  
Qq 1, 2 : stretch Q3



- 10 The Cates that you haue tasted were not season'd  
 For euery vulgar Pallat, but prepar'd  
 To banket pure and apprehensiu eares :  
 Let then their Voices speake for our desert ;  
 Be their *Applause* the Trumpet to proclaime  
 15 Defiance to rebelling Ignorance,  
 And the greene spirits of some tainted Few,  
 That (spight of pietie) betray themselues  
 To Scorne and Laughter ; and like guiltie Children,  
 Pubhsh their *infamie* before their time,  
 20 By their owne fond exception. Such as these  
 We pawne 'hem to your *censure*, till Time, Wit,  
 Or Obseruation, set some stronger scale  
 Of *iudgement* on their iudgements ; and intreat  
 The happier spirits in this faire-fild Globe,  
 25 (So many as haue sweet minds in their breasts,  
 And are too wise to thinke themselves are taxt  
 In any generall Figure, or too vertuous  
 To need that wisdomes imputation :)  
 That with their bounteous *Hands* they would confirme  
 30 This, as their pleasures *Pallent* : which so sign'd,  
 Our leane and spent Endeauours shall renue  
 Their Beauties with the *Spring* to smile on you.

*FINIS.*

17 pietie *W. W. Greg conj.* : pitie *Q1* : pittie *Qq 2, 3*      betray] do  
 betray *G conj.*      19 *infamie* *P. Simpson conj.* : *infancie* *Qq*      20  
 exception. *Q1* : exception : *Qq 2, 3*      21 till *Qq 1, 2* : tell *Q3*      23 in-  
 treat *Q1* : entreat *Qq 2, 3*      27 too *Qq 1, 2* : to *Q3*      31 leane and  
*Qq 1, 2* : leaue nnd *Q3* (*hence G conj.* leauen'd)      "



## CORRECTIONS TO VOLUMES I & II

1. p. 26, l. 13. *For* Whitehall *read* Hampton Court.
1. 26 *For* Nathaniel Field *read* Nathan Field.
- i p. 29, n. l. 8. *For* *Shippinge* *read* *Snippinge*.
1. p. 30, n. 2. The inscription should run 'The Testemony of my Affection, & Obseruance to my noble Freind Sr. Robert Townseehend w<sup>ch</sup> I desire may remayne w<sup>th</sup> him, & last beyond Marble.'
1. p. 45, l. 27. '*Alchemyst*' Transfer the note to *Epicoene*, l. 20.
- i p. 53. Delete ll. 18-22 "'Charis" was in 1608': the part of Charis in the masque would be played by a boy.
- 1 p. 61, ll. 30-1. *For* 'Mime' (cxv) *read* 'Mime' (cxcix).  
*For* Honest Man' (cxcix) *read* Honest Man' (cxv).
- 1 p. 64, ll. 5-6. *For* This edition *read* The two opening sections consisting of the *Plays* and the *Epigrams*.
1. p. 67, l. 32 *For* Duplessis and Mornay *read* d'Aubigné and Duplessis-Mornay (F. C. Danchin in *Les Langues Modernes*, March 1926, p. 176 n).
1. p. 70, l. 21. Transfer the note-number to l. 17.
1. p. 77, l. 16 *For* Poetry *read* Poesy.
1. p. 83, l. 5. *For* Charles *read* Henry.
- i. p. 85, ll. 16-17. *For* the Triple Tun *read* the Three Tuns. (So also p. 112, l. 7)
1. p. 90, ll. 5-8. *Delete the sentence* 'His momentary arrest, a few months later . . . ' *The date of this is October 1628.*
1. p. 99, l. 7. *For* unfinished *read* unprinted.
- i. p. 107, ll. 17-18. Saint-Amant's quotation is from his *Albion* in 1644, written on his second visit to London.
- i. p. 110, l. 32. *For* 1663 *read* 1632.
1. p. 135. *Conv.* 108. *For* Martia *read* Martialls.
1. p. 139. *Conv.* 232 *For* earle *read* now earle.
- i. p. 146. *Conv.* 504 cr. note *For* Laing *read* F. Cunningham.
1. p. 160. *Conv.* 164 n. *For* Nathaniel Field *read* Nathan Field.
1. p. 167. *Conv.* note on 361, l. 1. *For* March 7, 1617 *read* January 4, 1618.
1. p. 168. *Conv.* note on 393, l. 1. *For* five *read* four.  
ib., l. 3. Delete '*The Case is Altered*, 1598'.
1. p. 169. *Conv.* note on 411, l. 5. *For* eight *read* seven. Delete '*Nigromansir*'.
- ib., note on 418, l. 5 *For* Granville *read* Grenville.
1. p. 194, l. 18. *Delete* who was the authority to license plays.
- 1 p. 203, ll. 7-11. A more exact text of the warrant is in British Museum Additional MS. 11402, fol. 108. It is probably from this that the transcript quoted in the text was taken.



- i. p. 237, l. 11. *For* Mo *read* My.
- i. p. 241 (fourth line from bottom) *For* neuer *read* newer
- i. p. 242, l. 2. *For* 1629 *read* 1628.
- i. p. 260, l. 37. *Delete* Mabbe's *Celestina*.
- i. p. 263. English Works, l. 8. *For* MS 3 D *read* MS. 3 D 1387.
- i. p. 275, l. 5. *For* Blackfriars *read* the Cockpit.
- i. p. 333, l. 19 *For* It contains no work *read* The two opening sections of the *Plays* and the *Epigrams* contain no work.
- i. p. 350, l. 20. *For* humanists *read* humorists.
- i. p. 389, l. 24. *For* cure *read* cue
- i. p. 393, l. 22. *For* early in 1600 *read* in the winter of 1599.
- ii. p. 31, l. 16. *For* 1604 *read* 1605
- ii. p. 32, l. 15 *For* Palgrave *read* Palsgrave.
- ii. p. 49, n. 1, l. 14. *For* Quarto *read* Folio.
- ii. p. 60, l. 3. *For* Eumolpius *read* Encolpius.
- ii. p. 69, l. 4 *For* that year *read* 1610
- ii. p. 75, l. 17. *For* exhaustibly *read* inexhaustibly.
- ii. p. 95, n. 2, l. 2. *For* 1591 *read* 1602.
- ii. p. 96, n. 1, l. 2 *For* N. Tomkis's *read* T. Tomkis's.
- ib., l. 3 *For* 1614 *read* 1615.
- ii. p. 170, l. 14. *Delete* and Fletcher.
- ii. p. 191, l. 7. 'A second stroke of paralysis' *Delete* 'second'. Jonson was 'strucken with the Palsey in the Yeare 1628' (i. p. 213), evidently after the Attorney-General's examination of him on October 26; at that date he went to 'S<sup>r</sup> Robert Cottons house as he often doth' (ib., p. 242).
- ii. p. 231, l. 28. *For* Centaur *read* Cyclops.
- ii. p. 255, l. 23. *For* Henry's *read* Arthur's.
- ii. p. 264. *Delete* the note: the scandal about Lady Ann (not Dorothy) Cornwallis arose later.
- ii. p. 267, marginal note. *For* 1605 *read* 1606.
- ii. p. 276, marginal note. *For* Harington's *read* Haddington's
- ii. p. 304, l. 14. *For* stories *read* stores.
- ii. p. 317, l. 21. *For* materializing *read* neutralizing.
- ii. p. 324, n. 2. *For* Stevens *read* Steevens.
- ii. p. 325, l. 28. *For* 'A Game of Chess' *read* 'A Game at Chess'.
- ii. p. 332, l. 21. *For* worthy *read* unworthy.
- ii. p. 389, l. 8. *For* French *read* Latin.
- ii. p. 419, l. 16. *For* 'A Consolation' *read* 'John Bynsley's A Consolation'.
- ib., l. 18. *For* John Webb *read* Joseph Webb.



## ADDITIONAL NOTES TO VOLUMES I & II

AN important article on *The Riddle of Jonson's Chronology*, by Dr. W. W. Greg, appeared in *The Library*, vol. vi, No. 4, March 1926, pp. 340-7. It is the first systematic attempt to grapple with the problem as a whole, and it discusses the disputable dates in the Folio of 1616. The conclusion is that 'about 1620 Jonson abandoned his former habit of using Calendar dates' (i. e. beginning the year on January 1) 'and adopted the Legal reckoning' (i. e. beginning the year on Lady Day). No solution of the problem is free from difficulty. Dr. Greg himself admits that 'Completely consistent Jonson's practice certainly was not', and his theory requires us to believe that Jonson disturbed the chronological arrangement of the masques in the 1616 Folio, placing *Mercury Vindicated* before *The Golden Age Restored* for purely literary effect, the last 'supplying an appropriate ending for the collection'. We shall discuss the question later in reference to the 1616 Folio.

One puzzling date in the 1640-1 Folio seems to have been cleared up. We hesitated over the date of *Pan's Anniversary*.<sup>1</sup> Mr. W. J. Lawrence points to Thomas Cooke's bill of January 1620<sup>2</sup> as decisive on the point. A Prince's masque was given at Court on January 17, 1619-20, and repeated on the following Shrove Tuesday (*Calendar of Venetian State Papers*, 1620, pp. 138, 190). 'If this was not *Pan's Anniversary*,' Mr. Lawrence asks, 'what other masque of Jonson's could it have been?'<sup>3</sup>

i. 129. Laing's paper announcing his discovery of the Sibbald transcript of the *Conversations with William Drummond* was dated January 9, 1832. Dr. R. F. Patterson points out that the first notice of the manuscript is found in Scott's *Kennilworth* in the 1831 edition of the *Waverley Novels*, vol. xxii, p. x, where Scott, quoting Ashmole about the poisoning of the Earl of Leicester, has this foot-note:

'Ashmole's *Antiquities of Berkshire*, vol. i. p. 149. The tradition as to Leicester's death was thus communicated by Ben Jonson to Drummond of Hawthornden: "The Earl of Leicester gave a bottle of liquor to his Lady, which he willed her to use in any faintness, which she, after his returne from court, not knowing it was poison, gave him, and so he died." BEN JONSON'S *Information to DRUMMOND of Hawthornden*, MS.—SIR ROBERT SIBBALD'S *Copy*.'

i. 140. The vision of Jonson's son, immediately after his death of the plague, appearing to him 'of a Manlie shape & of yt Grouth that he thinks he shall be at the resurrection', should have been illustrated from Saint Augustine's discussion in the *De Civitate Dei*, xxii, ch. 14, of the question 'An infantes in ea sint resurrecturi habitudine corporis

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii p. 324.      <sup>2</sup> Appendix III, ix (i, p. 235).

<sup>3</sup> *The Irish Statesman*, August 15, 1925.



quam habituri erant ætatis accessu ?' He decides that children will rise again with their bodies fully developed.

*Jonson's Increased Pension* (i. 245).

The term 'original warrant' is incorrect. The Rawlinson MS., which is reproduced, is the first draft called the Attorney-General's Bill, submitted to the King for signature ; after he had signed it, it was renamed the King's Bill (Anson, *Law and Custom of the Constitution*, 1892, ii. 45 n.).

*Memorandums of the Immortal Ben* (i. 188-9).

Sir E. K. Chambers suggests <sup>1</sup> that the document is an eighteenth-century fake. It 'does not contain anything which could not be conveyed or perverted from obvious sources, and the distribution of emphasis between Jonson's exploits as a poet and as a toper respectively can hardly have proceeded from his own mind'. The document is of slight importance, but it seems to echo traditional gossip and even to convey some scraps of Jonson's talk crudely reported in the first person. The reference to 'honest Ralf', the drawer at the Swan tavern (otherwise known only from Aubrey's manuscript <sup>2</sup> and from G. Powell's *The Treacherous Brothers*, 1690, sig. A 2 verso), seems genuine. The account which follows of Ben drinking bad wine at the Devil has some point, as if Ralf's death put an end to 'lyric feasts' at the Swan.

<sup>1</sup> *The Library*, vol. vi, no. 2, September 1925.

<sup>2</sup> See vol. i, p. 180.



